# THE NEWE TESTAMENT OF OVR LORD IESVS CHRIST, TRANSLATED OVT OF GREEKE BY *THEO. BEZA*, and Englished by *L. T.*

*LVKE.* 2. 10.
Beholde, I bring you glad tidings of great ioy that shall be to all the people.

Imprinted at London by the Deputies of Christopher Barker, Printer to the Queenes most excellent Maiestie.
1587.
*Cum gratia & priuilegio.*

THE

# NEWE TESTAMENT OF OVR LORD IESVS CHRIST, TRANSLATED OVT OF GREEKE BY *THEO. BEZA*, and Engliſhed by *L. T.*

*LVKE.* 2. 10.
Beholde, I bring you glad tidings of great ioy that ſhall be to all the people.

Imprinted at London by the Deputies of Chriſtopher Barker, Printer to the Queenes moſt excellent Maieſtie.
1587.
*Cum gratia & priuilegio.*

THE

# NEW TESTAMENT

OF OUR LORD JESUS

CHRIST, TRANSLATED

## ¶ Januarie hath xxxi. dayes.

| | | | Morning prayer. | | Euening prayer. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | | 1. *Lesson.* | 2. *Lesson.* | 1. *Lesson.* | 2. *Lesson.* |
| 1 | A | *New yeres day.* | Gene. 17. | Rom. 2. | Deut. 10. | Colos. 2 |
| 2 | b | | Gene. 1. | Matth. 1. | Gene. 2. | Rom. 1. |
| 3 | c | | 3 | 3 | 4 | 2 |
| 4 | d | | 5 | 3 | 6 | 3 |
| 5 | e | | 7 | 4 | 8 | 4 |
| 6 | f | *Epiphanie.* | Esai. 60. | Luke. 3. | Esai. 49. | Iohn. 2. |
| 7 | g | | Gene. 9. | Matth. 5. | Gene. 12. | Rom. 5. |
| 8 | A | Lucian. | 13 | 6 | 14 | 6 |
| 9 | b | | 15 | 7 | 16 | 7 |
| 10 | c | | 17 | 8 | 18 | 8 |
| 11 | d | | 19 | 9 | 20 | 9 |
| 12 | e | *Sol in Aqua.* | 21 | 10 | 22 | 10 |
| 13 | f | Hillarie. | 23 | 11 | 24 | 11 |
| 14 | g | Februarii. | 25 | 12 | 26 | 12 |
| 15 | A | | 27 | 13 | 28 | 13 |
| 16 | b | | 29 | 14 | 30 | 14 |
| 17 | c | | 31 | 15 | 32 | 15 |
| 18 | d | Prisca. | 33 | 16 | 34 | 16 |
| 19 | e | | 35 | 17 | 37 | 1. Cor. 1. |
| 20 | f | Fabian. | 38 | 18 | 39 | 2 |
| 21 | g | Agnes. | 40 | 19 | 41 | 3 |
| 22 | A | Vincent. | 42 | 20 | 43 | 4 |
| 23 | b | | 43 | 21 | 45 | 5 |
| 24 | c | | 46 | 22 | 47 | 6 |
| 25 | d | Con. of Paul. | Wisd. 5. | Actes. 22. | Wisd. 6. | Actes. 26. |
| 26 | e | | Gene. 48. | Matth. 23 | Gene. 49. | 1. Cor. 7. |
| 27 | f | | 50 | 24 | Exod. 1. | 8 |
| 28 | g | | Exod. 2. | 25 | 3 | 9 |
| 29 | A | | 4 | 26 | 5 | 10 |
| 30 | b | | 7 | 27 | 8 | 11 |
| 31 | c | | 9 | 28 | 10 | 12 |

## ¶ April hath xxx. dayes.

| | | | Morning prayer. | | Euening prayer. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | | 1. *Lesson.* | 2. *Lesson.* | 1. *Lesson.* | 2. *Lesson.* |
| 1 | g | | 1. King. 6. | Iohn. 19. | 1. King. 7. | Heb. 3. |
| 2 | A | | 8 | 20 | 9 | 4 |
| 3 | b | Richarde. | 10 | 21 | 11 | 5 |
| 4 | c | Ambrose. | 12 | Act. 1. | 13 | 6 |
| 5 | d | | 14 | 2 | 15 | 7 |
| 6 | e | | 16 | 3 | 17 | 8 |
| 7 | f | | 18 | 4 | 19 | 9 |
| 8 | g | | 20 | 5 | 21 | 10 |
| 9 | A | | 22 | 6 | 23 | 11 |
| 10 | b | | 24 | 7 | 25 | 12 |
| 11 | c | | 26 | 8 | 27 | 13 |
| 12 | d | *Sol in Tauro.* | 28 | 9 | 29 | Iames. 1. |
| 13 | e | | 30 | 10 | 31 | 2 |
| 14 | f | Maii. | 2. King. 1 | 11 | 2. King. 2. | 3 |
| 15 | g | | 3 | 12 | 4 | 4 |
| 16 | A | | 5 | 13 | 6 | 5 |
| 17 | b | | 7 | 14 | 8 | 1. Pet. 1. |
| 18 | c | | 9 | 15 | 10 | 2 |
| 19 | d | Alphege. | 11 | 16 | 12 | 3 |
| 20 | e | | 13 | 17 | 14 | 4 |
| 21 | f | | 15 | 18 | 16 | 5 |
| 22 | g | | 17 | 19 | 18 | 2. Pet. 1. |
| 23 | A | S. George. | 19 | 20 | 20 | 2 |
| 24 | b | | 21 | 21 | 22 | 3 |
| 25 | c | *Marke Euan.* | Eccle. 4 | 22 | Eccle. 5. | 1. Iohn. 1 |
| 26 | d | | 2. King. 23 | 23 | 2. kin. 24. | 2 |
| 27 | e | | 3. King. 1. | 24 | 3. king. 2. | 3 |
| 28 | f | | 3 | 25 | 4 | 4 |
| 29 | g | | 5 | 26 | 6 | 5 |
| 30 | A | | 7 | 27 | 8 | 2. 3. Iohn. |

## ¶ May hath xxxi. dayes.

| | | | Morning prayer. | | Euening prayer. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | | 1. Lesson. | 2. Lesson. | 1. Lesson. | 2. Lesson |
| 1 | h | *Phil. and Iacob.* | Eccle. 7. | Acts. 8. | Eccle. 9. | Iude 1. |
| 2 | c | | 3. king. 9. | 28 | 3. kin. 10. | Rom. 1. |
| 3 | d | Inuention of | 11 | Matth. 1. | 22 | 2 |
| 4 | e | the crosse. | 13 | 2 | 14 | 3 |
| 5 | f | | 15 | 3 | 16 | 4 |
| 6 | g | Iohn Euang. | 17 | 4 | 18 | 5 |
| 7 | A | | 19 | 5 | 20 | 6 |
| 8 | b | | 21 | 6 | 22 | 7 |
| 9 | c | | 4. king. 1. | 7 | 4. king. 2. | 8 |
| 10 | d | | 3 | 8 | 4 | 9 |
| 11 | e | | 5 | 9 | 6 | 10 |
| 12 | f | *Sol. in Gem.* | 7 | 10 | 8 | 11 |
| 13 | g | | 9 | 11 | 10 | 12 |
| 14 | A | | 11 | 12 | 12 | 13 |
| 15 | b | | 13 | 13 | 14 | 14 |
| 16 | c | Iunii. | 15 | 14 | 16 | 15 |
| 17 | d | | 17 | 15 | 18 | 16 |
| 18 | e | | 19 | 16 | 20 | 1. Cor. 1. |
| 19 | f | Dunstane. | 21 | 17 | 22 | 2 |
| 20 | g | | 23 | 18 | 24 | 3 |
| 21 | A | | 25 | 19 | 1. Esd. 1. | 4 |
| 22 | b | | 1. Esd. 3. | 20 | 4 | 5 |
| 23 | c | | 5 | 21 | 6 | 6 |
| 24 | d | | 7 | 22 | 9 | 7 |
| 25 | e | | 2. Esd. 1. | 23 | 2. Esd. 2. | 8 |
| 26 | f | Augustine. | 4 | 24 | 5 | 9 |
| 27 | g | | 6 | 25 | 8 | 10 |
| 28 | A | | 9 | 26 | 10 | 11 |
| 29 | b | | 15 | 27 | Hester. 1. | 12 |
| 30 | c | | Hest. 2. | 28 | 3 | 13 |
| 31 | d | | 4 | Mark. 1. | 5 | 14 |

## ¶ Iune hath xxx. dayes.

| | | Morning prayer. | | Euening prayer. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | 1. *Lesson.* | 2. *Lesson.* | 1. *Lesson.* | 2. *Lesson.* |
| 1 | e | Heb. 6. | Mark. 12. | Hester 7. | 1. Cor. 15 |
| 2 | f | 8 | 3 | 9 | 16 |
| 3 | g | Nichomede. | Iob 1. | 4 | Iob 2. | 2. Cor. 1. |
| 4 | A | 3 | 3 | 4 | 2 |
| 5 | b | Boniface. | 5 | 6 | 6 | 3 |
| 6 | c | 7 | 7 | 8 | 4 |
| 7 | d | 9 | 8 | 10 | 5 |
| 8 | e | 11 | 9 | 12 | 6 |
| 9 | f | 13 | 10 | 14 | 7 |
| 10 | g | 15 | 11 | 16 | 8 |
| 11 | A | Barnab. Apo. | Eccl. 10. | Acts. 14. | Eccl. 12. | Acts. 15 |
| 12 | b | *Sol in Can.* | Io. 17. 18. | Mark. 12 | Iob 19. | 2. Cor. 9. |
| 13 | c | Solstitium. | 20 | 13 | 21 | 10 |
| 14 | d | Iuui. | 22 | 14 | 23 | 11 |
| 15 | e | 24. 25. | 15 | 26. 27. | 12 |
| 16 | f | 28 | 16 | 29 | 13 |
| 17 | g | 30 | Luke 1. | 31 | Galat. 1. |
| 18 | A | 32 | 2 | 33 | 2 |
| 19 | b | 34 | 3 | 35 | 3 |
| 20 | c | Edwarde. | 36 | 4 | 37 | 4 |
| 21 | d | 38 | 5 | 39 | 5 |
| 22 | e | 40 | 6 | 41 | 6 |
| 23 | f | Fast. | 42 | 7 | Prou. 1. | Ephe. 1. |
| 24 | g | *Iohn Baptist.* | Mal. 3. | Mat. 3. | Mal. 4. | Mat. 14. |
| 25 | A | Prou. 2. | Luke 8. | Prou. 3. | Ephe. 2. |
| 26 | b | 4 | 9 | 5 | 3 |
| 27 | c | 6 | 10 | 7 | 4 |
| 28 | d | Fast. | 8 | 11 | 9 | 5 |
| 29 | e | *S. Pet. Apost.* | Eccl. 15. | Acts. 3. | Eccl. 19. | Acts. 4. |
| 30 | f | Prou. 10. | Luk. 12. | Prou. 11. | Ephe. 6. |

## ¶ July hath xxxi. dayes.

| | | | Morning prayer. | | Euening prayer. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | | 1. Lesson. | 2. Lesson. | 1. Lesson. | 2. Lesson |
| 1 | g | Visita. Marie. | Prou. 12. | Iuke 13. | Prou. 13. | Phil. 1. |
| 2 | A | | 14 | 14 | 15 | 2 |
| 3 | b | Martin. | 16 | 15 | 17 | 3 |
| 4 | c | | 18 | 16 | 19 | 4 |
| 5 | d | | 20 | 17 | 21 | Colos. 1. |
| 6 | e | Dog dayes. | 22 | 18 | 23 | 2 |
| 7 | f | | 24 | 19 | 25 | 3 |
| 8 | g | | 26 | 20 | 27 | 4 |
| 9 | A | | 28 | 21 | 29 | 1. Thes. 1 |
| 10 | b | | 31 | 22 | Eccle. 1. | 2 |
| 11 | c | | Eccle. 2. | 23 | 3 | 3 |
| 12 | d | *Sol in Leo.* | 4 | 24 | 5 | 4 |
| 13 | e | | 6 | Iohn 1. | 7 | 5 |
| 14 | f | | 8 | 2 | 9 | 2. Thes. 1 |
| 15 | g | Swithune. | 10 | 3 | 11 | 2 |
| 16 | A | Augusti. | 12 | 4 | Iere. 1. | 3 |
| 17 | b | | Iere. 2. | 5 | 3 | 1. Tim. 1 |
| 18 | c | | 4 | 6 | 5 | 2. 3. |
| 19 | d | | 6 | 7 | 7 | 4 |
| 20 | e | Margaret. | 8 | 8 | 9 | 5 |
| 21 | f | | 10 | 9 | 11 | 6 |
| 22 | g | Magdalen. | 12 | 10 | 13 | 2. Tim. 1 |
| 23 | A | | 14 | 11 | 15 | 2 |
| 24 | b | Fast. | 16 | 12 | 17 | 3 |
| 25 | c | *Iames Apost.* | Eccl. 21. | 13 | Eccl. 23. | 4 |
| 26 | d | Anne. | Iere. 18. | 14 | Iere. 19. | Titus 1. |
| 27 | e | | 20 | 15 | 21 | 2. 3. |
| 28 | f | | 22 | 16 | 23 | Phile. 1. |
| 29 | g | | 24 | 17 | 25 | Hebr. 1. |
| 30 | A | | 26 | 18 | 27 | 2 |
| 31 | b | | 28 | 19 | 29 | 3 |

# ¶ August hath xxxi. dayes.

| | | | Morning prayer. | | Euening prayer. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | | 1. Lesson. | 2. Lesson. | 1. Lesson. | 2. Lesson. |
| 1 | e | Lammas | Iere. 30. | Iohn. 20. | Iere. 31. | Heb. 4. |
| 2 | d | | 32 | 21 | 33 | 5 |
| 3 | e | | 34 | Acts. 1. | 35 | 6 |
| 4 | f | | 36 | 2 | 37 | 7 |
| 5 | g | | 38 | 3 | 39 | 8 |
| 6 | A | Transfigurat. | 40 | 4 | 42 | 9 |
| 7 | b | Name of Iesu. | 42 | 5 | 43 | 10 |
| 8 | c | | 44 | 6 | 45.46. | 11 |
| 9 | d | | 47 | 7 | 48 | 12 |
| 10 | e | Laurence. | 49 | 8 | 50 | 13 |
| 11 | f | | 51 | 9 | 52 | Iames. 1. |
| 12 | g | *Sol in Virgo.* | Lamen. 1. | 10 | Lamen. 2. | 2 |
| 13 | A | | 3 | 11 | 4 | 3 |
| 14 | b | Septembris. | 5 | 12 | Ezech. 2. | 4 |
| 15 | c | | Ezech. 3. | 13 | 6 | 5 |
| 16 | d | | 7 | 14 | 13 | 1. Pet. 1. |
| 17 | e | | 14 | 15 | 18 | 2 |
| 18 | f | | 33 | 16 | 34 | 3 |
| 19 | g | | Dan. 1. | 17 | Dan. 2. | 4 |
| 20 | A | | 3 | 18 | 4 | 5 |
| 21 | b | | 5 | 19 | 6 | 2. Pet. 1. |
| 22 | c | | 7 | 20 | 8 | 2 |
| 23 | d | *Fast.* | 9 | 21 | 10 | 3 |
| 24 | e | *Barthol. Apo.* | Eccl. 25. | 22 | Eccle. 29. | 1. Iohn. 1. |
| 25 | f | | Dan. 11. | 23 | Dan. 12. | 2 |
| 26 | g | | 13 | 24 | 14 | 3 |
| 27 | A | | Osee. 1. | 25 | Osee. 2. 3. | 4 |
| 28 | b | Augustine. | 4 | 26 | 5. 6. | 5 |
| 29 | c | Behea. of Ioh. | 7 | 27 | 8 | 2. 3. Ioh. |
| 30 | d | | 9 | 28 | 10 | Iude. |
| 31 | e | | 11 | Matth 1. | 12 | Rom. 1. |

## ¶ September hath xxx. dayes.

| | | | Morning prayer. | | Euening prayer. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | | 1. *Lesson.* | 2. *Lesson.* | 1. *Lesson.* | 2. *Lesson.* |
| 1 | f | Gyles. | Osee. 13. | Matth. 2. | Ose. 14. | Rom. 2. |
| 2 | g | | Ioel 1. | 3 | Ioel. 2. | 3 |
| 3 | A | | 3 | 4 | Amos. 1. | 4 |
| 4 | b | | Amos. 2. | 5 | 3 | 5 |
| 5 | c | Dog dais end. | 4 | 6 | 5 | 6 |
| 6 | d | | 6 | 7 | 7 | 7 |
| 7 | e | *Nati. Eliza. Re.* | 8 | 8 | 9 | 8 |
| 8 | f | Nati. of Ma. | Abdi. 1. | 9 | Ionas. 1. | 9 |
| 9 | g | | Iona. 2. 3. | 10 | 4 | 10 |
| 10 | A | | Mich. 1. | 11 | Mich. 3. | 11 |
| 11 | b | | 3 | 12 | 4 | 12 |
| 12 | c | *Sol in Libra.* | 5 | 13 | 6 | 13 |
| 13 | d | | 7 | 14 | Naum. 1. | 14 |
| 14 | e | Holy crosse. | Naum. 2. | 15 | 3 | 15 |
| 15 | f | *Aequinoct.* | Abac. 1. | 16 | Abac. 2. | 16 |
| 16 | g | *Autumnale.* | 3 | 17 | Soph. 1. | 1. Cor. 1. |
| 17 | A | | Soph. 2. | 18 | 3 | 2 |
| 18 | b | | Agge. 1. | 19 | Agge. 2. | 3 |
| 19 | c | | Zacha. 1. | 20 | Zac. 2. 3. | 4 |
| 20 | d | Fast. | 4. 5. | 21 | 6 | 5 |
| 21 | e | *S. Matthew.* | Eccl. 35. | 22 | Eccle. 38 | 6 |
| 22 | f | | Zach. 7. | 23 | Zach. 8. | 7 |
| 23 | g | | 9 | 24 | 10 | 8 |
| 24 | A | | 11 | 25 | 12 | 9 |
| 25 | b | | 13 | 26 | 14 | 10 |
| 26 | c | Ciprian. | Mala. 1. | 27 | Mala. 2. | 11 |
| 27 | d | | 3 | 28 | 4 | 12 |
| 28 | e | | Tobi. 1. | Marke. 1. | Tobi 2. | 13 |
| 29 | f | *S. Michael.* | Eccle. 39. | 2 | Eccle. 44 | 14 |
| 30 | g | Hierome. | Tob. 3. | 3 | Tobi. 4. | 15 |

## ¶ October hath xxxi. dayes.

| | | | Morning prayer. | | Euening prayer. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | | 1. *Lesson.* | 2. *Lesson.* | 1. *Lesson.* | 2. *Lesson.* |
| 1 | A | Remige. | Tobi. 5. | Mar. 4. | Tobi. 6. | 1. Cor. 16 |
| 2 | b | | 7 | 5 | 8 | 2. Cor. 1. |
| 3 | c | | 9 | 6 | 10 | 2 |
| 4 | d | | 11 | 7 | 12 | 3 |
| 5 | e | | 13 | 8 | 14 | 4 |
| 6 | f | Faith. | Iudit. 1. | 9 | Iudit. 2. | 5 |
| 7 | g | | 3 | 10 | 4 | 6 |
| 8 | A | | 5 | 11 | 6 | 7 |
| 9 | b | Dennis. | 7 | 12 | 8 | 8 |
| 10 | c | | 9 | 13 | 10 | 9 |
| 11 | d | | 11 | 14 | 12 | 10 |
| 12 | e | *Sol in Scorp.* | 13 | 15 | 14 | 11 |
| 13 | f | Edwarde. | 15 | 16 | 16 | 12 |
| 14 | g | | Wisd. 1. | Luk. di. 1. | Wisd. 2. | 13 |
| 15 | A | | 3 | di. 1. | 4 | Galat. 1. |
| 16 | b | Nouembris. | 5 | 2 | 6 | 2 |
| 17 | c | Etheldrede. | 7 | 3 | 8 | 3 |
| 18 | d | *Luke Euang.* | Eccl. 51. | 4 | Ieb. 1. | 4 |
| 19 | e | | Wisd. 9. | 5 | Wis. 10. | 5 |
| 20 | f | | 11 | 6 | 12 | 6 |
| 21 | g | | 13 | 7 | 14 | Ephe. 1. |
| 22 | A | | 15 | 8 | 16 | 2 |
| 23 | b | | 17 | 9 | 18 | 3 |
| 24 | c | | 19 | 10 | Eccle. 1. | 4 |
| 25 | d | Crispine. | Eccle. 2. | 11 | 3 | 5 |
| 26 | e | | 4 | 12 | 5 | 6 |
| 27 | f | Fast. | 6 | 13 | 7 | Phil. 1. |
| 28 | g | *Simon & Iude* | Ie. 24. 25. | 14 | Iob. 42. | 2 |
| 29 | A | | Eccle. 8. | 15 | Eccle. 9. | 3 |
| 30 | b | | 10 | 16 | 11 | 4 |
| 31 | c | Fast. | 12 | 17 | 13 | Coloss. 1 |

## ¶ Nouember hath xxx. dayes.

| | | | Morning prayer. | | Euening prayer. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | | 1. *Lesson.* | 2. *Lesson.* | 1. *Lesson.* | 2. *Lesson.* |
| 1 | d | *All Saintes.* | Wisd. 3. | He. 11. 12 | Wisd. 5. | Apoc. 19. |
| 2 | e | | Eccle. 14. | Luke 18 | Eccle. 15. | Colos. 2. |
| 3 | f | | 16 | 19 | 17 | 3 |
| 4 | g | | 18 | 20 | 19 | 4 |
| 5 | A | | 20 | 21 | 21 | 1. Thes. 1. |
| 6 | b | Leonard. | 22 | 22 | 23 | 2 |
| 7 | c | | 24 | 23 | 25 | 3 |
| 8 | d | | 27 | 24 | 28 | 4 |
| 9 | e | | 29 | Iohn 1. | 30 | 5 |
| 10 | f | | 31 | 2 | 32 | 2. Thes. 1. |
| 11 | g | S. Martin. | 33 | 3 | 34 | 2 |
| 12 | A | *Sol in Sagit.* | 35 | 4 | 36 | 3 |
| 13 | b | Brice. | 37 | 5 | 38 | 1. Tim. 1. |
| 14 | c | Decembris. | 39 | 6 | 40 | 2. 3. |
| 15 | d | Machute. | 41 | 7 | 42 | 4 |
| 16 | e | | 43 | 8 | 44 | 5 |
| 17 | f | *Elizabeth began* | 45 | 9 | 46 | 6 |
| 18 | g | *her reigne.* | 47 | 10 | 48 | 2. Tim. 1. |
| 19 | A | | 49 | 11 | 50 | 2 |
| 20 | b | Edmund king. | 51 | 12 | Baruc. 1. | 3 |
| 21 | c | | Baruc. 2. | 13 | 3 | 4 |
| 22 | d | Cicelie. | 4 | 14 | 5 | Titus. 1. |
| 23 | e | Clement. | 6 | 15 | Esai. 1. | 2. 3. |
| 24 | f | | Esai. 2. | 15 | 3 | Phile. 1. |
| 25 | g | Katherine. | 4 | 17 | 5 | Hebre. 1. |
| 26 | A | | 6 | 18 | 7 | 2 |
| 27 | b | | 8 | 19 | 9 | 3 |
| 28 | c | | 10 | 20 | 11 | 4 |
| 29 | d | Fast. | 12 | 21 | 13 | 5 |
| 30 | e | *Andrew Apo.* | Pro. 20. | Actes. 1. | Prou. 21. | 6 |

## ¶ December hath xxxi. dayes.

| | | | Morning prayer. | | Euening prayer. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | | 1. Lesson. | 2. Lesson. | 1. Lesson. | 2. Lesson. |
| 1 | f | | Esai. 14. | Actes 2. | Esai. 15. | Heb. 7. |
| 2 | g | | 16 | 3 | 17 | 8 |
| 3 | A | | 18 | 4 | 19 | 9 |
| 4 | b | | 20. 21. | 5 | 22 | 10 |
| 5 | c | | 23 | 6 | 24 | 11 |
| 6 | d | Nicholas. | 25 | dim. 7. | 26 | 12 |
| 7 | e | | 27 | dim. 7. | 28 | 13 |
| 8 | f | Concep. Ma. | 29 | 8 | 30 | Iames. 1. |
| 9 | g | | 31 | 9 | 32 | 2 |
| 10 | A | | 33 | 10 | 34 | 3 |
| 11 | b | | 35 | 11 | 36 | 4 |
| 12 | c | Sol in Capri. | 37 | 12 | 38 | 5 |
| 13 | d | Lucie. | 39 | 13 | 40 | 1. Pet. 1. |
| 14 | e | Ianuarii. | 41 | 14 | 42 | 2 |
| 15 | f | | 43 | 15 | 44 | 3 |
| 16 | g | O sapientia. | 45 | 16 | 46 | 4 |
| 17 | A | | 47 | 17 | 48 | 5 |
| 18 | b | | 49 | 18 | 50 | 2. Pet. 1. |
| 19 | c | | 51 | 19 | 52 | 2 |
| 20 | d | | 53 | 20 | 54 | 3 |
| 21 | e | Fast. | Pro. 25. | 21 | Pro. 24. | 1. Iohn. 1. |
| 22 | f | Thomas Apost. | Esai. 55. | 22 | Esai. 56. | 2 |
| 23 | g | | 57 | 23 | 58 | 3 |
| 24 | A | | 59 | 24 | 60 | 4 |
| 25 | b | Fast. Christmas. | Esai. 9. | Luke 2. | Esai. 7. | Tit. 3. |
| 26 | c | S. Stemen. | Pro. 28. | Actes. 6. 7. | Eccle. 4. | Actes. 7 |
| 27 | d | S. Iohn. | Eccle. 5. | Apoc 1. | Eccle. 6. | Apoc. 22. |
| 28 | e | Innocents. | Iere. 31. | Actes. 25. | Wisd. 1. | 1. Iohn. 5. |
| 29 | f | | Esai. 61. | 26 | Esai. 62. | 2. Iohn. |
| 30 | g | | 63 | 27 | 64 | 3. Iohn. |
| 31 | A | Siluester. | 65 | 28 | 66 | Iude. |

# An Almanacke for xxiii. yeeres.

| The yeeres of our Lord. | The golden number. | Sund. Letter. | Leape yeere. | Aſhwednes-day the firſt day of Lent. | Eaſter day. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1585 | 9 | C | | February. 24 | April. 11. |
| 1586 | 10 | B | | 28 | 3 |
| 1587 | 11 | A | | March. 1. | 16 |
| 1588 | 12 | G | R | February. 21 | 7 |
| 1589 | 13 | E | | 13 | March. 30. |
| 1590 | 14 | D | | March. 4. | April. 19. |
| 1591 | 15 | C | | February. 17 | 4 |
| 1592 | 16 | B | A | 9 | March. 26. |
| 1593 | 17 | G | | 28 | April. 15. |
| 1594 | 18 | F | | 13 | March. 31. |
| 1595 | 19 | E | D | March. 5. | April. 20. |
| 1596 | 1 | C | | February. 25 | 11 |
| 1597 | 2 | B | | 9 | March. 27. |
| 1598 | 3 | A | | March. 1. | April. 16. |
| 1599 | 4 | G | | February. 21 | 8 |
| 1600 | 5 | F | E | 6 | March. 23. |
| 1601 | 6 | D | | 25 | April. 12. |
| 1602 | 7 | C | | 17 | 4 |
| 1603 | 8 | B | | March. 9. | 24 |
| 1604 | 9 | A | G | February. 22 | 8 |
| 1605 | 10 | F | | 13 | March. 31. |
| 1606 | 11 | E | | March. 5. | April. 20. |
| 1607 | 12 | D | | February. 18 | 5 |

# THE ORDER OF THE bookes of the new Testament, with the number of their Chapters.

| | |
|---|---|
| The Gospel written by Matthewe. Chapters | 28 |
| By Marke | 16 |
| By Luke | 24 |
| By Iohn | 21 |
| The Actes of the Apostles | 28 |

## THE EPISTLES.

| | |
|---|---|
| Paul to the Romanes | 16 |
| The first to the Corinthians | 16 |
| The second to the Corinthians | 13 |
| To the Galatians | 6 |
| To the Ephesians | 6 |
| To the Philippians | 4 |
| To the Colossians | 4 |
| The first to the Thessalonians | 5 |
| The second to the Thessalonians | 3 |
| The first to Timothie | 6 |
| The second to Timothie | 4 |
| To Titus | 3 |
| To Philemon | one |
| The Epistle to the Hebrewes | 13 |
| The Epistle of Iames | 5 |
| The first Epistle of Peter | 5 |
| The second of Peter | 3 |
| The first Epistle of Iohn | 5 |
| The second of Iohn | one |
| The third of Iohn | one |
| The Epistle of Iude | one |
| The Reuelation of Iohn | 22 |

# THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS CHRIST ACCORDING TO SAINT MATTHEWE.

## CHAP. I.

1 *That Iesus is that Messias, the Sauiour promised to the fathers.* 18 *The Nativitie of Christ.*

THE *booke of the generation of Iesus Christ the sonne of Dauid, the sonne of Abraham. *Luke* 3.23.

2 *Abraham begate Isaac, *And Isaac begate Iacob. And *Iacob begat Iudas and his brethren. *Gen.*21.2. *Gen.*25.24. *Gen.*29.35.

3 *And Iudas begate Phares & Zara of Thamar. And *Phares begate Esrom. And Esrom begate Aram. *Gen.*38.27. 1.*Chro.*2.5.

4 And Aram begate Aminadab. And Aminadab begate Naasson. And Naasson begate Salmon. *ruth* 4.18, 19.

5 And Salmon begate Booz of Rachab. And *Booz begate Obed of Ruth. And Obed begate Iesse. *Ruth* 4.21.

6 And *Iesse begate Dauid the King. And *Dauid the King begate Solomon of her that was *the wife* of Vrias. 1.*Sam.*16. 1.*&* 17.12.

7 And *Solomon begate Roboam. And Roboam begate Abia. And Abia begate Asa. 2.*Sam.*12. 24.

8 And Asa begate Iosaphat. And Iosaphat begate Ioram. And Ioram begate Hozias. 1.*King.*17. 43.1.*chro.*3.

9 And Hozias begate Ioatham. And Ioatham begate Achaz. And Achaz begate Ezekias. 10,11.

10 And *Ezekias begate Manasses. And Manasses begate Amon. And Amon begate Iosias. 2.*King.*20. 21.*and* 21.

11 And *Iosias begate Iakim. And Iakim begat Iechonias and his brethren about the time they were caried away to Babylon. 18,1.*chro.*3. 13,14. 2.*King.*23.

12 And after they were caried away into Babylon *Iechonias begate Salathiel. And * Salathiel begate Zorobabel. 34.*and* 24. 1,6.2.*chro.*

13 And Zorobabel begate Abiud. And Abiud begate Eliacim. And Eliacim begate Azor. 36.4.9. 1.*Chro.*3.16.

14 And Azor begate Sadoc. And Sadoc begate Achim. And Achim begate Eliud. 1.*Chro.*3.17. *ezra* 3.2.

15 And Eliud begat Eleazar. And Eleazar begat Matthan. *and* 5.2.

And Matthan begate Iacob.

16 And Iacob begat Ioseph the husband of Marie, of whom was borne IESVS, that is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to Dauid, are fourteene generations. And frō Dauid vntill they were caried away into Babylon, fourteene generations: & after they were caried away into Babylon vntil Christ, fourteene generations.

18 ¶ Nowe the birth of IESVS Christ was thus. When
*Luke 1.27.* as his mother Marie was *betrothed to Ioseph, before they came together, she was found with childe of the holy Ghost.

19 Then Ioseph her husband being a iust man, and not willing to
*Deut.24.1.* *make her a publike example, was minded to put her away secretly.

20 But whiles he thought these things, beholde, the Angel of the Lord appeared vnto him in a dreame, saying, Ioseph the sonne of Dauid, feare not to take Marie thy wife: for that which is conceiued in her, is of the holy Ghost.

*Luke 1.31.* 21 And she shal bring forth a sonne, and thou shalt *call his
*Act.4.12.* name IESVS: for he shal *saue his people from their sinnes.

22 And all this was done that it might be fulfilled, which is spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying,

*Esai.7.14.* 23 *Beholde, a virgine shalbe with childe, and shal beare a sonne, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which is by interpretation, God with vs.

24 ¶ Then Ioseph, being raised from sleepe, did as the Angel of the Lord had inioyned him, and tooke his wife.

25 But he knewe her not, till she had brought foorth her first borne sonne, and he called his name IESVS.

## CHAP. II.

*1 The wise men, who are the first fruits of the Gentiles, worship Christ. 14 Ioseph fleeth into Egypt with Iesus and his mother. 16 Herod slayeth the children.*

*Luke 2.6.* WHen *IESVS then was borne at Beth-leem in Iudea, in the dayes of Herod the King, beholde, there came Wisemen from the East to Hierusalem,

2 Saying, Where is that King of the Iewes that is borne? for we haue seene his starre in the East, and are come to worship him.

3 When King Herod heard *this*, he was troubled, and all Hierusalem with him.

4 And gathering together all the chiefe Priests, & Scribes of ỹ people, he asked of them, where Christ should be borne.

5 And

5 And they sayd vnto him, At Beth-leem in Iudea: for so it is written by the Prophet,

6 *And thou Beth-leem in the land of Iuda, art not the least among the Princes of Iuda: for out of thee shal come the gouernour that shall feede that my people Israel. *Micah 5.2. iohn 7.42.

7 Then Herode priuily called the Wisemen, and diligently enquired of them the time of the starre that appeared,

8 And sent them to Beth-leem, saying, Goe, and search diligently for the babe: and when ye haue found him, bring me worde againe, that I may come also, and worship him.

9 ¶ So when they had heard the king, they departed: and loe, the starre which they had seene in the East, went before them, till it came & stood ouer *the place* where the babe was.

10 And when they sawe the starre, they reioyced with an exceeding great ioy,

11 And went into the house, and found the babe with Marie his mother, & fell downe, and worshipped him, & opened their treasures, and presented vnto him giftes, *euen* golde, and frankincense, and myrrhe.

12 And after they were warned of God in a dreame, that they should not go againe to Herode, they returned into their countrey another way.

13 ¶ After their departure, beholde, the Angel of the Lord appeareth to Ioseph in a dreame, saying, Arise, & take the babe and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be there till I bring thee word: for Herod wil seeke the babe, to destroy him.

14 So he arose and tooke the babe & his mother by night, and departed into Egypt,

15 And was there vnto the death of Herod, that it might be fulfilled, which is spoken of the Lord by the *Prophet, saying, Out of Egypt haue I called my Sonne. *Hose.11.1.

16 ¶ Then Herod, seeing that he was mocked of the Wisemen, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, & slew all the male children that were in Beth-leem, and in all the coastes thereof, from two yeere olde and vnder, according to the time which he had diligently searched out of the Wisemen.

17 Then was that fulfilled which is spoken by the Prophet Ieremias, saying,

18 *In Rhama was a voyce heard, mourning, and weeping, and great howling: Rachel weeping for her children, & would not be comforted, because they were not. *Iere.31.15.

19 And when Herod was dead, beholde, an Angel of the

Lorde appeared in a dreame to Ioseph in Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the babe and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the babes life.

21 Then hee arose vp and tooke the babe and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reigne in Iudea in stead of his father Herode, he was afraide to go thither: yet after he was warned of God in a dreame, he turned aside into the parts of Galile,

23 And went and dwelt in a citie called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophets, *which was*, That he should be called a Nazarite.

## CHAP. III.

*1 Iohn preacheth. 4 His apparell and meate. 5 He baptizeth. 8 The fruites of repentance. 10 The axe at the roote of the tree. 12 The fanne and the chaffe. 13 Christ is baptized.*

*Mark.1.4. luke 3.3.* IN * those dayes, Iohn the Baptist came and preached in the wildernesse of Iudea,

2 And said, Repent: for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.

*Esai.40.3. marke 1.3. luke 3.4. iohn 1.23.* 3 For this is he of whom it is spoken by the Prophet Esaias, saying, * The voyce of him that cryeth in the wildernesse, Prepare ye the way of the Lord: make his paths straight.

*Mar.1.6. Mark.1.5. luke 3.7.* 4 * And this Iohn had his garment of camels heare, and a girdle of skinne about his loynes: his meate was also locusts and wilde hony.

5 * Then went out to him Hierusalem and all Iudea, and all the region round about Iordan,

6 And they were baptized of him in Iordan, confessing their sinnes.

7 Nowe when he sawe many of the Pharises, and of the Sadduces come to his baptisme, he said vnto them, *Chry.12.34.* *O generations of vipers, who hath forewarned you to flie from the anger to come?

*Iohn 8.39. acts.13.26. Chap.7.19. Mark.1.8. luke 3.16. iohn 1.26. acts.1.5. and 2.4 & 8.17. and 19.4.* 8 Bring forth therefore fruite worthy amendment of life,

9 And thinke not to say with your selues, * We haue Abraham to *our* Father: for I say vnto you, that God is able euen of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham.

10 And now also is the axe put to the roote of the trees: * therefore euery tree which bringeth not forth good fruite, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

11 *In deede I baptize you with water to amendment of life,

life, but he that commeth after me, is mightier then I, whose shoes I am not worthy to beare: he wil baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire.

12 Which hath his fanne in his hand, and wil make cleane his floore, and gather his wheate into his garner, but wil burne vp the chaffe with vnquenchable fire.

13 ¶ *Then came Iesus from Galile to Iordan vnto Iohn, to be baptized of him. *Mark.1.9. luke 3.21.*

14 But Iohn earnestly put him backe, saying, I haue neede to be baptized of thee, and commest thou to me?

15 Then Iesus answering, said to him, Let be now: for thus it becommeth vs to fulfill all righteousnes. So he suffered him.

16 And Iesus when he was baptized, came straight out of the water. And loe, the heauens were opened vnto him, and Iohn sawe the Spirite of God descending like a doue, and lighting vpon him.

17 And loe, a voyce *came* from heauen, saying, *This is my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased. *Coloss.1.13. 2.pet.1.17.*

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 Christ is tempted. 4 He vanquisheth the Deuill with Scripture. 11 The Angels minister vnto him. 12 He preacheth repentance, and that himselfe is come. 18 The calling of Peter, Andrewe, 21 Iames and Iohn. 23 He preacheth the Gospel, and healeth the diseased.*

THen *was Iesus led aside of the Spirit into the wildernes, to be tempted of the deuill. *Mark.1.12. luke 4.1.*

2 And when he had fasted fourtie dayes, & fourtie nightes, he was afterward hungrie.

3 Then came to him the tempter, and said, If thou be the Sonne of God, commaund that these stones be made bread.

4 But he answering, sayd: It is written, *Man shall not liue by bread onely, but by euery worde that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. *Deut.8.3.*

5 Then the deuil tooke him vp into the holy Citie, and set him on a pinacle of the temple,

6 And sayd vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe: for it is written, * that hee will giue his Angels charge ouer thee, and with their hands they shall lift thee vp, least at any time thou shouldest dash thy foote against a stone. *Psal.91.11.*

7 Iesus sayd vnto him, It is written againe, *Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. *Deut.6.16.*

8 Againe the deuil tooke him vp into an exceeding hie mountaine,

mountaine, and shewed him all the kingdomes of the world, and the glory of them,

9 And sayd to him, All these will I giue thee, if thou wilt fall downe, and worship me.

10 Then sayd Iesus vnto him, Auoide Satan: for it is written, * Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serue.

*Deut.6.13. and 10.20. Mark.1.13. Luke 4.13.*

11 * Then the deuill left him: and beholde, the Angels came, and ministred vnto him.

*Mar.1.14. Luke 4.14.*

12 ¶ * And when Iesus had heard that Iohn was committed to prison, he returned into Galile,

*Iohn 4.43.*

13 And leauing Nazareth, went and dwelt in Capernaum which is neere the Sea in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim,

14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying,

*Esai.9.1.*

15 * The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim *by* the way of the Sea, beyond Iordan, Galile of the Gentiles:

16 The people which sate in darknes, sawe great light: and to them which sate in the region, and shadowe of death, light is risen vp.

*Mar.1.15.*

17 * From that time Iesus began to preach, and to say, Amende your lines: for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.

18 ¶ And Iesus walking by the Sea of Galile, saw two brethren, Simon, which was called Peter, and Andrewe his brother, casting a net into the Sea (for they were fishers.)

*Mar.1.16. Luke 5.27.*

19 * And he sayd vnto them, Followe me, and I wil make you fishers of men.

20 And they straightway leauing the nets, followed him.

21 And when he was gone forth from thence, he saw other two brethren, Iames *the sonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother in a ship with Zebedeus their father, mending their nets, and he called them.

22 And they without tarying, leauing the ship, and their father, followed him.

23 So Iesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their Synagogues, & preaching the Gospel of the kingdome, and healing euery sicknesse and euery disease among the people.

24 And his fame spread abroad through all Syria: and they brought vnto him all sicke people, that were taken with diuers diseases and torments, and them that were possessed with deuils, and those which were lunatike, and those that had

the

the palsie: and he healed them.

25 And there followed him great multitudes out of Galile, and Decapolis, and Hierusalem, and Iudea, and from beyonde Iordan.

## CHAP. V.

*1 Who are blessed. 13 The Apostles are the salt and light of the world. 14 The citie set on an hill. 15 The candle. 16 Good workes. 19 The fulfilling of Christs commandements. 21 What killing is. 23 Reconciliation is set before sacrifice. 27 Adulterie. 29 The plucking out of the eye. 30 Cutting off of the hand. 31 The bill of diuorcement. 33 Not to sweare. 43 To loue our enemies. 48 Perfitnesse.*

AND when he saw the multitude, he went vp into a mountaine: and when he was set, his disciples came vnto him.

2 And he opened his mouth and taught them, saying,

3 * Blessed *are* the poore in spirite, for theirs is the kingdome of heauen. *Luke 6.20.*

4 *Blessed *are* they that mourne: for they shalbe cõforted. *Esai. 61.2,3.*

5 *Blessed *are* the meeke: for they shall inherite the earth. *luke 6.21.*

6 *Blessed *are* they which hunger and thirst for righteousnes: for they shall be filled. *Psal.37 11. Esai.65.13.*

7 Blessed *are* the mercifull: for they shall obteine mercie.

8 Blessed *are* the * pure in heart: for they shall see God. *Psal.24.4.*

9 Blessed *are* the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.

10 Blessed *are* they * which suffer persecution for righteousnes sake: for theirs is the kingdome of heauen. *1.Cor.14 33. 1.pet 3.14.*

11 *Blessed shall ye be when men reuile you, and persecute you, and say all maner of euil against you for my sake, falsly. *Acts.5.41. 1.pet.4.14.*

12 Reioyce and be glad, for great is your reward in heauen: for so persecuted they the Prophets which were before you.

13 *Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt haue lost his sauour, wherewith shall it be salted? It is thencefoorth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be troden vnder foote of men. *Mark.9.50. luke 14.34.*

14 Ye are the light of the worlde. A citie that is set on an hill, cannot be hid.

15 * Neither doe men light a candle, and put it vnder a bushel, but on a candlestick, and it giueth light vnto all that are in the house. *Marke 4.21. luke 8.16. and 11.33.*

16 * Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good workes, & glorifie your Father which is in heauen. *1.Pet.2.12.*

17 Thinke not that I am come to destroy the Law, or the Prophets. I am not come to destroy them, but to fulfill them.

*Luke 16.17.* 18 * For truely I say vnto you, Till heauen and earth perish, one iote, or one title of the Lawe shall not scape, till all things be fulfilled.

*Iames 2.10.* 19 * Whosoeuer therefore shall breake one of these least commandements, and teach men so, he shalbe called the least in the kingdome of heauen: but whosoeuer shall obserue and teach *them*, the same shall be called great in the kingdome of heauen.

*Luke 11.39.* 20 For I say vnto you, except your righteousnes * exceede the *righteousnes* of the Scribes and Pharises, ye shall not enter into the kingdome of heauen.

21 Ye haue heard that it was sayde vnto them of the olde

*Exo.20.13. deut.5.17.* time, * Thou shalt not kill: for whosoeuer killeth, shalbe culpable of iudgement.

22 But I say vnto you, whosoeuer is angrie with his brother vnadui sedly, shalbe culpable of iudgement. And whosoeuer saith vnto his brother, Raca, shall be worthy to be punished by the Councel. And whosoeuer shall say, Foole, shall be worthy to be punished with hell fire.

23 If then thou bring thy gift to the altar, & there remembrest that thy brother hath ought against thee,

24 Leaue there thine offring before the altar, & go thy way: First be reconciled to thy brother, & then come & offer thy gift.

*Luke 12.58.* 25 * Agree with thine aduersarie quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him, lest thine aduersarie deliuer thee to the Iudge, and the Iudge deliuer thee to the sergeant, and thou be cast into prison.

26 Verely I say vnto thee, thou shalt not come out thence, till thou hast payed the vtmost farthing.

27 ¶ Ye haue heard that it was said to them of olde time,

*Exo.20.14. rom.13.9.* * Thou shalt not commit adulterie.

28 But I say vnto you, that whosoeuer looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adulterie with her alreadie in his heart.

*Chap.18.8,9. mar.9.47.* 29 * Wherefore if thy right eye cause thee to offende, plucke it out, and cast it from thee: for better it is for thee, that one of thy members perish, then that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

30 Also if thy right hand make thee to offende, cut it off, & cast it from thee: for better it is for thee ‖ one of thy members

bers perish, then that thy whole body should be cast into hel.

31 It hath bene said also, * Whosoeuer shall put away his wife, let him giue her a bill of diuorcement. *Chap.19.7. deut.24.1.*

32 But I say vnto you, whosoeuer shall put away his wife (except it be for fornication) causeth her to comit adulterie: and whosoeuer shall marrie her that is diuorced, committeth adulterie. *mark.10.4. luke 16.18. 1.cor.7.10.*

33 Againe, ye haue heard that it was saide to them of olde time, * Thou shalt not forsweare thy selfe, but shalt performe thine othes to the Lord. *Exod.20.7. leuit.19.12. deut.5.11.*

34 But I say vnto you, Sweare not at all, neither by heauen, for it is the throne of God:

35 Nor yet by the earth: for it is his footestoole: neither by Hierusalem: for it is the citie of the great King.

36 Neither shalt thou sweare by thine head, because thou canst not make one heare white or blacke.

37 * But let your communication be Yea, yea: Nay, nay. For whatsoeuer is more then these, commeth of euill. *Jam.5.12.*

38 ¶ Ye haue heard that it hath bene saide, An * eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth. *Exod.21.24. leuit. 24.20.*

39 But I say vnto you, * Resist not euil: but whosoeuer shal smite thee on thy right cheeke, turne to him the other also. *deut.19.21. Luke 6 29.*

40 And if any man wil sue thee at the lawe, and take away thy coate, let him haue thy cloke also. *rom.12.19. 1.cor.6.7.*

41 And whosoeuer will compel thee to go a mile, go with him twaine.

42 * Giue to him that asketh, and from him that would borow of thee, turne not away. *Deut.15.18.*

43 Ye haue heard that it hath bene said, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour, and hate thine enemie. *Leuit.19.18.*

44 But I say vnto you, * Loue your enemies: bless them that curse you: do good to them that hate you, * and pray for them which hurt you and persecute you, *Luke 6 27. Luke 23 34. actes 7.60.*

45 * That ye may be the children of your Father that is in heauen: for he maketh his Sunne to arise on the euill, and the good: and sendeth raine on the iust, and vniust. *1.cor.4.13. Luke 6.35.*

46 For if ye loue them, which loue you, what reward shall you haue? Doe not the Publicanes euen the same?

47 And if ye be friendly to your brethren onely, what singular thing doe ye? doe not euen the Publicanes likewise?

48 Ye shall therefore be perfite, as your Father which is in heauen, is perfite.

CHAP.

## CHAP. VI.

*1 Almes. 5 Prayer. 14 Forgiuing our brother. 16 Fasting. 19 Our treasure. 20 We must succour the poore. 24 God and riches. 25 Carefull seeking for meate and drinke, and apparell, forbidden. 33 The kingdome of God and his righteousnes.*

TAke heede that ye giue not your almes before men,to be seene of them, or els ye shall haue no rewarde of your Father which is in heauen.

Rom.12.8. 2 *Therefore when thou giuest thine almes,thou shalt not make a trumpet to bee blowen before thee,as the hypocrites do in the Synagogues & in the streetes, to be praised of men. Verely I say vnto you,they haue their reward.

3 But when thou doest thine almes, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth,

4 That thine almes may bee in secret, and thy Father that seeth in secret,he will reward thee openly.

5 And whē thou prayest,be not as the hypocrites:for they loue to stand,and pray in the Synagogues, and in the corners of the streetes, because they would be seene of men. Verely I say vnto you,they haue their reward.

6 But whē thou prayest,enter into thy chamber: and when thou hast shut thy doore, pray vnto thy Father which is in secret,and thy Father which seeth in secrete, shall reward thee openly.

7 Also when ye pray,vse no vaine repetitions as the heathen: for they thinke to be heard for their much babbling.

8 Be ye not like them therefore:For your Father knoweth whereof ye haue neede,before ye aske of him.

Luke 11.2. 9 After this maner therefore pray yee,* Our Father which art in heauen,halowed be thy Name.

10 Thy kingdome come. Thy will be done euen in earth, as *it is* in heauen.

11 Giue vs this day our dayly bread.

12 And forgiue vs our dets, as we also forgiue our detters.

Chap.13.19. 13 And lead vs not into tentation, but deliuer vs * from euill: for thine is the kingdome,and the power,and the glory for euer.Amen.

Mar.11.25. 14 *For if ye do forgiue men their trespasses,your heauenly Father will also forgiue you.

15 But if ye doe not forgiue men their trespasses, no more will your Father forgiue *you* your trespasses.

16 Moreouer, when ye fast, looke not sowre as the hypocrites:

crites: for they disfigure their faces, that they might seeme vnto men to fast. Verely I say vnto you, that they haue their rewarde.

17 But when thou fastest, annoynt thine head, and washe thy face,

18 That thou seeme not vnto men to fast, but vnto thy Father which is in secrete: and thy Father which seeth in secret, will reward thee openly.

19 ¶ Lay not vp treasures for your selues vpon the earth, where the mothe and canker corrupt, & where theeues digge through and steale.

20 *But lay vp treasures for your selues in heauen, where neither the mothe nor canker corrupteth, and where theeues neither digge through, nor steale. *Luke 12.33. 1.tim.6.19.*

21 For where your treasure is, there wil your heart be also.

22 ¶ * The light of the body is the eye: if then thine eye be single, thy whole body shalbe light. *Luke 11.34.*

23 But if thine eye be wicked, then all thy body shall bee darke. Wherefore if the light that is in thee, be darkenes, how great is that darkenes?

24 * No man can serue two masters: for either hee shall hate the one, and loue the other, or els hee shall leane to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serue God and riches. *Luke 16. 13.*

25 *Therefore I say vnto you, be not careful for your life, what ye shal eate, or what ye shal drinke: nor yet for your body, what yee shall put on. Is not the life more worth then meate? and the body then rayment? *Luke 12.22. phil.4.6. 1.tim.6.8. 1.pet.5.7.*

26 Behold the foules of the heauen: for they sow not, neither reape, nor cary into the barnes: yet your heauenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better then they?

27 Which of you by taking care is able to adde one cubite vnto his stature? *psal.55.23.*

28 And why care ye for raiment? Learne howe the lilies of the fielde doe grow: they are not wearied, neither spinne:

29 Yet I say vnto you, that euen Solomon in all his glory was not arayed like one of these.

30 Wherefore if God so cloth the grasse of the field which is to day, and to morowe is cast into the ouen, shall he not *doo* much more vnto you, O ye of litle faith?

31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shal we eate? or what shall we drinke? or wherewith shall we be clothed?

32 (For after all these thinges seeke the Gentiles) for your hea-

heauely Father knoweth, that ye haue need of al these things.

33 But seeke ye first the kingdome of God, and his righteousnes, and all these things shalbe ministred vnto you.

34 Care not then for the morow: for the morow shall care for it selfe: the day hath ynough with his owne griefe.

## CHAP. VII.

*1 We may not giue iudgement of our neighbour, 6 nor cast that which is holy to dogges. 13 The broad and strait way. 15 False prophetes. 18 The tree and fruite. 24 The house built on a rocke, 26 and on the sand.*

IVdge not, that ye be not iudged.

*Luke 6.37, 38.* 2 For with what* iudgement ye iudge, ye shalbe iudged, and with what * measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you
*rom.2.1.* againe.

*1.cor.4.3.* 3 And why seest thou the mote, that is in thy brothers eye,
*Mar.4.24.* and perceiuest not the beame that is in thine owne eye?
*luke 6.38.* 4 * Or howe sayest thou to thy brother, Suffer mee to cast
*Luke 6.41.* out the mote out of thine eye, and behold, a beame is in thine owne eye?

5 Hypocrite, first cast out that beame out of thine owne eye, and then shalt thou see clearely to cast out the mote out of thy brothers eye.

6 ¶ Giue ye not that which is holy, to dogges, neither cast ye your pearles before swine, lest they tread them vnder their feete, and turning againe, all to rent you.

*Chap.21.22.* 7 ¶ * Aske, and it shalbe giuen you: seeke, and ye shal finde:
*mar.11.24.* knocke, and it shalbe opened vnto you.
*luke 11.9.* 8 For whosoeuer asketh, receiueth: and hee that seeketh,
*iohn 14.13.* findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shalbe opened.
*and 16.23.* 9 For what man is there among you, which if his sonne
*iames 1.5.* aske him bread, would giue him a stone?

10 Or if he aske fish, will he giue him a serpent?

11 If yee then, which are euill, can giue to your children good giftes, howe much more shall your Father which is in heauen, giue good things to them that aske him?

*Luke 6.31.* 12 * Therefore whatsoeuer ye would that men should doe
*tob.4.16.* to you, euen so doe yee to them: for this is the Lawe and the Prophets.

*Luke 13.24.* 13 ¶ * Enter in at the streite gate: for it is the wide gate, and broad way that leadeth to destruction: and many there be which goe in thereat,

14 Because the gate is straite, and the way narrowe that leadeth

leadeth vnto life, and fewe there be that finde it.

15 ¶ Beware of false prophetes, which come to you in sheepes clothing, but inwardly they are rauening wolues.

16 Ye shal knowe them by their fruites.* Doe men gather grapes of thornes? or figges of thistles? *Luke 6.44.*

17 So euery good tree bringeth foorth good fruite, *and* a corrupt tree bringeth foorth euill fruite.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth euil fruite: neither can a corrupt tree bring foorth good fruite.

19 * Euery tree that bringeth not foorth good fruite, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire. *Chap.3.10.*

20 Therefore by their fruites ye shall knowe them.

21 ¶ Not euery one that saith vnto me, Lord, Lord, shal enter into the kingdome of heauen,* but hee that doeth my Fathers will which is in heauen. *Rom.2.13.*

22 *Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, haue wee not by thy Name prophecied? and by thy Name cast out deuils? and by thy Name done many great workes? *Iames 1.22.*

23 And then will I professe to them,* I neuer knewe you: *departe from me, ye that worke iniquitie. *Luke 13.27. Psal.6.8.*

24 Whosoeuer then heareth of me these words,* and doth the same, I will liken him to a wise man, which hath builded his house on a rocke: *Luke 6.47, 48.*

25 And the raine fell, and the floodes came, and the windes blewe, and beat vpon that house, and it fell not: for it was grounded on a rocke.

26 But whosoeuer heareth these my wordes, & doth them not, shall bee likened vnto a foolish man, which hath builded his house vpon the sande:

27 And the raine fell, and the floods came, and the windes blewe, and beat vpon that house, and it fell, and the fall thereof was great.

28 ¶ * And it came to passe, when Iesus had ended these wordes, the people were astonied at his doctrine. *Mat.13.54. Luke 4.32.*

29 For hee taught them as one hauing authoritie, and not as the Scribes.

## CHAP. VIII.

1 *The Leper cleansed.* 5 *The Centurions faith.* 11 *The calling of the Gentiles.* 12 *and casting out of the Iewes.* 14 *Peters mother in lawe healed.* 19 *A Scribe desirous to follow Christ.* 23 *The tempest on the sea.* 28 *Two possessed with deuils cured.* 32 *The deuils got into Swine.*

Now

NOwe when hee was come downe from the mountaine, great multitudes folowed him.

*Mar.1.40. Luke 5.12.* 2 *And loe, there came a Leper and worshipped him, saying, Master, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.

3 And Iesus putting forth his hand, touched him, saying, I wil, be thou cleane: and immediatly his leprosie was cleansed.

*Leu.14.3,4.* 4 Then Iesus said vnto him, See thou tell no man, but goe, *and* shew thy selfe vnto the Priest, and offer the gift that *Moses commaunded, for a witnesse to them.

*Luke 7.1.* 5 ¶ *When Iesus was entred into Capernaum, there came vnto him a Centurion, beseeching him,

6 And saide, Master, my seruant lyeth sicke at home of the palsie, and is grieuously pained.

7 And Iesus said vnto him, I will come and heale him.

8 But the Centurion answered, saying, Master, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come vnder my roofe: but speake the word onely, and my seruant shalbe healed.

9 For I am a man also vnder the authoritie of *another*, and haue souldiers vnder me: and I say to one, Goe, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and hee commeth: and to my seruant, Doe this, and he doeth it.

10 When Iesus heard *that*, hee marueiled and said to them that followed *him*, Verely, I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith, euen in Israel.

11 But I say vnto you, that many shall come from the East and West, and shal sit downe with Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, in the kingdome of heauen.

12 And the children of the kingdome shalbe cast out into *Chap.22.13.* vtter *darkenes, there shal be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

13 Then Iesus said vnto the Centurion, Goe thy way, and as thou hast beleeued, so be it vnto thee. And his seruant was healed the same houre.

*Mar.1.29. Luke 4.38.* 14 ¶ *And when Iesus came to Peters house, hee sawe his wiues mother layde downe, and sicke of a feuer.

15 And he touched her hand, and the feuer left her: so she arose, and ministred vnto them.

*Mark.1.32. Luke 4.40.* 16 * When the euen was come, they brought vnto him many that were possessed with deuils: and he cast out the spirits with *his* word, and healed all that were sicke,

*Esai.53.4. 1.Pet.2.24.* 17 That it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by * Esaias the Prophet, saying, He tooke our infirmities, and bare *our* sickenesses.

18 ¶ *And

18 ¶ * And when Iesus sawe great multitudes of people about him, he commaunded them to goe ouer the water. *Luke 9.57, 58.*

19 Then came there a certaine Scribe, and saide vnto him, Master, I will followe thee whithersoeuer thou goest.

20 But Iesus saide vnto him, The foxes haue holes, and the birdes of the heauen haue nestes, but the Sonne of man hath not whereon to rest his head.

21 ¶ And another of his disciples saide vnto him, Master, suffer me first to goe, and burie my father.

22 But Iesus saide vnto him, Followe me, and let the dead burie the dead.

23 ¶ * And when hee was entred into the shippe, his disciples followed him. *Mar. 4.37. luke 8.23.*

24 And beholde, there arose a great tempest in the sea, so that the shippe was couered with wawes: but he was asleepe.

25 Then his disciples came, and awoke him, saying, Master, saue vs: we perish.

26 And he saide vnto them, Why are ye fearefull, O yee of litle faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the windes and the sea: and so there was a great calme.

27 And the men marueiled, saying, What man is this, that both the windes and the sea obey him!

28 ¶ * And when hee was come to the other side into the countrey of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with deuils, which came out of the graues very fierce, so that no man might goe by that way. *Mark. 5.2, 3. luke 8.26, 27.*

29 And beholde, they cried out, saying, Iesus the Sonne of God, what haue we to doe with thee? Art thou come hither to torment vs before the time?

30 Nowe there was a farre off from them, a great heard of swine feeding.

31 And the deuils besought him, saying, If thou cast vs out, suffer vs to goe into the heard of swine.

32 And he said vnto them, Goe. So they went out and departed into the heard of swine: and beholde, the whole heard of swine ranne headlong into the sea, and died in the water.

33 Then the heardmen fled: and when they were come into the citie, they tolde all things, and what was become of them that were possessed with the deuils.

34 And beholde, all the citie came out, to meete Iesus: and when they saw him, they besought him to depart out of their coastes.

CHAP.

## CHAP. IX.

1 *One sicke of the palsie is healed.* 5 *Remission of sinnes.* 9 *Matthew is called.* 10 *Sinners.* 17 *New wine.* 18 *The rulers daughter raised.* 20 *A woman healed of a bloodie issue.* 28 *Two blinde men by faith receive sight.* 32 *A dumme man possessed is healed.* 37 *The harvest and workemen.*

THen hee entred into a ship, and passed ouer, and came into his owne citie.

*Mark.2.3. Luke 5.18.* 2 And *loe, they brought to him a man sicke of the palsie, laid on a bed. And Iesus seeing their faith, said to ỹ sicke of the palsie, Sonne, be of good comfort: thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

3 And behold, certaine of the Scribes said with themselues, This man blaspheməth.

4 But when Iesus sawe their thoughts, he said, Wherefore thinke ye euill things in your hearts?

5 For whether is it easier to say, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee, or to say, Arise, and walke?

6 And that ye may knowe that the Sonne of man hath authoritie in earth to forgiue sinnes, (then said he vnto the sicke of the palsie,) Arise, take vp thy bed, and goe to thine house.

7 And he arose, and departed to his owne house.

8 So when the multitude sawe it, they marueiled, and glorified God, which had giuen such authoritie to men.

*Mar.2.14. Luke 5.27.* 9 ¶ *And as Iesus passed foorth from thence, he saw a man sitting at the custome, named Matthewe, and said to him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

10 And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at meate *in his* house, beholde, many Publicanes and sinners, that came *thither*, sate downe at the table with Iesus and his disciples.

11 And when the Pharises sawe that, they said to his disciples, Why eateth your master with Publicanes and sinners?

12 Now whē Iesus heard it, he said vnto them, The whole neede not a Physicion, but they that are sicke.

*Hose.6.6. chap.12.7.* 13 But goe ye and learne what this is, *I wil haue mercie, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but

*1. Tim.1.15.* the *sinners to repentance.

*Mar.2.18. Luke 5.33.* 14 ¶ *Then came the disciples of Iohn to him, saying, Why doe we and the Pharises fast oft, and thy disciples fast not?

15 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children of the mariage chamber mourne as lōg as the bridegrome is with them? but the dayes will come when the bridegrome shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.



16 More.

16 Moreouer, no man pieceth an olde garment w apiece of newe cloth: for that that should fill it vp, taketh away from the garment, and the breach is worse.

17 Neither doe they put newe wine into olde vessels: for then the vessels would breake, and the wine would be spilt, and the vessels should perish: but they put newe wine into newe vessels, and so are both preserued.

18 ¶ While he thus spake vnto them, behold, there came a certaine ruler, & worshipped him, saying, My daughter is now deceassed, but come & lay thine hand on her, and she shall liue. *Mark. 5. 22. Luke 8. 41.*

19 And Iesus arose and folowed him with his disciples.

20 (And beholde, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelue yeares, came behinde him, and touched the hemme of his garment.

21 For she said in her selfe, If I may touch but his garment onely, I shalbe whole.

22 Then Iesus turned him about, and seeing her, did say, Daughter, bee of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole. And y woman was made whole at that same moment.)

23 Now when Iesus came into the rulers house, and sawe the minstrels and the multitude making noise,

24 He saide vnto them, Get you hence: for the maide is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorne.

25 And when the multitude were put foorth, hee went in and tooke her by the hand, and the maide arose.

26 And this bruite went throughout all that land.

27 And as Iesus departed thence, two blind men followed him, crying, and saying, O sonne of Dauid, haue mercy vpon vs.

28 And when he was come into the house, the blinde came to him, and Iesus said vnto them, Beleeue ye that I am able to doe this? And they said vnto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it vnto you.

30 And their eyes were opened, and Iesus gaue them great charge, saying, See that no man knowe it.

31 But when they were departed, they spred abroade his fame throughout all that land.

32 ¶ And as they went out, beholde, they brought to him a dumme man possessed with a deuill. *Luke 11. 14*

33 And when the deuill was cast out, the dumme spake: then the multitude marueiled, saying, The like was neuer seene in Israel.

*Chap.12.24.* 34 But the Pharises saide, *He casteth out deuils, through
*mark.3.22.* the prince of deuils.
*luke 11.15.* 35 ¶ And *Iesus went about al cities & townes, teaching in
*Mark 6.6.* their Synagogues, and preachinge the Gospel of the kingdom,
*luke 13.22.* & healing euery sickne & euery disease among the people.
*Mark.6.34.* 36 But *when hee sawe the multitude, he had compassion
vpon them, because they were dispersed, & scattered abroade,
as sheepe hauing no shepheard.
*Luke 10.2.* 37 Then sayde hee to his disciples, * Surely the harueſt is
*Ioh.4.35,36.* great, but the labourers *are* fewe.
38 Wherefore pray the Lord of the harueſt, that he would
send foorth labourers into his harueſt.

## CHAP. X.

*1 The gift of healing giuen to the Apostles. 5 They are sent to preach the Gospel. 13 Peace. 14 Shaking off the dust. 16 Affliction. 22 Continuance vnto the ende. 23 Flying from persecution. 28 Feare. 29 Two sparowes. 30 Heares of our head. 32 To acknowledge Christ. 34 Peace and the sword. 35 Variance. 37 Loue of parents. 38 The crosse. 39 To loſe the life. 40 To receiue a preacher.*

*Mar.3.13, 14,15.luke 9.1,2.* AND * hee called his twelue disciples vnto him, and gaue them power against vncleane spirites, to cast them out, and to heale euery sickneſſe, and euery diseaſe.

2 Nowe the names of the twelue Apostles are theſe. The firſt *is* Simon, called Peter, and Andrewe his brother: Iames *the sonne* of Zebedens, and Iohn his brother:

3 Philippe and Bartlemewe: Thomas, and Matthewe that Publicane: Iames *the sonne* of Alpheus, and Lebbeus whoſe ſurname was Thaddeus:

4 Simon the Cananite, and Iudas Iſcariot, who alſo betraied him.

5 These twelue did Iesus sende foorth, and commaunded them, saying, Goe not into the way of the Gentiles, and into the cities of the Samaritans enter yee not:

*Act.13.46. Ro.1.16.* 6 But goe rather * to the loſt sheepe of the houſe of Iſrael.
7 * And as yee goe, preache, saying, The kingdome of heauen is at hande.

8 Heale the sicke; cleanſe the lepers: raiſe vp the dead: caſt
*Mar.6.8,9. luke 9.3. & 22.35.* out the deuil. Freely yee haue receiued, freely giue.
9 * Poſſeſſe not gold, nor ſiluer, nor money in your girdels,
10 Nor a ſcrip for the iourney, neither two coates, neither
*2.Tim.5.18.* ſhoes, nor a ſtaffe: * for the workeman is worthy of his meate.

11 And

11 And into * whatsoeuer citie or towne ye shal come, en- *Luke 10.8.*
quire who is worthie in it, and there abide till ye goe thence.
12 And when ye come into an house, salute the same.
13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come vpon it: but if it be not worthie, let your peace returne to you.
14 * And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor heare your *Mar.6.11.*
wordes, when ye depart out of that house, or that citie, * shake *Luke 9.5.*
off the dust of your feete. *Act.13.51.*
15 Truely I say vnto you, it shall be easier for them of the lande of Sodom and Gomortha in the day of iudgement, then for that citie.
16 ¶ * Beholde, I sende you as sheepe in the middes of the *Luke 10.3.*
wolues: bee yee therefore wise as serpents, and innocent as doues.
17 But beware of men, for they will deliuer you vp to the Councils, and will scourge you in their Synagogues.
18 And yee shall be brought to the gouernours and kings for my sake, in witnesse to them, and to the Gentiles.
19 * But when they deliuer you vp, take no thought how *Mar.13.11.*
or what ye shall speake: for it shall be giuē you in that houre, *Luke 12.11.*
what yee shall say.
20 For it is not yee that speake, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.
21 And the * brother shall betraie the brother to death, *Luke 21.16.*
and the father the sonne, and the children shall rise against *their* parents, and shall cause them to die.
22 And ye shalbe hated of all men for my Name: * but hee *Mar.13.13.*
that endureth to the ende, he shalbe saued.
23 And when they persecute you in this citie, flie into an other: for verely I say vnto you, yee shall not goe ouer *all* the cities of Israel, till the Sonne of man be come.
24 * The disciple is not aboue his master, nor the seruant *Luke 6.40.*
aboue his Lord. *Iohn 13.16.*
25 It is inough for the disciple to be as his master *is*, & the *and 15.20.*
seruant as his Lorde. * If they haue called the master of the *Chap.12.24.*
house Beelzebub, howe much more them of his houshold?
26 Feare them not therefore: * for there is nothing co- *Mark.4.22.*
uered, that shall not bee discloſed: nor hid, that shall not bee *Luke 8.17.*
knowen. *and 12.2.*
27 What I tell you in darkeneſſe, that speake yee in light: and what ye heare in the eare, that preach ye on the houses.
28 And feare yee not them which kill the bodie, but are

not able to kill the soule: but rather feare him, which is able to destroy both soule and bodie in hell.

29 Are not two sparowes solde for a farthing, and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your father?

1.Sam.14. 30 * Yea, and all the heares of your head are nombred.

45.11. 31 Feare yee not therefore, yee are of more value then ma-

2.sam.14.11. ny sparowes.

actes 27.54. 32 * Who so euer therefore shall confesse me before men,

Mark 8.38. him will I confesse also before my Father which is in heauen.

luke 9.26. 33 But whosoeuer shall denie me before men, him will I

and 12.8. also denie before my Father which is in heauen.

2.tim.2.12. 34 * Thinke not that I am come to sende peace into the

Luke 12.51. earth: I came not to send peace, but the sword.

35 For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in lawe against her mother in lawe.

Micah.7.6. 36 * And a mans enemies *shalbe* they of his owne houshold.

Luke 14.26. 37 * He that loueth father or mother more then me, is not worthy of mee. And he that loueth sonne, or daughter more then me, is not worthie of me.

Chap.16.24. 38 * And he that taketh not his crosse, and followeth after

mark.8.34. me, is not worthie of me.

luke 9.23. 39 * Hee that will finde his life, shall lose it, and hee that

and 14.27. loseth his life for my sake, shall finde it.

John 12.25. 40 He that receiueth you, receiueth me: and he that receiueth me, receiueth him that hath sent me.

Luke 10.16. 41 * Hee that receiueth a Prophet in the name of a Pro-

iohn 13.20. phet, shall receiue a Prophets reward: and he that receiueth a righteous man, in the name of a righteous man, shall receiue the reward of a righteous man.

Mar.9.41. 42 * And whosoeuer shal giue vnto one of these litle ones to drinke a cuppe of colde water onely, in the name of a disciple, verely I say vnto you, he shall not lose his rewarde.

## CHAP. XI.

*2 Iohn sendeth his disciples to Christ. 7 Christes testimonie of Iohn. 13 The Lawe and the Prophets. 18 Christ and Iohn. 21 Chorazin, Bethsaida. 25 The Gospel reuealed to children. 28 They that are wearie and laden.*

AND it came to passe that when Iesus had made an ende of commanding his twelue disciples, he departed thence to teache and to preache in their cities.

Luke 7.18. 2 ¶ * And when Iohn heard in the puison the woorkes of

Christ,

Christ to sent two of his disciples, and said vnto him,
3 Art thou hee that should come, or shall we looke for another?
4 And Iesus answering, saide vnto them, Goe, and shewe Iohn, what things yee heare, and see.
5 The blinde receive sight, and the halt doe walke: the lepers are clensed, and the deafe heare: the deade are raised vp, *and the poore receive the Gospel. *Esa.61.1.*
6 And blessed is he that shall not be offended in me. *Luke 4.18.*
7 And as they departed, Iesus began to speake vnto the multitude of Iohn, What went ye out into the wildernesse to see? A reede shaken with the winde?
8 But what went ye out to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Beholde, they that weare soft clothing, are in kings houses.
9 But what went yee out to see? A prophet? yea, I say vnto you, and more then a Prophet.
10 For this is he of whome it is written, *Beholde, I sende my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. *Mala.3.1. Luke 7.28.*
11 Verely I say vnto you, among them which are begotten of women, arose there not a greater then Iohn Baptist, notwithstanding, he that is the least in the kingdome of heauen, is greater then he.
12 And frō*the time of Iohn Baptist hitherto, the kingdom of heauen suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force. *Luke 16.16.*
13 For al the Prophets & the Law prophecied vnto Iohn,
14 And if yee wil receive it, this is that *Elias, which was to come. *Mala.4.5.*
15 ¶ He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.
16 *But whereunto shall I liken this generation? it is like vnto litle children which sitte in the markets, and call vnto their fellowes, *Luke 7.32.*
17 And say, We haue piped vnto you, & yee haue not danced, we haue mourned vnto you, and ye haue not lamented.
18 For Iohn came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a deuill.
19 The Sonne of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a glutton and a drinker of wine, a friend vnto Publicanes and sinners: but wisdome is iustified of her children.
20 ¶ *Then began he to vpbraid the cities, wherein most of his great workes were done, because they repented not. *Luke 10.13.*
21 Woe be to thee, Chorazin. Woe be to thee, Bethsaida: for

if the great workes, which were done in you, had beene done in Tyrus and Sidon, they had repented long agone in sacke-cloth and ashes.

22 But I say to you, It shalbe easier for Tyrus and Sidon at the day of iudgement, then for you.

23 And thou, Capernaum, which art lifted vp vnto heauen, shalt be brought downe to hell: for if the great woorkes, which haue bene done in thee, had bene done among them of Sodom, they had remained to this day.

24 But I say vnto you, that it shal be easier for them of the land of Sodom in the day of iudgement, then for thee.

*Luke* 10.21. 25 * At that time Iesus answered, and sayde, I giue thee thanks, O Father, Lorde of heauen and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and men of vnderstanding, and hast opened them vnto babes.

26 It is so, O Father, because thy good pleasure was such.

*Iohn* 3.35. 27 *All things are giuen vnto me of my Father: and *no

*Iohn* 6.46. man knoweth the Sonne, but the Father: neither knoweth any man the Father, but the Sonne, and he to whom the Sonne will reueile *him*.

28 Come vnto me, all yee that are wearie and laden, and I will ease you.

29 Take my yoke on you, & learne of me that I am meeke and lowly in heart: and yee shall finde * rest vnto your soules.

*Iere.* 6.16. *1. Iohn* 5.3. 30 * For my yoke is easie, and my burden light.

## CHAP. XII.

*1 The disciples plucke the eares of corne. 6 Mercie, Sacrifice, 10 The withered hand is healed. 12 We must do good on the Sabbath. 22 The possessed is holpen. 25 A kingdome deuided. 31 Sinne, Blasphemie. 33 The good or euill tree. 34 Vipers. 41 The Ninenites. 42 The Queene of Saba. 48 The true mother and brethren of Christ.*

*Mar.* 2.23. *luke* 6.1. AT *that time Iesus went on a Sabbath day through the corne, and his disciples were an hungred, and began to plucke the eares of corne and to eate,

2 And when the Pharises sawe it, they sayde vnto him, Be-

*Deu.* 23.25. holde, thy disciples doe that *which is not lawfull to doe vpon the Sabbath.

*1. Sam.* 21.6. 3 But he said vnto them, * Haue yee not read what Dauid did when he was an hungred, and they that were with him?

4 Howe he entred into the house of God, and did eate the shew bredde, which was not lawfull for him to eate, neither

for them which were with him, but onely for the * Priestes? *Exod.29.33.*

5 Or haue ye not read in the Lawe, howe that on the Sabbath dayes the Priestes in the Temple * breake the Sabbath, and are blameles? *leuit.8.31. and 24.9. Nom.28.9.*

6 But I say vnto you, ‡ here is one greater then ‡ Temple.

7 Wherefore if ye knew what this is, *I will haue mercie, & not sacrifice, ye would not haue condemned the innocents. *Hose.6.7. chap.9.13.*

8 For the Sonne of man is Lord, *euen* of the Sabbath.

9 *And he departed thence, & went into their Synagogue: *Mar.3.1.*

10 And beholde, there was a man which had *his* hand dried vp. And they asked him, saying, Is it lawfull to heale vpon a Sabbath day? that they might accuse him. *luke 6.6.*

11 And he said vnto them, What man shall there be among you, that hath a sheepe, & if it fall on a Sabbath day into a pit, doeth not take it and lift it out?

12 Howe much more then is a man better then a sheepe? therefore, it is lawfull to doe well on a Sabbath day.

13 Then said he to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it foorth, and it was made whole as the other.

14 Then the Pharises went out, and consulted against him, howe they might destroy him.

15 But when Iesus knewe it, he departed thence, and great multitudes folowed him, and he healed them all,

16 And charged them in threatning wise, that they should not make him knowen,

17 That it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying,

18 *Behold my seruant whom I haue chosen, my beloued in whom my soule deliteth: I will put my Spirit on him, and he shall shewe iudgement to the Gentiles. *Isal.42.1.*

19 He shall not striue, nor crie, neither shall any man heare his voice in the streetes.

20 A bruised reede shall he not breake, and smoking flaxe shall he not quench, till he bring foorth iudgement vnto victorie.

21 And in his Name shall the Gentiles trust.

22 ¶* Then was brought to him, one possessed with a deuill, *both* blind & dumme, and he healed him, so that he *which was* blind and dumme, both spake and sawe. *Luke 11.14.*

23 And all the people were amased, & said, Is not this that sonne of Dauid? *Chap.9.34.*

24 But when the Pharises heard it, they saide, * This man *mar.3.22. luke 11.15.*

casteth the deuils no otherwise ou, that through Beel-zebub the prince of deuils.

25 But Iesus knewe their thoughts, & said to them, Euery kingdome deuided against it selfe, is brought to nought: and euery citie or house, deuided against it selfe, shall not stand.

26 So if Satan cast out Satan, he is deuided against himselfe: howe shall then his kingdome endure?

27 Also if I through Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whom doe your children cast them out? Therefore they shall be your indges.

28 But if I cast out deuils by the Spirit of God, then is the kingdome of God come vnto you.

29 Els how can a man enter into a strong mans house and spoyle his goods, except he first bind the strong man, and then spoyle his house?

30 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

Mar. 3. 28, 29. Luke 12. 10. 1. John 5. 16. 31 * Wherefore I say vnto you, Euery sinne and blasphemie shall be forgiuen vnto men: but the blasphemie *against* the holy Ghost shall not be forgiuen vnto men.

32 And whosoeuer shall speake a word against the Sonne of man, it shall be forgiuen him: but whosoeuer shall speake against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiuen him, neither in this world nor in the world to come.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruite good: or els make the tree euill, and his fruite euill: for the tree is knowen by the fruite.

34 O generations of vipers, howe can you speake good things, when yee are euill? For of the * abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. Luke 6. 45.

35 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth good things: and an euill man out of an euill treasure, bringeth forth euill things.

36 But I say vnto you, that of euery idle woorde that men shal speake, they shal giue account thereof at the day of iudgement.

37 For by thy woordes thou shalt be iustified, and by thy wordes thou shalt be condemned.

Chap. 16. 1. Luke 11. 29. 1. Cor. 1. 22. 38 ¶ * Then answered certaine of the Scribes and of the Pharises, saying, Master, we would see a signe of thee.

39 But he answered and saide to them, An euill and adulterous generation seeketh a signe, but no signe shall begiuen

vnto

vnto it, saue the signe of the Prophet Ionas.

40 * For as Ionas was three dayes, and three nights in the whalles belly: so shall the Sonne of man be three dayes and three nights in the heart of the earth. *Ionas 1.17.*

41 The men of Nineue shall rise in iudgement with this generation, and condemne it: for they * repented at the preaching of Ionas: and beholde, a greater then Ionas is here. *Ionas 3 5.*

42 * The Queene of ỹ South shall rise in iudgement with this generation, and shall condemne it: for she came from the vtmost parees of the earth to heare the wisdome of Solomon: and beholde, a greater then Solomon is here. *1.Kin. 10.1. 2.chro.9.1.*

43 ¶ * Nowe when the vncleane spirite is gone out of a man, he walketh throughout drie places, seeking rest, and findeth none. *Luke 11.24.*

44 Then he saieth, I will returne into mine house from whence I came: and when he is come, he findeth it emptie, swept and garnished.

45 ¶ Then he goeth, and taketh vnto him seuen other spirits worse then himselfe, and they enter in, and dwell there: * and the ende of that man is worse then the beginning. Euen so shall it be with this wicked generation. *Hebr.6.4. and 10.26.*

46 ¶ * While he yet spake to the multitude, beholde, his mother, and his brethren stoode without, desiring to speake with him. *2.pet.2.20. Mar.3.31. luke 8.20.*

47 Then one saide vnto him, Beholde, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speake with thee.

48 But he answered, and said to him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he stretched foorth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Beholde my mother and my brethren.

50 For whosoeuer shall doe my Fathers will which is in heauen, the same is my brother and sister and mother.

## CHAP. XIII.

1 *The parable of the Sower.* 11 *and* 34 *Why Christ spake in parables.* 18 *The exposition of the parable.* 24 *The parable of the tares.* 31 *Of the mustard seede.* 33 *Of the leauen.* 44 *Of the hidden treasure.* 45 *Of the Pearle.* 47 *Of the drawe net cast into the sea.* 53 *Christ is not receiued of his countreymen the Nazarites.*

THe * same day went Iesus out of the house, and sate by the sea side. *Mar.4.1. luke 8.4.5.*

2 And great multitudes resorted vnto him, so that he went into

into a shippe, and sate downe: and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 Then he spake many things to them in parables, saying, Beholde, a sower went forth to sowe.

4 And as he sowed, some fell by the way side, & the foules came and deuoured them vp.

5 And some fell vpon stonie grounde, where they had not much earth, and anon they sprong vp, because they had no depth of earth.

6 And when the sunne was vp, they were parched, and for lacke of rooting, withered away.

7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes sprong vp, and choked them.

8 Some againe fell in good grounde, and brought forth fruite, one *corne* an hundreth folde, some sixtie folde, and another thirtie folde.

9 He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 ¶Then the disciples came, and saide to him, Why speakest thou to them in parables?

11 And he answered and saide vnto them, Because it is giuen vnto you to know the secrets of the kingdome of heauē, but to them it is not giuen.

*Chap. 25.29.* 12 *For whosoeuer hath, to him shalbe giuen, and he shall haue abundance: but whosoeuer hath not, from him shall be taken away, euen that he hath.

13 Therefore speake I to them in parables, because they seeing, doe not see: and hearing, they heare not, neither vnderstand.

14 So in them is fulfilled the prophecie of Esaias, which *Esai.6.9.* *prophecie* sayeth, *By hearing, ye shall heare, and shall not vnderstand, and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceiue. *mark.4.12.* *luke 8.10.*

15 For this peoples heart is waxed fatte, and their eares *iohn 12.40.* are dull of hearing, & with their eyes they haue winked, least *act.28.26.* they should see with their eyes, and heare with their eares, and *rom.11.8.* should vnderstand with their hearts, and should returne, that I might heale them.

16 But blessed *are* your eyes, for they see: and your eares, for they heare.

*Luke 10.24.* 17 *For verely I say vnto you, that many Prophets and righteous men haue desired to see those things which ye see, and haue not seene *them*, and to heare those things which ye heare, and haue not heard *them*.

18 ¶*Heare

18 ¶ *Heare ye therefore the parable of the ſower. *Mar.4.14.*

19 Whenſoeuer any man heareth the worde of that kingdome, and vnderſtandeth it not, that euill one commeth, and catcheth away that which was ſowen in his heart: and this is he which hath receiued the ſeede by the way ſide. *Luke 8.11.*

20 And he that receiued ſeede in the ſtonie grounde, is he which heareth ỹ word, & incontinently with ioy receiueth it,

21 Yet hath he no roote in himſelfe, and dureth but a ſeaſon: for aſſoone as tribulation or perſecution commeth becauſe of the worde, by and by he is offended.

22 And he that receiued the ſeede among thornes, is he that heareth the word: but the care of this world, and the deceitfulnes of riches choke the word, & he is made vnfruitfull.

23 But he that receiued the ſeede in the good grounde, is he that heareth the worde, and vnderſtandeth it, which alſo beareth fruite, and bringeth foorth, ſome an hundreth folde, ſome ſixtie folde, and ſome thirtie folde.

24 ¶ Another parable put he foorth vnto them, ſaying, The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a man which ſowed good ſeede in his fielde.

25 But while men ſlept, there came his enemie, and ſowed tares among the wheate, and went his way.

26 And when the blade was ſprong vp, and brought foorth fruite, then appeared the tares alſo.

27 Then came the ſeruants of the houſholder, and ſaid vnto him, Maſter, ſowedſt not thou good ſeede in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

28 And he ſaid to them, Some enuious man hath done this. Then the ſeruants ſaid vnto him, Wilt thou then that we goe and gather them vp?

29 But he ſaide, Nay, leſt while ye goe about to gather the tares, ye plucke vp alſo with them the wheate.

30 Let both growe together vntill the harueſt, and in time of harueſt I will ſay to the reapers, Gather ye firſt the tares, and binde them in ſheaues to burne them: but gather the wheate into my barne.

31 ¶ *Another parable he put forth vnto them, ſaying, The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a graine of muſtard ſeede, which a man taketh and ſoweth in his fielde: *Mar.4.30. Luke 13.19.

32 Which in deede is the leaſt of all ſeedes: but when it is growen, it is the greateſt among herbes, and it is a tree, ſo that the birds of heauen come and builde in the branches thereof.

22 ¶ *Another

*Luke 13.18.* 33 ¶ * Another parable spake he to them, The kingdome of heauen is like vnto leauen, which a woman taketh and hideth in three peckes of meale, till all be leauened.

*Mark 4.33, 34.* 34 ¶ *All these things spake Iesus vnto the multitude in parables, and without parables spake he not to them.

35 That it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the *Psal. 78.2.* Prophet, saying, * I will open my mouth in parables, and will vtter the things which haue bene kept secret from the fundation of the world.

36 Then sent Iesus the multitude away, and went into the house. And his disciples came vnto him, saying, Declare vnto vs the parable of the tares of that fielde.

37 Then answered he, and said to them, He that soweth the good seede, is the Sonne of man,

38 And the fielde is the world, and the good seede are the children of the kingdome, and the tares are the children of that wicked one.

*Ioel. 3.13. reue. 14.15.* 39 And the enemie that soweth them, is the deuil, * and the harueſt is the end of the world, & the reapers be the Angels.

40 As then the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of this world.

41 The Sonne of man shall send forth his Angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdome all things that offende, and them which doe iniquitie,

42 And shall cast them into a fornace of fire. There shalbe wayling and gnashing of teeth.

*Dan. 12.3.* 43 * Then shall the iust men shine as the sunne in the kingdome of their Father. He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

44 ¶ Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a treasure hid in the fielde, which when a man hath found, he hideth it, and for ioy thereof departeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that fielde.

45 ¶ Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like to a marchant man, that seeketh good pearles,

46 Who hauing founde a pearle of great price, went and solde all that he had, and bought it.

47 ¶ Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a drawe net cast into the sea, that gathereth of all kindes of *thinges*.

48 Which, when it is full, men drawe to land, and sit and gather the good into vessels, and cast the bad away.

49 So shall it be at the end of the world. The Angels shall

goe

goe forth, and seuer the bad from among the iust,

50 And shall cast them into a fornace of fire: there shall be wayling, and gnashing of teeth.

51 ¶Iesus said vnto them, Vnderstand ye all these things? They said vnto him, Yea, Lord.

52 Then said he vnto them, Therefore euery Scribe which is taught vnto the kingdome of heauen, is like vnto an housholder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things both newe and olde.

53 ¶And it came to passe, that when Iesus had ended these parables, he departed thence,

54 * And came into his owne countrey, and taught them in their Synagogue, so that they were astonied, and saide, Whence cometh this wisdome & great workes vnto this man? *Mar.6.1.* *luke 4.16.*

55 Is not this the carpenters sonne? Is not his mother called Marie, * and his brethren Iames and Ioses, and Simon and Iudas? *Iohn 6.42.*

56 And are not his sisters all with vs? Whence then hath he all these things?

57 And they were offended with him. Then Iesus saide to them, * A Prophet is not without honour, saue in his owne countrey, and in his owne house. *Mar.6.4.* *luke 4.24.*

58 And he did not many great workes there, for their vnbeliefes sake. *iohn 4.44.*

## CHAP. XIIII.

2 *Herods iudgement of Christ.* 3 *Wherefore Iohn was bound,* 10 *and beheaded.* 13 *Iesus departeth.* 18 *Of the fiue loaues, &c.* 23 *Christ prayeth.* 24 *The Apostles tossed with the waues.* 27 *Faith.* 30 *Peter in ieopardie.* 36 *The hemme of Christs garment.*

AT * that time Herod the Tetrarch heard of the fame of Iesus, *Mar.6.14.* *luke 9.17.*

2 And saide vnto his seruants, This is that Iohn Baptist, he is risen againe from the dead, and therefore great workes are wrought by him.

3 *For Herod had taken Iohn, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife. *Mar.6.17.* *luke 3.19.*

4 For Iohn saide vnto him, It is not * lawfull for thee to haue her. *Leuit.18.18.* *and 20.21.*

5 And when he woulde haue put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a * Prophet. *Chap.21.26.*

6 But when Herods birth day was kept, the daughter of Herodias daunced before them, and pleased Herod.

7 Wherefore

7 Wherefore he promised with an othe, that he woulde giue her whatsoeuer she would aske.

8 And shee being before instructed of her mother, salde, Giue me here Iohn Baptista head in a platter.

9 And the king was sorie: neuerthelesse because of the othe, and them that sate with him at the table, he commanded it to be giuen *her*,

10 And sent, and beheaded Iohn in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a platter, and giuen to the maide, and she brought it vnto her mother.

12 And his disciples came, and tooke vp the body, and buried it, and went, and tolde Iesus.

*Mar.6.32. luke 9.10.* 13 * And when Iesus heard it, he departed thence by ship into a desart place apart. And when the multitude had heard it, they followed him on foote out of the cities.

14 And Iesus went foorth and sawe a great multitude, and was mooued with compassion towarde them, and he healed their sicke.

*Mar.6.35. luke 9.12. iohn 6.5.* 15 ¶ And whē euen was come, *his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desart place, and the time is already past: let the multitude depart, that they may goe into the townes, and buy them vitailes.

16 But Iesus said to them, They haue no neede to go away: giue ye them to eate.

17 Then said they vnto him, We haue here but fiue loaues, and two fishes.

18 And he said, Bring them hither to me.

19 And he commanded the multitude to sit downe on the grasse, and tooke the fiue loaues and two fishes, and looked vp to heauen, and blessed, and brake, and gaue the loaues to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

20 And they did all eate, and were sufficed, and they tooke vp of the fragments that remained, twelue baskets full.

21 And they that had eaten, were about fiue thousand men, beside women and litle children.

22 ¶ And straightway Iesus compelled his disciples to enter into a shippe, and to goe ouer before him, while he sent the multitude away.

23 And assoone as he had sent the multitude away, he went vp into a mountaine alone to pray: * and when the euening was come, he was there alone.

*Mar.6.45, 46,47. iohn 6.16,17.18.* 24 And the shippe was nowe in the middes of the sea, and

was

was tossed with waues: for it was a contrary winde.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Iesus went vnto them, walking on the sea.

26 And when his disciples sawe him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit, & cried out for feare.

27 But straightway Iesus spake vnto them, saying, Bee of good comfort, it is I: be not afraide.

28 Then Peter answered him, and said, Master, if it be thou, bid me come vnto thee on the water.

29 And he saide, Come. And when Peter was come downe out of the shippe, he walked on the water, to goe to Iesus.

30 But when he sawe a mightie winde, he was afraide: and as he began to sinke, he cried, saying, Master, saue me.

31 So immediatly Iesus stretched forth his hand, & caught him, and saide to him, O thou of litle faith, wherefore diddest thou dout?

32 And assoone as they were come into the ship, the winde ceased.

33 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a trueth thou art the Sonne of God.

34 ¶ * And when they were come ouer, they came into the land of Gennezaret. *Mar.6.54.*

35 And when the men of that place knewe him, they sent out into all that countrey round about, and brought vnto him all that were sicke,

36 And besought him, that they might touch the hemme of his garment onely: and as many as touched it, were made whole.

## CHAP. XV.

*3 The commandements and traditions of men. 11 Offence. 13 The plant which is rooted vp. 14 Blinde leading the blinde. 18 The heart. 22 The woman of Chanaan. 26 The childrens bread: whelps. 28 Faith. 32 4000. men fed. 36 Thanke giuing.*

THen came to Iesus the Scribes and Pharises, which were of Hierusalem, saying,

2 *Why doe thy disciples transgresse the tradition of the Elders? for they wash not their hands when they eate bread. *Mar.7.1.*

3 But he answered and said vnto them, Why doe yee also transgresse the commandement of God by your tradition? *Exo.20.12. deut.5.16.*

4 * For God hath commaunded, saying, Honour thy father and mother: * and he that curseth father or mother, let him dye the death. *ephes.6.2. Exo.21.17. leuit.20.9.*

5 But *prou.20.20.*

5 But ye say, Whosoeuer shall say to father or mother, By the gift that is *offered* by me, thou mayest haue profite,

6 Though he honour not his father, or his mother, *shalbe free*: thus haue ye made the commandement of God of no authoritie by your traditions.

7 O hypocrites, Esaias prophecied well of you, saying,

*Esai.29.13.* 8 * This people draweth neere vnto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with the lippes, but their heart is farre off from me.

9 But in vaine they worshippe me, teaching *for* doctrines, mens precepts.

10 Then he called the multitude vnto him, & said to them, Heare and vnderstand.

*Mar.7.18.* 11 * That which goeth into the mouth, defileth not the man, but that which commeth out of the mouth, that defileth the man.

12 ¶ Then came his disciples, and sayd vnto him, Perceiuest thou not, that the Pharises are offended in hearing *this* saying?

*Iohn 15.2.* 13 But he answered, & said, * Euery plant which mine heauenly Father hath not planted, shalbe rooted vp.

*Luke 6.39.* 14 Let them alone, they be the * blind leaders of the blind: and if the blind leadeth ye blind, both shall fall into the ditch.

*Mar.7.17.* 15 ¶ * Then answered Peter, and said to him, Declare vnto vs this parable.

16 Then said Iesus, Are ye yet without vnderstanding?

17 Perceiue ye not yet, that whatsoeuer entreth into the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

18 But those things which proceede out of the mouth, come from the heart, and they defile the man.

*Gene.6.5. and 8.21.* 19 For out of the heart * come euill thoughtes, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false testimonies, slanders.

*mar.7.21.* 20 These are the things which defile the man: but to eate with vnwashen handes, defileth not the man.

*Mar.7.24, 25.* 21 * And Iesus went thence, and departed into the coastes of Tyrus and Sidon.

22 And behold, a woman a Cananite came out of the same coastes, and cryed, saying vnto him, Haue mercie on me, O Lord, the sonne of Dauid; my daughter is miserably vexed with a deuil.

23 But he answered her not a word. Then came to him his disciples, and besought him, saying, Sende her away, for shee

cryeth

eyeth after vs.

24 But he answered, and sayd, I am not sent, but vnto the *lost sheepe of the house of Israel. *Chap.10.6.*

25 Yet she came, & worshipped him, saying, Lord, helpe me.

26 And he answered, and sayd, It is not good to take the childrens bread, and to cast it to whelpes.

27 But she sayd, Trueth, Lord: yet in deede the whelpes eate of the crummes, which fall from their masters table.

28 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto her, O woman, great is thy fayth: be it to thee, as thou desirest. And her daughter was made whole at that houre.

29 ¶ So Iesus * went away from thence, and came neere vnto the Sea of Galile, and went vp into a mountaine, and sate downe there. *Mar.7.31.*

30 And great multitudes came vnto him, * hauing with them, halt, blinde, dumme, maimed, and many other, and cast them downe at Iesus feete, and he healed them. *Esai.35.5.*

31 In so much that the multitude wondered, to see the dumme speake, the maimed whole, the halt to goe, and the blinde to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

32 *Then Iesus called his disciples vnto him, & said, I haue compassion on this multitude, because they haue continued with me already three dayes, and haue nothing to eate: and I wil not let them depart fasting, least they faint in the way. *Mar.8.1.*

33 And his disciples said vnto him, Whence should we get so much bread in the wildernes, as should suffice so great a multitude!

34 And Iesus sayd vnto them, Howe many loaues haue ye? And they sayd, Seuen, and a fewe litle fishes.

35 Then he commaunded the multitude to sit downe on the ground,

36 And tooke the seuen loaues, and the fishes, and gaue thankes, and brake *them*, and gaue to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

37 And they did all eate, & were sufficed: and they tooke vp of the fragments that remained, seuen baskets full.

38 And they that had eaten, were foure thousand men, beside women, and litle children.

39 Then *Iesus* sent away the multitude, and tooke ship, and came into the partes of Magdala.

CHAP. XVI.

4 *The signe of Ionas.* 6 *The leauen of the Pharises,* 12 *for*

*their doctrine.* 13 *The peoples opinion of Christ.* 17 *Peter confesseth of God.* 18 *The rocke.* 19 *The keyes.* 21 *Christ foresheweth his death.* 24 *The forsaking of ones selfe, and the crosse.* 25 *To lose the life.*

*Chap.12.38. mar.8.11.* THen * came the Pharises & Sadduces, and did tempt *him*, desiring him to shewe them a signe from heauen.

2 But he answered, and sayd vnto them, When it is euening ye say, Faire weather: for the skie is red.

*Esa.*

*Luke 12.54.* 3 * And in the morning *ye say*, To day *shall be* a tempest: for the skie is red and lowring. O hypocrites, ye can discerne the face of the skie, and can yee not *discerne* the signes of the times?

*Chap.12.39.* 4 * The wicked generation, & adulterous seeketh a signe, but there shall no signe be giuen it, but that signe of the Prophet * Ionas: so he left them, and departed.

*Ionas 2.17.*

*M*

5 ¶ And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had * forgotten to take bread *with them.*

*Mar.8.14.*

*Luke 12.1.* 6 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Take heede, and beware of the leauen of the Pharises and Sadduces.

*Fo*

*La*

7 And they reasoned among themselues, saying, *It is* because we haue brought no bread.

*M*

8 But Iesus knowing it, sayd vnto them, O ye of litle faith, why reason yee *thus* among your selues, because yee haue brought no bread?

9 Doe ye not yet perceiue, neither remember the fiue loaues, when there were * fiue thousand *men*, and howe many baskets tooke ye vp?

*Chap.4.17. Iohn 6.9. 6 chap.15.34.*

10 Neither the seuen loaues when there were * foure thousand *men*, and howe many baskets tooke ye vp?

*G*

*an*

*m*

11 Why perceiue ye not that I sayd not vnto you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leauen of the Pharises and Sadduces?

12 Then vnderstood they that he had not sayde that they should beware of the leauen of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharises and Sadduces.

*M*

*Mar.8.27. Luke 9.18.*

*25*

13 ¶ * Nowe when Iesus came into the coastes of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whome doe men say that I, the Sonne of man am?

14 And they sayd, Some *say*, Iohn Baptist: and some, Elias: and others, Ieremias, or one of the Prophets.

15 He sayd vnto them, But whom say ye that I am?

*Iohn 6.69.*

16 Then Simon Peter answered, and sayd, * Thou art that Christ,

Christ, the Sonne of the liuing God.

17 And Iesus answered, and sayd to him, Blessed art thou, Simon, the sonne of Ionas: for flesh and blood hath not reuealed it vnto thee, but my Father which is in heauen.

18 And I say also vnto thee, that thou art *Peter, and vpon this rocke I will build my Church: and the gates of hell shall not ouercome it. *John* 1.42.

19 And I * will giue vnto thee the keyes of the kingdome of heauen, and whatsoeuer thou shalt binde vpon earth, shalbe bound in heauen: and whatsoeuer thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heauen. *John* 20.21.

20 Then he charged his disciples, that they should tell no man that he was Iesus that Christ.

21 ¶ From that time foorth Iesus began to shewe vnto his disciples, that he must goe vnto Hierusalem, and suffer many things of the Elders, and of the hie Priests, and Scribes, and be slaine, and be raised againe the third day.

22 Then Peter tooke him aside, and began to rebuke him, saying, Master, pitie thy selfe: this shall not be vnto thee.

23 Then he turned backe, and sayd vnto Peter, Get thee behinde me, Satan: thou art an offence vnto me, because thou vnderstandest not the things that are of God, but the things that are of men.

24 Iesus then sayd to his disciples, *If any man will follow mee, let him forsake himselfe, and take vp his crosse, and followe me. *Chap.* 10.38. *mar.* 8.34. *luke* 9.23.

25 For, *whosoeuer will saue his life shal lose it: and whosoeuer shall lose his life for my sake, shall finde it. *and* 14.27. *Chap.* 10.39.

26 *For what shal it profite a man though he should winne the whole world, if he lose his owne soule? or what shall a man giue for recompense of his soule? *mar.* 8.35. *luke* 9. 24.25, 26.

27 For the Sonne of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his Angels, and * then shall he giue to euery man according to his deedes. *and* 17.33. *John* 12.25. *Psal.* 62.12.

28 *Verely I say vnto you, there bee some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they haue seene the Sonne of man come in his kingdome. *rom.* 2.6. *Mat.* 9.1. *luke* 9.27.

## CHAP. XVII.

*2 The transfiguration of Christ. 5 Christ ought to bee heard. 11 Elias. 13 Iohn Baptist. 17 The vnbeliefe of the Apostles. 20 The power of faith. 21 Prayer and fasting. 22 Christ foretelleth his passion. 24 He payeth tribute.*

*Mar.9.2.* *luke 9.28.* And * after sixe dayes, Iesus tooke Peter, and Iames, and Iohn his brother, and brought them vp into an hie mountaine apart,

2 And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the Sunne, and his clothes were as white as the light.

3 And beholde, there appeared vnto them Moses, and Elias, talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, & sayd to Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be here: if thou wilt, let vs make here three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

5 While he yet spake, beholde, a bright cloude shadowed them: and beholde, there *came* a voyce out of the cloude, saying, * This is that my beloued Sonne, in whome I am well pleased: heare him. *Chap.3.17. 2.pet.1.17.*

6 And when the disciples heard that, they fell on their faces, and were sore afraide.

7 Then Iesus came and touched them, and sayd, Arise, and be not afrayd.

8 And when they lifted vp their eyes, they sawe no man, saue Iesus onely.

9 ¶ And as they came downe from the mountaine, Iesus charged them, saying, Shewe the vision to no man, vntill the Sonne of man rise againe from the dead.

*Mar.9.11, 12.* 10 * And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the Scribes that * Elias must first come?

*Mala.4.5. ecclus.48.10.* 11 And Iesus answered, and sayd vnto them, Certainely Elias must first come, and restore all things.

12 But I say vnto you, that Elias is come already, and they knewe him not, but haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they would: likewise shall also the Sonne of man suffer of them.

13 Then the disciples perceiued that he spake vnto them of Iohn Baptist.

*Mar.9.14. luke 9.38.* 14 ¶ * And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certaine man, and fell downe at his feete,

15 And said, Master, haue pitie on my sonne: for he is lunatike, and is sore vexed: for oft times hee falleth into the fire, and oft times into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they coulde not heale him.

17 Then Iesus answered, and said, O generation faithlesse, and crooked, howe long how shall I be with you? how long now shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And

18 And Iesus rebuked the deuill: and he went out of him: and the childe was healed at that houre.

19 Then came the disciples to Iesus apart, and sayd, Why could not we cast him out?

20 And Iesus sayd vnto them, Because of your vnbeliefe: for * verely I say vnto you, if ye haue sayth, as much as a graine of mustard seede, ye shall say vnto this mountaine, Remoue hence to yonder place, and it shall remoue: and nothing shalbe vnpossible vnto you. *Luke 17.6.*

21 Howbeit this kinde goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.

22 ¶ And they * being in Galile, Iesus said vnto them, The sonne of man shall be deliuered into the hands of men, *Chap.20 17. mar.9 31. luke 9.44.*

23 And they shall kill him, but the thirde day shall he rise againe: and they were very sorie. *and 7.24.*

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that receiued polle money, came to Peter, and said, Doeth not your Master pay polle money?

25 He sayd, Yes. And when hee was come into the house, Iesus preuented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? Of whom doe the kings of the earth take tribute, or polle money? of their children, or of strangers?

26 Peter sayd vnto him, Of strangers. Then sayd Iesus vnto him, Then are the children free.

27 Neuertheless, least we should offend them, goe to the sea, and cast in an angle, and take the first fish that commeth vp, and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt finde a piece of twentie pence: that take, and giue it vnto them for me and thee.

## CHAP. XVIII.

*1 The greatest in the kingdome of God. 5 To receiue a litle childe. 6 To giue offence. 7 Offences. 9 The pulling out of the eye. 10 The Angels. 12 The lost sheepe. 15 The telling of one his fault. 17 Excommunication. 21 We must alwayes pardon the brother that repenteth. 23 The parable of the King that taketh an account of his seruants.*

THe * same time the disciples came vnto Iesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdome of heauen? *Mar.9.34. luke 9.46.*

2 And Iesus called a litle childe vnto him, and set him in the middes of them,

3 And sayd, Verely I say vnto you, except ye be * conuerted, and become as litle children, ye shall not enter into the *Chap.5.14. 1.cor.14.20.*

kingdome of heauen.

4 Whosoeuer therefore shall humble himselfe as this litle childe, the same is the greatest in the kingdome of heauen.

5 And whosoeuer shall receiue one such litle childe in my Name, receiueth me.

*Mar.9.42. Luke 17.2.* 6 * But whosoeuer shall offende one of these little ones which beleeue in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his necke, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

7 Wo *be* vnto the world because of offences: for it must needes be that offences shall come, but wo *be* to that man, by whom the offence commeth.

*Chap.5.29, 30.marke 9.45.* 8 * Wherefore, if thine hand or thy foote cause thee to offend, cut them off, and cast *them* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life, halt, or maimed, then hauing two hands, or two feete, to be cast into euerlasting fire.

9 And if thine eye cause thee to offend, plucke it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, then hauing two eyes to be cast into hell fire.

10 See that ye despise not one of these litle ones: for I say vnto you, that in heauen their * Angels alwayes beholde the face of my Father which is in heauen.

*Psal.34.8.*

*Luke 19.10.* 11 For * the Sonne of man is come to saue that which was lost.

*Luke 15.4.* 12 How thinke ye? * If a man haue an hundreth sheepe, and one of them be gone astray, doeth hee not leaue ninetie and nine, and goe into the mountaines, and seeke that which is gone astray?

13 And if so be that he finde it, verely I say vnto you, hee reioyceth more of that sheepe, then of the ninetie and nine which went not astray:

14 So it is not the will of your Father which is in heauen, that one of these litle ones should perish.

*Leui.19.17. Luke 17.3. iames 5.19.* 15 ¶ * Moreouer, if thy brother trespasse against thee, goe and tell him his fault betweene thee & him alone: if he heare thee, thou hast wonne thy brother.

*Deu.19.15. iohn 8.17. 2.cor.13.1. hebr.10.28.* 16 But if he heare thee not, take yet with thee one or two, that by the * mouth of two or three witnesses euery worde may be confirmed.

17 And if he refuse to heare them, tell it vnto the Church: and if he refuse to heare the Church also, let him be vnto thee as an heathen man, and a Publicane.

18 Verely I say vnto you, * Whatsoeuer ye binde on earth, shalbe bound in heauen: and * whatsoeuer ye loose on earth, shall be loosed in heauen. 1. *Cor.* 5. 4. 2. *Thes.* 3. 14. *Iohn* 20. 23.

19 Againe, verely I say vnto you, that if two of you shall agree in earth vpon any thing, whatsoeuer they shall desire, it shalbe giuen them of my Father which is in heauen.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my Name, there am I in the middes of them.

21 Then came Peter to him, and sayd, Master, how oft shall my brother sinne against me, and I shal forgiue him? * vnto seuen times? *Luke* 17. 4.

22 Iesus said vnto him, I say not to thee, vnto seuen times, but vnto seuentie times seuen times.

23 Therefore is the kingdome of heauen likened vnto a certaine king, which would take an account of his seruants.

24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought vnto him, which ought him ten thousand talents.

25 And because he had nothing to pay, his Lord commaunded him to be solde, and his wife, and *his* children, and all that he had, and *the dette* to be payed.

26 The seruant therefore fell downe, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, refraine thine anger toward me, and I will pay thee all.

27 Then that seruants Lord had compassion, & loosed him, and forgaue him the dette.

28 But when the seruant was departed, hee found one of his fellowe seruants, which ought him an hundred pence, and he layd hands on him, and thratled him, saying, Pay mee that thou oweſt.

29 Then his fellow seruant fell downe at his feete, and besought him, saying, Refraine thine anger toward mee, and I will pay thee all.

30 Yet he would not, but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the dette.

31 And when his *other* fellowe seruants sawe what was done, they were very sorie, and came, and declared vnto their Lorde all that was done.

32 Then his Lord called him vnto him, and said to him, O euill seruant, I forgaue thee all that dette, because thou prayedst mee.

33 Oughteſt not thou also to haue had pitie on thy fellow seruant, euen as I had pitie on thee?

34 So his Lorde was wroth, and deliuered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due to him.

35 So likewise shall mine heauenly Father doe vnto you, except ye forgiue from your hearts, eche one to his brother their trespasses.

## CHAP. XIX.

*2 The sicke are healed. 3 and 7 A bill of diuorcement 12 Eunuches. 13 Children brought to Christ. 17 God onely good. The commandements must be kept. 21 A perfect man. 23 A rich man. 26 Saluation commeth of God. 27 To leaue all and followe Christ.*

*Mar.10.1.* AND * it came to passe, that when Iesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galile, and came into the coastes of Iudea beyond Iordan.

2 And great multitudes folowed him, and he healed them there.

3 ¶ Then came vnto him the Pharises tempting him, and saying to him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife vpon enery occasion?

4 And he answered, & sayd vnto them, Haue ye not read, *Gen.1.27.* *that he which made *them* at the beginning, made them male and female,

*Gen.2.24.* *1.cor.6.16.* *ephes.5.31.* 5 And sayd, * For this cause, shall a man leaue father and mother, and cleaue vnto his wife, and they which were two shall be one flesh?

6 Wherefore they are no more twaine, but one flesh. Let no man therefore put asunder that, which God hath coupled together.

*Deut.24.1.* 7 They sayd to him, Why did then *Moses commaund to giue a bill of diuorcement, and to put her away?

8 He sayd vnto them, Moses, because of the hardnesse of your heart, suffered you to put away your wiues: but from the beginning it was not so.

*Chap.5.32.* *mar.10.11.* *luke 16.18.* *1.cor.7.1,11.* 9 I say therefore vnto you, * that whosoeuer shall put away his wife, except *it be* for whoredome, and marry another, committeth adulterie: and whosoeuer marieth her which is diuorced, doeth commit adulterie.

10 *Then* sayd his disciples to him, If the matter be so betweene man and wife, it is not good to marrie.

11 But hee sayde vnto them, All men cannot receiue this thing, saue they to whom it is giuen.

12 For there are some eunuches, which were so borne of

*their*

their mothers bellie: and there be ſome eunuches, which bee gelded by men: and there be ſome eunuches, which haue gelded themſelues for the kingdome of heauen. He that is able to receiue *this*, let him receiue it.

13 ¶*Then were brought to him litle children ẏ he ſhould put *his* hãds on them, & pray: and the diſciples rebuked them. *Mar.*10.13. *luke* 18.15.

14 But Ieſus ſaid, Suffer the litle children, and forbid them not to come to me: for of ſuch is the kingdome of heauen. *chap.*18.3.

15 And when hee had put his hands on them, hee departed thence.

16 ¶*And behold, one came and ſaid vnto him, Good Maſter, what good thing ſhall I doe, that I may haue eternal life? *Mar.*10.17. *luke* 18.18.

17 And he ſaid vnto him, Why calleſt thou me good? there is none good but one, euen God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keepe the commandements.

18 He ſaide to him, Which? And Ieſus ſaide, *Theſe, Thou ſhalt not kill: Thou ſhalt not commit adulterie: Thou ſhalt not ſteale: Thou ſhalt not beare falſe witneſſe. *Exod.*20.13. *deut.*5.16. *rom.*13.9.

19 Honour thy father & mother: and thou ſhalt loue thy neighbour as thy ſelfe.

20 The yong man ſayd vnto him, I haue obſerued all theſe things from my youth: what lacke I yet?

21 Ieſus ſaid vnto him, If thou wilt be perfite, go, ſell that thou haſt, and giue it to the poore, and thou ſhalt haue treaſure in heauen, and come and follow me.

22 And when the yong man heard that ſaying, hee went away ſorowfull: for he had great poſſeſſions.

23 Then Ieſus ſaid vnto his diſciples, Verely, I ſay vnto you, that a rich man ſhal hardly enter into the kingdom of heauen.

24 And againe I ſay vnto you, It is eaſier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

25 And when his diſciples heard it, they were exceedingly amaſed, ſaying, Who then can be ſaued?

26 And Ieſus beheld them, and ſaid vnto them, With men this is vnpoſſible, but with God all things are poſſible.

27 ¶*Then anſwered Peter, & ſaid to him, Behold, we haue forſaken all and followed thee: what therefore ſhall we haue? *Mar.*10.28. *luke* 18.28.

28 And Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Verely I ſay to you, that whē the Sonne of man ſhall ſit in the throne of his Maieſtie, yee which followed me in the regeneration, *ſhall ſit alſo vpon twelue thrones, and iudge the twelue tribes of Iſrael. *Luke* 22.29.

29 And

29 And whosoeuer shall forsake houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or landes, for my Names sake, he shall receiue an hundreth folde more, and shal
*chap. 20. 16.* inherite euerlasting life.
*mark. 10. 31.* 30 *But many that are first, shalbe last, & the last *shalbe* first.
*luke 13. 30.*

## CHAP. XX.

1 *Labourers hired into the vineyard.* 15 *The euill eye.* 17 *Her foretelleth his passion.* 20 *Zebedeus sonnes.* 22 *The cuppe.* 28 *Christ is our minister.* 30 *Two blinde men.*

FOr the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a certaine householder, which went out at the dawning of the day, to hire labourers into his vineyard.

2 And he agreed with the labourers for a penie a day, and sent them into his vineyard.

3 And he went out about the thirde houre, and sawe other standing idle in the market place,

4 And saide vnto them, Goe ye also into *my* vineyarde, and whatsoeuer is right, I will giue you: and they went their way.

5 Againe he went out about the sixt and ninth houre, and did likewise.

6 And he went about the eleuenth houre, and found other standing idle, and said vnto them, Why stande ye here all the day idle?

7 They said vnto him, Because no man hath hired vs. Hee said vnto them, Goe ye also into *my* vineyard, and whatsoeuer is right, that shall ye receiue.

8 ¶ And when euen was come, the master of the vineyard said vnto his stewarde, Call the labourers, and giue them their hire, beginning at the last, till *thou come* to the first.

9 And they *which were hired* about the eleuenth houre, came and receiued euery man a penie.

10 Now when ỹ first came, they supposed that they should receiue more, but they likewise receiued euery man a penie.

11 And when they had receiued it, they murmured against the master of the house,

12 Saying, These last haue wrought but one houre, and thou hast made them equall vnto vs, which haue borne the burden and heate of the day.

13 And he answered one of them, saying, Friend, I do thee no wrong: diddest thou not agree with me for a penie?

14 Take that which is thine owne, and goe thy way: I wil giue vnto this last, as much as to thee,

15 Is it not lawfull for me to do as I wil with mine owne? Is thine eye euill because I am good?

16 *So the last shalbe first, and the first last: for many are called, but fewe chosen. *Chap. 19.30. and 22.14.*

17 *And Iesus went vp to Hierusalem, & tooke the twelue disciples apart in the way, and said vnto them, *mar. 10.31. luke 13.30.*

18 Behold, wee goe vp to Hierusalem, and the Sonne of man shall be delinered vnto the chiefe Priestes, and vnto the Scribes, and they shall condemne him to death. *Mark. 10.32. luke 18.31.*

19 And *shall deliuer him to the Gentiles, to mocke, and to scourge, and to crucifie *him*, but the thirde day he shall rise againe. *Iohn 18.32.*

20 *Then came to him the mother of Zebedeus children with her sonnes, worshipping *him*, & desiring a certaine thing of him. *Mar. 10.35.

21 And he said vnto her, What wouldest thou? She said to him, Graunt that these my two sonnes may sit, the one at thy right hand, and the other at thy left hand in thy kingdome.

22 And Iesus answered and saide, Yee knowe not what ye aske. Are ye able to drinke of the cup that I shal drinke of, and to bee baptized with the baptisme that I shall bee baptized with? They said to him, We are able.

23 And he saide vnto them, Ye shall drinke in deede of my cup, and shall be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with, but to sit at my right hande, and at my left hande, is not mine to giue: but *it shall be giuen* to them for whome it is prepared of my Father.

24 * And when the *other* tenne heard this, they disdained at the two brethren *Mar. 10.41. luke 22.25.*

25 Therfore Iesus called them vnto him, and said, Ye know that the lordes of the Gentiles haue domination ouer them, and they that are great exercise authoritie ouer them.

26 But it shall not be so among you: but whosoeuer will be great among you, let him be your seruant.

27 And whosoeuer will bee chiefe among you, let him bee your seruant.

28 *Euen as the Sonne of man came not to be serued, but to serue, and to giue his life for the ransome of many. *Phil. 2.7.*

29 ¶ * And as they departed from Iericho, a great multitude folowed him. *Mar. 10.46. luke 18.35.*

30 And beholde, two blinde men sitting by the way side, when they heard that Iesus passed by, cryed, saying, O Lord,

Lord, the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on vs.

31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they should holde their peace: but they cried the more, saying, O Lorde, the sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on vs.

32 Then Iesus stoode still, and called them, and said, What will ye that I should doe to you?

33 They said to him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened.

34 And Iesus moued with compassion, touched their eyes, and immediatly their eyes receiued sight, and they followed him.

## CHAP. XXI.

*1 Christ rideth on an asse into Hierusalem. 12 He casteth out the sellers. 13 The house of prayer. 19 The withered figtree. 23 Johns baptisme. 28 Who doe the will of God. 30 Publicanes. Harlots. 33 Gods vineyard. The Iewes. 38 The sonne killed of the husbandmen. 42 The corner stone.*

*Mark.11.1. Luke 19.29.* AND *when they drew neere to Hierusalem, & were come to Bethphage, vnto the mount of the Oliues, then sent Iesus two disciples,

2 Saying to them, Goe into the towne that is ouer against you, and anon ye shall finde an asse bounde, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them vnto me.

3 And if any man say ought vnto you, say ye, that the Lord hath neede of them, and straightway he will let them goe.

4 All this was done that it might bee fulfilled, which was spoken by the Prophet, saying,

*Esai. 62.11. zech.9.9. Iohn 12.15.* 5 ¶ *Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Beholde, thy King cometh vnto thee, meeke, and sitting vpon an asse, and a colte, the foale of an asse vsed to the yoke.

6 So the disciples went, and did as Iesus had commaunded them,

7 And brought the asse and the colte, & put on them their clothes, and set him thereon.

8 And a great multitude spred their garments in the way: and other cut downe branches from the trees, & strawed them in the way.

9 Moreouer, the people that went before, & they also that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid, blessed *be* hee that commeth in the name of the Lorde, Hosanna *thou which art* in the highest *heauens*.

*Mar.11.11. Luke 19.45. Iohn 2.13.* 10 *And when he was come into Hierusalem, all the citie was mooued, saying, Who is this?

11 And

11 And the people saide, This is Iesus that Prophet of Nazareth in Galile.

12 ¶ And Iesus went into the Temple of God, and cast out all them *that sold and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seates of them that solde doues,

*Deut.14.25.

13 And said to them, It is written, *My house shalbe called the house of prayer: But *ye haue made it a denne of theeues.

*Esai.56.7. *Iere.7.11.

14 Then the blinde and the halt came to him in the Temple, and he healed them.

*mar.11.17. luke 19.46.

15 But when the chiefe Priestes and Scribes sawe the marueiles that he did, and the children crying in the Temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Soune of Dauid, they disdained,

16 And said vnto him, Hearest thou what these say? And Iesus saide vnto them, Yea: read ye neuer, * By the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast made perfit the praise?

*Psal.8.2.

17 ¶ So hee left them, and went out of the citie vnto Bethania, and lodged there.

18 And *in the morning, as he returned into the citie, hee was hungrie.

*Mar.11.12.

19 And seeing a figge tree in the way, hee came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaues only, and said to it, Neuer fruite grow on thee henceforwards. And anone the figge tree withered.

20 And when his disciples sawe it, they marueiled, saying, How soone is the figge tree withered?

21 And Iesus answered and saide vnto them, * Verely I say vnto you, if ye haue faith, and doute not, ye shall not onely do that, *which I haue done* to the figge tree, but also if ye say vnto this mountaine, Take thy selfe away, and cast thy selfe into the sea, it shall be done.

*Chap.17.20.

22 * And whatsoeuer ye shall aske in prayer, if ye beleeue, ye shall receiue it.

*Chap.7.7. *iohn* 15.7.

23 ¶ *And when he was come into the Temple, the chiefe Priestes, and the Elders of the people came vnto him, as hee was teaching, and saide, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authoritie?

*1.*iohn* 5.14. *Mar.11.27. 28.*luke* 20. 1,2.

24 Then Iesus answered and saide vnto them, I also will aske of you a certaine thing, which if ye tell mee, I likewise will tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

25 The baptisme of Iohn, whence was it? from heauen, or of men? Then they reasoned among themselues, saying, If we

shall

shall say, From heauen, hee will say vnto vs, Why did ye not then beleeue him?

*Chap.14.5. mark.6.20.* 26 And if we say, Of men, we feare the multitude, * for all holde Iohn as a Prophet.

27 Then they answered Iesus, and saide, We can not tell. And he saide vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authoritie I doe these things.

28 ¶ But what thinke ye? A *certaine* man had two sonnes, and came to the elder, and said, Sonne, goe and worke to day in my vineyard.

29 But he answered, and said, I will not: yet afterward hee repented himselfe, and went.

30 Then came he to the second, and saide likewise: And he answered, and said, I will, syr: yet he went not.

31 Whether of them twaine did the will of the Father? They said vnto him, The first. Iesus said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that the Publicanes, and the harlots goe before you into the kingdome of God.

32 For Iohn came vnto you in the way of righteousnes, and ye beleeued him not: but the Publicanes and the harlots beleeued him, and ye, though ye saw it, were not moued with repentance afterward, that ye might beleeue him.

*Esai.5.1. ver.2.21. mark.12.1. luke 20.9.* 33 ¶ Heare another parable. There was a certaine housholder, * which planted a vineyarde, & hedged it round about, and made a winepresse therein, and built a towre, & let it out to husbandmen, and went into a strange countrey.

34 And when the time of the fruite drewe neere, hee sent his seruants to the husbandmen to receiue the fruites thereof.

35 And the husbandmen tooke his seruants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Againe hee sent other seruants, moe then the first: and they did the like vnto them.

37 But last of all hee sent vnto them his owne Sonne, saying, They will reuerence my Sonne.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the Sonne, they saide among themselues, * This is the heire: come, let vs kil him, and let vs take his inheritance.

*Chap.26.34. and 27.1. Iohn 11.53.*

39 So they tooke him, and cast him out of the vineyarde, and slewe him.

40 When therefore the Lord of the vineyard shall come, what will he doe to those husbandmen?

41 They said vnto him, He will cruelly destroy those wic-

ked

ked men, and will let out his vineyarde vnto other husbandmen, which shall deliuer him the fruites in their seasons.

42 Iesus saide vnto them, Read ye neuer in the Scriptures, * The stone which the builders refused, the same is made the head of the corner? This was the Lordes doing, and it is marueilous in our eyes. *Psal.118. 22.Acts.4. 11.Rom.9.*

43 Therefore say I vnto you, the kingdome of God shall be taken from you, and shall be giuen to a nation, which shall bring foorth the fruites thereof. 33.

44 *And whosoeuer shall fall on this stone, he shalbe broken: but on whomsoeuer it shall fall, it wil dash him a pieces. *Isai.8.14.*

45 And when the chiefe Priests and Pharises had heard his parables, they perceiued that he spake of them.

46 And they seeking to lay handes on him, feared the people, because they tooke him as a Prophet.

## CHAP. XXII.

*2 The parable of the marriage. 9 The calling of the Gentiles. 11 The wedding garment, faith. 16 Of Cesars tribute. 23 They question with Christ touching the resurrection. 32 God is of the liuing. 36 The greatest commandement. 37 To loue God. 39 To loue our neighbour. 41 Iesus reasoneth with the Pharises touching the Messias.*

THen * Iesus answered, and spake vnto them againe in parables, saying, *Luke 14.16. Reuel.19.9.*

2 The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a certaine King which married his sonne,

3 And sent foorth his seruants, to call them that were bid to the wedding, but they would not come.

4 Againe hee sent foorth other seruants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Beholde, I haue prepared my dinner: mine oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come vnto the marriage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their wayes, one to his farme, and another about his marchandise.

6 And the remnant tooke his seruants, and intreated them shamefully, and slewe them.

7 But when the King heard it, he was wroth, and sent forth his warriors, and destroyed those murtherers, and burnt vp their citie.

8 Then said he to his seruants, Truely the wedding is prepared: but they which were bidden, were not worthy.

9 Goe ye therefore out into the hie wayes, and as many as

ye

ye finde, bid them to the marriage.

10 So those seruants went out into the *hie* wayes, and gathered together all that euer they found, both good and bad: so the wedding was furnished with ghestes.

11 Then the King came in, to see the ghestes, & sawe there a man which had not on a wedding garment.

12 And he said vnto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, and hast not on a wedding garment? And he was speachlesse.

13 Then said the King to the seruants, Binde him hand and foote: take him away, and cast him into vtter darknes: *there shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth.

*Chap.8.12. and 13.42. and 25.30.*

14 * For many are called, but fewe chosen.

*Chap.20.16.*

15 ¶ * Then went the Pharises and tooke counsell howe they might tangle him in talke.

*Mar.12.13. Luke 20.20.*

16 And they sent vnto him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God truely, neither carest for any man: for thou considerest not the person of men.

17 Tell vs therefore, howe thinkest thou? Is it lawfull to giue tribute vnto Cesar, or not?

18 But Iesus perceiued their wickednesse, and saide, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

19 Shewe me the tribute money. And they brought him a penie.

20 And he said vnto them, Whose is this image and superscription?

21 They saide vnto him, Cesars. Then saide he vnto them,

*Mar.12.17. Luke 20.25. rom.13.7.*

* Giue therefore to Cesar, the thinges which are Cesars, and giue vnto God, those things which are Gods.

22 And when they heard it, they marueiled, and left him, and went their way.

*Mar.12.18. Luke 20.27. acts.23.8. Deut.25.5.*

23 ¶ * The same day the Sadduces came to him (which say that there is no resurrection) and asked him,

24 Saying, Master, * Moses saide, If a man die, hauing no children, his brother shall marrie his wife by the right of alliance, and raise vp seede vnto his brother.

25 Nowe there were with vs seuen brethren, and the first married a wife, and deceassed: and hauing none issue, left his wife vnto his brother.

26 Likewise also the second, & the third, vnto the seuenth.

27 And last of all the woman died also.

28 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife shal she be of

the

the seuen? for all had her.

29 Then Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, Ye are deceiued, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection they neither marie wiues, nor wiues are bestowed in mariage, but are as the Angels of God in heauen.

31 And concerning the resurrection of the dead, haue yee not read what is spoken vnto you of God, saying,

32 * I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the liuing. *Exod.3.6. mar.12.27.*

33 And when the multitude hearde it, they were astonied at his doctrine.

34 ¶ * But when the Pharises had heard, that hee had put the Sadduces to silence, they assembled together. *Mar.12.28.*

35 And one of them, *which was* an expounder of the Law, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying,

36 Master, which is the great commandement in the Law?

37 Iesus saide to him, * Thou shalt loue the Lorde thy God with all thine heart, with all thy soule, and with al thy minde. *Deut.6.5. mar.12.30.*

38 This is the first and the great commandement. *luke 10.27.*

39 And the seconde is like vnto this, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. *Mar.12.31. rom.13.9.*

40 On these two commaundements hangeth the whole Lawe, and the Prophets. *gal.5.14. iames 2.8.*

41 ¶ * While the Pharises were gathered together, Iesus asked them, *Mar.12.35. luke 20.41.*

42 Saying, What thinke ye of Christ? whose Sonne is hee? They said vnto him, Dauids.

43 He saide vnto them, Howe then doeth Dauid in spirite call him Lord, saying,

44 * The Lord saide to my Lord, Sit at my right hande, till I make thine enemies thy footestoole? *Psal.110.1.*

45 If then Dauid call him Lord, howe is he his Sonne?

46 And none coulde answere him a worde, neither durst any from that day foorth aske him any moe questions.

## CHAP. XXIII.

2 *Howe the Scribes teaching the people the Lawe of Moses behaue themselues.* 5 *Their phylacteries, and fringes.* 7 *Greetings.* 8 *We are brethren.* 9 *The father.* 10 *The seruant.* 13 *To shut the kingdom of heauen.* 14 *To deuoure widowes houses.* 15 *A Proselyte.* 16 *To sweare by the Temple.* 23

*To tithe mint.* 25 *To cleanse the outside of the cup.* 27 *Painted sepulchres.* 33 *Serpents, vipers.* 37 *The Henne.*

Nehe.8.4. THen spake Iesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,
2 Saying, The *Scribes & the Pharises sit in Moses seat.
3 All therefore whatsoeuer they bid you obserue, that obserue and doe: but after their woorkes doe not: for they say, and doe not.
Luke 11.46. 4 *For they binde heauie burdens, and grieuous to bee
actes 15.10. borne, and lay them on mens shoulders, but they themselues will not moone them with *one* of their fingers.
5 All their woorkes they doe for to be seene of men: for
Nom.15.38. they make their phylacteries broad, and make long the *fringes of their garments,
deut.22.12.
mar.12.38. 6 *And loue the chiefe place at feastes, and to haue the
Luke 11.43. chiefe seates in the assemblies,
and 20.46. 7 And greetings in the markets, and to bee called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.
Iames 3.1. 8 * But be not yee called, Rabbi: for one is your doctor, *to wit*, Christ, and all ye are brethren.
Malac.1.6. 9 And * call no man your father vpon the earth: for there is but one, your Father which is in heauen.
10 Be not called doctors: for one is your doctor, *euen* Christ.
11 But he ỹ is greatest among you, let him be your seruant.
Luke 14.11. 12 * For whosoeuer will exalt himselfe, shall bee brought
and 18.14. lowe: and whosoeuer will humble himselfe, shalbe exalted.
13 ¶ Woe therefore *be* vnto you Scribes and Phatises, hypocrites, because yee shut vp the kingdome of heauen before men: for ye your selues goe not in, neither suffer ye them that would enter, to come in.
Mar.12.40. 14 *Woe *be* vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for
Luke 20.47. yee deuoure widowes houses, euen vnder a colour of long praiers: wherefore ye shall receiue the greater damnation.
15 Woe *be* vnto you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye compasse sea and land to make one of your profession: and when he is made, yee make him two folde more the childe of hell, then you your selues.
16 Wo *be* vnto you blinde guides, which say, Whosoeuer sweareth by the Temple, it is nothing: but whosoeuer sweareth by the golde of the Temple, he offendeth.
17 Yee fooles and blinde, whether is greater, the golde, or the Temple that sanctifieth the golde?
18 And whosoeuer sweareth by the altar, it is nothing, but whosoeuer

whosoeuer sweareth by the offring *that is* vpon it, offendeth.

19 Ye fooles and blinde, whether is greater, the offring, or the altar which sanctifieth the offering?

20 Whosoeuer therefore sweareth by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

21 * And whosoeuer sweareth by the Temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. *1.Kin.8.13. 2.chron 6.2.*

22 * And hee that sweareth by heauen, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon. *Chap.5.34.*

23 ¶ * Woe *be* to you, Scribes & Pharises, hypocrites: for ye tithe mint, and anise, & cummin, and leaue the weightier matters of the Lawe, *as* iudgement, and mercie, and fidelitie. These ought ye to haue done, and not to haue left the other. *Luke 11.42.*

24 Yee blinde guides, which straine out a gnatte, and swallowe a camel.

25 ¶ Woe *be* to you, * Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye make cleane the vtter side of the cuppe, and of the platter: but within they are full of briberie and excesse. *Luke 11.39.*

26 Thou blinde Pharise, cleanse first the inside of the cuppe and platter, that the outside of them may be cleane also.

27 Wo *be* to you, Scribes & Pharises, hypocrits: for ye are like vnto whited tombes, which appeare beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all filthinesse.

28 So are ye also: for outward yee appeare righteous vnto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquitie.

29 ¶ Woe *be* vnto you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrits: for yee builde the tombes of the Prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,

30 And say, If we had bene in the daies of our fathers, we woulde not haue beene partners with them in the blood of the Prophets.

31 So then yee be witnesses vnto your selues, that ye are the children of them that murthered the Prophets.

32 Fulfill ye also the measure of your fathers.

33 O serpents, the generation of vipers, howe should yee escape the damnation of hell?

34 Wherfore behold, I send vnto you Prophets, & wise men, & Scribes, & of them ye shal kil and crucifie: and of them shal ye scourge in your Synagogues, & persecute frō citie to citie,

35 That vpon you may come all the righteous blood that was shed vpon the earth, * from the blood of Abel the righteous, vnto the blood of Zacharias the sonne of Barachias, *Gen.4.3.*

2.Chr.24.22 *whome yee slewe betweene the Temple and the altar.

36 Verely I say vnto you, all these things shall come vpon this generation.

Luke 13.34. 37 *Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest the Prophets, and stonest them which are sent to thee, howe often would I haue gathered thy children together, as the henne gathereth her chickens vnder her wings, and ye would not?

38 Beholde, your habitation shalbe left vnto you desolate,

39 For I say vnto you, ye shall not see me hencefoorth till that ye say, Blessed *is he* y commeth in the Name of the Lord.

## CHAP. XXIIII.

*The destruction of the Temple. 4 The signes of Christes comming. 12 Iniquitie. 23 False Christes. 29 The signes of the end of the worlde. 31 The Angels. 32 The figge tree. 37 The daies of Noe. 42 We must watch. 45 The seruant.*

Mar.13.1. Luke 21.5,6. AND *Iesus went out, and departed from the Temple, and his disciples came to him, to shewe him the building of the Temple.

2 And Iesus saide vnto them, See yee not all these things? Verely I say vnto you, * there shall not bee here left a stone vpon a stone, that shall not be cast downe.

3 And as he sate vpon y mount of Oliues, his disciples came vnto him apart, saying, Tell vs when these things shall be, and what signe *shall be* of thy coming, & of the end of the world.

Ephes.5.6. coloss.2.18. 4 And Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, * Take heede that no man deceiue you.

5 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, and shall deceiue many.

6 And ye shall heare of warres, and rumours of warres: see that yee bee not troubled: for all these things must come to passe, but the ende is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and realme against realme, and there shall be famine, and pestilence, and earthquakes in diuers places.

8 All these are but the beginning of sorowes.

Chap.10.17. Luke 21.12. Iohn 15.20. and 16.2. 9 * Then shall they deliuer you vp to be afflicted, and shal kil you, and ye shal be hated of al nations for my Names sake.

10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

11 And many false prophets shal arise, & shal deceiue many.

12 And because iniquitie shall be increased, the loue of many shalbe colde.

13 *But

13 *But he that endureth to the ende, he shalbe saued. 2.Thes.3.13.
14 And this Gospel of the kingdome shall bee preached 2.Tim.2.5.
through the whole world for a witnesse vnto all nations, and
then shall the ende come.
15 ¶ When yee * therefore shall see the abomination of Mar.13.14.
desolation spoken of by * Daniel the Prophet, set in the holy luke 21.20.
place, (let him that readeth consider it.) Dan.9.27.
16 Then let them which be in Iudea, flee into the mon-
taines.
17 Let him which is on the house toppe, not come downe
to fetch any thing out of his house.
18 And hee that is in the fielde, let not him returne backe
to fetch his clothes.
19 And woe *shall be* to them that are with childe, and to
them that giue sucke in those daies.
20 But pray that your flight bee not in the winter, neither
on the * Sabbath *day*. Acts 1.12.
21 For then shal be great tribulation, such as was not from
the beginning of the world to this time, nor shalbe.
22 And except those daies shoulde bee shortened, there
shoulde no flesh be saued: but for the elects sake those daies
shalbe shortened.
23 * Then if any shall say vnto you, Loe, here is Christ, or Mar.13.21.
there, beleeue it not. luke 17.23.
24 For there shall arise false Christes, and false prophets,
and shall shewe great signes and wonders, so that if it were
possible, they should deceiue the very elect.
25 Beholde, I haue tolde you before.
26 Wherefore if they shall say vnto you, Beholde, he is in
the desart, goe not foorth: Beholde, he is in the secrete places,
beleeue it not.
27 For as the lightning commeth out of the East, and is
seene into the West, so shall also the comming of the Sonne
of man be.
28 * For whersoeuer a dead carkeis is, thither will the E- Luke 17.37
gles be gathered together.
29 * And immediatly after the tribulations of those daies, Mar.13.24.
shall the Sunne be darkened, and the Moone shal not giue her luke 21.25.
light, and the starres shall fall from heauen, and the powers of esa.13.10.
heauen shall be shaken. ezech.32.7.
30 And then shall appeare the signe of the Sonne of man ioel 2.31.
in heauen: and then shall all the kinreds of the earth mourne, and 3.15.

*Reuel.1.7. dan.7.13.* *and they shall see the Sonne of man come in the cloudes of heauen with power and great glorie.

*1.Cor.15.52. 1.thes.4.16.* 31 * And he shall send his Angels with a great soumde of a trumpet, & they shal gather together his elect from the foure windes, *and* from the one ende of the heauens vnto the other.

32 Nowe learne the parable of the figge tree: when her bough is yet tender, and it putteth foorth leaues, yee knowe that Sommer *is* neere.

33 So likewise ye, when ye see all these things, knowe that *the kingdome of God* is neere, *euen* at the doores.

34 Verely I say vnto you, this generation shall not passe, till all these things be done.

*Mar.13.31.* 35 *Heauen and earth shall passe away: but my woordes shall not passe away.

36 But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no not the Angels of heauen, but my Father onely.

37 But as the daies of Noe *were*, so likewise shall the comming of the Sonne of man be.

*Luke 17.26. gene.7.* 38 * For as in the daies *before* the flood, they did eate and drinke, marrie, and giue in marriage, vnto the day that Noe entred into the Arke,

39 And knew nothing, til the flood came, and tooke them all away: so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be.

*Luke 17.36.* 40 * Then two shalbe in the fields, the one shall be receiued, and the other shalbe refused.

41 Two women shalbe grinding at the mill: the one shall be receiued, and the other shalbe refused.

*Mar.13.35.* 42 * Watch therefore: for ye knowe not what houre your master will come.

*Luke 12.39. 1.thess.5.2. reuel.16.15.* 43 Of * this bee sure, that if the good man of the house knewe at what watch the thiefe would come, he would surely watch, and not suffer his house to be digged thorowe.

44 Therefore be yee also readie: for in the houre that yee thinke not, will the Sonne of man come.

*Luke 12.42.* 45 * Who then is a faithful seruaunt and wise, whome his master hath made ruler ouer his household, to giue them meat in season?

46 Blessed *is* that seruaunt, whome his master when he commeth, shall finde so doing.

47 Verely I say vnto you, hee shall make him ruler ouer all his goods.

48 But if that euill seruant shall say in his heart, My master

doeth

doeth deferre his comming,

49 And begin to smite his fellowes, and to eate, and to drinke with the drunken:

50 That seruaunts master will come in a day, when he looketh not for him, and in an houre that he is not ware of,

51 And wil cut him off, and giue him his portion with hypocrites: * there shalbe weeping, and gnashing of teeth. *Chap. 13 42, and 25 30.*

## CHAP. XXV.

*1 The virgins looking for the bridegrome. 13 We must watch. 14 The talents deliuered vnto the seruants. 24 The euill seruaunt. 30 After what sort the last iudgement shall bee. 31 The cut sed.*

THen the kingdome of heauen shall be likened vnto ten virgins, which tooke their lamps, & went forth to meete the bridegrome.

2 And fiue of them were wise, and fiue foolish.

3 The foolish tooke their lāps, but tooke none oyle w̄ thē.

4 But the wise tooke oyle in their vessels with their lamps.

5 Nowe while the bridegrome taried long, all slumbred and slept.

6 And at midnight there was a crie made, Beholde, the bridegrome commeth: goe out to meete him.

7 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lampes.

8 And the foolish saide to the wise, Giue vs of your oyle, for our lampes are out.

9 But the wise answered, saying, *Not so*, lest there will not be ynough for vs and you: but goe ye rather to them that sell, and bye for your selues.

10 And while they went to bie, the bridegrome came: and they that were readie, went in with him to the wedding, and the gate was shut.

11 Afterwardes came also the other virgins, saying, Lorde, Lord, open to vs.

12 But he answered, and saide, Verely I say vnto you, I knowe you not.

13 * Watch therefore: for yee knowe neither the day, nor the houre, when the Sonne of man will come. *Chap. 24 42. mar. 13 35.*

14 * For *the kingdome of heauen is* as a man that going into a strange countrey, called his seruaunts, and deliuered to them his goods. *Luke 19 12, 13.*

15 And vnto one he gaue fiue talents, and to another two, and to another one, to euery man after his owne abilitie, and

straightway went from home.

16 Then hee that had receiued the fiue talents, went and occupied with them, and gained other fiue talents.

17 Likewise also, hee that *receiued* two, hee also gained other two.

18 But he that receiued that one, went and digged it in the earth, and hid his masters money.

19 But after a long season, the master of those seruaunts came, and reckoned with them.

20 Then came he that had receiued fiue talents, & brought other fiue talents, saying, Master, thou deliueredst vnto me fiue talents: behold, I haue gained with them other fiue talents.

21 Then his master said vnto him, It is well done good seruant and faithfull, Thou hast bene faithfull in litle, I wil make thee ruler ouer much: enter into thy masters ioy.

22 Also hee that had receiued two talents came, and saide, Master, thou deliueredst vnto me two talents: beholde, I haue gained two other talents more.

23 His master said vnto him, It is well done good seruant, and faithfull, Thou hast bene faithfull in litle, I wil make thee ruler ouer much: enter into thy masters ioy.

24 Then he which had receiued ỹ one talent, came, & said, Master, I knew ỹ thou wast an hard man, which reapest where thou sowedst not, and gatherest where thou strawedst not.

25 I was therefore afraide, and went, and hid thy talent in the earth: beholde, thou hast thine owne.

26 And his master answered, and saide vnto him, Thou euil seruant, and slouthful, thou knewest that I reape where I sowed not, and gather where I strawed not.

27 Thou oughtest therefore to haue put my money to the exchangers, and then at my comming should I haue receiued mine owne with vantage.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and giue it vnto him which hath ten talents.

*Chap.13.12. mar.4.25. luke 8.18. and 19.26.* 29 *For vnto euery man that hath, it shalbe giuen, and he shall haue abundance, and from him that hath not, euen that he hath, shalbe taken away.

30 Cast therefore that vnprofitable seruaunt into vtter *darkenesse: there shalbe weeping, and gnashing of teeth. *Chap.8.12. and 22.13.*

31 ¶ And when the Sonne of man commeth in his glory, and all the holy Angels with him, then shall he sit vpon the throne of his glory,

32 And

32 And before him shalbe gathered all nations, and he shal separate them one from another, as a shepheard separateth the sheepe from the goates.

33 And he shall set the sheepe on his right hand, and the goates on the left.

34 Then shall the King say to them on his right hand, Come ye blessed of my Father: take the inheritance of ỹ kingdome prepared for you *from* the foundation of the world.

35 * For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me meate: I thirsted, and ye gaue me drinke: I was a stranger, and ye tooke me in vnto you. *Esai.58.7. Ezek.18.7.*

36 *I was* naked, and ye clothed me: I was * sicke, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came vnto me. *Eccle.7.35.*

37 Then shal the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or a thirst, and gaue thee drinke?

38 And when sawe we thee a stranger, and tooke thee in vnto vs? or naked, and clothed thee?

39 Or when saw we thee sicke, or in prison, and came vnto thee?

40 And the King shall answere, and say vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, in as much as ye haue done it vnto one of the least of these my brethren, ye haue done it to me.

41 Then shall he say vnto them on the left hand, * Depart from me ye cursed, into euerlasting fire which is prepared for the deuil and his angels. *Psal.6.8. chap.7.23. Luke 13.27.*

42 For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me no meate: I thirsted, and ye gaue me no drinke:

43 I was a stranger, and ye tooke me not in vnto you: *I was* naked, and ye clothed me not: sicke, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answere him, saying, Lorde, when sawe we thee an hungred, or a thirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sicke, or in prison, and did not minister vnto thee?

45 Then shall he answere them, and say, Verely I say vnto you, in as much as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me.

46 *And these shall goe into euerlasting paine, & the righteous into life eternall. *Dan.12.2. Iohn 5.29.*

## CHAP. XXVI.

*3 The consultation of the Priests against Christ. 6 His feete are anointed. 15 Iudas selleth him. 26 The institution of the Supper.*

*per. 34 and 69 Peters denial. 38 Christ is heauie. 47 He is betrayed with a kisse. 56 He is led to Caiaphas. 64 He confesseth himselfe to be Christ. 67 They spit at him.*

*Mar.14.1. luke 22.1.* AND *it came to passe, when Iesus had finished all these sayings, he said vnto his disciples,

2 Ye knowe that after two dayes is the Passeouer, and the Sonne of man shalbe deliuered to be crucified.

*John 11.47.* 3 *Then assembled together the chiefe Priestes, and the Scribes, and the Elders of the people into the hall of the hie Priest, called Caiaphas,

4 And consulted together, that they might take Iesus by subtiltie, and kill him.

5 But they said, Not on the feast *day*, least any vprore be among the people.

*Mar.14.3. iohn 11.2.* 6 ¶ * And when Iesus was in Bethania, in the house of Simon the leper,

7 There came vnto him a woman, which had a boxe of very costly oyntment, and powred it on his head, as he sate at the table.

8 And when his disciples sawe it, they had indignation, saying, What needed this waste?

9 For this oyntment might haue bene solde for much, and bene giuen to the poore.

10 And Iesus knowing it, said vnto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good worke vpon me.

*Deu.15.11.* 11 *For ye haue the poore alwayes with you, but me shall ye not haue alwayes.

12 For in that she powred this oyntment on my body, she did it to burie me.

13 Verely I say vnto you, whereseoeuer this Gospel shall be preached throughout all the worlde, there shall also this that she hath done, be spoken of for a memoriall of her.

*Mar. 14.10.* 14 ¶ * Then one of the twelue, called Iudas Iscariot, went vnto the chiefe Priests,

15 And said, What will ye giue me, and I will deliuer him vnto you? & they appointed vnto him thirtie *pieces* of siluer.

16 And from that time, he sought opportunitie to betray him.

*Mar.14.12. luke 22.7.* 17 ¶ * Nowe on the first *day* of the feast of vnleauened bread, the disciples came to Iesus, saying vnto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eate the Passeouer?

18 And he said, Goe ye into the citie to such a man, and say

to

to him, The maſter ſaith, My time is at hand: I will keepe the Paſſeouer at thine houſe with my diſciples.

19 And the diſciples did as Ieſus had giuen them charge, and made readie the Paſſeouer.

20 * So when the euen was come, he ſate downe with the twelue. *Luke* 22.14.

21 And as they did eate, he ſaide, * Verely I ſay vnto you, that one of you ſhall betray me. *Mar.* 14.18. *iohn* 13.21.

22 And they were exceeding ſorowfull, and began euery one of them to ſay vnto him, Is it I, Maſter?

23 And he anſwered and ſaide, * He that dippeth his hand with me in the diſh, he ſhall betray me. *Pſal.* 41.9.

24 Surely the Sonne of man goeth his way, as it is written of him: but wo *be* to that man, by whom the ſonne of man is betrayed: it had bene good for that man, if he had neuer bene borne.

25 Then Iudas which betrayed him, anſwered, and ſaide, Is it I, Maſter? He ſaid vnto him, Thou haſt ſaid it.

26 ¶ * And as they did eate, Ieſus tooke the bread, and when he had bleſſed, he brake it, and gaue it to the diſciples, and ſaid, Take, eate: this is my body. 1. *Cor.* 11.24.

27 Alſo he tooke the cup, and when he had giuen thankes, he gaue it them, ſaying, Drinke ye all of it.

28 For this is my blood of the New teſtament, that is ſhed for many, for the remiſsion of ſinnes.

29 I ſay vnto you, that I will not drinke henceforth of this fruite of the vine, vntill that day, when I ſhall drinke it newe with you in my Fathers kingdome.

30 And when they had ſung a Pſalme, they went out into the mount of Oliues.

31 ¶ * Then ſaid Ieſus vnto them, All ye ſhalbe offended by me this night: for it is written, I * will ſmite the ſhepheard, and the ſheepe of the flocke ſhalbe ſcattered. *Mar.* 14.27. *iohn* 16.32. *and* 18.8.

32 But * after I am riſen againe, I will goe before you into Galile. *Zech.* 13.7. *Mar.* 14.28. *and* 16.7.

33 But Peter anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Though that all men ſhould be offended by thee, yet will I neuer be offended.

34 * Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Verely I ſay vnto thee, that this night, before the cocke crowe, thou ſhalt denie me thriſe. *Iohn.* 13.38. *mar.* 14.30.

35 Peter ſaid vnto him, Though I ſhoulde die with thee, I will in no caſe denie thee. Likewiſe alſo ſaid all the diſciples.

36 ¶ * Then went Ieſus with them into a place which is called *Luke* 22.39.

called Gethsemane, and saide vnto his disciples, Sit ye here, while I goe, and pray yonder.

37 And he tooke vnto him Peter, & the two sonnes of Zebedeus, and began to waxe sorowful, and grieuously troubled.

38 Then said Iesus vnto them, My soule is very heauy, *euen* vnto the death: tarie ye here, and watch with me.

39 So he went a litle further, and fell on his face, & prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup passe from me: neuertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.

40 After, he came vnto the disciples, and founde them a sleepe, and said to Peter, What? could ye not watch with me one houre?

41 Watch, and pray, that ye enter not into tentation: the spirite in deede is ready, but the flesh is weake.

42 Againe he went away the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup cannot passe away from me, but that I must drinke it, thy will be done.

43 And he came and found them a sleepe againe, for their eyes were heause.

44 So he left them and went away againe, and prayed the third time, saying the same wordes.

45 Then came he to his disciples, & said vnto them, Sleepe henceforth, and take your rest: beholde, the houre is at hand, and the Sonne of man is giuen into the hands of sinners.

46 Rise, let vs goe: behold, he is at hand that betrayeth me.

*Mar.* 14.43. *Luke* 22.47. *Iohn* 18.3. 47 *And while he yet spake, loe, Iudas, one of the twelue, came, and with him a great multitude with swordes & staues, from the hie Priests and Elders of the people.

48 Nowe he that betrayed him, had giuen them a token, saying, Whomsoeuer I shall kisse, that is he, lay hold on him.

49 And forthwith he came to Iesus, and saide, God saue thee, Master, and kissed him.

50 Then Iesus said vnto him, Friende, wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and laid hands on Iesus, & tooke him.

51 And behold, one of them which were with Iesus, stretched out *his* hand, and drewe his sword, and strooke a seruant of the hie Priest, and smote off his eare.

52 Then saide Iesus vnto him, Put vp thy sword into his place: *Gen.* 9.6. *Reuel.* 13.10. *for all that take the sword, shal perish with the sword.

53 Either thinkest thou, that I can not now pray to my Father, and he will giue me moe then twelue legions of Angels?

*Isa.* 53.10. 54 How then should the *Scriptures be fulfilled, *which say*, that

that it muſt be ſo?

55 The ſame houre ſaid Ieſus to ỹ multitude, Ye be come out as *it were* againſt a thiefe, with ſwordes and ſtaues to take me: I ſate dayly teaching in the Temple among you, and ye tooke me not.

56 But all this was done, that the Scriptures of the Prophets might be fulfilled. * Then all the diſciples forſooke him, and fled. *Verſe 31.*

57 ¶ *And they tooke Ieſus, and led him to Caiaphas the hie Prieſt, where the Scribes and the Elders were aſſembled. *Mar. 14.53. luke 22.54.*

58 And Peter followed him a farre off vnto the hie Prieſts hall, and went in, and ſate with the ſeruants to ſee the ende. *iohn 18.14.*

59 Nowe * the chiefe Prieſtes and the Elders, and all the whole councill ſought falſe witneſſe againſt Ieſus, to put him to death. *Mar.14.55.*

60 But they founde none, and though many falſe witneſſes came, yet founde they none: but at the laſt came two falſe witneſſes,

61 And ſaid, This man ſaid, * I can deſtroy the Temple of God, and build it in three dayes. *Iohn 2.19.*

62 Then the chiefe Prieſt aroſe, and ſaide to him, Anſwereſt thou nothing? What is the matter that theſe men witnes againſt thee?

63 But Ieſus held his peace. Then the chiefe Prieſt anſwered, and ſaid to him, I charge thee ſweare vnto vs by the liuing God, to tell vs, if thou be that Chriſt, the Sonne of God, or no.

64 * Ieſus ſaide to him, Thou haſt ſaid it: neuertheleſſe I ſay vnto you, hereafter ſhall ye ſee the Sonne of man, ſitting at the right hand of the power *of God*, and come in the cloudes of the heauen. *Chap.16.27. rom.14.10. 1.thes.4.14.*

65 Then the hie Prieſt rent his clothes, ſaying, He hath blaſphemed, what haue we any more neede of witneſſes? beholde, nowe ye haue heard his blaſphemie.

66 What thinke ye? They anſwered, and ſaid, He is guiltie of death.

67 *Then ſpet they in his face, and buffeted him, and other ſmote him with rodes, *Iſai.50.6.*

68 Saying, Prophecie to vs, O Chriſt, Who is he that ſmote thee?

69 ¶ * Peter ſate without in the hall: and a maid came to him, ſaying, Thou alſo waſt with Ieſus of Galile: *Mar.14.66. luke 22.55.*

70 But he denied before them all, ſaying, I wote not what *iohn 18.25.*

thou

thou sayest.

71 And when he went out into the porche, another *maide* sawe him, and saide vnto them that were there, This man was also with Iesus of Nazareth.

72 And againe he denied with an othe, saying, I know not the man.

73 So after a while, came vnto him they that stood by, and said vnto Peter, Surely thou art also one of them: for euen thy speach bewraieth thee.

74 Then began he to curse *himselfe*, and to sweare, saying, I know not the man And immediatly the cocke crewe.

75 Then Peter remembred the wordes of Iesus, which had said vnto him, Before the cocke crowe, thou shalt denie me thrise. So he went out, and wept bitterly.

## CHAP. XXVII.

*2 He is deliuered bound to Pilate. 5 Iudas hangeth himselfe. 19 Pilates wife. 20 Barabbas is asked. 24 Pilate washeth his hands. 29 Christ is crowned with thorne. 34 He is crucified, 40 reuiled. 50 He giueth vp the ghost. 57 He is buried. 62 The souldiers watch him.*

*Mar.15.1. Luke 22.66. Iohn 18.28.* WHen * the morning was come, all the chiefe Priests, and the Elders of the people tooke counsell against Iesus to put him to death,

2 And led him away bound, and deliuered him vnto Pontius Pilate the gouernour.

3 ¶ Then when Iudas which betrayed him, sawe that he was condemned, he repented himselfe, and brought againe the thirtie *pieces* of siluer to the chiefe Priests, and Elders,

4 Saying, I haue sinned betraying the innocent blood. But they said, What is that to vs? see thou to it.

5 And when he had cast downe the siluer *pieces* in ỹ Temple, he departed, and went, * and hanged himselfe.

*Act.1.18.* 6 And the chiefe Priests tooke the siluer *pieces*, and said, It is not lawfull for vs to put them into the treasure, because it is the price of blood.

7 And they tooke counsell, and bought with them a potters field, for the buriall of strangers.

*Act.1.19.* 8 Wherefore that fielde is called, * The fielde of blood, vntill this day.

9 (Then was fulfilled ỹ which was spoken by Ieremias the Prophet, saying, *And they tooke thirtie siluer *pieces*, ỹ price of him ỹ was valued, whō *they* of ỹ children of Israel valued.

*Zech.11.12.*

10 And

10 And they gaue them for the potters fielde, as the Lorde appointed me.)

11 ¶ *And Iesus stoode before the gouernour, and the gouernour asked him, saying, Art thou that King of the Iewes? Iesus said vnto him, Thou sayest it. *Mar.15.2. luke 23.3. iohn 18.33.

12 And when he was accused of the chiefe Priests, and Elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then said Pilate vnto him, Hearest thou not how many things they lay against thee?

14 But he answered him not to one worde, in so much that the gouernour marueiled greatly.

15 Nowe at the feast, the gouernour was wont to deliuer vnto the people a prisoner, whom they would.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

17 When they were then gathered together, Pilate said vnto them, Whether will ye that I let loose vnto you Barabbas, or Iesus which is called Christ?

18 (For he knew well, ỹ for enuie they had deliuered him.

19 Also whē he was set downe vpon the iudgement seate, his wife sent to him, saying, Haue thou nothing to doe with that iust man: for I haue suffered many things this day in a dreame by reason of him.)

20 *But the chiefe Priests & the Elders had perswaded the people ỹ they shoulde aske Barabbas, & should destroy Iesus. *Mar.15.11. luke 23.18.

21 Then the gouernour answered, and saide vnto them, Whether of the twaine will ye that I let loose vnto you? And they said, Barabbas. iohn.18.40. act.3.14.

22 Pilate said to them, What shal I do then vnto Iesus, which is called Christ? They all saide to him, Let him be crucified.

23 Then said the gouernour, But what euill hath he done? Then they cryed the more, saying, Let him be crucified.

24 When Pilate sawe that he availed nothing, but that more tumult was made, he tooke water and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this iust man: looke you to it.

25 Then answered all the people, and said, His blood *be* on vs, and on our children.

26 Thus let he Barabbas loose vnto them, and scourged Iesus, and deliuered him to be crucified.

27 ¶ *Then the souldiers of the gouernour tooke Iesus into the common hall, and gathered about him the whole band, *Mar.15.16. iohn 19.2.

28 And they stripped him, & put about him a skarlet robe,

29 And

29 And platted a crowne of thornes, and put it vpon his head, & a reede in his right hand, & bowed their knees before him, & mocked him, saying, God saue thee, King of ¶ Iewes,

30 And spitted vpon him, and tooke a reede, and smote him on the head.

31 This when they had mocked him, they tooke the robe from him, and put his owne raiment on him, & led him away to crucifie him.

*Mar.*15.21. *Luke* 23.26. 32 * And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, named Simon: him they compelled to beare his crosse.

*Mar.*15.22. *Iohn* 19.17. 33 * And when they came vnto the place called Golgotha, (that is to say, the place of *dead mens* skulles)

34 They gaue him vineger to drinke, mingled with gall: and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drinke.

35 ¶ And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, and did cast lottes, that it might be fulfilled, which

*Psal.*22.18. was spoken by the Prophet, * They deuided my garments among them, and vpon my vesture did cast lottes.

*Mar.*15.24. 36 And they sate, and watched him there.

37 ¶ They set vp also ouer his head his cause written, THIS IS IESVS THE KING OF THE IEWES.

38 ¶ And there were two theeues crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 And they that passed by, reuiled him, wagging their heads,

*Iohn* 2.19. 40 And saying, * Thou that destroyest the Temple, and buildest it in three dayes, saue thy selfe: if thou be the Sonne of God, come downe from the crosse.

41 Likewise also the hie Priestes mocking him, with the Scribes, and Elders, and Pharises, said,

42 He saued others, *but* he cannot saue himselfe: if he be the King of Israel, let him nowe come downe from the crosse, and we will beleeue in him.

*Psal.*22.9. 43 * He trusteth in God, let him deliuer him nowe, if he will haue him: for he said, I am the Sonne of God.

44 The selfe same thing, also the theeues which were crucified with him, cast in his teeth.

45 Nowe from the sixth houre was there darkenesse ouer all the land, vntō the ninth houre.

46 And about the ninth houre Iesus cryed with a loude

*Psal.*22.1. voyce, saying, * Eli, Eli, lamasabachthani? that is, My God, my God,

God, why hast thou forsaken me?

47 And some of them that stoode there, when they heard it, sayd, This man calleth Elias.

48 And straightway one of them ran, & tooke a *spondge, *Psal.69.22.
and filled it with vineger, and put it on a reede, and gaue him to drinke.

49 Other sayde, Let be: let vs see, if Elias will come and saue him.

50 Then Iesus cryed againe with a loude voyce, and yeelded vp the ghost.

51 And beholde, *the valle of the Temple was rent in *2.Chr.3.14.
twaine, from the top to the bottome, & the earth did quake, and the stones were clouen.

52 And the graues did open themselues, and many bodies of the Saints, which slept, arose,

53 And came out of the graues after his resurrection, and went into the holy Citie, and appeared vnto many.

54 When the Centurion, & they that were with him watching Iesus, saw the earthquake, & the things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truely this was the Sonne of God.

55 ¶ And many women were there beholding him a farre off, which had folowed Iesus frō Galile, ministring vnto him.

56 Among whom was Marie Magdalene, & Marie the mother of Iames, & Ioses, and the mother of Zebedeus sonnes.

57 ¶ *And when the euen was come, there came a rich *Mar.15.42.
man of Arimathea, named Ioseph, who had also himselfe bene *luke 23.50.*
Iesus disciple, *iohn 19.38.*

58 He went to Pilate, and asked the body of Iesus, Then Pilate commaunded the body to be deliuered.

59 So Ioseph tooke the body, and wrapped it in a cleane linnen cloth,

60 And put it in his newe tombe, which hee had hewen out in a rocke, and rolled a great stone to the doore of the sepulchre, and departed.

61 And there was Marie Magdalene, and the other Marie sitting ouer against the sepulchre.

62 ¶ Now the next day that followed the Preparation *of the Sabbath*, the hie Priests and Pharises assembled to Pilate,

63 And sayde, Sir, we remember that that deceiuer sayde, while he was yet aliue, Within three dayes I wil rise.

64 Commaund therefore, that the sepulchre be made sure vntill the third day, least his disciples come by night, & steale

him away, and say vnto the people, He is risen from the deade: so shall the last errour be worse then the first.

65 Then Pilate sayd vnto them, Ye haue a watch: go, and make it sure as ye knowe.

66 And they went, and made the sepulchre sure with the watch, and sealed the stone.

## CHAP. XXVIII.

1 *The women goe to the sepulchre.* 2 *The Angel.* 9 *The women see Christ.* 18 *He sendeth his Apostles to preach.*

*Mar.16.5. Iohn 20.11.*

NOwe * in the ende of the Sabbath, when the first *day* of the weeke began to dawne, Marie Magdalene, and the other Marie came to see the sepulchre,

2 And beholde, there was a great earthquake: for the Angel of the Lord descended from heauen, and came and rolled backe the stone from the doore, and sate vpon it.

3 And his countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snowe.

4 And for feare of him, the keepers were astonied, and became as dead men.

5 But the Angel answered, & sayd to the women, Feare ye not: for I know that ye seeke Iesus which was crucified:

6 He is not here, for he is risen, as he sayd: come, see the place where the Lord was layd,

7 And go quickly, & tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead: and beholde, he goeth before you into Galile: there ye shall see him: loe, I haue tolde you.

8 So they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with feare and great ioye, and did runne to bring his disciples worde.

9 And as they went to tell his disciples, beholde, Iesus also met them, saying, God saue you. And they came, and tooke him by the feete, and worshipped him.

10 Then said Iesus vnto them, Be not afrayd. Goe, *and* tell my brethrē, that they go into Galile, & there shal they see me.

11 ¶ Nowe when they were gone, beholde, some of the watch came into the citie, and shewed vnto the hie Priests all the things that were done.

12 And they gathered them together with the Elders, and tooke counsell, and gaue large money vnto the souldiers,

13 Saying, Say, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept.

14 And if this matter come before the Gouernour to be heard, we will perswade him, and so vse the matter, that you

shall

shall not neede to care.

15 So they tooke the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is noysed among the Iewes vnto this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleuen disciples went into Galile, into a mountaine, where Iesus had appointed them.

17 And when they sawe him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

18 And Iesus came, & spake vnto them, saying, * All power is giuen vnto me in heauen, and in earth. *Chap.11.27. iohn 17.2.*

19 * Goe therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and the Sonne, and the holy Ghost, *hebr.12. Mat.16.15.*

20 Teaching them to obserue all things, whatsoeuer I haue commaunded you: and loe, * I am with you alway, vntill the ende of the world, AMEN. *Iohn 14.16.*

# THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS CHRIST, ACCORcording to Marke.

## CHAP. I.

*4 Iohn baptizeth. 6 His apparel & meate. 9 Iesus is baptized. 12 He is tempted. 14 He preacheth the Gospel. 21 and 39 He teacheth in the Synagogues. 23 He healeth one that had a deuil. 29 Peters mother in lawe. 32 Many diseased persons. 40 The Leper.*

THE beginning of the Gospell of Iesus Christ, the Sonne of God:

2 As it is written in the Prophets, * Beholde, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. *Mala.3.1.*

3 * The voyce of him that crieth in the wildernes *is*, Prepare the way of the Lord: make his paths streight. *Isai.40.3. luke 3.4. iohn 1.13.*

4 * Iohn did baptize in the wildernes, & preach the baptisme of amendement of life, for remission of sinnes. *Mat.3.1.*

5 And all the countrey of Iudea, and they of Hierusalem went out vnto him, and were all baptized of him in the riuer Iordan, confessing their sinnes. *Mat.3.6.*

6 * Nowe Iohn was clothed with camels heare, and with a girdle of skin about his loynes: and he did eate * locustes and wilde hony, *Leui.11.22. Mat.3.11. luke 3.16.*

7 * And preached, saying, A stronger then I, commeth after me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to stoupe down, and vnloose, *iohn 1.26. acts.1.5. & 2.4. & 11.*

 *16. & 19.4.*

8 Trueth it is, I haue baptized you with water: but hee will baptize you with the holy Ghoſt.

*Mat.*3.13. *luke* 3.21. *iohn* 1.33. 9 ¶ * And it came to paſſe in thoſe dayes, that IESVS came from Nazareth, *a citie* of Galile, and was baptized of Iohn in Iordan.

10 And aſſoone as he was come out of the water, *Iohn* ſaw the heauens clouen in twaine, and the holy Ghoſt deſcending vpon him like a doue.

11 Then there was a voyce from heauen, *ſaying*, Thou art my beloued Sonne, in whome I am well pleaſed.

*Mat.*4.1. *luke* 4.1. *hebr.*2.18. 12 * And immediatly the ſpirit driueth him into the wilderneſſe.

13 And he was there in the wilderneſſe fourtie dayes, and was tempted of Satan: he was alſo with the wilde beaſtes, and the Angels miniſtred vnto him.

*Mat.*4.12. *luke* 4.14. *iohn* 4.43. 14 ¶ * Now after that Iohn was committed *to priſon*, Ieſus came into Galile, preaching ℣ Goſpel of the kingdom of God,

15 And ſaying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdome of God is at hand: repent and beleeue the Goſpel.

*Mat.*4.18. *luke* 5.2. 16 ¶ * And as he walked by the ſea of Galile, he ſawe Simon, and Andrewe his brother, caſting a net into the ſea, (for they were fiſhers.)

17 Then Ieſus ſayd vnto them, Followe mee, and I will make you to be fiſhers of men.

18 And ſtraightway they forſooke their nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a litle further thence, he ſawe Iames *the ſonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother, as they were in the ſhippe, mending their nets.

20 And anon he called them: and they left their father Zebedeus in the ſhippe with his hired ſeruants, and went their way after him.

*Mat.*4.13. *luke* 4.31. 21 ¶ So * they entred into Capernaum, and ſtraightway on the Sabbath day he entred into the Synagogue, & taught.

*Mat.*7.28. *luke* 4.32. 22 And they were aſtonied at his doctrine, * for he taught them as one that had authoritie, and not as the Scribes.

23 ¶ And there was in their Synagogue a man, in whome was an vncleane ſpirit, and he cryed out,

24 Saying, Ah, what haue we to doe with thee, O Ieſus of Nazareth? Art thou come to deſtroy vs? I know thee what thou art, *euen* that holy one of God.

25 And Ieſus rebuked him, ſaying, Holde thy peace, and come

come out of him.

26 And the vncleane ſpirit tare him, & cryed with a loude voyce, and came out of him.

27 And they were all amaſed, ſo that they demaunded one of another, ſaying, What thing is this? what newe doctrine is this? for he commandeth euen the foule ſpirits with authoritie, and they obey him.

28 And immediatly his fame ſpread abroad throughout all the region bordering on Galile.

29 ¶ * And aſſoone as they were come out of the Synagogue, they entred into the houſe of Simon & Andrew, with James and Iohn. *Mat 8.14. luke 4.38.*

30 And Simons wiues mother lay ſicke of a feuer, and anon they tolde him of her.

31 And he came & tooke her by the hand, & liſted her vp, and the feuer forſooke her by & by, & ſhe miniſtred vnto them.

32 And when euen was come, at what time the ſunne ſetteth, they brought to him all that were diſeaſed, and them that were poſſeſſed with deuils.

33 And the whole citie was gathered together at ỹ doore.

34 And he healed many that were ſicke of diuers diſeaſes: and he caſt out many deuils, and ſuffered not the deuils to ſay that they knew him.

35 And in the morning very early before day, *Ieſus* aroſe and went out into a ſolitarie place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed carefully after him.

37 And when they had found him, they ſayd vnto him, All men ſeeke for thee.

38 Then he ſaid vnto them, Let vs go into ỹ next townes, that I may preach there alſo: for I came out for that purpoſe.

39 And he preached in their Synagogues, throughout all Galile, and caſt the deuils out.

40 ¶ * And there came a leper to him, beſeeching him, and kneeled downe vnto him, and ſayd to him, If thou wilt, thou canſt make me cleane. *Matt. 8 2. luke 5.12.*

41 And Ieſus had compaſſion, and put forth his hand, and touched him, and ſayd to him, I will: be thou cleane.

42 And aſſoone as he had ſpoken, immediatly the leproſie departed from him, and he was made cleane.

43 And after he had giuen him a ſtraite commaundement, he ſent him away forthwith,

44 And sayd vnto him, See thou say nothing to any man,
*Leui.14.4.* but get thee hence, and shew thy selfe to the *Priest, and offer
for thy clensing those things, which Moses commaunded, for
a testimoniall vnto them.
*Luke 5.15.* 45 But when he was departed, *hee began to tell many
thinges, and to publish the matter: so that Iesus could no more
openly enter into the citie, but was without in desart places:
and they came to him from euery quarter.

## CHAP. II.

*3 and 4 One sicke of the palsie, hauing his sinnes forgiuen him, is healed. 14 Matthewe is called. 19 Fastings and afflictions are foretolde. 23 The disciples plucke the eares of corne. 26 The shewbread.*

*Mat.9.1.* AFter *a fewe dayes, hee entred into Capernaum againe,
*Luke 5.18.* and it was noysed that he was in the house.
2 And anon, many gathered together, in so much that the
places about the doore could not receiue any more: and hee
preached the worde vnto them.
3 And there came vnto him, that brought one sicke of the
palsie, borne of foure men.
4 And because they could not come neere vnto him for the
multitude, they vncouered the roofe of the house where hee
was: and when they had broken it open, they let downe the
bed, wherein the sicke of the palsie lay.
5 Nowe when Iesus sawe their faith, he sayd to the sicke
of the palsie, Sonne, thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.
6 And there were certaine of the Scribes, sitting there, and
reasoning in their hearts,
*Iob 14.4.* 7 Why doeth this man speake such blasphemies? *who
*Isai.43.25.* can forgiue sinnes, but God onely?
8 And immediatly when Iesus perceiued in his Spirit, that
thus they reasoned with themselues, he sayd vnto them, Why
reason ye these things in your hearts?
9 Whether is it easier to say to the sicke of the palsie, Thy
sinnes are forgiuen thee? or to say, Arise, and take vp thy bed,
and walke?
10 But that ye may know, that the Sonne of man hath au-
thoritie in earth to forgiue sinnes, (he sayde vnto the sicke of
the palsie)
11 I say vnto thee, Arise, and take vp thy bed, and get thee
hence into thine owne house.
12 And by and by he arose, & tooke vp his bed, and went
forth

forth before them all, in so much that they were all amased, and glorified God, saying, We neuer sawe such a thing.

13 ¶ Then he went foorth againe toward the sea, and all the people resorted vnto him, and he taught them.

14 * And as Iesus passed by, he sawe Leui *the sonne* of Alpheus sit at the receite of custome, and sayd vnto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him. *Mat.9.9. luke 5.27.*

15 ¶ And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at table in his house, many Publicanes & sinners sate at table also with Iesus, and his disciples: for there were many that followed him.

16 And whē the Scribes & Pharises saw him eate with the Publicanes and sinners, they said vnto his disciples, How is it, that he eateth and drinketh with Publicanes and sinners?

17 Now e when Iesus heard it, he sayde vnto them, The whole haue no neede of the Physicion, but the sicke. * I came not to call the righteous, but the sinners to repentance. *1.Tim.1.13.*

18 * And the disciples of Iohn, and the Pharises did fast, and came & said vnto him, Why doe the disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharises fast, and thy disciples fast not? *Mat.9.14. luke 5.33.*

19 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children of the marriage chamber fast, whiles the bridegrome is with them? as long as they haue the bridegrome with them, they can not fast.

20 But the dayes will come, when the bridegrome shalbe taken from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.

21 Also no man soweth a piece of newe cloth in an olde garment: for els the new piece that filled it vp, taketh away *somewhat* from the olde, and the breach is worse.

22 Likewise, no man putteth new wine into olde vessels: for els the new wine breaketh the vessels, and the wine runneth out, and the vessels are lost: but newe wine must be put into newe vessels.

23 ¶ * And it came to passe, as he went through the corne on the Sabbath day, that his disciples, as they went on their way, began to plucke the eares of corne. *Mat.12.1. luke 6.1.*

24 And the Pharises sayd vnto him, Beholde, why doe they on the Sabbath day, that which is not lawfull?

25 And he sayd to them, Haue ye neuer read what * Dauid did, when he had neede, and was an hungred, *both* he, and they that were with him? *1.Sam.21.6.*

26 How he went into the house of God, in the dayes of Abiathar the hie Priest, & did eate the shewbread, which were not lawfull to eate, but for the * Priestes, and gaue also to *Exo.29.33. leuit.8.31.*

 *and 24.9.*

them which were with him?

27 And he sayd to them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath.

28 Wherefore the Sonne of man is Lorde, euen of the Sabbath.

## CHAP. III.

*1 The withered hand is healed. 6 The Pharisies consult with the Herodians. 10 Many are healed by touching Christ. 11 At his sight the deuils fall downe before him. 14 The twelue Apostles. 24 The kingdome deuided against it selfe. 29 Blasphemie against the holy Ghost. 33 Christs parents.*

Mat.12.9. Luke 6.6. AND *he entred againe into the Synagogue, and there was a man which had a withered hand.

2 And they watched him, whether hee would heale him on the Sabbath day, that they might accuse him.

3 Then hee sayde vnto the man which had the withered hand, Arise: *stand forth* in the middes.

4 And he sayd to them, Is it lawfull to doe a good deede on the Sabbath day, or to doe euill? to saue the life, or to kill? But they helde their peace.

5 Then he looked round about on them angerly, mourning also for the hardnes of their hearts, and sayd to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And hee stretched it out: And his hand was restored, as whole as the other.

6 ¶ And the Pharises departed, and straightway gathered a councill with the Herodians against him, that they might destroy him.

7 But Iesus auoided with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude followed him from Galile, and from Iudea,

8 And from Hierusalem, and from Idumea, and beyonde Iordan: and they that dwelled about Tyrus and Sidon, when they had heard what great things hee did, came vnto him in a great number.

9 And he commanded his disciples, that a litle ship should waite for him, because of the multitude, least they shoulde throng him.

10 For he had healed many, in so much that they preassed vpon him, to touch him, as many as had plagues.

11 And when the vncleane spirits saw him, they fel downe before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Sonne of God.

12 And he sharpely rebuked them, to the ende they should not vtter him.

13 ¶ *Then

13 ¶ *Then he went vp into a mountaine, and called vnto him whome he would, and they came vnto him. *Chap.6.7. mat.10.1.*

14 And hee appointed twelue that they shoulde be with him, and that he might send them to preache, *luke 9.1.*

15 And that they might haue power to heale sicknesses, and to cast out deuils.

16 And the first *was* Simon, and he named Simon, Peter.

17 Then Iames *the sonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn, Iames brother (and surnamed them Boanerges, which is, the sonnes of thunder)

18 And Andrewe, and Philip, and Bartlemewe, and Matthew, and Thomas, and Iames, *the sonne* of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Cananite,

19 And Iudas Iscariot, who also betrayed him, & they came home.

20 And the multitude assembled againe, so that they could not so much as eate bread.

21 And when his kinsfolkes heard of it, they went out to lay holde on him: for they said that he was beside himselfe.

22 ¶ * And the Scribes which came downe from Hierusalem, said, Hee hath Beelzebub, and throngh the prince of the deuils he casteth out deuils. *Matt.9.34. and 12.24. luke 11.15.*

23 But he called them vnto him, and said vnto them in parables, How can Satan driue out Satan?

24 For if a kingdome be deuided against it selfe, that kingdome cannot stand.

25 Or if a house be deuided against it selfe, that house cannot continue.

26 So if Satan make insurrection against himselfe, and bee deuided, he cannot endure, but is at an ende.

27 No man can enter into a strong mans house, and take away his goods, except he first binde that strong man, and then spoyle his house.

28 ¶ *Verely I say vnto you, all sinnes shalbe forgiuen vnto the childrē of men & blasphemies, wherwith they blaspheme: *Matt.12 31. luke 12.10.*

29 But hee that blasphemeth against the holy Ghost, shall neuer haue forgiuenes, but is culpable of eternall damnation, *1.iohn 5.16.*

30 Because they said, He had an vncleane spirit.

31 ¶ * Then came his brethren and mother, and stoode without, and sent vnto him, and called him. *Matt.12.46. luke 8.19.*

32 And the people sate about him, and they said vnto him, Behold, thy mother, and thy brethren seeke for thee without.

33 But

33 But he answered them, saying, Who is my mother and my brethren?

34 And he looked roud about on them, which sate in compasse about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren.

35 For whosoeuer doth the will of God, he is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

## CHAP. IIII.

*4 The parable of the sower, 14 & the meaning thereof. 18 Thorner. 21 The candle. 26 Of him that sowed, and then slept. 31 The graine of mustard seede. 38 Christ sleepeth in the shippe.*

*Mat.13.1. luke 8 4.* AND * hee began againe to teache by the sea side, and there gathered vnto him a great multitude, so that hee entred into a ship, and sate in the sea, and all the people was by the sea side on the land.

2 And he taught them many things in parables, and sayde vnto them in his doctrine,

3 Hearken: Beholde, there went out a sower to sowe.

4 And it came to passe as hee sowed, that some fell by the way side, & the soules of the heauen came, and deuoured it vp.

5 And some fell on stonie grounde, where it had not much earth, and by and by sprang vp, because it had not deapth of earth.

6 But assoone as the sunne was vp, it was burnt vp, and because it had not roote, it withered away.

7 And some fell among the thornes, and the thornes grew vp, and choked it, so that it gaue no fruite.

8 Some againe fell in good grounde, and did yeelde fruite that sprong vp, and grewe, and it brought foorth, some thirtie folde, some sixtie folde, and some an hundreth folde.

9 Then he said vnto them, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 And when hee was alone, they that were about him with the twelue, asked him of the parable.

11 And he said vnto them, To you it is giuen to know the mysterie of the kingdome of God: but vnto them that are without, all things be done in parables,

*Esai.6.9. mat.13.14. luke 8.10. john 12.40. acts.28.26. rom.11.8.* 12 *That they seeing, may see, and not discerne: and they hearing, may heare, and not vnderstande, lest at any time they should turne, and their sinnes should be forgiuen them.

13 Againe he saide vnto them, Perceiue ye not this parable? how then should ye vnderstand all *other* parables?

14 The sower soweth the word,

15 And

15 And these are they that *receiue the seede* by the wayes side, in whome the word is sowen: but when they haue heard it, Satan commeth immediatly, and taketh away the worde that was sowen in their heartes.

16 And likewise they that receiue the seed in stonie grouñd, are they, which when they haue heard the worde, straightwayes receiue it with gladnesse.

17 Yet haue they no roote in themselues, and endure but a time: *for* when trouble and persecution ariseth for the word, immediatly they be offended.

18 Also they that receiue the seed among the thornes, are such as heare the word:

19 But the cares of this world, and the * deceitfulnesse of riches, and the lustes of other thinges enter in, and choke the word, and it is vnfruitfull. *1.Tim.6.17.*

20 But they that haue receiued seede in good grounde, are they that heare the word, & receiue it, and bring foorth fruite: one *corne* thirtie, another sixtie, and some an hundreth.

21 ¶Also he saide vnto them,* Commeth the candle in, to be put vnder a bushell, or vnder the bed, and not to be put on a candlesticke? *Matt.5.15. luke 8.16. and 11.33.*

22 *For there is nothing hid, that shall not be opened: neither is there a secret, but that it shall come to light. *Matt.10.26. luke 8.17.*

23 If any man haue eares to heare, let him heare. *and 12.2.*

24 And hee saide vnto them, Take heede what yee heare. * With what measure ye mete, it shall be measured vnto you: and vnto you that heare, shall more be giuen. *Matth.7.2. luke 6.38.*

25 *For vnto him that hath, shal it be giuen, and from him that hath not, shalbe taken away, euen that he hath. *Matt.13.12. and 25.29.*

26 ¶Also he saide, So is the kingdome of God, as if a man should cast seede in the ground, *luke 8.18. and 19.26.*

27 And shoulde sleepe, and rise vp night and day, and the seede should spring and growe vp, he not knowing howe.

28 For the earth bringeth foorth fruite of it selfe, first the blade, then the eares, after that full corne in the eares.

29 And assoone as the fruite sheweth it selfe, anon he putteth in the sickle, because the harueste is come.

30 ¶*He said moreouer, Whereunto shal we liken ỹ kingdome of God? or with what comparison shal we compare it? *Mat.13.31. luke 13.19.*

31 *It is* like a graine of mustarde seede, which when it is sowen in the earth, is the least of al seedes that be in the earth:

32 But after that it is sowen, it groweth vp, and is greatest of

of all herbes, and beareth great branches, so that the foules of heauen may build vnder the shadowe of it.

*Mat.*13.34. 33 And * with many such parables he preached the word vnto them, as they were able to heare it.

34 And without parables spake he nothing vnto them: but he expounded all things to his disciples apart.

*Mat.*8.23. *Luke* 8.22. 35 ¶ *Nowe the same day when euen was come, hee saide vnto them, Let vs passe ouer vnto the other side.

36 And they left the multitude, and tooke him as he was in the ship, and there were also with him other litle shippes.

37 And there arose a great storme of winde, and the waues dashed into the shippe, so that it was now full.

38 And he was in the sterne asleepe on a pillow: and they awoke him, and saide to him, Master, carest thou not that we perish?

39 And he rose vp, and rebuked the winde, and saide vnto the sea, Peace, and be still. So the winde ceased, and it was a great calme.

40 Then he said vnto them, Why are ye so fearefull? how is it that ye haue no faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, Who is this, that both the winde and sea obey him?

## CHAP. V.

2 *One possessed is healed.* 7 *The deuill acknowledgeth Christ.* 9 *A legion of deuils* 13 *entreth into swine.* 22 *Iairus daughter.* 25 *A woman is healed of a bloodie issue.* 26 *Physitions.* 34 *Faith.* 39 *Sleepe.*

*Mat.* 8.28. *Luke* 8.26. AND * they came ouer to the other side of the sea into the countrey of the Gadarens.

2 And whē he was come out of the ship, there met him incōtinently out of ỹ graues, a mā which had an vncleane spirit:

3 Who had his abiding among the graues, and no man could binde him, no not with chaines,

4 Because that when he was often bound with fetters and chaines, he plucked the chaines asunder, and brake the fetters in pieces, neither could any man tame him.

5 And alwayes both night and day hee cried in the mountaines, and in the graues, and stroke himselfe with stones.

6 And when he saw Iesus afarre off, he ranne, and worshipped him,

7 And cried with a loude voyce, and saide, What haue I to doe with thee, Iesus the Sonne of the most high God? I will

that

that thou sweare to me by God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For hee saide vnto him, Come out of the man, thou vncleane spirite.)

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? and he answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many.

10 And he prayed him instantly, that he wouldе not sende them away out of the countrey.

11 Now there was there in the mountaines a great heard of swine feeding.

12 And all the deuils besought him, saying, Sende vs into the swine, that we may enter into them.

13 And incontinently Iesus gaue them leaue. Then the vncleane spirits went out, & entred into the swine, and the heard ran headlong frō the high banke into the sea, (and there were about two thousand swine) & they were choked vp in the sea.

14 And the swineheards fled, and tolde it in the citie, and in the countrey, and they came out to see what it was that was done.

15 And they came to Iesus, and saw him that had bene possessed with the deuil, and had the Legion, sit both clothed, and in his right minde: and they were afraide.

16 And they that saw it, told them what was done to him that was possessed with the deuil, and concerning the swine.

17 Then they beganne to pray him, that hee would depart from their coastes.

18 And when he was come into the ship, he that had bene possessed with the deuil, prayed him ỹ he might be with him.

19 Howbeit, Iesus would not suffer him, but said vnto him, Goe thy way home to thy friends, and shew them what great thinges the Lorde hath done vnto thee, and how hee hath had compassion on thee.

20 So he departed, & began to publish in Decapolis, what great things Iesus had done vnto him: & al men did marueile.

21 ¶ And when Iesus was come ouer againe by shippe vnto the other side, a great multitude gathered togethet to him, and he was neere vnto the sea.

22 * And beholde, there came one of the rulers of the Synagogue, whose name was Iairus: and when he sawe him, hee fell downe at his feete. *Matt. 9. 18. luke 8. 41.*

23 And besought him instantly, saying, My little daughter lyeth at point of death: *I pray thee* that thou wouldest come and lay thine handes on her, that she may be healed, and liue.

24 Then

24 Then hee went with him, and a great multitude followed him, and thronged him.

25 (And there was a certaine woman, which was diſeaſed with an iſſue of blood twelue yeeres,

26 And had ſuffered many things of many Phyſicions, and had ſpent all that ſhe had, and it auailed her nothing, but ſhe became much worſe.

27 When ſhe had heard of Ieſus, ſhee came in the preaſſe behinde, and touched his garment.

28 For ſhe ſaide, If I may but touche his clothes, I ſhall be whole.

29 And ſtraightway the courſe of her blood was dried vp, and ſhe felt in her body, that ſhe was healed of that plague.

30 And immediatly when Ieſus did knowe in himſelfe the vertue that went out of him, hee turned him rounde about in the preaſſe, and ſaid, Who hath touched my clothes?

31 And his diſciples ſaide vnto him, Thou ſeeſt the multitude throng thee, and ſayeſt thou, Who did touche me?

32 And hee looked rounde about, to ſee her that had done that.

33 And the woman feared and trembled: for ſhee knewe what was done in her, and ſhee came and fell downe before him, and tolde him the whole trueth.

34 And he ſaid to her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole: goe in peace, and be whole of thy plague.)

35 While he yet ſpake, there came from the *ſame* ruler of the Synagogues houſe *certaine* which ſaid, Thy daughter is deade: why diſeaſeſt thou the Maiſter any further?

36 Aſſoone as Ieſus heard that worde ſpoken, he ſaid vnto the ruler of the Synagogue, Be not afraide: onely beleeue.

37 And he ſuffered no man to followe him ſaue Peter and James, and Iohn the brother of Iames.

38 So he came vnto ỹ houſe of the ruler of the Synagogue, and ſaw the tumult, and them that wept and wayled greatly.

39 And he went in, and ſaid vnto them, Why make ye this trouble, and weepe? the childe is not dead, but ſleepeth.

40 And they laught him to ſcorne: but he put them al out, and tooke the father, and the mother of the childe, and them that were with him, and entred in where the childe lay,

41 And tooke the childe by the hande, and ſaide vnto her, Talitha cumi, which is by interpretation, Mayden, I ſay vnto thee, Ariſe.

42 And

42 And straightway the mayden arose, and walked: for she was of the age of twelue yeeres, and they were astonied out of measure.

43 And he charged them straitly that no man should know of it, and commaunded to giue her meate.

## CHAP. VI.

*1 Christ preaching in his countrey, his owne contemne him. 6 The vnbeliefe of the Nazarites. 7 The Apostles are sent. 13 They cast out deuils: they anoynt the sicke with oyle. 14 Herods opinion of Christ. 18 The cause of Iohns imprisonment. 22 Dauncing. 27 Iohn beheaded. 29 buried. 30 The Apostles returne from preaching. 34 Christ teacheth in the desart. 37 He feedeth the people with fiue loaues. 48 The Apostles are troubled on the sea. 56 The sicke that touch Christs garment, are healed.*

AND * he departed thence, and came into his owne countrey, and his disciples folowed him. *Matt.13.54. luke 4.16.*

2 And when the Sabbath was come, hee began to teach in the Synagogue, and many that heard him, were astonied, and said, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdome is this that is giuen vnto him, that euē such great works are done by his handes?

3 Is not this that carpenter, Maries sonne, the brother of Iames and Ioses, and of Iuda and Simon? and are not his sisters here with vs? And they were offended in him.

4 Then Iesus saide vnto them, A * Prophet is not without honour, but in his owne countrey, and among his owne kindred, and in his owne house. *Matt.13.57. luke 4.24. iohn 4.44.*

5 And he coulde there doe no great workes, saue that hee layde his handes vpon a fewe sicke folke, and healed *them*.

6 And hee marueiled at their vnbeliefe, * and went about by the townes on euery side, teaching. *Matt. 4.23. luke 13.22.*

7 ¶ * And hee called vnto him the twelue, and began to sende them foorth two and two, and gaue them power ouer vncleane spirits, *Chap.3.14. matth. 10.1. luke 9.1.*

8 And commaunded them, that they shoulde take nothing for *their* iourney, saue a staffe onely: neither scrippe, neither bread, neither money in their girdels:

9 But that they shoulde be shod with * sandales, and that they should not put on two coates. *Acts. 12.8.*

10 And he said vnto them, Whersoeuer ye shall enter into an house, there abide till ye depart thence.

11 * And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor heare you, when *Matt. 10.14. luke 9.5.*

*Acts.13.51. and 18.6.* when ye depart thence,* shake off the dust that is vnder your feete, for a witnesse vnto them. Verely I say vnto you, it shall be easier for Sodome or Gomortha at the day of iudgement, then for that citie.

12 ¶ And they went out, and preached, that *men* shoulde amend their liues.

*Iames 5.14.* 13 And they cast out many deuils: and they* anoynted many that were sicke, with oyle, and healed *them.*

*Mat.14.1. Luke 9.7.* 14 ¶ *Then King Herod heard *of him* (for his name was made manifest) and saide, Iohn Baptist is risen againe from the dead, and therefore great workes are wrought by him.

15 Other said, It is Elias, and some said, It is a Prophet, or as one of those Prophets.

*Luke 3.19.* 16 *So when Herod heard it, he said, It is Iohn whom I beheaded: he is risen from the dead.

17 For Herod himselfe had sent forth, and had taken Iohn, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, which was his brother Philips wife, because he had maried her.

*Leui. 18.16. and 20.21.* 18 For Iohn said vnto Herod, *It is not lawfull for thee to haue thy brothers wife.

19 Therefore Herodias layd waite against him, and would haue killed him, but she could not:

20 For Herod feared Iohn, knowing that he *was* a iust man and an holy, and reuerenced him, and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

21 But the time being conuenient, when Herod on his birth day made a banket to his princes and captaines, and chiefe estates of Galile:

22 And the daughter of the same Herodias came in, and daunced, and pleased Herod, and them that sate at table together, the King said vnto the mayd, Aske of me what thou wilt, and I will giue it thee.

23 And he sware vnto her, Whatsoeuer thou shalt aske of me, I will giue it thee, *euen* vnto the halfe of my kingdome.

*Matt.14.8.* 24 *So she went forth, and said to her mother, What shall I aske? And she said, Iohn Baptists head.

25 Then she came in straightway with haste vnto the king, and asked, saying, I woulde that thou shouldest giue me euen now in a charger the head of Iohn Baptist.

26 Then the King was very sorie: *yet* for his othes sake, and for their sakes which sate at table with him, he would not refuse her.

27 And

27 And immediately the king sent the hangman, and gaue charge that his head shoulde be brought in. So he went and beheaded him in the prison,

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gaue it to the maide, and the maide gaue it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples heard it, they came and tooke vp his bodie, and put it in a tombe.

30 ¶ * And the Apostles gathered themselues together to Iesus, and tolde him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught. *Luke 9.10.*

31 And he said vnto them, Come ye apart into the wildernes, and rest a while: for there were many commers and goers, that they had not leasure to eate.

32 *So they went by ship out of y way into a desart place. *Mat.14.13.*

33 But the people sawe them when they departed, & many knewe him, and ranne afoote thither out of all cities, and came thither before them, and assembled vnto him. *luke 9.10.*

34 * Then Iesus went out, and sawe a great multitude, and had compassiō on them, because they were like sheepe which had no shepheard: * and he began to teach them many things. *Mat.9 36. and 14.14. Luke 9.11.*

35 * And when the day was nowe farre spent, his disciples came vnto him, saying, This is a desart place, and nowe the day is farre passed. *Mat.14.15.*

36 Let them depart that they may goe into the countrey and townes about, and bye them breade: for they haue nothing to eate.

37 But he answered, and said vnto them, Giue yee them to eate. And they said vnto him, Shall we goe, and bye two hundreth peniworth of bread, and giue them to eate?

38 * Then he said vnto them, How many loaues haue ye? go & looke. And when they knew it, they said, Fiue, & two fishes. *Mat.14.17. luke 9.13.*

39 So he commaunded them to make them all sit downe by companies vpon the greene grasse. *iohn 6.9.*

40 Then they sate downe by rowes, by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And hee tooke the fiue loaues, and the two fishes, and looked vp to heauen, and gaue thankes, and brake the loaues, and gaue them to his disciples to set before them, and the two fishes he deuided among them all.

42 So they did all eate, and were satisfied.

43 And they tooke vp twelue baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes.

44 And they that had eaten, were about fiue thousand men.

45 ¶ And straightway hee caused his disciples to goe into the ship, and to goe before vnto the other side vnto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people.

46 Then assoone as he had sent them away, he departed into a mountaine to praie.

*Mat.*14.23. *Iohn* 6.15. 47 * And when euen was come, the ship was in the mids of the sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And hee sawe them troubled in rowing, (for the winde was contrary vnto them) and about the fourth watch of the night, hee came vnto them, walking vpon the sea, and would haue passed by them.

49 And when they sawe him walking vpon the sea, they supposed it had bene a spirit, and cried out.

50 For they all sawe him, and were sore afraide: but anon he talked with them, and saide vnto them, Be ye of good comfort: it is I, be not afraide.

51 Then hee went vp vnto them into the shippe, and the winde ceased, & they were much more amased in themselues, and marueiled.

52 For they had not considered *the matter* of the loaues, because their hartes were hardened.

*Mat.*14.34. 53 ¶ * And they came ouer, and went into the land of Gennesaret, and arriued.

54 So when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knewe him,

55 And ranne about throughout all that region rounde about, *and* began to carie hither and thither in couches all that were sicke, where they heard that he was.

56 And whithersoeuer he entred into townes, or cities, or villages, they laide their sicke in the streetes, and praied him that they might touche at the least the edge of his garment. And as many as touched him, were made whole.

## CHAP. VII.

*2 The Apostles are found fault with, for eating with vnwashen hands. 4 The Pharises traditions about washings. Hypocrites. 8 Mens traditions more set by then Gods. 10 Parents must be honoured. 14 The things that doe in deede defile a man. 25 The woman of Chanane. 32 The deafe dumman is healed.*

*Mat.*15.2. THen * gathered vnto him the Pharises, and certaine of the Scribes which came from Hierusalem.

2 And

2 And when they saw some of his disciples eat meate with common hands, (that is to say, vnwashen) they complained.

3 (For the Pharises, and all the Iewes, except they wash their hands oft, eate not, holding the tradition of the Elders.

4 And *when they come* from the market, except they wash, they eat not: and many other things there be, which they haue taken vpon them to obserue, *as* the washing of cuppes, and pottes, and of brasen vessels, and of beddes.)

5 Then asked him the Phaarises and Scribes, Why walke not thy disciples according to the tradition of the Elders, but eate meate with vnwashen hands?

6 Then he answered and said vnto them, Surely * Esai hath prophecied well of you, hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth mee with lippes, but their heart is farre away from me. *Iſal.29.13.*

7 But they worship me in vaine, teaching *for* doctrines the commandements of men.

8 For ye lay the commandement of God apart, & obserue the tradition of men, *as* the washing of pottes and of cuppes, and many other such like things ye doe.

9 And he said vnto them, Well, yee reiect the commandement of God that ye may obserue your owne tradition.

10 For Moses saide, * Honour thy father and thy mother: and, * Whosoeuer shall speake euill of father or mother, let him die the death. *Exod.20.12. deut.5.16. ephes.6.2.*

11 But yee say, If a man say to father or mother, Corban, *that is*, By the gift that is *offered* by me, thou maiest haue profite, *he shall be free.* *Exod.21.17. leuit.22.9. prou.20.20.*

12 So yee suffer him no more to doe any thing for his father, or his mother,

13 Making the worde of God of none authoritie, by your tradition which yee haue ordeined: and yee doe many such like things.

14 * Then hee called the whole multitude vnto him, and said vnto them, Hearken you all vnto me, and vnderstand. *Mat.15.10.*

15 There is nothing without a man, that can defile him, when it entreth into him: but the things which proceede out of him, are they which defile the man.

16 If any haue eares to heare, let him heare.

17 And when hee came into an house, *away* from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.

18 And he saith vnto them, What? are yee without vnder-

standing also? Doe ye not knowe that whatsoeuer thing from without entreth into a man, cannot defile him,

19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught which is the purging of all meates?

20 Then he sayde, That which commeth out of man, that defileth man.

*Gen.6.5.* *and 8.21.* 21 * For from within, *euen* out of the heart of men, proceede euill thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murthers,

22 Thefts, couetousnesse, wickednesse, deceit, vncleanenesse, a wicked eye, backbiting, pride, foolishnesse.

23 All these euil things come from within, & defile a man.

*Mat.*15.21. 24 ¶ * And from thence he rose, & went into the borders of Tyrus and Sidon, and entred into an house, and would that no man should haue knowen: but he coulde not be hid.

25 For a certaine woman, whose litle daughter had an vncleane spirit, heard of him, and came, and fell at his feete,

26 (And the woman was a Greeke, a Syrophenisian by nation) and shee besought him that he would cast out the deuill out of her daughter.

27 But Iesus saide vnto her, Let the children first be fed: for it is not good to take the childrens bread, and to cast it vnto whelpes.

28 Then shee answered, and said vnto him, Trueth, Lorde: yet in deede the whelpes eate vnder the table of the childrens crummes.

29 Then he said vnto her, For this saying goe thy way: the deuill is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when she was come home to her house, she found the deuill departed, and her daughter lying on the bed.

31 ¶ And hee departed againe from the coastes of Tyrus and Sidon, and came vnto the sea of Galile, through the midst of the coastes of Decapolis.

32 And they brought vnto him one ỹ was deafe, and stambred in his speache, and praied him to put his hand vpon him.

33 Then he tooke him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers in his eares, and did spit, and touched his tongue.

34 And looking vp to heauen, hee sighed, and saide vnto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.

35 And straightway his eares were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plaine.

36 And hee commaunded them, that they shoulde tell no

man: but how much soeuer he forbade them, the more a great deale they published it,

37 And were beyonde measure astonied, saying, * He hath done all things well: hee maketh both the deafe to heare, and the dumme to speake. *Gen.1.31. eccles.39.21.*

## CHAP. VIII.

*1 The miracle of the seuen loaues. 11 The Iewes seeke signes. 15 To beware of the leauen of the Pharises. 22 A blinde man healed. 27 The peoples sundrie opinions of Christ. 29 The Apostles acknowledge Christ. 31 Hee foretelleth his death. 33 Peter, Satan. 35 To saue and lose the life. 38 To be ashamed of Christ.*

IN * those daies, when there was a very great multitude, and had nothing to eate, Iesus called his disciples to him, and saide vnto them, *Mat.15.32.*

2 I haue compassion on the multitude, because they haue now continued with me three daies, and haue nothing to eat.

3 And if I sende them away fasting to their owne houses, they would faint by the way: for some of them came from far.

4 Then his disciples answered him, Whence can a man satisfie these with bread here in the wildernes?

5 And he asked them, Howe many loaues haue yee? And they saide, Seuen.

6 Then hee commaunded the multitude to sit downe on the grounde: and he tooke the seuen loaues, and gaue thankes, brake *them*, and gaue to his disciples to set before *them*, and they did set *them* before the people.

7 They had also a few small fishes: and when he had giuen thankes, he commaunded them also to be set before *them*.

8 So they did eate, and were sufficed, and they tooke vp of the broken meate that was left, seuen baskets full.

9 (And they that had eaten, were about foure thousand) so he sent them away.

10 ¶ * And anon hee entred into a ship with his disciples, and came into the partes of Dalmanutha. *Mat.15.39.*

11 * And the Pharises came forth, & began to dispute with him, seeking of him a signe from heauen, and tempting him. *Mat.16.1.*

12 Then he sighed deepely in his spirit, & said, Why doeth this generation seeke a signe? Verely I say vnto you, a signe shall not be giuen vnto this generation.

13 ¶ So he left them, and went into the shippe againe, and departed to the other side.



14 ¶ * And

Mat.16.5. 14 ¶ * And they had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ſhippe with them, but one loafe.

15 And he charged them, ſaying, Take heede, and beware of the leauen of the Phariſes, and of the leauen of Herod.

16 And they reaſoned among themſelues, ſaying, *It is* becauſe we haue no bread.

17 And when Ieſus knewe it, he ſaid vnto them, Why reaſon you *thus*, becauſe ye haue no breade? perceiue yee not yet, neither vnderſtand? haue ye your hearts yet hardened?

18 Haue ye eyes, and ſee not? and haue ye eares, and heare not? and doe ye not remember?

Iohn 6.11. 19 * When I brake the fiue loaues among fiue thouſand, howe many baskets full of broken meate tooke yee vp? They ſaid vnto him, Twelue.

20 And when *I brake* ſeuen among foure thouſande, howe many baskets of the leauings of broken meate tooke yee vp? And they ſaide, Seuen.

21 Then he ſaid vnto them, How *is it* ẏ ye vnderſtand not?

22 And hee came to Bethſaida, and they brought a blinde man vnto him, and deſired him to touch him.

23 Then he tooke the blinde by the hand, and led him out of the towne, and ſpet in his eyes, and put his handes vpon him, and asked him, if he ſawe ought.

24 And he looked vp, and ſaide, I ſee men: for I ſee them walking like trees.

25 After that, hee put his handes againe vpon his eyes, and made him looke againe. And he was reſtored to his ſight, and ſawe euery man a farre off clearely.

26 And he ſent him home to his houſe, ſaying, Neither goe into the towne, nor tell it to any in the towne.

Mat.16.13. Luke 9.18. 27 ¶ * And Ieſus went out, & his diſciples into the townes of Ceſarea Philippi. And by the way he asked his diſciples, ſaying vnto them, Whom doe men ſay that I am?

28 And they anſwered, *Some ſay*, Iohn Baptiſt: and ſome, Elias: and ſome, One of the Prophets.

29 And he ſaide vnto them, But whome ſay yee that I am? Then Peter anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Thou art that Chriſt.

30 And hee ſharpely charged them, that concerning him they ſhould tell no man.

31 Then hee began to teach them that the Sonne of man muſt ſuffer many things, & ſhould be reproued of the Elders, and of the hie Prieſtes, and of the Scribes, and be ſlaine, and

within

within three daies rise againe.

32 And he spake that thing boldly. Then Peter tooke him aside, and began to rebuke him.

33 Then he turned backe, and looked on his disciples, and rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behinde mee, Satan: for thou vnderstandest not the things that are of God, but the things that are of men.

34 ¶ And hee called the people vnto him with his disciples, and said vnto them, *Whosoeuer will follow me, let him forsake himselfe, and take vp his crosse, and follow me. *Mat.* 10.38. *and* 16.24.

35 For whosoeuer will *saue his life, shall lose it: but whosoeuer shall lose his life for my sake and the Gospels, hee shall saue it. *luke* 9.23. *and* 14.27. *Mat.* 10.39.

36 For what shall it profite a man, though he should winne the whole world, if he lose his soule? *and* 16.25. *luke* 9.24.

37 Or what exchange shall a man giue for his soule? *and* 17 33.

38 * For whosoeuer shall be ashamed of mee, and of my woordes among this adulterous and sinnefull generation, of him shall the Sonne of man be ashamed also, when he cometh in the glorie of his Father with the holy Angels. *Mat.* 10.33. *luke* 9.26. *and* 12.9.

## CHAP. IX.

*2 Christes transfiguration. 7 Christ must be heard. 11 Of Elias and Iohn Baptist. 14 The possessed is healed. 23 Faith can doe all things. 31 Christ foretelleth his death. 33 Who is greatest among the Apostles. 36 Christ taketh a childe in his armes. 42 To offend. 50 Salt. Peace.*

AND * he saide vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that there be some of them that stande here, which shall not taste of death, till they haue seene the kingdome of God come with power. *Mat.* 16.28. *luke* 9.27.

2 * And sixe daies after, Iesus taketh vnto him Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and carieth them vp into an hie mountaine out of the way alone, and his shape was changed before them. *Mat.* 17.1. *luke* 9.28.

3 And his raiment did shine, *and was* very white, as snowe, so white as no fuller can make vpon the earth.

4 And there appeared vnto them Elias with Moses, and they were talking with Iesus.

5 Then Peter answered, and said to Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be here: let vs make also three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 Yet he knewe not what he said: for they were afraide.

7 And there was a cloud that shadowed them, and a voice

came out of the cloude, saying, * This is my beloued Sonne: heare him.

*Matt.3.17. and 17.5. chap.1.11.*

8 And suddenly they looked rounde about, and sawe no more any man saue Iesus onely with them.

9 *And as they came downe from the mountaine, he charged them, that they shoulde tell no man what they had seene, saue when the Sonne of man were risen from the dead againe.

*Mat.17.9.*

10 So they kept that matter to themselues, and demaunded one of another, what the rising from the deade againe should meane.

11 Also they asked him, saying, Why say the Scribes, that *Elias must first come?

*Mal.4.5.*

12 And he answered, and said vnto them, Elias verely shall first come, and restore all things: and * as it is written of the Sonne of man, he must suffer many things, & be set at nought.

*Isa.53.4.*

13 But I say vnto you, that Elias is come (and they haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they would) as it is written of him.

14 ¶ * And when he came to *his* disciples, he sawe a great multitude about them, and the Scribes disputing with them.

*Mat.17.14. Luke 9.38.*

15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were amased, and ranne to him, and saluted him.

16 Then he asked the Scribes, What dispute you among your selues?

17 And one of the companie answered, and saide, Master, I haue brought my sonne vnto thee, which hath a dumme spirit:

18 And whersoeuer he taketh him, he teareth him, and he fometh, & gnasheth his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples that they should cast him out, & they could not.

19 Then he answered him, and saide, O faithlesse generation, howe long now shall I be with you? how long now shall I suffer you? Bring him vnto me.

20 So they brought him vnto him: and assoone as the spirit saw him, he tare him, and he fel downe on the ground, wallowing and soming.

21 Then he asked his father, Howe long time is it since he hath bene thus? And he said, Of a childe.

22 And oft times he casteth him into the fire, and into the water to destroy him: but if thou canst doe any thing, helpe vs, and haue compassion vpon vs.

23 And Iesus saide vnto him, If thou canst beleeue it, all things are possible to him that beleeueth.

24 And straightway the father of the childe, crying with teares,

teares,said,Lord,I beleeue: helpe mine vnbeliefe.

25 When Iesus sawe that the people came running together,he rebuked the vncleane spirit, saying vnto him, Thou dumme and deafe spirit, I charge thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 Then *the spirit* cryed, and rent him sore, and came out, and he was as one dead, in so much that many said, He is dead.

27 But Iesus tooke his hand and lift him vp, and he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house,his disciples asked him secretly,Why could not we cast him out?

29 And he saide vnto them, This kinde can by no other meanes come soorth,but by prayer,and fasting.

30 ¶ *And they departed thence,& went together through Galile,and he would not that any should haue knowen it, *Mat.17.22. luke 9.22.*

31 For he taught his disciples, and saide vnto them,*The Sonne of man shalbe deliuered into the hands of men, & they shall kill him,but after that he is killed,he shall rise againe the third day.

32 But they vnderstood not that saying, and were afraide to aske him.

33 * After, he came to Capernaum: and when he was in the house,he asked them,What was it that ye disputed amõg you by the way? *Mat.18.1. luke 9.46.*

34 And they helde their peace: for by the way they reasoned among themselues,who *should be* the chiefest.

35 And he sate downe, and called the twelue,and saide to them,If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and seruant vnto all.

36 And he tooke a litle childe, and set him in the middes of them, and tooke him in his armes, and said vnto them,

37 Who soeuer shall receiue one of such litle children in my Name,receiueth me: and who soeuer receiueth me,receiueth not me,but him that sent me.

38 ¶ *Then Iohn answered him, saying, Master, we sawe one casting out deuils by thy Name, which followeth not vs, and we forbad him,because he followeth vs not. *Luke 9.49.*

39 *But Iesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man that can do a miracle by my Name,& can lightly speake euil of me. *1.Cor.12.3.*

40 For whosoeuer is not against vs, is on our part.

41 *And whosoeuer shal giue you a cup of water to drinke for my Names sake, because ye belong to Christ, verely I say vnto you,he shall not lose his reward. *Mat.10.42.*

42 *And

*Mat.*18.6. *luke* 17.1. 42 * And whosoeuer shall offende one of these litle ones, that beleeue in me, it were better for him rather, & a milstone were hanged about his necke, & that he were cast into & sea.

*Mat.*5.29. *and* 18.8. 43 * Wherefore if thine hand cause thee to offende, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life, maimed, then hauing two handes to goe into hell, into the fire that neuer shall be quenched,

*Esa.*66.24. 44 * Where their wotme dieth not, and the fire neuer goeth out.

45 Likewise, if thy foote cause thee to offend, cut it off: it is better for thee to goe halte into life, then hauing two feete to be cast into hell, into the fire that neuer shall be quenched,

46 Where their wotme dieth not, and the fire neuer goeth out.

47 And if thine eye cause thee to offend, plucke it out: it is better for thee to go into the kingdome of God with one eye, then hauing two eyes, to be cast into hell fire,

48 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire neuer goeth out.

*Leuit.*2.13. 49 For euery man shall be salted with fire: and * euery sacrifice shalbe salted with salt.

*Mat.*5.13. *luke* 14.34. 50 * Salt is good: but if the salt be vnsauerie, wherewith shall it be seasoned? haue salt in your selues, and haue peace one with another.

## CHAP. X.

*9 The wife onely for fornication, is to be put away. 13 Litle children are brought to Christ. 17 A riche man asketh Iesus, how he may possesse eternall life. 28 The Apostles forsooke all things for Christes sake. 33 Christ foresheweth his death. 35 Zebedeus his sonnes request. 46 Blind Bartimeus healed.*

*Mat.*19.1. AND * he arose from thence, and went into the coastes of Iudea by the farre side of Iordan, and the people resorted vnto him againe, and as he was wont, he taught them againe.

2 Then the Phariseis came and asked him, if it were lawfull for a man to put away *his* wife, and tempted him.

*Deut.*24.1. 3 And he answered, and said vnto them, What did * Moses commaund you?

4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of diuorcement, and to put her away.

5 Then Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, For the hardnesse of your heart he wrote this precept vnto you.

*Gen.*1.27. *Mat.*19.4. 6 But at the beginning of the creation * God made them

male

male and female:

7 * For this cause shall man leaue his father and mother, *Gen.2.24.*
and cleaue vnto his wife, *1.cor.6.16.*

8 And they twaine shall be one flesh: so that they are no *ephes.5.31.*
more twaine, but one flesh.

9 *Therefore, what God hath coupled together, let not *1.Cor.7.10.*
man separate.

10 And in the house his disciples asked him againe of that matter.

11 And he saide vnto them, * Whosoeuer shall put away *Mat 5.32.*
his wife, & marrie another, committeth adulterie against her, *and 19.9.*

12 And if a woman put away her husband, and be married *luke 16.18.*
to another, she committeth adulterie.

13 ¶ * Then they brought litle children to him, that he *Mat. 19.13.*
shoulde touche them, and his disciples rebuked those that *luke 18.15.*
brought them.

14 But when Iesus sawe it, he was displeased, and saide to them, Suffer the litle children to come vnto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

15 Verely I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall not receiue the kingdome of God as a litle childe, he shall not enter therein.

16 And he tooke them vp in his armes, and put *his* handes vpon them, and blessed them.

17 ¶ And when he was gone out on the way, there came *Mat. 19.16.*
one * running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Ma- *luke 18.18.*
ster, what shall I doe, that I may possesse eternall life?

18 Iesus saide to him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, euen God.

19 Thou knowest the commandements, *Thou shalt not *Exod.20.13.*
commit adulterie. Thou shalt not kill. Thou shalt not steale. Thou shalt not beare false witnesse. Thou shalt hurt no *man.* Honour thy father and mother.

20 Then he answered, and saide to him, Master, all these things I haue obserued from my youth.

21 And Iesus looked vpon him, and loued him, and said vnto him, One thing is lacking vnto thee, Goe, *and* sell all that thou hast, and giue to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come, folowe me, and take vp the crosse.

22 But he was sad at that saying, and went away sorowfull: for he had great possessions.

23 And Iesus looked rounde about, and saide vnto his disciples, Howe hardly doe they that haue riches, enter into

the

the kingdome of God!

24 And his disciples were afraide at his wordes. But Iesus answered againe, and said vnto them, Children, howe hard is it for them ỹ trust in riches, to enter into the kingdome of God!

25 It is easier for a camel to goe through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 And they were much more astonied, saying with themselues, Who then can be saued?

27 But Iesus looked vpon them, and saide, With men *it is* impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

*Mat.*19.27. *Luke* 18.28. 28 ¶ *Then Peter beganne to say vnto him, Loe, we haue forsaken all, and haue folowed thee.

29 Iesus answered, and said, Verely I say vnto you, there is no man that hath forsaken house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or landes for my sake and the Gospels,

30 But he shall receiue an hundreth folde; now at this present, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and landes with persecutions, and in the world to come, eternall life.

*Mat.*19.30. 31 *But many *that are* first, shalbe last, and the last, first.

*Luke* 13.30. 32 ¶ *And they were in the way going vp to Hierusalem,

*Mat.* 20.17. *Luke* 18.31. and Iesus went before them, and they were troubled, and as they folowed, they were afraide, and Iesus tooke the twelue againe, and beganne to tell them what things shoulde come vnto him,

33 *Saying*, Behold, we goe vp to Hierusalem, and the Sonne of man shalbe deliuered vnto the hie Priests, & to the Scribes, and they shall condemne him to death, and shall deliuer him to the Gentiles.

34 And they shall mocke him, and scourge him, and spit vpon him, and kill him: but the third day he shall rise againe.

*Mat.*20.20. 35 ¶ *Then Iames and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedeus came vnto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldest do for vs that that we desire.

36 And he saide vnto them, What woulde ye I should doe for you?

37 And they said to him, Graunt vnto vs, that we may sit, one at thy right hand, and the other at thy left hand in thy glorie.

38 But Iesus said vnto them, Ye knowe not what ye aske:

Can

Can ye drinke of the cup that I ſhall drinke of, and be baptized with the baptiſme that I ſhalbe baptized with?

39 And they ſaide vnto him, We can. But Ieſus ſaide vnto them, Ye ſhall drinke in deede of ỹ cup that I ſhall drinke of, & be baptized wᵗ the baptiſme wherewith I ſhalbe baptized:

40 But to ſit at my right hand, and at my left, is not mine to giue, but *it ſhalbe giuen* to them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the tenne heard that, they began to diſdaine at Iames and Iohn.

42 But Ieſus called them vnto him, and ſaid to them, * Ye know that they which are princes among the Gentiles, haue domination ouer them, and they that be great among them, exerciſe authoritie ouer them. *Luke 22.25.*

43 But it ſhall not be ſo among you: but whoſoeuer will be great among you, ſhalbe your ſeruant.

44 And whoſoeuer will be chiefe of you, ſhall be the ſeruant of all.

45 For euen the Sonne of man came not to be ſerued, but to ſerue, and to giue his life for the raunſome of many.

46 ¶ * Then they came to Iericho: and as he went out of Iericho with his diſciples, & a great multitude, Bartimeus the ſonne of Timeus, a blind man, ſate by the wayes ſide, begging. *Mat. 20.29. luke 18.35.*

47 And when he heard that it was Ieſus of Nazareth, he began to crie, and to ſay, Ieſus the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me.

48 And many rebuked him, becauſe he ſhoulde holde his peace: but he cryed much more, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me.

49 Then Ieſus ſtood ſtill, and commaunded him to be called: and they called the blinde, ſaying vnto him, Be of good comfort: ariſe, he calleth thee.

50 So he threwe away his cloke, & roſe, and came to Ieſus.

51 And Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, What wilt thou that I doe vnto thee? And the blind ſaid vnto him, Lorde, that I may receiue ſight.

52 Then Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Goe thy way: thy faith hath ſaued thee. And by and by he receiued *his* ſight, and folowed Ieſus in the way.

## CHAP. XI.

1 *Chriſt entreth into Hieruſalem riding on an aſſe.* 13 *The fruitleſſe figtree is curſed* 15 *Sellers & buyers are caſt out of the Temple.* 23 *The force of faith.* 24 *Faith in prayer.* 25 *The brothers offences.*

*offences must be pardoned.* 27 *The Prieſtes aske by what authoritie he wrought thoſe thinges that he did.* 30 *Whence Johns Baptiſme was.*

*Mat.*21.1. *Luke* 18.29. AND * when they came neere to Hieruſalem, to Bethphage and Bethania vnto the mount of Oliues, he ſent foorth two of his diſciples,

2 And ſaide vnto them, Goe your wayes into that towne that is ouer againſt you, and aſſoone as ye ſhall enter into it, ye ſhall finde a colte tied, whereon neuer man ſate: looſe him, and bring him.

3 And if any man ſay vnto you, Why doe ye this? Say that the Lord hath neede of him, and ſtraightway he will ſend him hither.

4 And they went their way, and founde a colt tyed by the doore without, in a place where two wayes met, and they looſed him.

5 Then certaine of them that ſtoode there, ſaid vnto them, What doe ye looſing the colte?

6 And they ſaid vnto them, as Ieſus had commanded them: So they let them goe.

*Iohn* 12.14. 7 ¶ *And they brought the colte to Ieſus, and caſt their garments on him, and he ſate vpon him.

8 And many ſpred their garments in the way: other cut downe branches of the trees, and ſtrawed them in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cryed, ſaying, Hoſanna: bleſſed *be* he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

10 Bleſſed *be* the kingdome that commeth in the Name of the Lord of our father Dauid: Hoſanna, *O thou which art* in the higheſt *heauens*.

*Mat.* 21.10. *Luke* 19.45. 11 * So Ieſus entred into Hieruſalem, and into the Temple: and when he had looked about on all things, and now it was euening, he went ſoorth into Bethania with the twelue.

*Mat.*21.19. 12 * And on the morowe when they were come out from Bethania, he was hungrie.

13 And ſeeing a figge tree a farre off, that had leaues, he went *to ſee* if he might finde any thing thereon: but when he came vnto it, he ſounde nothing but leaues: for the time of figges was not yet.

14 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſaide to it, Neuer man eate fruite of thee hereafter while the world ſtandeth: and his diſciples heard it.

15 ¶ And

15 ¶ And they came to Hierusalem, and Iesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the Temple, & ouerthrewe the tables of the money changers, and the seates of them that sold doues.

16 Neither woulde he suffer that any man shoulde cary a vessell through the Temple.

17 And he taught, saying vnto them, Is it not writtē, *Mine house shalbe called the house of prayer vnto all nations? *but you haue made it a denne of theeues. *Isai.56.7. Ierc.7.11.

18 And the Scribes and hie Priestes hearde it, and sought howe to destroy him: for they feared him, because the whole multitude was astonied at his doctrine.

19 But when euen was come, *Iesus* went out of the citie.

20 ¶ * And in the morning as they iourneyed together, they sawe the figge tree dried vp from the rootes. *Mat.21.19.

21 Then Peter remembred, and said vnto him, Master, beholde, the figge tree which thou cursedst, is withered.

22 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Haue the faith of God.

23 For verely I say vnto you, that whosoeuer shall say vnto this mountaine, Be thou taken away, and cast into the sea, and shall not wauer in his heart, but shal beleeue that those things which he sayeth, shall come to passe, whatsoeuer he sayeth, shall be *done* to him.

24 *Therefore I say vnto you, whatsoeuer ye desire whē ye pray, beleeue that ye shall haue it, & it shalbe *done* vnto you. *Matth.7.7. luke 11.9.

25 *But when ye shall stand, and pray, forgiue, if ye haue any thing against any man, that your Father also which is in heauen, may forgiue you your trespasses. *Matth.6.14.

26 For if you will not forgiue, your Father which is in heauen, will not pardon you your trespasses.

27 ¶ *Then they came againe to Hierusalem: & as he walked in the Temple, there came to him the hie Priestes, and the Scribes, and the Elders, *Mat.21.23. luke 20.1.

28 And said vnto him, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authoritie, that thou shouldest doe these things?

29 Then Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, I will also aske of you a certaine thing, and answere ye me, and I wil tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

30 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men? answere me.

31 And

31 And they thought with themselues, saying, If we shall say frō heauen, he will say, Why then did ye not beleeue him?

32 But if we say of men, we feare the people: for all men counted Iohn, that he was a Prophet in deede.

33 Then they answered, and saide vnto Iesus, We can not tell. And Iesus answered, & said vnto them, Neither will I tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

## CHAP. XII.

*1 Of the vineyard. 10 Christ the stone refused of the Iewes. 13 Of tribute to be giuen to Cesar. 18 The Sadduces denying the resurrection. 28 The first commandement. 31 To loue God and the neighbour is better then sacrifices. 36 Christ Dauids sonne. 38 To beware of the Scribes and Pharises. 42 The poore widowe.*

Isai.5.1. ier.2.2. mat.21.33. luke 20 9.

AND he began to speake vnto them in parables, *A certaine man planted a vineyard, and compassed it with an hedge, and digged a pit for the winepresse, & built a towre in it, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a strange countrey.

2 And at the time, he sent to the husbandmen a seruaunt, that he might receiue of the husbandmen of the fruite of the vineyard.

3 But they tooke him, and beat him, and sent him away emptie.

4 And againe he sent vnto them another seruant, and at him they cast stones, and brake his head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

5 And againe he sent another, and him they slewe, and many other, beating some, and killing some.

6 Yet had he one sonne, his deare beloued: him also he sent the last vnto them, saying, They will reuerence my sonne.

7 But the husbandmen said among themselues, This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, and the inheritance shalbe ours.

8 So they tooke him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.

Psal.118. 22.isa.28. 16.mat.21. 42.actes 4. 11.rom.9. 33.1.pet.2. 28.

9 What shall then the Lord of the vineyarde doe? He will come and destroy these husbandmen, and giue the vineyarde to others.

10 Haue ye not read so much as this Scripture? *The stone which the builders did refuse, is made the head of the corner.

11 This was done of ỹ Lord, & it is marueilous in our eies.

12 Then they went about to take him, but they feared the people: for they perceiued that he spake that parable against them:

them: therefore they left him, and went their way.

13 ¶ *And they sent vnto him certaine of the Phariſes, and of the Herodians that they might take him in *his* talke. *Mat.* 12.15. *luke* 20.20.

14 And when they came, they sayd vnto him, Maſter, we know that thou art true, and careſt for no man: for thou conſidereſt not the perſon of men, but teacheſt the way of God truely. Is it lawfull to giue tribute to Ceſar, or not?

15 Should we giue it, or ſhould we not giue it? But hee knew their hypocriſie, and ſayd vnto them, Why tempt yee me? Bring me a peny, that I may ſee it.

16 So they brought it, & he ſayd vnto them, Whoſe is this image and ſuperſcription? and they ſayd vnto him, Ceſars.

17 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſayde vnto them, * Giue to Ceſar the things that are Ceſars, and to God, thoſe that are Gods: and they marueiled at him. *Rom.* 13.7.

18 ¶ *Then came the Sadduces vnto him, (which ſay there is no reſurrection) and they asked him, ſaying, *Mat.* 22.23. *luke* 20.27.

19 Maſter, *Moſes wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother die, and leaue *his* wife, and leaue no children, that his brother ſhould take his wife, and raiſe vp ſeede vnto his brother. *Deu.* 25.5. *mat.* 22.24.

20 There were ſeuen brethren, and the firſt tooke a wife, and when he died, left no yſſue.

21 Then the ſecond tooke her, and he died, neither did he yet leaue yſſue, and the third likewiſe:

22 So thoſe ſeuen had her, and left no yſſue: laſt of all the wife died alſo.

23 In the reſurrection then, when they ſhall riſe againe, whoſe wife ſhall ſhee be of them? for ſeuen had her to wife.

24 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſayd vnto them, Are yee not therefore deceiued, becauſe ye know not the Scriptures, neither the power of God?

25 For when they ſhall ariſe againe from the dead, neither men marry, nor wiues are married, but are as the Angels which are in heauen.

26 And as touching the dead, that they ſhall riſe againe, haue ye not read in the booke of Moſes, how in the buſh God ſpake vnto him, ſaying, *I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Iſaac, and the God of Iacob? *Exo.* 3.6. *mat.* 22.32.

27 God is not the God of the dead, but the God of the liuing. Ye are therefore greatly deceiued.

28 ¶ *Then came one of the Scribes that had heard them diſputing together, *and* perceiuing that he had anſwered them *Mat.* 22.35.

well, he asked him, Which is the first commandement of all?

29 Iesus answered him, The first of all the commaundements *is*, * Heare, Israel, the Lord our God is the onely Lord.

*Deut.6.4.*

30 Thou shalt therefore loue the Lorde thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy minde, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandement.

*Leui.19.18.* *mat.22.39.* *rom.13.9.* *gala.5.14.* *iames 2.8.*

31 And the second *is* like, that is, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. There is none other commaundement greater then these.

32 Then ỹ Scribe said vnto him, Wel Master, thou hast said the trueth, that there is one God, & that there is none but he.

33 And to loue him with all the heart, and with all the vnderstanding, and with all the soule, and with all the strength, and to loue *his* neighbour as himselfe, is more then all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices.

34 Then when Iesus sawe that he answered discretely, he said vnto him, Thou art not farre from the kingdome of God. And no man after that durst aske him any question.

*Mat.22.41.* *luke 20.41.* *Psal.110.1.*

35 ¶ * And Iesus answered & sayd teaching in the Temple, Howe say the Scribes that Christ is the Sonne of Dauid?

36 For Dauid himselfe sayd by the holy Ghost, * The Lord sayd to my Lorde, Sit at my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footestoole.

37 Then Dauid himselfe calleth him Lord: by what meanes is he then his sonne? And much people heard him gladly.

*Mat.23.6.* *luke 11.43.* *and 20.46.*

38 * Moreouer he sayd vnto them in his doctrine, Beware of the Scribes which loue to goe in long robes, and *loue* salutations in the markets,

39 And the chiefe seates in the Synagogues, and the first roumes at feastes.

*Mat.23.14.* *luke 20.47.*

40 Which * deuonre widowes houses, euen vnder a colour of long prayers. These shal receiue ỹ greater damnation.

*Luke 21.1.*

41 * And as Iesus sate ouer against the treasurie, he beheld howe the people cast money into the treasurie, and many rich men cast in much.

42 And there came a certaine poore widowe, and shee threwe in two mites, which make a quardrin.

43 Then hee called vnto him his disciples, and sayde vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that this poore widow hath cast more in, then all they which haue cast into the treasurie.

44 For they all did cast in of their superfluitie: but shee of her pouertie did cast in all that shee had, *euen* all her liuing.

CHAP.

1 *Of the destruction of Hierusalem.* 9 *Persecutions for the Gospel.* 10 *The Gospel must be preached to all nations.* 26 *Of Christes comming to iudgement.* 33 *We must watch and pray.*

AND * as he went out of the Temple, one of his disciples sayd vnto him, Master, see what maner stones, and what maner buildings *are here*. *Mat.24.1. luke 21.5.*

2 * Then Iesus answered, and sayde vnto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone vpon a stone, that shall not be throwen downe. *Luke 19.43.*

3 And as he sate on the mount of Oliues, ouer against the Temple, Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrewe asked him secretly,

4 Tell vs, when shal these things be? and what *shalbe* the signe when all these things shalbe fulfilled?

5 And Iesus answered them & began to say, * Take heede least any man deceiue you. *Ephes.5.6. 2.thes.2.3.*

6 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am *Christ*, and shall deceiue many.

7 Furthermore when ye shal heare of warres, and rumors of warres, be ye not troubled: for *such things* must needes be: but the ende *shall* not *be* yet.

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome, and there shalbe earthquakes in diuers quarters, and there shall be famine and troubles: these *are* the beginnings of sorowes.

9 But take ye heede to your selues: for they shall deliuer you vp to the councils, and to the Synagogues: yee shall be beaten, and brought before rulers and Kings for my sake, for a testimoniall vnto them.

10 And ỹ Gospel must first be published among al nations.

11 * But when they leade you, and deliuer you vp, be not carefull beforehand, neither studie what ye shall say, but what is giuen you at the same time, that speake: for it is not ye that speake, but the holy Ghost. *Mat.10.19. luke 12.11. and 21.14.*

12 Yea, and the brother shal deliuer the brother to death, and the father the sonne, and the children shall rise against their parents, and shall cause them to die.

13 And ye shall be hated of all men for my Names sake: but whosoeuer shall endure vnto the ende, he shalbe saued.

14 * Moreouer, when ye shall see the abomination of desolation (spoken of by * Daniel the Prophet) set where it ought *Mat.24.15. luke 21.20. Dan.9.27.*

ought not, (let him that readeth consider it) then let them *that be* in Iudea, flee into the mountaines,

15 And let him that is vpon the house, not come downe into the house, neither enter therein, to fetch any thing out of his house.

16 And let him that is in the fielde, not turne backe againe to take his garment.

17 Then woe *shalbe* to them that are with childe, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes.

18 Pray therefore that your flight be not in the winter.

19 For those dayes shall be such tribulation, as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created vnto this time, neither shalbe.

20 And except that the Lord had shortened those dayes, no flesh should be saued: but for the electes sake, which hee hath chosen, he hath shortened those dayes.

*Mat.*24.23. *luke* 17.23. *and* 21.8. 21 Then *if any man say to you, Loe, here is Christ, or, Loe, *he is* there, beleeue it not.

22 For false Christs shall rise, and false prophets, and shall shewe signes and wonders, to deceiue if it were possible the very elect.

23 But take yee heede: beholde, I haue shewed you all things before.

*Isai.*13.10. *ezek.*32.7. *Ioel* 2.10. *and* 3.15. 24 ¶Moreouer in those dayes, after that tribulation, * the sunne shall waxe darke, and the moone shal not giue her light,

25 And the starres of heauen shall fall: and the powers which are in heauen, shall shake.

26 And then shall they see the Sonne of man comming in the cloudes, with great power and glory.

*Mat.*24.31. 27 * And he shall then send his Angels, and shal gather together his elect from the foure windes, *and* from the vtmost part of the earth, to the vtmost part of heauen.

28 Nowe learne a parable of the fig tree. When her bough is yet tender, and it bringeth forth leaues, ye know that sommer *is* neere.

29 So in like maner, whē ye see these things come to passe, knowe that *the kingdome of God* is neere, *euen* at the doores.

30 Verely I say vnto you, that this generation shall not passe, till all these things be done.

31 Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my wordes shall not passe away.

32 But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no, not the

Angels

Angels which are in heauen, neither the Sonne himselfe, but the Father.

33 * Take heede, watch, and pray: for ye know not when the time is. *Mat.24.42.*

34 *For the Sonne of man is* as a man going into a strange countrey, and leaueth his house, and giueth authoritie to his seruants, and to euery man his worke, and commaundeth the porter to watch.

35 Watch ye therefore, (for ye knowe not when the master of the house will come, at euen, or at midnight, at the cocke crowing, or in the dawning.)

36 Lest if he come suddenly, he should finde you sleeping.

37 And those things that I say vnto you, I say vnto all men, Watch.

## CHAP. XIIII.

1 *The Priests conspiracie against Christ.* 3 *The woman powring oyle on Christs head.* 12 *The preparing of the Passeouer.* 22 *The institution of the supper.* 41 *Christ deliuered into the hands of men.* 43 *Iudas betrayeth him with a kisse.* 53 *Christ is before Caiaphas.* 66 *Peters deniall.*

AND *two dayes after followed *the feast of* the Passeouer, and of vnleauened bread: and the hie Priests, and Scribes sought how they might take him by craft, & put him to death. *Mat.26.2. luke 22.1.*

2 But they sayd, Not in the feast *day*, least there be any tumult among the people.

3 * And when he was in Bethania in the house of Simon the leper, as he sate at table, there came a woman hauing a boxe of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and she brake the boxe, and powred it on his head. *Mat.26.6. iohn 12.2.*

4 Therefore some disdained among them selues, and sayd, To what ende is this waste of ointment?

5 For it might haue bene solde for more then three hundreth pence, and bene giuen vnto the poore. And they murmured against her.

6 But Iesus sayd, Let her alone: why trouble ye her? she hath wrought a good worke on me.

7 For ye haue the poore with you alwayes, & when ye wil ye may doe them good, but me ye shall not haue alwayes.

8 She hath done that she could: shee came aforehand to anoint my body to the burying.

9 Verely I say vnto you, whersoeuer this Gospel shall be preached throughout the whole worlde, this also that shee

hath done, shalbe spoken of in remembrance of her.

*Mat.26.14. luke 22.4.* 10 ¶ *Then Iudas Iscariot, one of the twelue, went away vnto the hie Priests, to betray him vnto them.

11 And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised that they would giue him money: therefore hee sought howe he might conueniently betray him.

*Mat.26.17. luke 22.8.* 12 ¶ *Now the first day of vnleauened bread, when they sacrificed the Passeouer, his disciples sayd vnto him, Where wilt thou that we goe and prepare, that thou mayest eate the Passeouer?

13 Then he sent foorth two of his disciples, and sayd vnto them, Goe ye into the citie, and there shall a man meete you bearing a pitcher of water: follow him.

14 And whither soeuer he goeth in, say ye to the good man of the house, The Master sayeth, Where is the lodging where I shall eate the Passeouer with my disciples?

15 And he wil shew you an vpper chamber *which is* large, trimmed and prepared: there make it ready for vs.

16 So his disciples went forth, & came to the citie, & found as he had sayd vnto them, and made ready the Passeouer.

17 ¶ And at euen he came with the twelue.

*Psal.41.10. mat.26.20, 23 luke 22. 14 iohn 13. 18,21.* 18 * And as they sate at table and did eate, Iesus sayd, Verely I say vnto you, that one of you shall betray mee, which eateth with me.

19 Then they began to be sorowfull and to say to him one by one, Is it I? And another, Is it I?

20 And he answered and sayd vnto them, *It is* one of the twelue that dippeth with me in the platter.

*Acts.1.16.* 21 Truely the Sonne of man goeth his way, as it is written of him: * but wo *be* to that man, by whome the Sonne of man is betrayed: it had bene good for that man, if he had neuer bene borne.

*Mat.26.26. 1.cor.11.24.* 22 * And as they did eate, Iesus tooke the bread, & when he had giuen thankes, he brake it, and gaue it to them, and sayd, Take, eate, this is my body.

23 Also he tooke the cup, and when he had giuen thankes, gaue it to them: and they all dranke of it.

24 And he sayd vnto them, This is my blood of the newe Testament, which is shed for many.

25 Verely I say vnto you, I wil drinke no more of the fruit of the vine vntill that day, that I drinke it newe in the kingdome of God.

26 And

26 And when they had ſung a Pſalme, they went out to the mount of Olines.

27 ¶ * Then Ieſus ſayd vnto them, All ye ſhalbe offended by me this night: for it is written, *I wil ſmite the ſhepheard, and the ſheepe ſhall be ſcattered. *Iohn 16.32. Zech.13.7.

28 But after that I am riſen, I wil goe into * Galile before you. *Chap.16.7.

29 And Peter ſayd vnto him, Although all men ſhould be offended at thee, yet would not I.

30 Then Ieſus ſayd vnto him, Verely I ſay vnto thee, this day, *euen* in this night, before the cocke crowe twiſe, thou ſhalt denie me thriſe.

31 But he ſayd more earneſtly, If I ſhould die with thee, I will not denie thee: likewiſe alſo ſayd they all.

32 ¶ * After, they came into a place named Gethſemane: then he ſayd to his diſciples, Sit ye here, till I haue prayed. *Mat.26.36. Luke 22.39.

33 And he tooke with him Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and he began to be troubled, and in great heauines,

34 And ſayd vnto them, My ſoule is very heauie, *euen* vnto the death: tarie here and watch.

35 So he went forward a litle, & fell downe on the ground, and prayed, that if it were poſſible, that houre might paſſe from him.

36 And he ſayd, Abba, Father, all things are poſsible vnto thee: take away this cup from me: neuertheleſſe not that I will, but that thou wilt, *be done*.

37 Then he came, and found them ſleeping, & ſaid to Peter, Simon, ſleepeſt thou? couldeſt not thou watch one houre?

38 ¶ Watch ye, and pray, that ye enter not into tentation: the ſpirit in deede is ready, but the fleſh is weake.

39 And againe hee went away, and prayed, and ſpake the ſame wordes.

40 And he returned, and found them aſleepe againe: for their eyes were heauie: neither knew they what they ſhould anſwere him.

41 And hee came the third time, and ſayde vnto them, Sleepe henceforth, and take your reſt: it is ynough: the houre is come: beholde, the Sonne of man is deliuered into the hands of ſinners.

42 Riſe vp: let vs go: loe, he that betrayeth me, is at hand.

43 *And immediately while he yet ſpake, came Iudas that was one of the twelue, and with him a great multitude with ſwordes *Mat.26.47. Luke 22.47. Iohn 18.3.

swordes and staues from the hie Priestes, and Scribes, and Elders.

44 And hee that betrayed him, had giuen them a token, saying, Whomsoeuer I shall kisse, he it is: take him and leade him away safely.

45 And assoone as he was come, he went straightway to him, and sayd, Haile Master, and kissed him.

46 Then they layd their hands on him, and tooke him.

47 And one of them that stoode by, drewe out a sword, and smote a seruant of the hie Priest, and cut off his eare.

48 And Iesus answered and sayd vnto them, Yee be come out as against a thiefe with swords and staues, to take me.

49 I was dayly with you teaching in the Temple, and yee tooke me not: but *this is done* that the Scriptures should be fulfilled.

50 Then they all forsooke him, and fled.

51 And there followed him a certaine yong man, clothed in linnen vpon his bare *body*, and the yong men caught him.

52 But he left his linnen cloth, and fled from them naked.

*Mat.26.57.* *luke 22.54.* *iohn 18.24.* 53 *So they led Iesus away to the hie Priest, and to him came together all the hie Priests, & the Elders & the Scribes.

54 And Peter followed him a farre off, euen into the hall of the hie Priest, and sate with the seruants, and warmed *him selfe* at the fire.

*Mat.26.59.* 55 And the *hie Priests, and all the Councill sought for witnesse against Iesus, to put him to death, but found none.

56 For many bare false witnesse against him, but their witnesse agreed not together.

57 Then there arose certaine, & bare false witnesse against him, saying,

*Iohn 2 19.* 58 We heard him say, *I will destroy this Temple made with hands, and within three dayes I wil build another made without hands.

59 But their witnes yet agreed not together.

60 Then the hie Priest stoode vp amongst them, and asked Iesus, saying, Answerest thon nothing? what is the matter that these beare witnes against thee?

61 But he helde his peace, and answered nothing. Againe the hie Priest asked him, and sayde vnto him, Art thou that Christ the sonne of the blessed?

*Mat.24.39.* 62 And Iesus sayd, I am *he*, * and ye shall see the Sonne of man sit at the right hand of the power *of God*, and come in the cloudes

cloudes of heauen.

63 Then the hie Prieſt rent his clothes, and ſaide, What haue we any more neede of witneſſes?

64 Ye haue heard the blaſphemie: what thinke yee? And they all condemned him to be worthie of death.

65 And ſome began to ſpit at him, & to couer his face, and to beate him with fiſts, and to ſay vnto him, Prophecie. And the ſergeants ſmote him with *their* roddes.

66 *And as Peter was beneath in the hall, there came one of the maydes of the hie Prieſt, *Mat. 26.69. luke 22.55.*

67 And when ſhe ſaw Peter warming *himſelfe*, ſhe looked on him, and ſaid, Thou waſt alſo with Ieſus of Nazareth. *iohn 18.25.*

68 But he denied it, ſaying, I knowe him not, neither wot I what thou ſayeſt. Then he went out into the porche, and the cocke crewe.

69 *Then a mayde ſawe him againe, and began to ſay to them that ſtoode by, This is *one* of them. *Mat. 26.71. luke 22.58.*

70 But he denied it againe: and anon after, they that ſtood by, ſaid againe to Peter, Surely thou art *one* of them: for thou art of Galile, and thy ſpeach is like.

71 And he began to curſe, and ſweare, *ſaying*, I knowe not this man of whome ye ſpeake.

72 *Then the ſecond time the cocke crewe, and Peter remembred the worde that Ieſus had ſaid vnto him, Before the cocke crow twiſe, thou ſhalt denie me thriſe, and weying that with him ſelfe, he wept. *Mat. 26.75. iohn 13.38.*

## CHAP. XV.

1 *Of the things that Chriſt ſuffered vnder Pilate.* 11 *Barabbas is preferred before Chriſt.* 15 *Pilate deliuereth Chriſt to be crucified.* 17 *Hee is crowned with thorne.* 19 *They ſpit on him, and mocke him.* 21 *Simon of Cyrene carieth Chriſtes croſſe.* 27 *Chriſt is crucified betweene two theeues.* 29 *He is railed at.* 37 *He giueth vp the ghoſt.* 43 *Ioſeph burieth him.*

AND *anon in the dawning, the hie Prieſtes held a Councel with the Elders, & the Scribes, and the whole Councel, and bound Ieſus, and led him away, and deliuered him to Pilate. *Matth. 27.1. luke 22.66. iohn 18.19.*

2 Then Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Iewes? And he anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Thou ſayeſt it.

3 And the hie Prieſtes accuſed him of many things.

4 *Wherefore Pilate asked him againe, ſaying, Anſwereſt thou nothing? beholde how many things they witnes againſt thee. *Matt. 27.12. luke 23.3. iohn 18.35.*

5 But

5 But Iesus answered no more at al, so ỹ Pilate marueiled.

6 Now at the feast, Pilate did deliuer a prisoner vnto them, whomsoeuer they would desire.

7 Then there was one named Barabbas, which was bound with his fellowes, that had made insurrection, who in the insurrection had committed murther.

8 And the people cryed alonde, and began to desire *that he would doe* as he had euer done vnto them.

9 Then Pilate answered them, and said, Will ye that I let loose vnto you the King of the Iewes?

10 For he knew that the hie Priestes had deliuered him of enuie.

11 But the hie Priests had mooued the people *to desire* that he would rather deliuer Barabbas vnto them.

12 And Pilate answered, and said againe vnto them, What will ye then that I doe *with him*, whome ye call the King of the Iewes?

13 And they cried againe, Crucifie him.

14 Then Pilate saide vnto them, But what enill hath hee done? And they cried the more feruently, Crucifie him.

15 So Pilate willing to content the people, loosed them Barabbas, and deliuered Iesus, when he had scourged him, that he might be crucified.

16 Then the souldiers led him away into the hall, which is the common hall, and called together the whole band,

17 And clad him with purple, and platted a crowne of thornes, and put it about *his head*,

18 And began to salute him, *saying*, Haile, King of ỹ Iewes.

19 And they smote him on the head with a reede, and spet vpon him, and bowed the knees, *and* did him reuerence.

20 And when they had mocked him, they tooke the purple off him, and put his owne clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him.

*Mat.* 27. 32. *Luke* 23. 26. 21 *And they compelled one that passed by, *called* Simon of Cyrene (which came out of the countrey, and was father of Alexander and Rufus) to beare his crosse.

*Mat.* 27. 33. *Luke* 23. 33. *Iohn* 19. 17. 22 * And they brought him to a place named Golgotha, which is by interpretation, the place of *dead mens* skulles.

23 And they gaue him to drinke wine mingled with myrrhe, but he receiued it not.

*Luke* 23 34. 24 *And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots for them, what euery man should haue.

25 And

25 And it was the thirde houre, when they crucified him.
26 And the title of his cause was written aboue, THAT KING OF THE IEWES.
27 They crucified also with him two theeues, the one on the right hand, and the other on his left.
28 Thus the Scripture was fulfilled which saith,* And hee was counted among the wicked. *Isa.53.12.*
29 And they that went by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying,* Hey,thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three dayes, *Iohn 2.19.*
30 Saue thy selfe,and come downe from the crosse.
31 Likewise also euen the hie Priests mocking said among themselues with the Scribes, He saued other men, himselfe he cannot saue.
32 Let Christ the King of Israel nowe come downe from the crosse,that we may see, and beleeue. They also that were crucified with him, reuiled him.
33 ¶Nowe when the sixt houre was come, darkenes arose ouer all the land vntill the ninth houre.
34 And at the ninth houre Iesus cried with a loude voyce, saying,*Eloi, Eloi, lamma-sabachthani? which is by interpretation,My God,my God,why hast thou forsaken me? *Psal.22.1. mat.27.46.*
35 And some of them that stoode by, when they heard it, said, Beholde,he calleth Elias.
36 And one ranne, and filled a* spondge full of vineger, and put it on a reede. and gaue him to drinke,saying, Let him alone: Let vs see if Elias will come, and take him downe. *Psal. 69.22.*
37 And Iesus cried with a loude voice,& gaue vp the ghost.
38 And the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the toppe to the bottome.
39 Nowe when the Centurion,which stoode ouer against him, saw that he thus crying gaue vp the ghost,he said,Truely this man was the Sonne of God.
40 ¶ There were also women, which behelde a farre off, among whome was Marie Magdalene,and Marie (the mother of Iames the lesse, and of Ioses) and Salome,
41 Which also when he was in Galile,*followed him,and ministred vnto him, and many other women which came vp with him vnto Hierusalem. *Luke 8.2.*
42 *And nowe when night was come (because it was the day of the preparation that is before the Sabbath) *Mat.27.57.*
43 *Ioseph of Arimathea, an honourable counsellour, which *Luke 23.50. iohn 19.38.*

which also looked for the kingdome of God, came, and went in boldly vnto Pilate, and asked the body of Iesus.

44 And Pilate marueiled, if he were alreadie dead, and called vnto him the Centurion, and asked of him whether he had bene any while dead.

45 And when hee knewe *the truth* of the Centurion, hee gaue the body to Ioseph:

46 Who bought a linen cloth, and tooke him downe, and wrapped him in the linen cloth, & layed him in a tombe that was hewen out of a rocke, and rolled a stone vnto the doore of the sepulchre:

47 And Marie Magdalene, and Marie Ioses *mother*, behelde where he should be layed.

## CHAP. XVI.

1 *Of Christes resurrection.* 9 *He appeareth to Marie Magdalene and others.* 15 *He sendeth his Apostles to preach.* 19 *His ascension.*

*Luke* 24.1. *iohn* 20.1. AND * when the Sabbath day was past, Marie Magdalene, and Marie the *mother* of Iames, & Salome, bought sweete oyntments that they might come, and anoynt him.

2 Therefore early in the morning, the first day of the weeke, they came vnto the sepulchre, when the sunne was now risen.

3 And they saide one to another, Who shall rolle vs away the stone from the doore of the sepulchre?

4 And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away (for it was a very great one.)

*Matth.* 28.1. *iohn* 20.12. 5 * So they went into the sepulchre, and sawe a yong man sitting at the right side, clothed in a long white robe: and they were sore troubled.

6 But he saide vnto them, Be not so troubled: ye seeke Iesus of Nazareth, which hath bene crucified: hee is risen, hee is not here: beholde the place where they put him.

*Chap.* 14.28. *matt.* 26.32. 7 But go your way, and tell his disciples, and Peter, that he will goe before you into Galile: there shall ye see him, * as he said vnto you.

8 And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulchre: for they trembled, and were amased: neither saide they any thing to any man: for they were afraide.

*Iohn* 20.16. *luke* 8.2. 9 ¶ And when Iesus was risen againe, early the first day of the weeke, hee appeared first to Marie Magdalene, * out of whome he had cast seuen deuils.

10 And she went and tolde them that had bene with him, which

which mourned and wept.

11 And when they heard that he was aliue, and had appeared to her, they beleeued it not.

12 ¶ *After that, hee appeared vnto two of them in another forme, as they walked and went into the countrey. *Luke* 24.13.

13 And they went, and told it to the remnant, neither beleeued they them.

14 ¶ *Finally, he appeared vnto the eleuen as they sate together, and reproched them for their vnbeliefe and hardnesse of heart, because they beleeued not them which had seene him, being risen vp againe. *Luke* 24.36. *Iohn* 20.19.

15 And he said vnto them, *Goe ye into all the world, and preach the Gospel to euery creature. *Mat.*28.19.

16 Hee that shall beleeue and be baptized, shall be saued: *but he that will not beleeue, shalbe damned. *Iohn* 12.48.

17 And these tokens shall followe them that beleeue, * In my Name they shall cast out deuils, and * shall speake with newe tongues, *Acts.*16.18. *Acts.*2.4. *and* 10.46.

18 * And shall take away serpents, and if they shall drinke any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them: * they shall lay their handes on the sicke, and they shall recouer. *Acts.*28.5. *Acts.*28.8.

19 *So after the Lorde had spoken vnto them, he was receiued into heauen, and sate at the right hand of God. *Luke* 24.51.

20 And they went foorth, and preached euery where. And the *Lord wrought with them, and confirmed the word with signes that followed, AMEN. *Hebr.*2.4.

# THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESUS Christ according to Luke.

## CHAP. I.

*1 Lukes Preface. 5 Zacharias & Elizabet. 15 What an one Iohn should be. 20 Zacharias stroken dum for his incredulitie. 26 The Angel saluteth Mary, & foretelleth Christs natiuitie. 39 Mary visiteth Elizabet. 46 Maries song. 68 The song of Zachariat, shewing that the promised Christ is come. 76 The office of Iohn.*

FOR as much as many haue taken in hande to set foorth the storie of those thinges, whereof we are fully perswaded,

2 As they haue deliuered them vnto vs, which from the beginning sawe them their selues, and were ministers of the word,

3 It seemed good also to mee (most noble Theophilus) assoone as I had searched out perfectly all things from the beginning, to write vnto thee of from point to point,

4 That thou mightest acknowledge the certaintie of those things, whereof thou hast bene instructed.

5 IN the time of Herod King of Iudea, there *was* a certaine
1.Cor.24.1. Priest named Zacharias, of the *course of Abia: and his wife *was* of the daughters of Aaron, & her name *was* Elisabet.

6 Both were iust before God, and walked in all the commandements and ordinances of the Lord, without reproofe.

7 And they had no childe, because that Elisabet was barren: and both were well stricken in age.

8 And it came to passe, as hee executed the Priestes office before God, as his course came in order,

Exod.30.7. 9 * According to the custome of the Priests office, his lot was to burne incense, when hee went into the Temple of the Lorde.

10 And the whole multitude of the people were without
Leuit.8.17. in prayer, * while the incense was burning.

11 Then appeared vnto him an Angel of the Lord standing at the right side of the altar of incense.

12 And when Zacharias sawe *him*, hee was troubled, and feare fell vpon him.

13 But the Angel said vnto him, Feare not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Elisabet shall beare thee a sonne, and thou shalt call his name Iohn.

14 And thou shalt haue ioy and gladnesse, and many shall reioyce at his birth.

15 For hee shalbe great in the sight of the Lorde, and shall neither drinke wine, nor strong drinke: and hee shalbe filled with the holy Ghost, euen from his mothers wombe.

Malac.4.5. 16 * And many of the children of Israel shall hee turne to their Lord God.

Mat.11.14. 17 *For he shall goe before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turne the heartes of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdome of the iust men, to make readie a people prepared for the Lord.

18 Then Zacharias saide vnto the Angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife is of a great age.

19 And the Angel answered, and saide vnto him, I am Gabriel that stande in the presence of God, and am sent to speake vnto thee, and to shewe thee these good tidings.

20 And

20 And beholde, thou ſhalt be dumme, and not be able to ſpeake, vntill the day that theſe things be done, becauſe thou beleeuedſt not my words, which ſhalbe fulfilled in their ſeaſo.

21 Nowe the people waited for Zacharias, and marueiled that he taried ſo long in the Temple.

22 And when he came out, he could not ſpeake vnto them: then they perceiued that he had ſeene a viſion in the Temple: for he made ſignes vnto them, and remained dumme.

23 And it came to paſſe, when the dayes of his office were fulfilled, that he departed to his owne houſe.

24 And after thoſe dayes, his wife Eliſabet conceiued, and hid her ſelfe fiue moneths, ſaying,

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me, in the dayes wherein he looked on *me*, to take from me my rebuke among men.

26 ¶ And in the ſixt moneth, the Angell Gabriel was ſent from God vnto a citie of Galile, named Nazareth,

27 * To a virgine affianced to a man whoſe name *was* Ioſeph, of the houſe of Dauid, and the virgins name *was* Marie. *Matt.* 1. 18.

28 And the Angel went in vnto her, and ſaide, Haile thou *that art* freely beloued; the Lord *is* with thee: bleſſed *art* thou among women.

29 And when ſhe ſawe *him*, ſhe was troubled at his ſaying, and thought what maner of ſalutation that ſhould be.

30 Then the Angel ſaid vnto her, Feare not, Mary: for thou haſt found fauour with God.

31 *For loe, thou ſhalt conceiue in thy wombe, and beare a ſonne, * and ſhalt call his Name IESVS. *Iſai.* 7. 14. *Chap.* 2. 21.

32 He ſhalbe great, and ſhalbe called the Sonne of the moſt High, and the Lord God ſhall giue vnto him the throne of his father Dauid. *mat.* 1. 21.

33 * And he ſhall reigne ouer the houſe of Iacob for euer, and of his kingdome ſhalbe none ende. *Dan.* 7. 14, 27. *micah* 4. 7.

34 Then ſaid Marie vnto the Angel, How ſhall this be, ſeeing I knowe not man?

35 And the Angel anſwered, and ſaide vnto her, The holy Ghoſt ſhall come vpon thee, and the power of the moſt High ſhall ouerſhadowe thee: therefore alſo that holy thing which ſhalbe borne of thee, ſhalbe called the Sonne of God.

36 And beholde, thy couſin Eliſabet, ſhe hath alſo conceiued a ſonne in her olde age: and this is her ſixt moneth which was called barren.

37 For with God ſhall nothing be vnpoſsible.

38 Then

38 Then Mary ſaid, Behold the ſeruãt of the Lord: be it vnto me according to thy word. So the Angel departed frõ her.

39 ¶ And Marie aroſe in thoſe dayes, and went into the hil countrey with haſte to a citie of Iuda,

40 And entred into the houſe of Zacharias, and ſaluted Eliſabet.

41 And it came to paſſe, as Eliſabet heard the ſalutation of Marie, the babe ſprang in her belly, & Eliſabet was filled with the holy Ghoſt.

42 And ſhe cried with a loude voyce, and ſaide, Bleſſed art thou among women, becauſe ỹ fruit of thy wombe is bleſſed.

43 And whence *commeth* this to mee, that the mother of my Lord ſhould come to me?

44 For loe, aſſoone as the voyce of thy ſalutation ſounded in mine eares, the babe ſprang in my belly for ioy.

45 And bleſſed *is* ſhee that beleeued: for thoſe things ſhall be performed, which were tolde her from the Lord.

46 Then Marie ſaid, My ſoule magnifieth the Lord,

47 And my ſpirit reioyceth in God my Sauiour.

48 For he hath looked on the poore degree of his ſeruante for beholde, from henceforth ſhall all ages call me bleſſed,

49 Becauſe hee that is mightie, hath done for mee great things, and holy *is* his Name.

50 And his mercie *is* from generation to generation on them that feare him.

*Iſa.* 51.9. 51 *Hee hath ſhewed ſtrength with his arme: *hee hath

*pſal.* 33.10. ſcattered the proude in the imagination of their heartes.

*Iſa* 29.15. 52 *He hath put downe the mightie from *their* ſeates, and

1.*Sam.* 2.6. exalted them of lowe degree.

*Pſal.* 34.10. 53 *He hath filled the hungrie with good things, and ſent away the riche emptie.

*Iſa.* 30.18. 54 * Hee hath vpholden Iſrael his ſeruant to be mindefull

*and* 41.8. of *his* mercie,

*and* 54.5. 55 (*As he hath ſpoken to our fathers, *to wit*, to Abraham

*Iere.* 31.3, 20. and his ſeede) for euer.

*Gen.* 17.19. 56 ¶ And Marie abode with her about three moneths: af-

*and* 22.17. ter, ſhe returned to her owne houſe.

*pſal.* 132.11. 57 ¶ Nowe Eliſabets time was fulfilled, that ſhe ſhould be deliuered, and ſhe brought foorth a ſonne.

58 And her neighbours, and couſins heard tell howe the

*Verſe* 14. Lord had ſhewed his great mercie vpon her, and they *reioyced with her.

59 And

59 And it was so ye on the eight day, they came to circuncise the babe, & called him Zacharias after the name of his father.

60 But his mother answered, and saide, Not so, but he shall be called Iohn.

61 And they saide vnto her, There is none of thy kinred, that is named with this name.

62 Then they made signes to his father, howe hee woulde haue him called.

63 So he asked for writing tables, and wrote, saying, His name is Iohn, and they marueiled all.

64 And his mouth was opened immediatly, & his tongue ‖, and he spake and praised God.

65 Then feare came on all them that dwelt neere vnto them, and all these wordes were noised abroad throughout all the hill *countrey* of Iudea.

66 And all they that heard them, laide *them* vp in their hearts, saying, What maner childe shall this be! and the hande of the Lord was with him.

67 Then his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophecied, saying,

68 Blessed *be* the Lorde God of Israel, because he hath visited and * redeemed his people,

69 * And hath raised vp the horne of saluation vnto vs, in the house of his seruant Dauid,

70 * As he spake by the mouth of his holy Prophets, which were since the world began, *saying*,

71 *That he woulde sende vs* deliuerance from our enemies, and from the hands of all that hate vs,

72 That he might shewe mercie towards our fathers, and remember his holy couenant,

73 * *And* the othe which he sware to our father Abraham,

74 *Which was*, that he woulde graunt vnto vs, that we being deliuered out of the hands of our enemies, should serue him without feare,

75 All the daies of our life, in * holinesse and righteousnes before him.

76 And thou, babe, shalt be called the Prophet of the most High: for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord, to prepare his waies,

77 *And* to giue knowledge of saluation vnto his people, by the remission of their sinnes,

78 Through the tender mercie of our God, whereby * the day

‖ was restored to it former state, *is read in some copies.*

*Chap.2.30. mat.1.21. Psa.132.18. Iere.23.6. and 30.10.*

*Gen.22.16. iere.31.33. heb.6.13,17.*

1. *Pet.1.15.*

*Zech.3.8. and 6 12. malac.4.2.*

day spring from an high hath visited vs,

79 To giue light to them that sit in darkenes, & in the shadowe of death, and to guide our feete into the way of peace.

80 And the childe grewe, and waxed strong in spirite, and was in the wildernesse, till the day came that he should shew himselfe vnto Israel.

## CHAP. II.

1 *Augustus Cesar taxeth all the world.* 7 *Christ is borne.* 13 *The Angels song.* 21 *Christ is circumcised.* 22 *Marie purified.* 28 *Simeon taketh Christ in his armes.* 29 *His song.* 36 *Anna the Prophetesse.* 40 *The childe Christ.* 46 *Iesus disputeth with the doctours.*

AND it came to passe in those daies, ỹ there came a decree from Augustus Cesar, that all the world should be taxed.

2 (This first taxing was made when Cyrenius was gouernour of Syria)

3 Therefore went all to be taxed, euery man to his owne citie.

4 And Ioseph also went vp from Galile out of a citie called Nazareth, into Iudea, vnto the city of *Danid, which is called Beth-leem (because he was of the house and linage of Danid,) *John 7.42.*

5 To be taxed with Marie that was giuen him to wife, which was with childe.

6 ¶ And so it was, that while they were there, the daies were accomplished that she should be deliuered.

7 And shee brought foorth her first begotten sonne, and wrapped him in swadling clothes, and laide him in a cratch, because there was no roome for them in the ynne.

8 ¶ And there were in the same countrey shepheards, abiding in the field, & keeping watch by night ouer their flocke.

9 And loe, the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, and the glory of the Lord shone about them, & they were sore afraid.

10 Then the Angel saide vnto them, Be not afraide: for behold, I bring you glad tidings of great ioy, that shall be to all the people:

11 *That is*, that vnto you is borne this day in the citie of Danid, a Sauiour, which is Christ the Lord.

12 And this *shall be* a signe to you, Yee shall finde the babe swadled, and laid in a cratch.

13 And straightway there was with the Angel a multitude of heauenly souldiers, praising God, and saying,

14 Glory *be* to God in the high *heauen*, & peace in earth, and

and towards men good will.

15 And it came to passe when the Angels were gone away from them into heauen, that the shepheards saide one to another, Let vs goe then vnto Beth-leem, and see this thing that is come to passe which the Lord hath shewed vnto vs.

16 So they came with haste, and found both Marie and Ioseph, and the babe laid in the cratch.

17 And when they had seene it, they published abroad the thing, which was tolde them of that childe.

18 And all that heard it, wondred at the things which were tolde them of the shepheards.

19 But Marie kept all those sayings, and pondered *them* in her heart.

20 And the shepheards returned glorifying and praising God, for all that they had hearde and seene as it was spoken vnto them.

21 ¶ * And when the eight daies were accomplished, that they shoulde circumcise the childe, his name was then called *Gen.17.12. leuit.12.3.* *IESVS, which was named of the Angell, before hee was conceiued in the wombe. *iohn 7.22. Chap.1.31.*

22 * And when the daies of her purification after the Law of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Hierusalem, to present him to the Lord, *mat.1.25. Leuit.12.6.*

23 (As it is written in ỹ Law of the Lord, *Euery man child that *first* openeth the wombe, shalbe called holy to the Lord) *Exod.13.2. nomb.8.16.*

24 And to giue an oblation, *as it is cõmanded in the Law of the Lord, a paire of turtle doues, or two yong pigeons. *Leuit.12.6.*

25 And behold, there was a man in Hierusalẽ, whose name was Simeon: this man *was* iust, and feared God, and waited for the consolation of Israel, & the holy Ghost was vpon him.

26 And it was declared to him from God by the holy Ghost, that he shoulde not see death, before he had seene that Anoynted of the Lord.

27 And he came by *the motion of* the Spirit into the Temple, and when the parents brought in the babe Iesus, to doe for him after the custome of the Lawe,

28 Then he tooke him in his armes, & praised God, & said,

29 Lorde, nowe lettest thou thy seruant depart in peace, according to thy worde.

30 For mine eyes haue seene thy saluation,

31 Which thou hast prepared before ỹ face of all people,

32 A light to be reuciled to the Gentiles, and the glory of

thy people Israel.

33 And Ioseph and his mother marueiled at those things, which were spoken touching him.

34 And Simeon blessed them, & said vnto Marie his mother, Esa.8.14. Beholde, this *childe* is appointed for the *fall and rising againe rom.9.32. of many in Israel, and for a signe which shalbe spoken against: 1.pet.2.8.

35 (Yea and a sworde shall pearce through thy soule) that the thoughts of many hearts may be opened.

36 And there was a Prophetisse, one Anna the daughter of Phanuel, of ỹ tribe of Aser, which was of a great age, after she had liued with an husband seuen yeeres from her virginitie:

37 And she *was* widow about foure score & foure yeeres, & went not out of the Temple, but serued *God* with fastings and praiers, night and day.

38 She then comming at the same instant vpon them, confessed likewise the Lorde, and spake of him to all that looked for redemption in Hierusalem.

39 And when they had performed all things according to the Law of the Lord, they returned into Galile to their owne citie Nazareth.

40 And the childe grewe, and waxed strong in Spirit, and was filled with wisdome, and the grace of God was with him.

41 ¶ Nowe his parents went to Hierusalem euery yeere, Deut.16.1. *at the feast of the Passeouer.

42 And when he was twelue yere olde, & they were come vp to Hierusalem, after the custome of the feast,

43 And had finished the daies *thereof*, as they returned, the childe Iesus remained in Hierusalem, and Ioseph knewe not, nor his mother,

44 But they supposing that he had bene in the companie, went a daies iourney, and sought him among *their* kinsfolke, and acquaintance.

45 And when they founde him not, they turned backe to Hierusalem, and sought him.

46 And it came to passe three daies after, that they founde him in the Temple, sitting in the middes of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions:

47 And all that heard him, were astonied at his vnderstanding, and answeres.

48 So when they saw him, they were amased, & his mother said vnto him, Sõne, why hast thou thus dealt with vs? behold, thy father and I haue sought thee with very heauie hearts.

49 Then

49 Then said he vnto them, Howe is it that ye sought me? knewe yee not that I must goe about my Fathers businesse?

50 But they vnderstood not the word ỹ he spake to them.

51 Then he went downe with them, & came to Nazareth, and was subiect to them: and his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.

52 And Iesus increased in wisedome, and stature, and in fauour with God and men.

## CHAP. III.

*4 Iohn exhorteth to repentance. 15 His testimonie of Christ. 20 Herod putteth him in prison. 21 Christ is baptized. 23 His pedegree.*

NOwe in the fifteenth yeere of the reigne of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being gouernour of Iudea, and Herod being Tetrarch of Galile, and his brother Philip Tetrarch of Iturea, and of the countrey of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the Tetrarch of Abilene,

2 (*When Annas and Caiaphas were the hie Priests) the worde of God came vnto Iohn the sonne of Zecharias in the wilderneſſe. *Actes 4.6.*

3 * And hee came into all the coastes about Iordan, preaching the baptisme of repentance for the remission of sinnes. *Mat.3.2. marke 1.4.*

4 As it is written in the booke of the sayings of Esaias the Prophet, which saieth, * The voice of him that crieth in the wilderneſſe *is*, Prepare ye the way of the Lord: make his paths straight. *Isai.40.3. iohn 1.23.*

5 Euery valley shalbe filled, and euery mountaine and hill shalbe brought lowe, & crooked things shalbe made straight, and the rough waies *shalbe made* smoothe.

6 And all flesh shall see the saluation of God.

7 Then saide hee to the people that were come out to be baptized of him, * O generatiõs of vipers, who hath forewarned you to flee from the wrath to come? *Mat.3.7.*

8 Bring foorth therefore fruites worthie amendment of life, and begin not to say with your selues, We haue Abraham to *our* father: for I say vnto you, that God is able of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham.

9 Nowe also is the axe laide vnto the roote of the trees: therefore euery tree which bringeth not foorth good fruite, shalbe hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

10 ¶ Then the people asked him, saying, What shall we doe then?

*Iames* 2.15. *1.iohn* 3.17.

11 And he answered, and saide vnto them, * Hee that hath two coates, let him part with him that hath none: and he that hath meate, let him doe likewise.

12 Then came there Publicanes also to be baptized, and saide vnto him, Master, What shall we doe?

13 And hee saide vnto them, Require no more then that which is appointed vnto you.

14 The soldiers likewise demaded of him, saying, And what shall we doe? And he said vnto them, Do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely, and be content with your wages.

15 As the people waited, & all men mused in their hearts of Iohn, if he were not that Christ,

*Matt.*3.11. *mar.*1.8. *iohn* 1.26. *actes* 1.5. *and* 8 4. *and* 11.16. *and* 19.4.

16 Iohn answered, and saide to them all, * In deede I baptize you with water, but one stroger then I, commeth, whose shoes latchet I am not worthie to vnloose: hee will baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire.

17 Whose fanne *is* in his hand, and he will make cleane his floore, & will gather the wheat into his garner, but the chaffe will he burne vp with fire that neuer shall be quenched.

18 Thus then exhorting with many other things, he preached vnto the people.

*Mat.*14.3. *mar.*6.17.

19 * But when Herod the Tetrarch was rebuked of him, for Herodias his brother Philips wife, and for all the euils which Herod had done,

20 He added yet this aboue al, ỹ he shut vp Iohn in prison.

*Mat.*3.13. *mar.*1.9. *iohn* 1.32.

21 * Nowe it came to passe, as all the people were baptized, and that Iesus was baptized and did pray, that the heauen was opened:

22 And the holy Ghost came downe in a bodily shape like a doue vpon him, and there was a voice from heauen, saying, Thou art my beloued Sonne: in thee I am well pleased.

23 ¶ And Iesus himselfe began to be about thirtie yeere of age, being as men supposed the sonne of Ioseph, *which was the sonne* of Eli,

24 *The sonne* of Matthat, *the sonne* of Leui, *the sonne* of Melchi, *the sonne* of Ianna, *the sonne* of Ioseph,

25 *The sonne* of Mattathias, *the sonne* of Amos, *the sonne* of Naum, *the sonne* of Esli, *the sonne* of Nagge,

26 *The sonne* of Maath, *the sonne* of Mattathias, *the sonne* of Semei, *the sonne* of Ioseph, *the sonne* of Iuda,

27 *The sonne* of Ioanna, *the sonne* of Rhesa, *the sonne* of Zorobabel, *the sonne* of Salathiel, *the sonne* of Neri,

28 *The*

28 *The sonne* of Melchi, *the sonne* of Addi, *the sonne* of Cosam, *the sonne* of Elmodam, *the sonne* of Er,

29 ¶ *The sonne* of Iose, *the sonne* of Eliezer, *the sonne* of Iorim, *the sonne* of Matthat, *the sonne* of Leui,

30 *The sonne* of Simeon, *the sonne* of Iuda, *the sonne* of Ioseph, *the sonne* of Ionan, *the sonne* of Eliacim,

31 *The sonne* of Melea, *the sonne* of Mainan, *the sonne* of Mattatha, *the sonne* of Nathan, *the sonne* of Dauid,

32 *The sonne* of Ieſſe, *the sonne* of Obed, *the sonne* of Booz, *the sonne* of Salmon, *the sonne* of Naaſſon,

33 *The sonne* of Aminadab, *the sonne* of Aram, *the sonne* of Esrom, *the sonne* of Phares, *the sonne* of Iuda,

34 *The sonne* of Iacob, *the sonne* of Isaac, *the sonne* of Abraham, *the sonne* of Thara, *the sonne* of Nachor,

35 *The sonne* of Saruch, *the sonne* of Ragau, *the sonne* of Phalec, *the sonne* of Eber, *the sonne* of Sala,

36 *The sonne* of Cainan, *the sonne* of Arphaxad, *the sonne* of Sem, *the sonne* of Noe, *the sonne* of Lamech,

37 *The sonne* of Mathuſala, *the sonne* of Enoch, *the sonne* of Iared, *the sonne* of Maleleel, *the sonne* of Cainan,

38 *The sonne* of Enos, *the sonne* of Seth, *the sonne* of Adam, *the sonne* of God.

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 Chriſtes temptation and faſting. 16 He teacheth in Nazareth to the great admiration of all. 24 A Prophet that teacheth in his owne countrey is contemned. 33 One poſſeſſed of the deuill is cured. 38 Peters mother in lawe healed, 40 and diuers ſicke perſons are reſtored to health. 41 The deuils acknowledge Chriſt.*

AND Ieſus full of the holy Ghoſt returned from Iordan, and was led by that Spirit into the wilderneſſe,

2 * And was *there* fourtie daies tempted of the deuill and in thoſe daies he did eat nothing: but when they were ended, he afterward was hungrie. *Mat* 4.1. *mar.* 1.12.

3 Then the deuill ſaide vnto him, If thou be the ſonne of God, command this ſtone that it be made bread.

4 But Ieſus anſwered him, ſaying, It is written, *That man ſhall not liue by bread onely but by every word of God. *Deut.* 8.3. *mat.* 4.4.

5 Then the deuill tooke him vp into an high mountaine, and ſhewed him all the kingdoms of the world, in the twinkeling of an eye.

6 And the deuill ſaide vnto him, All this power will I giue

thee, and the glorie of those *kingdomes*: for that is deliuered to me: and to whomsoeuer I will, I giue it.

7 If thou therefore wilt worship me, they shalbe all thine.

8 But Iesus answered him, and saide, Hence from me, Satan: for it is written, *Thou shalt worship the Lorde thy God, and him alone thou shalt serue.

*Deut. 6.13. and 10.20.*

9 Then he brought him to Hierusalem, and set him on a pinacle of the Temple, and said vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe from hence,

10 For it is written, *That he will giue his Angels charge ouer thee to keepe thee:

*Psal. 91.12.*

11 And with *their* hands they shal lift thee vp, least at any time thou shouldest dash thy foote against a stone.

12 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, It is said, *Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

*Deut. 6.16.*

13 And when the deuill had ended all the tentation, he departed from him for a litle season.

14 ¶ And Iesus returned by the power of the spirit into Galile: and there went a fame of him throughout all the region round about.

15 For he taught in their Synagogues, and was honoured of all men.

16 *And he came to Nazareth where he had bene brought vp, and (as his custome was) went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stoode vp to reade.

*Mat. 13.54. mar. 6.1. ioh. 3.43.*

17 And there was deliuered vnto him the booke of ỹ Prophet Esaias: and when he had opened the booke, he found the place, where it was written,

18 *The Spirit of ỹ Lord *is* vpon me, because he hath anointed me, ỹ I should preach the Gospel to ỹ poore: he hath sent me, that I should heale the broken hearted, ỹ I should preach deliuerance to the captiues, and recouering of sight to the blinde, that I should set at libertie them that are bruised:

*Esa 61.1.*

19 And that I shoulde preache the acceptable yeere of the Lord.

20 And he closed the booke, and gaue it againe to the minister, and sate downe: and the eyes of all that were in the Synagogue, were fastened on him.

21 Then he began to say vnto them, This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your eares.

22 And all bare him witnes, and wondered at the gracious woordes, which proceeded out of his mouth, and saide, Is not this

this Iosephs sonne?

23 Then he said vnto them, Ye will surely say vnto me this prouerbe, Physicion, heale thy selfe: whatsoeuer we haue heard done in Capernaum, doe it here likewise in thine owne countrey.

24 And he said, Verely I say vnto you, *No Prophet is accepted in his owne countrey. *Iohn 4.44.

25 But I tell you of a trueth, many widowes were in Israel in the dayes of *Elias, when heauen was shut three yeeres & sixe moneths, when great famine was throughout al the land, *1.King.17.9. iames 5.17.

26 But vnto none of them was Elias sent, saue into Sarepta, *a citie of* Sidon, vnto a certaine widowe.

27 Also many lepers were in Israel, in the time of *Eliseus the Prophet: yet none of them was made cleane, sauing Naaman the Syrian. *2.King.5.14

28 Then all *that were* in the Synagogue, when they heard it, were filled with wrath,

29 And rose vp, and thrust him out of the citie, & led him vnto the edge of the hill, whereon their citie was built, to cast him downe headlong.

30 But he passed through the middes of them, and went his way,

31 ¶ *And came downe into Capernaum a citie of Galile, and there taught them on the Sabbath dayes. *Mat.4.13. mar.1.21.

32 *And they were astonied at his doctrine: for his word was with authoritie. *Mat.7.29. mar.1.22.

33 * And in the Synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an vncleane deuil, which cryed with a loude voyce, *Mar.1.23.

34 Saying, Oh, what haue we to doe with thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy vs? I know who thou art, *euen* the holy one of God.

35 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, & come out of him. Then the deuil throwing him in the middes *of them*, came out of him, and hurt him nothing at all.

36 So feare came on them all, and they spake among them selues, saying, What thing is this? for with authoritie & power he commaundeth the foule spirits, and they come out.

37 And the fame of him spred abroade throughout all the places of the countrey round about.

38 ¶ *And he rose vp, and came out of the Synagogue, and entred into Simons house. And Simons wiues mother was taken with a great feuer, and they required him for her. *Mat.8.14. mar.1.30.

39 Then

39 Then he ſtoode ouer her, and rebuked the feuer, and it left her, and immediatly ſhe aroſe, and miniſtred vnto them.

40 Nowe at the ſunne ſetting, all they that had ſicke *ſiknes* of diuers diſeaſes, brought them vnto him, and he laide his hands on euery one of them, and healed them.

*Mar.1.35.* 41 * And deuils alſo came out of many, crying and ſaying, Thou art that Chriſt that Sõne of God: but he rebuked them, and ſuffered them not to ſay that they knewe him to be that Chriſt.

42 And when it was day, he departed, & went foorth into a deſart place, and the people ſought him, and came to him, and kept him that he ſhould not depart from them.

43 But he ſaide vnto them, Surely I muſt alſo preache the kingdome of God to other cities: for therefore am I ſent.

44 And he preached in the Synagogues of Galile.

## CHAP. V.

*1 Chriſt teacheth out of the ſhip. 8 Of the draught of fiſh. 12 The Leper. 16 Chriſt prayeth in the deſart. 18 One ſicke of the palſie. 27 Leui the Publicane. 34 The faſtings and afflictions of the Apoſtles after Chriſtes aſcenſion.. 36. 37. 38 Faint hearted and weake diſciples are likened to old boſtels and worne garments.*

*Mat.4.18. mar.1.16.* THen * it came to paſſe, as the people preaſſed vpon him to heare the worde of God, that he ſtoode by the lake of Genneſaret,

2 And ſawe two ſhippes ſtand by the lake ſide, but the fiſhermen were gone out of them, and were waſhing their nets.

3 And he entred into one of the ſhippes, which was Simons, and required him that he would thruſt off a litle from the lande: and he ſate downe, and taught the people out of the ſhippe.

4 ¶Nowe when he had left ſpeaking, he ſaid vnto Simon, Launche out into the deepe, and let downe your nettes to make a draught.

5 Then Simon anſwered, and ſaide vnto him, Maſter, we haue trauailed ſore all night, and haue taken nothing: neuertheleſſe at thy worde I will let downe the net.

6 And when they had ſo done, they incloſed a great multitude of fiſhes, ſo that their net brake.

7 And they beckened to their partners, which were in the other ſhip that they ſhould come and helpe them, who came then, and filled both the ſhippes, that they did ſinke.

8 Nowe

8 Nowe when Simon Peter sawe it, he fell downe at Iesus knees, saying, Lord, goe from me: for I am a sinnefull man.

9 For he was vtterly astonied, and all that were with him, for the draught of fishes which they tooke.

10 And so was also Iames and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedeus, which were companions with Simon. Then Iesus saide vnto Simon, Feare not: from henceforth thou shalt catche men.

11 And when they had brought the shippes to lande, they forsooke all, and followed him.

12 ¶ * Nowe it came to passe, as he was in a certaine citie, beholde, *there was* a man full of leprosie, and when he sawe Iesus, he fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane. *Mat.8.2. mar.1.40.*

13 So he stretched foorth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will, be thou cleane. And immediatly the leprosie departed from him.

14 And he commanded him that he should tell it no man: but go, *saith he*, & shewe thy selfe to the Priest, & offer for thy clensing, as * Moses hath commanded for a witnes vnto them. *Leuit.14.4.*

15 But so much more went there a same abroade of him, and great multitudes came together to heare, and to be healed of him of their infirmities.

16 But he kept himselfe apart in the wildernes, & prayed.

17 ¶ And it came to passe, on a certaine day, as he was teaching, that the Pharises & doctours of the Law sate by, which were come out of euery towne of Galile, and Iudea, and Hierusalem, and the power of the Lord was *in him* to heale them.

18 * Then beholde, men brought a man lying in a bed, which was taken with a palsie, and they sought meanes to bring him in, and to lay him before him. *Mat.9.2. mar.2.3.*

19 And when they coulde not finde by what way they might bring him in, because of the prease, they went vp on the house, and let him downe through the tyling, bed and all, in the middes before Iesus.

20 And when he sawe their faith, he saide vnto him, Man, thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

21 Then the Scribes and the Pharises began to reason, saying, Who is this that speaketh blasphemies? who can forgiue sinnes, but God onely?

22 But when Iesus perceiued their reasoning, he answered, and said vnto them, What reason ye in your hearte?

23 Whether

23 Whether is eafier to ſay, Thy ſinnes are forgiuen thee, or to ſay, Riſe and walke?

24 But that ye may know that that Sonne of man hath authoritie to forgiue ſinnes on earth, (he ſaide vnto the ſicke of the palſie) I ſay to thee, Ariſe: take vp thy bed, and goe to thine houſe.

25 And immediatly he roſe vp before them, and tooke vp *his bed* whereon he lay, and departed to his owne houſe, praying God.

26 And they were all amaſed, and prayſed God, and were filled with feare, ſaying, Doutleſſe, wee haue ſeene ſtrange things to day.

*Mat.9.9. mar.2.14.* 27 ¶ * And after that, he went foorth and ſawe a Publicane named Leui, ſitting at the receite of cuſtome, and ſaide vnto him, Followe me.

28 And he left all, roſe vp, and followed him.

29 Then Leui made him a great feaſt in his owne houſe, where there was a great companie of Publicanes, & of other that ſate at table with them.

30 But they that were Scribes and Phariſes among them, murmured againſt his diſciples, ſaying, Why eate ye & drinke ye with Publicanes and ſinners?

31 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſaide vnto them, They that are whole, neede not the Phyſition, but they that are ſicke.

*1.Tim.1.15.* 32 *I came not to call the righteous, but ſinners to repentance.

*Mat.9.14. mar.2.18.* 33 ¶ *Then they ſaid vnto him, Why doe the diſciples of Iohn faſt often, and pray, and the *diſciples* of the Phariſes alſo, but thine eate, and drinke?

34 And he ſaide vnto them, Can ye make the children of the wedding chamber to faſt, as long as the bridegrome is with them?

35 But the dayes will come, euen when the bridegrome ſhall be taken away from them: then ſhall they faſt in thoſe dayes.

36 Againe he ſpake alſo vnto them a parable, No man putteth a piece of a newe garment into an olde veſture: for then the newe renteth it, and the piece *taken* out of the newe, agreeth not with the olde.

37 Alſo no man powreth newe wine into olde veſſels: for then the newe renteth it, and the piece *taken* out of the new, agreeth not with the olde.

38 But

38 But newe wine must be powred into newe vessels: so both are preserued.

39 Also no man that drinketh olde wine, straightway desireth newe: for he saith, The olde is more profitable.

## CHAP. VI.

*1 The disciples pull the eares of corne on the Sabbath. 6 Of him that had a withered hand. 13 The election of the Apostles. 20 The blessings and curses. 27 Wee must loue our enemies. 46 With what fruite the worde of God is to be heard.*

AND * it came to passe on a second solemne Sabbath, that he went through the corne fieldes, and his disciples plucked the eares of corne, and did eate, and rubbe them in *their* handes. *Mat.12.1. mar.2.23.*

2 And certaine of the Pharises said vnto them, Why do ye that which is not lawfull to doe on the Sabbath dayes?

3 Then Iesus answered them, and saide, * Haue ye not read this, that Dauid did when he himselfe was an hungred, and they which were with him, *1.Sam.21.6.*

4 How he went into the house of God, and tooke, and ate the shewe bread, & gaue also to them which were with him, which was not lawfull to eate, but for the * Priestes onely? *Exod.29.33. leuit.8.31. and 24.9.*

5 And he saide vnto them, The Sonne of man is Lord also of the Sabbath day.

6 ¶ * It came to passe also on another Sabbath, that he entred into the Synagogue, and taught, and there was a man, whose right hand was dryed vp. *Mat.12.9. mar.3.1.*

7 And the Scribes and Pharises watched him, whether he would heale on the Sabbath *day*, that they might finde an accusation *against* him.

8 But he knew their thoughtes, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Arise, and stand vp in the middes. And he arose, and stoode vp.

9 Then saide Iesus vnto them, I will aske you a question, Whether is it lawfull on the Sabbath dayes to doe good, or to doe euill? to saue life, or to destroy?

10 And he beheld them all in compasse, and said vnto the man, Stretch foorth thine hand. And he did so, & his hand was restored againe as whole as the other.

11 Then they were filled full of madnes, and communed one with another, what they might doe to Iesus.

12 ¶ And it came to passe in those dayes, that he went into a moun-

a mountaine to pray, and spent the night in prayer to God.

*Chap.9 L. mat.10.1. mar.3.13. and 6.7.*

13 And when it was day, * he called his disciples, and of them he chose twelue, which also he called Apostles.

14 (Simon whom he named also Peter, and Andrewe his brother, Iames and Iohn, Philip, and Bartlemewe:

15 Matthewe, and Thomas: Iames *the sonne* of Alpheus, and Simon called Zelous,

16 Iudas Iames *brother*, and Iudas Iscariot, which also was the traitour.)

17 Then he came downe with them, and stoode in a plaine place, with the companie of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Iudea, and Hierusalem, and from the sea coast of Tyrus and Sidon, which came to heare him, and to be healed of their diseases:

18 And they that were vexed with foule spirits, and they were healed.

19 And the whole multitude sought to touche him: for there went vertue out of him, and healed them all.

*Mat.5.3.*

20 ¶ * And he lifted vp his eyes vpon his disciples, and said, Blessed *be* ye poore: for yours is the kingdome of God.

*Isa.65.13. Isa.61.3.*

21 *Blessed *are* ye that hunger nowe: for ye shall be satisfied. *Blessed *are* ye that weepe nowe: for ye shall laugh.

*Mat.5.11.*

22 *Blessed are ye when men hate you, and when they separate you, and reuile *you*, and put out your name as euill, for the Sonne of mans sake.

23 Reioyce ye in that day, and be glad: for beholde, your reward *is* great in heauen: for after this maner their fathers did to the Prophets.

*Amos 6.1.*

24 * But wo *be* to you *that are* riche: for ye haue receiued your consolation.

*Isa.65.13.*

25 *Wo *be* to you that are full: for ye shall hunger. Wo *be* to you that nowe laugh: for ye shall waile and weepe.

26 Wo *be* to you when all men speake well of you: for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

*Mat.5.44.*

27 ¶ *But I say vnto you which heare, Loue your enemies: doe well to them which hate you.

28 Blesse them that curse you, and pray for them which hurt you.

*Mat.5 39. 1.Cor.6.7.*

29 * And vnto him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheeke, offer also the other: *and him that taketh away thy cloke, forbid not *to take thy* coate also.

30 Giue to euery man that asketh of thee: and of him that taketh

taketh away the *things that be* thine, aske them not againe.

31 *And as ye would that men ſhould doe to you, ſo doe ye to them likewiſe. *Mat.7.12.*

32 *For if ye loue them which loue you, what thanke ſhal ye haue? for euen the ſinners loue thoſe that loue them. *Mat.5.46.*

33 And if ye doe good for them which doe good for you, what thanke ſhall ye haue? for euen the ſinners do the ſame.

34 *And if ye lende *to them* of whom ye hope to receiue, what thanke ſhall ye haue? for euen the ſinners lende to ſinners, to receiue the like. *Mat.5.42. deut.15.8.*

35 Wherefore loue ye your enemies, and doe good, and lend, looking for nothing againe, and your rewarde ſhall be great, and ye ſhall be the children of * the moſt High: for he is kinde vnto the vnkinde, and to the euill. *Mat.5.45.*

36 Be ye therefore merciſull, as your Father alſo is merciſull.

37 ¶*Iudge not, and ye ſhal not be iudged: condemne not, and ye ſhal not be condemned: forgiue, & ye ſhalbe forgiuen. *Mat.7.1.*

38 Giue, and it ſhalbe giuen vnto you: *a good meaſure, preſſed downe, ſhaken together and running ouer ſhall men giue into your boſome: for with what meaſure ye mete, with the ſame ſhall men mete to you againe. *Mat.7.2. mar.4.24.*

39 And he ſpake a parable vnto them, *Can ỹ blind leade the blinde? ſhall they not both fall into the ditch? *Mat.15.14.*

40 *The diſciple is not aboue his maſter: but whoſoeuer *will be* a perfect diſciple, ſhalbe as his maſter. *Mat.10.24. iohn 13.16.*

41 ¶*And why ſeeſt thou a mote in thy brothers eye, and conſidereſt not the beame, that is in thine owne eye? *and 15.20. Mat.7.3.*

42 Either howe canſt thou ſay to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou ſeeſt not the beame that is in thine owne eye? Hypocrite, caſt out the beame out of thine owne eye firſt, and then ſhalt thou ſee perfectly to pull out the mote that is in thy brothers eye.

43 ¶* For it is not a good tree that bringeth foorth euill fruite: neither an euill tree, that bringeth foorth good fruite. *Mat.7.17.*

44 *For euery tree is knowen by his owne fruite: *for neither of thornes gather men figges, nor of buſhes gather they grapes. *Mat.12.33. Mat.7.16.*

45 A good man out of the good treaſure of his heart bringeth foorth good, and an euill man out of the euill treaſure of his heart bringeth foorth euill; for of the abundance of the heart his mouth ſpeaketh.

46 ¶*But

*Mat.7.21. rom.2.13. Iames 1.21.*

46 ¶ * But why call ye me Lorde, Lorde, and doe not the things that I speake?

47 Whosoeuer commeth to me, and heareth my wordes, and doeth the same, I will shewe you to whom he is like:

48 He is like a man which built an house, & digged deepe, and layd the foundation on a rocke: and when the waters arose, the flood beat vpon that house, and could not shake it: for it was grounded vpon a rocke.

49 But he that heareth and doeth not, is like a man that built an house vpon the earth without foundation, against which the flood did beate, and it fell by and by: and the fall of that house was great.

## CHAP. VII.

1 *Of the Centurions seruant.* 9 *The Centurions faith.* 11 *The widowes sonne raised from death at Nain.* 19 *Iohn sendeth his disciples to Christ:* 33 *His peculiar kinde of liuing.* 37 *The sinnefull woman washeth Iesus feete.*

*Mat.8.5.*

WHen * he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entred into Capernaum.

2 And a certaine Centurions seruaunt was sicke and readie to die, which was deare vnto him.

3 And when he heard of Iesus, he sent vnto him the Elders of the Iewes, beseeching him that he woulde come, and heale his seruant.

4 So they came to Iesus, and besought him instantly, saying that he was worthy that he should doe this for him:

5 For he loueth, *said they*, our nation, and he hath built vs a Synagogue.

6 Then Iesus went with them: but when he was now not farre from the house, the Centurion sent friendes to him, saying vnto him, Lord, trouble not thy selfe: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter vnder my roofe:

7 Wherefore I thought not my selfe worthy to come vnto thee: but say the worde, and my seruant shall be whole:

8 For I likewise am a man set vnder authoritie, and haue vnder me souldiers, and I say vnto one, Goe, and he goeth, and to another, Come, and he commeth, and to my seruant, Doe this, and he doeth it.

9 When Iesus heard these things, he marueiled at him, and turned him, and said to the people that followed him, I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

10 And when they that were sent, turned backe to the house,

house, they found the seruant that was sicke, whole.

11 And it came to passe the day after, that hee went into a citie called Nain, and many of his disciples went with him, and a great multitude.

12 Now when he came neere to the gate of the citie, behold, there was a dead man caried out, who was the onely begotten sonne of his mother, which was a widow, and much people of the citie was with her.

13 And when the Lorde sawe her, hee had compassion on her, and sayd vnto her, Weepe not.

14 And he went & touched the coffin (and they that bare him, stoode still) and he sayd, Yong man, I say vnto thee, Arise.

15 And he that was dead, sate vp, and began to speake, and he deliuered him to his mother.

16 Then there came a feare on them all, and they glorified God, saying, A great Prophet is risen among vs, and God hath visited his people.

17 And this rumour of him went foorth throughout all Iudea, and throughout all the region round about.

18 And the disciples of Iohn shewed him of al these things.

19 So Iohn called vnto him two certaine men of his disciples, and sent them to Iesus, saying, Art thou hee that should come, or shall we waite for another?

20 And when the men were come vnto him, they saide, Iohn Baptist hath sent vs vnto thee, saying, Art thou hee that should come, or shall we waite for another?

21 And at that time he cured many of their sicknesses, and plagues, and of euill spirits, and vnto many blinde men hee gaue sight freely.

22 And Iesus answered, & said vnto them, Goe your wayes and shewe Iohn, what things ye haue seene and heard: that the blinde see, the halt goe, the lepers are cleansed, the deafe heare, the dead are raised, *and* the poore receiue the Gospel.

23 And blessed is he, that shall not be offended in me.

24 And when the messengers of Iohn were departed, he began to speake vnto the people, of Iohn, What went ye out into the wildernes to see? A reede shaken with the winde?

25 But what went ye out to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? beholde, they which are gorgeously apparelled, & liue delicately, are in Kings courtes.

26 But what went ye forth to see? A Prophet? yea, I say to you, and greater then a Prophet.

*Mal.3.1.* 27 This is he of whome it is written, *Beholde, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

28 For I say vnto you, there is no greater Prophet then Iohn, among them that are begotten of women: neuertheles, he that is the least in the kingdome of God, is greater then he.

29 Then all the people that heard, and the Publicanes iustified God, being baptized with the baptisme of Iohn.

30 But the Pharises and the expounders of the Law despised the counsell of God against themselues, and *were* not baptized of him.

*Mat.11.16.* 31 *And the Lord said, Whereunto shall I liken the men of this generation? and what *thing* are they like vnto?

32 They are like vnto little children sitting in the market place, and crying one to another, and saying, We haue piped vnto you, and ye haue not danced: we haue mourned to you, and ye haue not wept.

33 For Iohn Baptist came, neither eating bread, nor drinking wine: and ye say, He hath the deuill.

34 The Sonne of man is come, and eateth and drinketh: and ye say, Behold, a man *which is* a glutton, and a drinker of wine, a friend of Publicanes and sinners:

35 But wisedome is iustified of all her children.

36 ¶ And one of the Pharises desired him that hee would eate with him: and he went into the Pharises house, and sate downe at table.

37 And beholde, a woman in the citie which was a sinner, when she knew that Iesus sate at table in the Pharises house, she brought a boxe of oyntment.

*Mar.15.42.* *Iohn 20.11.* 38 *And she stood at his feete behinde him weeping, and began to wash his feete with teares, and did wipe them with the heares of her head, and kissed his feete, & anoynted them with the oyntment.

39 Now when the Pharise which bade him, saw it, he spake within himselfe, saying, If this man were a Prophet, he would surely haue knowen who, and what maner of woman this is which toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

40 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Simon, I haue somewhat to say vnto thee. And he said, Master, say on.

41 There was a certaine lender which had two debters: the one ought fiue hundreth pence, and the other fiftie:

42 When they had nothing to pay, he forgaue them both:

Which

Which of them therefore, tell *me*, will loue him most?

43 Simon answered, & said, I suppose that he, to whome he forgaue most. And he said vnto him, Thou hast truely iudged.

44 Then hee turned to the woman, and said vnto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entred into thine house, and thou gauest me no water to my feete: but she hath washed my feete with teares, and wiped them with the heares of her head.

45 Thou gauest me no kisse: but she, since the time I came in, hath not ceassed to kisse my feete.

46 Mine head with oyle thou diddest not annoynt: but she hath anoynted my feete with ointment.

47 Wherefore I say vnto thee, many sinnes are forgiuen her: for she loued much. To whom a litle is forgiuen, he doeth loue a litle.

48 And he sayd vnto her, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

49 And they that sate at table with him, began to say within themselues, Who is this that euen forgiueth sinnes?

50 And he sayd to the woman, Thy faith hath saued thee: goe in peace.

## CHAP. VIII.

2 *Women that minister vnto Christ of their substance.* 4 *The parable of the sower.* 16 *The candle.* 19 *Christes mother and brethrē.* 22 *He rebuketh the windes.* 26 *Of Legion.* 37 *The Gadarenes reiect Christ.* 41 *Iairus daughter healed.* 43 *The woman deliuered frō the issue of blood.* 52 *Weeping for the dead.*

AND it came to passe afterwarde, that hee himselfe went through euery citie and towne, preaching, and publishing the kingdome of God, and the twelue *were* with him,

2 And certaine women which were healed of euill spirits and infirmities, as *Marie which was called Magdalene, out of whome went seuen deuils, *Mar.16.9.*

3 And Ioanna the wife of Chuza Herods steward, and Susanna, and many other which ministred vnto him of their substance.

4 *Now when much people were gathered together, and were come vnto him out of all cities, he spake by a parable. *Mat.13.3. mark.4.1.*

5 A sower went out to sowe his seed, & as he sowed, some fell by the wayes side, and it was troden vnder feete, and the foules of heauen deuoured it vp.

6 And some fell on the stones, and when it was sprong vp, it withered away, because it lacked moystnes.

7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes sprang

vp with it, and choked it.

8 And some fell on good ground, and sprang vp and bare fruite, an hundreth folde. And as he said these things, he cried, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

9 Then his disciples asked him, demaunding what parable that was.

10 And he sayd, Vnto you it is giuen to know the secrets of the kingdome of God, but to other in parables, that when * they see, they should not see, and when they heare, they should not vnderstand.

*Isai.6.9. mat.13.14. mar.4.12. ioh̃n 12.40. actis.28.26. rom 11.8. Mat.13.18. mar.4.15.*

11 *The parable is this, The seede is the worde of God.

12 And they that are beside the way, are they that heare: afterward commeth the deuill, & taketh away the worde out of their hearts, least they should beleeue, and be saued.

13 But they that are on the stones, *are they* which when they haue heard, receiue the worde with ioye: but they haue no rootes: which for a while beleeue, but in the time of tentation goe away.

14 And that which fel among thornes, are they which haue heard, and after their departure are choked with cares & with riches, and voluptuous liuing, and bring forth no fruite.

15 But that *which fell* in good ground, are they which with an honest and good heart heare the worde, and keepe it, and bring foorth fruite with patience.

*Chap.11.33. matt.5.13. mar.4.21.*

16 ¶ * No man when he hath lighted a candle, couereth it vnder a vessell, neither putteth it vnder the bed, but setteth it on a candlesticke, that they that enter in, may see the light.

*Chap.12.2. mat.10.26. mar.4.22.*

17 * For nothing is secret, that shall not be euident: neither any thing hid, that shal not be knowen, & come to light.

*Chap.19.26. matt.13.12. and 25.29. mar.4.25.*

18 Take heede therefore howe ye heare: for * whosoeuer hath, to him shalbe giuen: and whosoeuer hath not, from him shalbe taken euen that which it seemeth that he hath.

*Mat.12.46. mar.3.32.*

19 ¶ * Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come neere to him for the preasse.

20 And it was told him *by certaine*, which sayd, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, and would see thee.

21 But he answered, and sayd vnto them, My mother, & my brethren are these which heare the worde of God, and doe it.

*Mat.8.23. mar.4.36.*

22 ¶ * And it came to passe on a certaine day, that he went into a shippe with his disciples, and he sayd vnto them, Let vs goe ouer vnto the other side of the lake. And they launched foorth.

23 And

23 And as they sayled, he fell asleepe, & there came downe a storme of winde on the lake, and they were filled with water, and were in ieopardie.

24 Then they went to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, Master, we perish. And he arose, and rebuked the winde, and the waues of water: and they ceassed, and it was calme.

25 Then he sayd vnto them, Where is your faith? and they feared, and wondered among themselues, saying, Who is this that commaundeth both the windes and water, and they obey him!

26 ¶ * So they sailed vnto the region of the Gadarenes, which is ouer against Galile. *Matt.8.28. mar.5.1.*

27 And as he went out to land, there met him a certaine man out of the citie, which had deuils long time, and he ware no garment, neither abode in house, but in the graues.

28 And when he sawe Iesus, he cryed out and fell downe before him, and with a loude voyce sayd, What haue I to doe with thee, Iesus the Sonne of God the most High? I beseech thee torment me not:

29 For he commanded the foule spirit to come out of the man: (for oft times hee had caught him: therefore hee was bound with chaines, and kept in fetters, but hee brake the bands, and was caried of the deuill into wildernesses.)

30 Then Iesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? and he sayd, Legion, because many deuils were entred into him.

31 And they besought him, that he would not commaund them to goe out into the deepe.

32 And there was thereby, an heard of many swine, feeding on an hill: and the *deuils* besought him, that hee would suffer them to enter into them. So he suffered them.

33 Then went the deuils out of the man, and entred into the swine: and the heard was caried with violence from a steepe downe place into the lake, and was choked.

34 When the heardmen sawe what was done, they fled: and when they were departed, they tolde it in the citie and in the countrey.

35 Then they came out to see what was done, and came to Iesus, and found the man, out of whom the deuils were departed, sitting at the feete of Iesus, clothed, and in his right mindes: and they were afraide.

36 They also which sawe it, tolde them by what meanes he that was possessed with the deuill was healed.

37 Then the whole multitude of the countrey about the Gadarenes, besought him, that he would depart from them: for they were taken with a great feare: and he went into the ship, and returned.

38 Then the man, out of whom the deuils were departed, besought him that he might be with him: but Iesus sent him away, saying,

39 Returne into thine owne house, and shewe what great things God hath done to thee. So he went his way, and preached throughout all the citie, what great things Iesus had done vnto him.

40 ¶ And it came to passe, when Iesus was come againe, that the people receiued him: for they all waited for him.

Mat. 9 18. mar. 5. 22. 41 ¶ *And beholde, there came a man named Iairus, & he was the ruler of the Synagogue, who fell downe at Iesus feet, and besought him that he would come into his house.

42 For he had but a daughter only, about twelue yeeres of age, and she lay a dying, (and as he went, the people thronged him.

43 And a woman hauing an yssue of blood, twelue yeeres long, which had spent all her substance vpon Physicions, and could not be healed of any:

44 When she came behinde *him*, she touched the hemme of his garment, and immediatly her issue of blood stanched.

45 Then Iesus said, Who is it that hath touched me? When euery man denied, Peter saide and they that were with him, Master, the multitude thrust thee, and treade on thee, and sayest thou, Who hath touched me?

46 And Iesus sayd, Some one hath touched me: for I perceiue that vertue is gone out of me.

47 When the woman sawe that she was not hid, she came trembling, and fell downe before him, and tolde him before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and howe she was healed immediatly.

48 And he sayd vnto her, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath saued thee: goe in peace)

49 While he yet spake, there came one from the ruler of the Synagogues house, which sayd to him, Thy daughter is dead: disease not the Master.

50 When Iesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Feare not: beleeue onely, and she shalbe saued.

51 And when he went into the house, he suffered no man

to

to goe in with him, saue Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and the father and mother of the maide.

52 And all wept, and sorowed for her: but he sayd, Weepe not: for she is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laught him to scorne, knowing that she was dead.

54 So he thrust them all out, and tooke her by the hande, and cried, saying, Maide, arise.

55 And her spirit came againe, and she rose straightway: and he commanded to giue her meate.

56 Then her parents were astonied: but hee commaunded them that they should tell no man what was done.

## CHAP. IX.

*1 The Apostles are sent to preach. 7 and 19 The common peoples opinion of Christ. 12 Of the fiue loaues and two fishes. 20 The Apostles confession. 24 To lose the life. 35 We must heare Christ. 37 The possessed of a spirit. 46 Strife among the Apostles for the Primacie. 49 One casting out deuils in Christs Name. 52 The Samaritanes will not receiue Christ. 53 Reuenge forbidden. 57.59.61 Of three that would follow Christ, but on diuers conditions.*

THen * called hee his twelue disciples together, and gaue them power and authoritie ouer all deuils, and to heale diseases. *Mat.10.1. mar.3.13. and 6.7.*

2 * And he sent them foorth to preach the kingdome of God, and to cure the sicke. *Mat.10.7.*

3 And he said to them, * Take nothing to your iourney, neither staues, nor scrip, neither bread, nor siluer, neither haue two coates a piece. *Mat.10.9. mar.6.8.*

4 And whatsoeuer house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And how many soeuer wil not receiue you, when ye go out of that citie, * shake off the very dust from your feete for a testimonie against them. *Chap.10.11. mat.10.14.*

6 And they went out & went through euery towne preaching the Gospel, and healing euery where. *mar.6.12. actis.13.51.*

7 ¶ * Now Herod the tetrarche heard of all that was done by him: and he doubted, because that it was said of some, that Iohn was risen againe from the dead: *Mat.14.1. mar.6.14.*

8 And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of some, that one of the olde Prophets was risen againe.

9 Then Herod sayd, Iohn haue I beheaded: who then is

*Mat.7.21. rom.2.13. Iames 1.21.*

46 ¶ * But why call ye me Lorde, Lorde, and doe not the things that I speake?

47 Whosoeuer commeth to me, and heareth my wordes, and doeth the same, I will shewe you to whom he is like:

48 He is like a man which built an house, & digged deepe, and layd the foundation on a rocke: and when the waters arose, the flood beat vpon that house, and could not shake it: for it was grounded vpon a rocke.

49 But he that heareth and doeth not, is like a man that built an house vpon the earth without foundation, against which the flood did beate, and it fell by and by: and the fall of that house was great.

## CHAP. VII.

1 *Of the Centurions seruant.* 9 *The Centurions faith.* 11 *The widowes sonne raised from death at Nain.* 19 *Iohn sendeth his disciples to Christ:* 33 *His peculiar kinde of liuing.* 37 *The sinnefull woman washeth Iesus feete.*

*Mat.8.5.*

WHen * he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entred into Capernaum.

2 And a certaine Centurions seruaunt was sicke and readie to die, which was deare vnto him.

3 And when he heard of Iesus, he sent vnto him the Elders of the Iewes, beseeching him that he woulde come, and heale his seruant.

4 So they came to Iesus, and besought him instantly, saying that he was worthy that he should doe this for him:

5 For he loueth, *said they*, our nation, and he hath built vs a Synagogue.

6 Then Iesus went with them: but when he was now not farre from the house, the Centurion sent friendes to him, saying vnto him, Lord, trouble not thy selfe: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter vnder my roofe:

7 Wherefore I thought not my selfe worthy to come vnto thee: but say the worde, and my seruant shall be whole:

8 For I likewise am a man set vnder authoritie, and haue vnder me souldiers, and I say vnto one, Goe, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he commeth, and to my seruant, Doe this, and he doeth it.

9 When Iesus heard these things, he marueiled at him, and turned him, and said to the people that followed him, I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

10 And when they that were sent, turned backe to the house,

house, they found the seruant that was sicke, whole.

11 And it came to passe the day after, that hee went into a citie called Nain, and many of his disciples went with him, and a great multitude.

12 Now when he came neere to the gate of the citie, beholde, there was a dead man caried out, who was the onely begotten sonne of his mother, which was a widow, and much people of the citie was with her.

13 And when the Lorde sawe her, hee had compassion on her, and sayd vnto her, Weepe not.

14 And he went & touched the coffin (and they that bare him, stoode still) and he sayd, Yong man, I say vnto thee, Arise.

15 And he that was dead, sate vp, and began to speake, and he deliuered him to his mother.

16 Then there came a feare on them all, and they glorified God, saying, A great Prophet is risen among vs, and God hath visited his people.

17 And this rumour of him went foorth throughout all Iudea, and throughout all the region round about.

18 And the disciples of Iohn shewed him of al these things.

19 So Iohn called vnto him two certaine men of his disciples, and sent them to Iesus, saying, Art thou hee that should come, or shall we waite for another?

20 And when the men were come vnto him, they saide, Iohn Baptist hath sent vs vnto thee, saying, Art thou hee that should come, or shall we waite for another?

21 And at that time he cured many of their sicknesses, and plagues, and of euill spirits, and vnto many blinde men hee gaue sight freely.

22 And Iesus answered, & said vnto them, Goe your wayes and shewe Iohn, what things ye haue seene and heard: that the blinde see, the halt goe, the lepers are cleansed, the deafe heare, the dead are raised, *and* the poore receiue the Gospel.

23 And blessed is he, that shall not be offended in me.

24 And when the messengers of Iohn were departed, he began to speake vnto the people, of Iohn, What went ye out into the wildernes to see? A reede shaken with the winde?

25 But what went ye out to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? beholde, they which are gorgeously apparelled, & liue delicately, are in Kings courtes.

26 But what went ye forth to see? A Prophet? yea, I say to you, and greater then a Prophet.

*Mal.3.1.* 27 This is he of whome it is written, *Beholde, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

28 For I say vnto you, there is no greater Prophet then Iohn, among them that are begotten of women: neuertheles, he that is the least in the kingdome of God, is greater then he.

29 Then all the people that heard, and the Publicanes iustified God, being baptized with the baptisme of Iohn.

30 But the Pharises and the expounders of the Law despised the counsell of God against themselues, and *were* not baptized of him.

*Mat.11.16.* 31 * And the Lord said; Whereunto shall I liken the men of this generation? and what *thing* are they like vnto?

32 They are like vnto litle children sitting in the market place, and crying one to another, and saying, We haue piped vnto you, and ye haue not daunced: we haue mourned to you, and ye haue not wept.

33 For Iohn Baptist came, neither eating bread, nor drinking wine: and ye say, He hath the deuill.

34 The Sonne of man is come, and eateth and drinketh: and ye say, Behold, a man *which is* a glutton, and a drinker of wine, a friend of Publicanes and sinners:

35 But wisedome is iustified of all her children.

36 ¶ And one of the Pharises desired him that hee would eate with him: and he went into the Pharises house, and sate downe at table.

37 And beholde, a woman in the citie which was a sinner, when she knew that Iesus sate at table in the Pharises house, she brought a boxe of oyntment.

*Mar.15.42.* *Iohn 20.11.* 38 * And she stood at his feete behinde him weeping, and began to wash his feete with teares, and did wipe them with the heares of her head, and kissed his feete, & anoynted them with the oyntment.

39 Now when the Pharise which bade him, saw it, he spake within himselfe, saying, If this man were a Prophet, he would surely haue knowen who, and what maner of woman this is which toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

40 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Simon, I haue somewhat to say vnto thee. And he said, Master, say on.

41 There was a certaine lender which had two detters: the one ought fiue hundreth pence, and the other fiftie:

42 When they had nothing to pay, he forgaue them both:

Which

Which of them therefore, tell *me*, will loue him most?

43 Simon answered, & said, I suppose that he, to whome he forgaue most. And he said vnto him, Thou hast truely iudged.

44 Then hee turned to the woman, and said vnto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entred into thine house, and thou gauest me no water to my feete: but she hath washed my feete with teares, and wiped them with the heares of her head.

45 Thou gauest me no kisse: but she, since the time I came in, hath not ceassed to kisse my feete.

46 Mine head with oyle thou diddest not annoynt: but she hath anoynted my feete with oyntment.

47 Wherefore I say vnto thee, many sinnes are forgiuen her: for she loued much. To whom a litle is forgiuen, he doeth loue a litle.

48 And he sayd vnto her, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

49 And they that sate at table with him, began to say within themselues, Who is this that euen forgiueth sinnes?

50 And he sayd to the woman, Thy faith hath saued thee: goe in peace.

## CHAP. VIII.

2 *Women that minister vnto Christ of their substance.* 4 *The parable of the sower.* 16 *The candle.* 19 *Christes mother and brethr.* 22 *He rebuketh the windes.* 26 *Of Legion.* 37 *The Gadarenes reiect Christ.* 41 *Iairus daughter healed.* 43 *The woman deliuered frō the issue of blood.* 52 *Weeping for the dead.*

AND it came to passe afterwarde, that hee himselfe went through euery citie and towne, preaching, and publishing the kingdome of God, and the twelue *were* with him,

2 And certaine women which were healed of euill spirits and infirmities, as * Marie which was called Magdalene, out of whome went seuen deuils, *Mar.16.9.*

3 And Ioanna the wife of Chuza Herods steward, and Susanna, and many other which ministred vnto him of their substance.

4 * Now when much people were gathered together, and were come vnto him out of all cities, he spake by a parable, *Mat.13.3. mark.4.1.*

5 A sower went out to sowe his seed, & as he sowed, some fell by the wayes side, and it was troden vnder feete, and the foules of heauen deuoured it vp.

6 And some fell on the stones, and when it was sprong vp, it withered away, because it lacked moystnes.

7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes sprang

vp with it, and choked it.

8 And some fell on good ground, and sprang vp and bare fruite, an hundreth folde. And as he said these things, he cried, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

9 Then his disciples asked him, demaunding what parable that was.

10 And he sayd, Vnto you it is giuen to know the secrets of the kingdome of God, but to others in parables, that when * they see, they should not see, and when they heare, they should not vnderstand.

*Isai.6.9. mat.13.14. mar.4.12. Iohn 12.40. acts.28.26. rom 11.8.*

11 *The parable is this, The seede is the worde of God.

12 And they that are beside the way, are they that heare: afterward commeth the deuill, & taketh away the worde out of their hearts, least they should beleeue, and be saued.

*Mat.13.18. mar.4.15.*

13 But they that are on the stones, *are they* which when they haue heard, receiue the worde with ioye: but they haue no rootes: which for a while beleeue, but in the time of tentation goe away.

14 And that which fel among thornes, are they which haue heard, and after their departure are choked with cares & with riches, and voluptuous liuing, and bring forth no fruite.

15 But that *which fell* in good ground, are they which with an honest and good heart heare the worde, and keepe it, and bring foorth fruite with patience.

*Chap.11.33. matt.5.15. mar.4.21.*

16 ¶ * No man when he hath lighted a candle, couereth it vndera vessell, neither putteth it vnder the bed, but setteth it on a candlesticke, that they that enter in, may see the light.

*Chap.12.2. mat.10.26. mar.4.22.*

17 * For nothing is secret, that shall not be euident: neither any thing hid, that shal not be knowen, & come to light.

*Chap.19.26. mat.13.12. and 25.29. mar.4.25.*

18 Take heede therefore howe ye heare: for * whosoeuer hath, to him shalbe giuen: and whosoeuer hath not, from him shalbe taken euen that which it seemeth that he hath.

*Mat.12.46. mar.3.32.*

19 ¶ * Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come neere to him for the preasse.

20 And it was tolde him *by certaine*, which sayd, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, and would see thee.

21 But he answered, and sayd vnto them, My mother, & my brethren are these which heare the worde of God, and doe it.

*Mat.8.23. mar.4.36.*

22 ¶ *And it came to passe on a certaine day, that he went into a shippe with his disciples, and he sayd vnto them, Let vs goe ouer vnto the other side of the lake. And they launched foorth.

23 And

23 And as they sayled, he fell asleepe, & there came downe a storme of winde on the lake, and they were filled with water, and were in ieopardie.

24 Then they went to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, Master, we perish. And he arose, and rebuked the winde, and the waues of water: and they ceassed, and it was calme.

25 Then he sayd vnto them, Where is your faith? and they feared, and wondered among themselues, saying, Who is this that commaundeth both the windes and water, and they obey him!

26 ¶ * So they sailed vnto the region of the Gadarenes, which is ouer against Galile. *Mat.8.28. mar.5.1.*

27 And as he went out to land, there met him a certaine man out of the citie, which had deuils long time, and he ware no garment, neither abode in house, but in the graues.

28 And when he sawe Iesus, he cryed out and fell downe before him, and with a loude voyce sayd, What haue I to doe with thee, Iesus the Sonne of God the most High? I beseech thee torment me not:

29 For he commanded the foule spirit to come out of the man: (for oft times hee had caught him: therefore hee was bound with chaines, and kept in fetters, but hee brake the bands, and was caried of the deuill into wildernesses.)

30 Then Iesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? and he sayd, Legion, because many deuils were entred into him.

31 And they besought him, that he would not commaund them to goe out into the deepe.

32 And there was thereby, an heard of many swine, feeding on an hill: and the *deuils* besought him, that hee would suffer them to enter into them. So he suffered them.

33 Then went the deuils out of the man, and entred into the swine: and the heard was caried with violence from a steepe downe place into the lake, and was choked.

34 When the heardmen sawe what was done, they fled: and when they were departed, they tolde it in the citie and in the countrey.

35 Then they came out to see what was done, and came to Iesus, and found the man, out of whom the deuils were departed, sitting at the feete of Iesus, clothed, and in his right minde: and they were afraide.

36 They also which sawe it, tolde them by what meanes he that was possessed with the deuill was healed.

37 Then the whole multitude of the countrey about the Gadarenes, beſought him, that he would depart from them: for they were taken with a great feare: and he went into the ſhip, and returned.

38 Then the man, out of whom the deuils were departed, beſought him that he might be with him: but Ieſus ſent him away, ſaying,

39 Returne into thine owne houſe, and ſhewe what great things God hath done to thee. So he went his way, and preached throughout all the citie, what great things Ieſus had done vnto him.

40 ¶ And it came to paſſe, when Ieſus was come againe, that the people receiued him: for they all waited for him.

*Mat.9 18. marc.5.22.*

41 ¶ *And beholde, there came a man named Iairus, & he was the ruler of the Synagogue, who fell downe at Ieſus feet, and beſought him that he would come into his houſe.

42 For he had but a daughter only, about twelue yeeres of age, and ſhe lay a dying, (and as he went, the people thronged him.

43 And a woman hauing an yſſue of blood, twelue yeeres long, which had ſpent all her ſubſtance vpon Phyſicions, and could not be healed of any:

44 When ſhe came behinde *him*, ſhe touched the hemme of his garment, and immediatly her iſſue of blood ſtanched.

45 Then Ieſus ſaid, Who is it that hath touched me? When euery man denied, Peter ſaide and they that were with him, Maſter, the multitude thruſt thee, and treade on thee, and ſayeſt thou, Who hath touched me?

46 And Ieſus ſayd, Some one hath touched me: for I perceiue that vertue is gone out of me.

47 When the woman ſawe that ſhe was not hid, ſhe came trembling, and fell downe before him, and tolde him before all the people, for what cauſe ſhe had touched him, and howe ſhe was healed immediatly.

48 And he ſayd vnto her, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath ſaued thee: goe in peace.)

49 While he yet ſpake, there came one from the ruler of the Synagogues houſe, which ſayd to him, Thy daughter is dead: diſeaſe not the Maſter.

50 When Ieſus heard it, he anſwered him, ſaying, Feare not: beleeue onely, and ſhe ſhalbe ſaued.

51 And when he went into the houſe, he ſuffered no man

to

to goe in with him, saue Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and the father and mother of the maide.

52 And all wept, and sorowed for her: but he sayd, Weepe not: for she is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laught him to scorne, knowing that she was dead.

54 So he thrust them all out, and tooke her by the hande, and cried, saying, Maide, arise.

55 And her spirit came againe, and she rose straightway: and he commanded to giue her meate.

56 Then her parents were astonied: but hee commaunded them that they should tell no man what was done.

## CHAP. IX.

*1 The Apostles are sent to preach. 7 and 19 The common peoples opinion of Christ. 12 Of the fiue loaues and two fishes. 20 The Apostles confession. 24 To lose the life. 35 We must heare Christ. 37 The possessed of a spirit. 46 Strife among the Apostles for the Primacie. 49 One casting out deuils in Christs Name. 52 The Samaritanes will not receiue Christ. 57 Reuenge forbidden. 57.59.61 Of three that would follow Christ, but on diuers conditions.*

THen * called hee his twelue disciples together, and gaue them power and authoritie ouer all deuils, and to heale diseases. *Mat.10.1. mar.3.13. and 6.7.*

2 * And he sent them foorth to preach the kingdome of God, and to cure the sicke. *Mat.10.7.*

3 And he said to them, * Take nothing to your iourney, neither staues, nor scrip, neither bread, nor siluer, neither haue two coates a piece. *Mat.10.9. mar.6.8.*

4 And whatsoeuer house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And how many soeuer will not receiue you, when ye go out of that citie, * shake off the very dust from your feete for a testimonie against them. *Chap.10.11. mat.10.14.*

6 And they went out, & went through euery towne preaching the Gospel, and healing euery where. *mar.6.12. actes.13.51.*

7 ¶ * Now Herod the tetrarche heard of all that was done by him: and he doubted, because that it was said of some, that Iohn was risen againe from the dead: *Mat.14.1. mar.6.14.*

8 And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of some, that one of the olde Prophets was risen againe.

9 Then Herod sayd, Iohn haue I beheaded: who then is

this of whom I heare ſuch things? and he deſired to ſee him.

*Mar.6.30.* 10 ¶ * And when the Apoſtles returned, they tolde him
*Mat.14.13.* what great things they had done. * Then hee tooke them to
*mar.6.32.* him, and went aſide into a ſolitarie place, *neere* to the citie called Bethſaida.

11 But when the people knew it, they followed him: and he receiued them, and ſpake vnto them of the kingdome of God, and healed them that had neede to be healed.

*Mat.14.15.* 12 * And when the day began to weare away, the twelue
*mar.6.35.* came, and ſayd vnto him, Send the people away, that they may
*iohn 6.5.* goe into the townes and villages round about, and lodge, and get meate: for we are here in a deſart place.

13 But he ſayd vnto them, Giue ye them to eate. And they ſayd, We haue no mo but fiue loaues and two fiſhes, except we ſhould goe and bye meate for all this people.

14 For they were about fiue thouſand men. Then he ſaid to his diſciples, Cauſe them to ſit downe by fifties in a company.

15 And they did ſo, and cauſed all to ſit downe.

16 Then he tooke the fiue loaues, and the two fiſhes, and looked vp to heauen, and bleſſed them, and brake, and gaue to the diſciples, to ſet before the people.

17 So they did all eate, and were ſatiſfied: and there was taken vp of that remained to them, twelue baskets full of broken meate.

*Mat.26.13.* 18 ¶ * And it came to paſſe as hee was alone praying, his
*mar.8.27.* diſciples were with him: and he asked them, ſaying, Whome ſay the people that I am?

19 They anſwered, & ſaid, Iohn Baptiſt: and other ſay, Elias: and ſome ſay, that one of the olde Prophets is riſen againe.

20 And he ſayd vnto them, But whome ſay ye that I am?
*Mat.17.22.* Peter anſwered, and ſayd, That Chriſt of God.
*mar.8.31.* 21 And he warned and commanded them, that they ſhould
*Chap.14.27.* tell that to no man,
*mat.10.38.* 22 Saying, * The Sonne of man muſt ſuffer many things,
*and 16.24.* and be reprooued of the Elders, and of the hie Prieſts, and
*mar.8.34.* Scribes, and be ſlaine, and the third day riſe againe.
*Chap 17.33.* 23 ¶ * And he ſayd to them all, If any man wil come after
*mat.10.39.* me, let him denie himſelfe, and take vp his croſſe dayly, and
*and 16.25.* follow me.
*iohn 12.25.* 24 * For whoſoeuer wil ſaue his life, ſhal loſe it: and who-
*Mat.16.26.* ſoeuer ſhall loſe his life for my ſake, the ſame ſhall ſaue it.
*mar.8.36.* 25 * For what auantageth it a man, if he winne the whole world,

world, and destroy himselfe, or lose himselfe?

26 * For whosoeuer shall bee ashamed of mee, and of my wordes, of him shall the Sonne of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his glory, and *in the glory* of the Father, and of the holy Angels. *(hap.12.9. matt.10.33. mar.8.38. 2.sim.2.12.*

27 * And I tell you of a suretie, there bee some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they haue seene the kingdome of God. *Mat.16.28. mar.9.1.*

28 *And it came to passe about an eight dayes after those wordes, that hee tooke Peter and Iohn, and Iames, and went vp into a mountaine to pray. *Mat.17.2. mar.9.2.*

29 And as hee prayed, the fashion of his countenance was changed, and his garment *was* white and glistred.

30 And beholde, two men talked with him, which were Moses and Elias.

31 Which appeared in glorie, and tolde of his departing, which he should accomplish at Hierusalem.

32 But Peter and they that were with him, were heauie with sleepe, and when they awoke, they sawe his glorie, and the two men standing with him.

33 And it came to passe, as they departed from him, Peter saide vnto Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to bee here: let vs therefore make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias, and wist not what he said.

34 While hee thus spake, there came a cloude and ouershadowed them, and they feared when they were entring into the cloude.

35 *And there came a voyce out of the cloude, saying, This is that my beloued Sonne, heare him. *2.Pet.1.17.*

36 And when the voyce was past, Iesus was founde alone: and they kept it close, and tolde no man in those dayes any of those things which they had seene.

37 ¶ And it came to passe on the next day, as they came downe from the mountaine, much people met him.

38 *And behold, a man of the companie cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee, behold my sonne: for he is al that I haue. *Matt.17.14. mar.9.17.*

39 And loe a spirit taketh him, and suddenly he crieth, and he teareth him, that he fometh, & hardly departeth from him, when he hath bruised him.

40 Now I haue besought thy disciples to cast him out, but they could not.

41 Then Iesus answered, and said, O generation faithlesse, and

and crooked, howe long now shall I bee with you, and suffer you? bring thy sonne hither.

42 And whiles hee was yet comming, the deuil rent him, and tare him: and Iesus rebuked the vncleane spirit, and healed the childe, and deliuered him to his father.

43 ¶ And they were all amased at the mightie power of God: and while they all wondred at all thinges, which Iesus did, he said vnto his disciples,

*Matt.17.22. mar.9.31.* 44 Marke these words diligently: *for it shal come to passe, that the Sõne of man shalbe deliuered into the hands of men.

45 But they vnderstoode not that worde: for it was hidde from them, so that they could not perceiue it: and they feared to aske him of that word.

*Mat.18.1. mar.9.35.* 46 ¶ *Then there arose a disputation among them, which of them should be the greatest.

47 When Iesus sawe the thoughts of their heartes, hee tooke a litle childe, and set him by him,

48 And saide vnto them, Whosoeuer receiueth this little childe in my Name, receiueth me: and whosoeuer shal receiue me, receiueth him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, he shall be great.

*Mar.9.38.* 49 ¶ *And Iohn answered and said, Master, we sawe one casting out deuils in thy Name, and we forbade him, because hee followeth *thee* not with vs.

50 Then Iesus said vnto him, Forbid ye *him* not: for he that is not against vs, is with vs.

51 ¶ And it came to passe, when the dayes were accomplished, that he should be receiued vp, he settled himselfe fully to goe to Hierusalem,

52 And sent messengers before him: and they went & entred into a towne of the Samaritans, to prepare him *lodging*.

53 But they would not receiue him, because his behaiour was, as though he would goe to Hierusalem.

54 And when his disciples, Iames and Iohn sawe it, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we commande, that fire come downe *2 King.1.10, 12,13.* from heauen and consume them, euen as *Elias did?

55 But Iesus turned about, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not of what spirit ye are.

56 For the Sonne of man is not come to destroye mens liues, but to saue them. Then they went to another towne.

*Mat.8.19.* 57 ¶ And it came to passe that as they went in the way, *a certaine man saide vnto him, I will followe thee, Lorde, whither-

whithersoeuer thou goest.

58 And Iesus said vnto him, The foxes haue holes, and the birdes of the heauen nestes, but the Sonne of man hath not whereon to lay his head.

59 But he said vnto another, Folow me. And the same said, Lord, suffer me first to goe and burie my father.

60 And Iesus said vnto him, Let the dead burie their dead: but goe thou, and preach the kingdome of God.

61 Then another said, I wil follow thee, Lord: but let mee first goe bid them farewell, which are at mine house.

62 And Iesus said vnto him, No man that putteth his hand to the plough, & looketh back, is apt to the kingdom of God.

## CHAP. X.

1 *The seuentie disciples.* 10 *The vnthankful cities charged with impietie.* 17 *The disciples returning home, are warned to bee humble.* 30 *Who is our neighbour.* 38 *Of Martha and her sister Marie.*

AFter *these things, the Lord appointed other seuentie also, and sent them, two and two before him into euery citie and place, whither he himselfe should come. *Matt.10.1.*

2 And he said vnto them, *The harueſt is great, but the labourers *are* fewe: pray therefore the Lorde of the harueſt to sende foorth labourers into his harueſt. *Mat.9.37.*

3 *Goe your wayes: beholde, I sende you forth as lambes among wolues. *Mat.10.16.*

4 Beare no bagge, neither scrippe, nor shoes, and *salute no man by the way. *2.Kin.4.29.*

5 *And into whatsoeuer house ye enter, first say, Peace *bee* to this house. *Matt.10.12. mar.6,10.*

6 And if the sonne of peace be there, your peace shall rest vpon him: if not, it shall turne to you againe.

7 And in that house tarie still, eating and drinking such thinges as by them *shalbe set before you:* * for the labourer is worthie of his wages. Goe not from house to house. *Deut.24.14. mat.10.10.*

8 *But into whatsoeuer citie ye shall enter, if they receiue you, eate such things as are set before you, *1.tim.5.18. Mat.10.12.*

9 And heale the sicke that are there, & say vnto them, The kingdome of God is come neere vnto you.

10 But into whatsoeuer citie ye shall enter, if they wil not receiue you, go your wayes out into the streetes of the same, and say,

11 Euen the very *dust, which cleaueth on vs of your citie, we *Chap.9.5. acts.13.51 and 18.6.*

we wipe off against you: notwithstanding know this, that the kingdome of God was come neere vnto you.

12 For I say vnto you, that it shall be easier in that day for them of Sodom, then for that citie.

*Mat.* 11.21. 13 *Woe *be* to thee, Chorazin: woe *be* to thee, Bethsaida: for if the miracles had bene done in Tyrus and Sidon, which haue bene done in you, they had a great while agone repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.

14 Therefore it shall be easier for Tyrus, and Sidon, at the iudgement, then for you.

15 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heauen, shalt be thrust downe to hell.

*Matt.* 10.40. *Iohn* 13.20. 16 ¶ *He that heareth you, heareth me: and he that despiseth you, despiseth me: and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

17 ¶ And the seuentie turned againe with ioy, saying, Lord, euen the deuils are subdued to vs through thy Name.

18 And he said vnto them, I sawe Satan, like lightening fall downe from heauen.

19 Beholde, I giue vnto you power to treade on Serpents, and Scorpions, and ouer all the power of the enemie, and nothing shall hurt you.

20 Neuertheless, in this reioyce not, that the spirites are subdued vnto you: but rather reioyce, because your names are written in heauen.

21 ¶ That same houre reioyced Iesus in the spirit, and said, I confesse vnto thee, Father, Lorde of heauen and earth, that thou hast hid these thinges from the wise and vnderstanding, and hast reueiled them to babes: euen so, Father, because it so pleased thee.

‖Then he turned to his disciples, and *said, is read in some copies.*

22 Al things are giuen me of my Father: and no mã knoweth who the Sonne is, but the Father: neither who the Father is, saue the Sonne, and he to whom the Sonne wil reueile him.

23 ¶ And he turned to his disciples, and said secretly, *Blessed *are* the eyes, which see that ye see.

*Mat.* 13.16. 24 For I tel you, that many Prophets & Kings haue desired to see those things, which ye see, and haue not seene *them*: and to heare those things which ye heare, & haue not heard *them*.

*Matt.* 22.35. *mar.* 12.28. 25 ¶ *Then beholde, a certaine Lawyer stood vp, & tempted him, saying, Master, what shal I do, to inherite eternal life?

26 And he saide vnto him, What is written in the Lawe? how readest thou?

27 And

27 And he answered, and said,* Thou shalt loue thy Lord God with all thine heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy strength, and with all thy thought,* and thy neighbour as thy selfe. *Deut.6.5. *Leui.19.18.

28 Then he said vnto him, Thou hast answered right: this doe, and thou shalt liue.

29 But he willing to iustifie himselfe, said vnto Iesus, Who is then my neighbour?

30 And Iesus answered, and said, A certaine man went downe from Hierusalem to Iericho, and fell among theeues, and they robbed him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leauing him halfe dead.

31 Nowe so it fell out, that there came downe a certaine Priest that same way, and when he sawe him, hee passed by on the other side.

32 And likewise also a Leuite, whē he was come nere to the place, went and looked *on him*, & passed by on the other side.

33 Then a certaine Samaritane, as he iourneyed, came neere vnto him, and when he sawe him, he had compassion on him,

34 And went to him, and bound vp his wounds, and powred in oyle and wine, and put him on his owne beast, and brought him to an Inne, and made prouision for him.

35 And on the morowe when he departed, hee tooke out two pence, and gaue them to the hoste, and saide vnto him, Take care of him, and whatsoeuer thou spendest more, when I come againe, I will recompense thee.

36 Which nowe of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour vnto him that fell among the theeues?

37 And he said, He that shewed mercie on him. Then saide Iesus vnto him, Goe, and doe thou likewise.

38 ¶ Nowe it came to passe as they went, that hee entred into a certaine towne, and a certaine woman, named Martha, receiued him into her house.

39 And she had a sister called Marie, which also sate at Iesus feete, and heard his preaching.

40 But Martha was combred about much seruing, & came to him, and said, Master, doest thou not care that my sister hath left me to serue alone? bid her therefore, that she helpe me.

41 And Iesus answered, and said vnto her, Martha, Martha, thou carest, and art troubled about many things:

42 But one thing is needefull, Marie hath chosen the good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XI.

*He teacheth his Apostles to pray. 14 The dumme deuil driuen out. 27 A woman of the companie lifteth vp her voyce. 29 The Iewes require signes. 37 He being feasted of the Pharisee, reproueth the outward shewe of holinesse.*

AND so it was, that as hee was praying in a certaine place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said vnto him, Lorde, teach vs to pray, as Iohn also taught his disciples.

*Matt.6.9.* 2 *And he said vnto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father, which art in heauen, halowed be thy Name: Thy kingdome come: Let thy will be done, euen in earth, as *it is* in heauen.

3 Our dayly bread giue vs for the day:

4 And forgiue vs our sinnes: for euen wee forgiue euery man that is indetted to vs: And lead vs not into temptation: but deliuer vs from euill.

5 ¶Moreouer he said vnto them, Which of you shall haue a friende, and shall goe to him at midnight, and say vnto him, Friend, lend me three loaues?

6 For a friende of mine is come out of the way to me, and I haue nothing to set before him:

7 And he within should answere, and say, Trouble me not: the doore is now shut, and my children are with me in bed: I cannot rise and giue them to thee.

8 I say vnto you, though he would not arise and giue him, because hee is his friend, yet doutlesse because of his importunitie, he would rise, and giue him as many as he needed.

*Matth.7.7. and 21.22. mar.11.24. Iohn 14.13. and 16.23. Iames 1.5.* 9 *And I say vnto you, Aske, and it shalbe giuen you: seeke, and ye shall finde: knocke, and it shalbe opened vnto you.

10 *For euery one that asketh, receiueth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shalbe opened.

*Matth.7.8. Mat.7.9.* 11 * If a sonne shall aske bread of any of you that is a father, will he giue him a stone? or *if he aske* a fish, will hee for a fish giue him a serpent?

12 Or if he aske an egge, will he giue him a scorpion?

13 If yee then which are euill, can giue good giftes vnto your children, howe much more shall your heauenly Father giue the holy Ghost to them that desire him?

*Matt. 9.32. and 12.22. Matt.9.34. and 12.24. mar.3.22.* 14 ¶ * Then hee cast out a deuil which was dumme: and when the deuil was gone out, the dumme spake, and the people wondered.

15 But some of them saide, *He casteth out deuils through Beelzebub the chiefe of the deuils.

16 And

16 And others tempted him, seeking of him a signe from heauen.

17 But he knew their thoughts, and said vnto them, *Euery kingdome deuided against it selfe, shall be desolate, and an house *deuided* against an house, falleth. *Matt.12.25. mar.3.24.*

18 So if Satan also be deuided against himselfe, howe shall his kingdome stande, because yee say that I cast out deuils through Beelzebub?

19 If I through Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whome doe your childrē cast them out? Therfore shal they be your iudges.

20 But if I by the finger of God cast out deuils, doubtlesse the kingdome of God is come vnto you.

21 When a strong man armed, keepeth his palace, the things that he possesseth, are in peace.

22 But when a stronger then hee, commeth vpon him, and ouercommeth him: he taketh from him al his armour wherein he trusted, and deuideth his spoyles.

23 Hee that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

24 *Whē the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through drie places, seeking rest: and when hee findeth none, he saith, I wil returne vnto mine house whēce I came out. *Mat.12.43.*

25 And when he cōmeth, he findeth it swept & garnished.

26 Then goeth hee, and taketh to him seuen other spirites worse then himselfe: and they enter in, and dwell there, * so the last state of that man is worse then the first. *Hebr.6.4. 2.pet.2.20.*

27 ¶ And it came passe as he saide these thinges, a certaine woman of the companie lifted vp her voyce, and saide vnto him, Blessed *is* the wombe that bare thee, & the pappes which thou hast sucked.

28 But he saide, Yea, rather blessed *are* they that heare the word of God, and keepe it.

29 ¶ * And when the people were gathered thicke together, he began to say, This is a wicked generation: they seeke a signe, and there shall no signe be giuen them, but the signe of *Ionas the Prophet. *Matt.12.38, 39. Jonas 1.12.*

30 For as Ioas was a signe to the Niniuites: so shall also the Sonne of man be to this generation.

31 *The Queene of the South shal rise in iudgement, with the men of this generation, and shall condemne them: for she came frō the vtmost partes of the earth to heare the wisdome of Solomon, and beholde, a greater then Solomon *is* here. *1.Kin.10.1. 2.chro.9.1.*

32 The

32 The men of Ninive shal rise in iudgement with this ge-
*Ionas 3.5.* neration, and shall condemne it: for they * repented at the
preaching of Ionas: and beholde, a greater then Ionas is here.
*Chap.8.16.* 33 ¶ No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in
*matth.5.15.* a priuie place, neither vnder a bushell: but on a candlesticke,
*mar.4.21.* that they which come in, may see the light.
*Matth.6.22.* 34 *The light of the body is the eye: therfore when thine
eye is single, then is thy whole body light: but if thine eye be
euill, then thy body is darke.

35 Take heede therefore, that the light which is in thee,
be not darkenes.

36 If therefore thy whole bodie *shall be* light, hauing no
part darke, then shall all be light, euen as when a candle doth
light thee with the brightnesse.

37 ¶ And as hee spake, a certaine Pharise besought him to
dine with him: and he went in, and sate downe at table.

38 And when the Pharise saw it, he marueiled that he had
not first washed before dinner.

*Mat.23.25.* 39 * And the Lord said to him, In deede ye Pharises make
cleane the outside of the cup, and of the platter: but the in-
ward part is full of rauening and wickednesse.

40 Ye fooles, did not he that made that which is without,
make that which is within also?

41 Therefore, giue almes of those things which you haue,
and beholde, all things shall be cleane to you.

42 But woe *be* to you, Pharises: for ye tithe the mynt, and
the rew, and all maner herbes, and passe ouer iudgement and
the loue of God: these ought ye to haue done, and not to
haue left the other vndone.

*Chap.20.46.* 43 * Woe *bee* to you, Pharises: for ye loue the vppermost
*matt.23.6.* seates in the Synagogues, and greetings in the markets.
*mar.12.38,* 44 Woe *be* to you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: * for
*39.* ye are as graues which appeare not, and the men that walke
*Mat.23.27.* ouer them, perceiue not.

45 ¶ Then answered one of the Lawyers, and saide vnto
him, Master, thus saying thou puttest vs to rebuke also.

*Matth 23.4.* 46 And he saide, Woe *be* to you also, ye Lawyers: * for ye
*alls.15.10.* lade men with burdens grieuous to bee borne, and yee your
selues touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.

*Mat. 23.29.* 47 Woe *be* to you: * for ye builde the sepulchres of the
Prophets, and your fathers killed them.

48 Truely ye beare witnes, and allowe the deedes of your
fathers:

fathers: for they killed them, and ye build their sepulchres.

49 Therefore saide the wisdome of God, I will sende them Prophets and Apostles, and of them they shall slaie, and persecute away.

50 That the blood of al the Prophets, shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation,

51 From the blood of *Abel vnto the blood of *Zachari- *Gene.4.8. as, which was slaine betweene the altar and the Temple: verely I say vnto you, it shalbe required of this generation. 2.Chr.24.21

52 Wo *be* to you Lawyers: for ye haue taken away the key of knowledge: yee entred not in your selues, and them that came in, ye forbade.

53 And as he saide these things vnto them, the Scribes and Pharises began to vrge him sore, and to prouoke him to speake of many things,

54 Laying waite for him, and seeking to catch some thing of his mouth, whereby they might accuse him.

## CHAP. XII.

1 *The leauen of the Pharises.* 5 *Who is to be feared.* 8 *To confesse Christ.* 17 *The parable of the rich man whose land was very fertill.* 22 *Not to care for earthly things,* 31 *but to seeke the kingdome of God.* 39 *The theefe in the night.* 51 *Debate for the Gospels sake.*

IN* the meane time, there gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, so that they trode one another: and hee began to say vnto his disciples first, Take heede to your selues of the leauen of the Pharises, which is hypocrisie. *Mat.16.6. mar.8.14.

2 *For there is nothing couered, that shal not be reuelled: neither hid, that shall not be knowen. *Mat.10.26. mar.4.22.

3 Wherefore whatsoeuer yee haue spoken in darkenesse, it shall be heard in the light: and that which yee haue spoken in the eare, in secret places, shalbe preached on the houses.

4 *And I say vnto you, my friends, be not afraide of them that kil the body, and after that are not able to doe any more. *Mat.10.28.

5 But I will forewarne you whom ye shall feare: feare him, which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell: yea, I say vnto you, him feare.

6 Are not fiue sparowes bought for two farthings, *and* yet not one of them is forgotten before God? 1.Sam 14. 45.act 27 34

7 *Yea, and all the heares of your head are numbred: feare not therefore: ye are more of value then many sparowes. *chap.9.26. mat.10.32.

8 *Also I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall confesse me be- *mar 8.38.

 2.Tim.1.12.

fore men, him shall the Sonne of man confesse also before the Angels of God.

9 But he that shall denie me before men, shalbe denied before the Angels of God.

*Mat.12.31. mar.3.28. 2.iohn 5.15.* 10 * And whosoeuer shall speake a woorde against the Sonne of man, it shall be forgiuen him: but vnto him, that shall blaspheme the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiuen.

*Mat.10.19. mar.13.11.* 11 * And when they shal bring you vnto the Synagogues, and vnto the rulers & princes, take no thought howe, or what thing ye shall answere, or what ye shall speake.

12 For the holy Ghost shall teach you in the same houre, what ye ought to say.

13 And one of the companie said vnto him, Master, bid my brother deuide the inheritance with me.

14 And he saide vnto him, Man, who made me a iudge, or a deuider ouer you?

15 Wherefore he said vnto them, Take heede, and beware of couetousnesse: for though a man haue aboundance, *yet* his life standeth not in his riches.

16 And he put forth a parable vnto them, saying, The ground of a certaine rich man brought forth fruites plenteously.

17 Therefore he thought with himselfe, saying, What shall I do, because I haue not *rowme*, where I may lay vp my fruits?

18 And he said, This will I do, I will put downe my barnes, and build greater, and therein will I gather all my fruites, and my goods.

19 And I wil say to my soule, Soule, thou hast much goods laide vp for many yeeres: liue at ease, eate, drinke, and take thy pastime.

20 But God saide vnto him, O foole, this night will they fetch away thy soule from thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast prouided?

21 So *is* hee that gathereth riches to himselfe, and is not riche in God.

22 And hee spake vnto his disciples, Therefore I say vnto you, *Take no thought for your life, what ye shal eate: neither for your body, what ye shall put on.

*Mat.6.25. 1 pet.5.7. Psal.55.22.*

23 The life is more then meate: and the body *more* then the raiment.

24 Consider the rauens: for they neither sowe nor reape: which neither haue storehouse nor barne, and *yet* God feedeth them: howe much more are ye better then soules?

25 And

25 And which of you with taking thought, can adde to his
stature one cubite?
26 If yee then be not able to doe the least thing, why take
ye thought for the remnant?
27 Consider the lilies howe they growe: they labour not,
neither spin they: yet I say vnto you, that Solomon himselfe in
all his royaltie was not clothed like one of these.
28 If then God so clothe the grasse which is to day in the
field, and to morowe is cast into the ouen, howe much more
*will he clothe* you, O ye of litle faith?
29 Therefore aske not what ye shall eate, or what ye shall
drinke, neither hang you in suspense.
30 For all such things the people of the worlde seeke for:
and your Father knoweth that ye haue neede of these things.
31 But rather seeke ye after the kingdome of God, and all
these things shall be cast vpon you.
32 Feare not, litle flocke: for it is your Fathers pleasure, to
giue you the kingdome.
33 ¶ *Sell that ye haue, and giue almes: make you bagges *Mat.6.20.
which waxe not old, a treasure that can neuer faile in heauen,
where no thiefe commeth, neither moth corrupteth.
34 For where your treasure is, there will yout hearts be
also.
35 ¶ *Let your loynes be girde about, and your lightes *1.Pet.1.13.
burning,
36 And yee your selues like vnto men that waite for their
master, when he wil returne from the wedding, that when hee
commeth & knocketh, they may open vnto him immediatly.
37 Blessed *are* those seruaunts, whome the Lorde when he
commeth shall finde waking: Verely I say vnto you, hee will
gird himselfe about, and make them to sit downe at table, and
will come foorth, and serue them.
38 And if he come in ỹ second watch, or come in the third
watch, and shall finde them so, blessed are those seruants.
39 *Nowe vnderstande this, that if the good man of the *Mat.24.43.
house had knowen at what houre the thief would haue come, *reue.16.15.
he would haue watched, & would not haue suffred his house *and 3.3.
to be digged through.
40 Be yee also prepared therefore: for the Sonne of man
will come at an houre when ye thinke not.
41 Then Peter saide vnto him, Master, tellest thou this pa-
rable vnto vs, or euen to all?

42 And the Lord ſaid, Who is a faithfull ſteward, and wiſe, whom the maſter ſhall make ruler ouer his houſholde, to giue them their portion of meate in ſeaſon?

43 Bleſſed *is* that ſeruant, whome his maſter when he commeth, ſhall finde ſo doing.

44 Of a trueth I ſay vnto you, that he will make him ruler ouer all that he hath.

45 But if that ſeruant ſay in his heart, My maſter doeth deferre his comming, and ſhall begin to ſmite the ſeruaunts, and maidens, and to eate, and drinke, and to be drunken:

46 The maſter of that ſeruant will come in a day when he thinketh not, and at an houre when he is not ware of, and will cut him off, and giue him his portion with the vnbeleeuers.

47 ¶ And that ſeruant that knewe his maſters wil, and prepared not himſelfe, neither did according to his will, ſhall be beaten with many *ſtripes*.

48 But he that knew it not, & yet did commit things worthie of ſtripes, ſhalbe beaten with few *ſtripes*: for vnto whomſoeuer much is giuen, of him ſhall be much required, and to whome men much commit, the more of him wil they aske.

49 ¶ I am come to put fire on the earth, and what is my deſire, if it be already kindled?

50 Notwithſtanding I muſt be baptized with a baptiſme, and howe am I grieued, till it be ended?

*Mat.10.34.* 51 * Thinke ye that I am come to giue peace on earth? I tell you, nay, but rather debate.

52 For from henceforth there ſhalbe fiue in one houſe deuided, three againſt two, and two againſt three.

53 The father ſhalbe deuided againſt the ſonne, and the ſonne againſt the father: the mother againſt the daughter, and the daughter againſt the mother: the mother in lawe againſt her daughter in lawe, and the daughter in lawe againſt her mother in lawe.

*Mat.16.2.* 54 ¶ * Then ſaide he to the people, When ye ſee a cloude riſe out of the Weſt, ſtraightway yee ſay, A ſhowre commeth: and ſo it is.

55 And when *yee ſee* the Southwinde blowe, ye ſay, that it will be hoate: and it commeth to paſſe.

56 Hypocrites, ye can diſcerne the face of the earth, and of the skie: but why diſcerne ye not this time?

57 Yea, and why iudge ye not of your ſelues what is right?

*Mat.5.25.* 58 ¶ * While thou goeſt with thine aduerſarie to the ruler,

ler,as thou art in the way,giue diligence in the way,that thou maieſt be deliuered from him,leaſt he draw thee to the iudge, and the iudge deliuer thee to the iayler, & the iayler caſt thee into priſon.

59 I tell thee, thou ſhalt not depart thence, till thou haſt paied the vtmoſt mite.

## CHAP. XIII.

1 *Of the Galileans,* 4 *and thoſe that were ſlaine vnder Siloam.* 6 *The figge tree that bare no fruite.* 11 *The woman vexed with the ſpirit of infirmitie, that is, with a diſeaſe brought on her by Satan,is healed.* 19 *The parable of the graine of muſtard ſeede.* 21 *Of leauen.* 23 *Howe few ſhalbe ſaued.* 31 *Herod that foxe.*

THere were certaine men preſent at the ſame ſeaſon, that ſhewed him of the Galileans, whoſe blood Pilate had mingled with their ſacrifices.

2 And Ieſus anſwered,and ſaid vnto them,Suppoſe ye,that theſe Galileans were greater ſinners then all the *other* Galileans,becauſe they haue ſuffered ſuch things?

3 I tell you,nay: but except ye amend your liues,ye ſhall all likewiſe periſh.

4 Or thinke you that thoſe eighteene, vpon whome the tower in Siloam fell, and ſlewe them, were ſinners aboue all men that dwell in Hieruſalem?

5 I tell you,nay: but except ye amend your liues,yee ſhall all likewiſe periſh.

6 ¶ Hee ſpake alſo this parable, A certaine man had a figtree planted in his vineyarde: and hee came and ſought fruite thereon,and found none.

7 Then ſaide he to the dreſſer of his vineyarde,Behold,this three yeeres haue I come and ſought fruite of this figtree, and finde none: cut it downe: why keepeth it alſo the grounde barren?

8 And he anſwered,and ſaide vnto him, Lorde,let it alone this yeere alſo,till I dig round about it,and doung it.

9 And if it beare fruit,*well*: if not,then after thou ſhalt cut it downe.

10 ¶ And he taught in one of the Synagogues on the Sabbath day.

11 And beholde,there was a woman which had a ſpirit of infirmitie eighteene yeres,& was bowed together,and coulde not lift vp *her ſelfe* in any wiſe.

12 When Iesus sawe her, he called her to him, and saide to her, Woman, thou art loosed from thy disease.

13 And he laied his hands on her, and immediatly shee was made straight againe, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with indignation, because that Iesus had healed on the Sabbath *day*, and said vnto the people, There are sixe daies in which men ought to woorke: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the Sabbath day.

15 Then answered him the Lorde, and saide, Hypocrite, doeth not eche one of you on the Sabbath *day* loose his oxe or his asse from the stall, and leade him away to the water?

16 And ought not this daughter of Abraham, whome Satan had bound, loe, eighteene yeeres, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day?

17 And when he said these things, all his aduersaries were ashamed: but al the people reioyced at al the excellent things, that were done by him.

*Mat.13.31.* *mar.4.31.* 18 ¶ *Then saide he, What is the kingdome of God like? or whereto shall I compare it?

19 It is like a graine of mustard seede, which a man tooke & sowed in his garden, and it grewe, & waxed a great tree, and the foules of the heauen made nestes in the branches thereof.

*Mat.13.33.* 20 ¶ * And againe hee saide, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdome of God?

21 It is like leauen, which a woman tooke, and hid in three peckes of flowre, till all was leauened.

*Mat.9.35.* *mar.6.6.* 22 ¶ *And he went through all cities & townes, teaching, and iourneying towards Hierusalem.

23 Then said one vnto him, Lord, *are there* few that shalbe saued? And he said vnto them,

*Mat.7.13.* 24 *Striue to enter in at the straite gate: for many, I say vnto you, will seeke to enter in, and shall not be able.

25 When the goodman of the house is risen vp, & hath shut to the doore, and ye begin to stand without, and to knocke at the doore, saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs, and he shall answere and say vnto you, I knowe you not whence ye are,

26 Then shall ye begin to say, We haue eaten and drunke in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streetes.

*Mat.7.23.* *and 25.41.* *psal.6.8.* 27 *But he shal say, I tell you, I knowe you not whence ye are: depart from me, all ye workers of iniquitie.

28 There shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth when ye shall

shall see Abraham and Isaac, and Iacob, and all the Prophets in the kingdome of God, and your selues thrust out at doores.

29 Then shall come *many* from the East, & from the West, and from the North, and from the South, and shall sit at table in the kingdome of God.

30 *And beholde, there are last, which shall be first, and there are first, which shalbe last. *Mat.19.30. and 20.16.*

31 The same day there came certaine Pharises, and saide vnto him, Depart, and goe hence: for Herod will kill thee. *mar.10.31.*

32 Then said he vnto them, Goe ye and tell that foxe, Beholde, I cast out deuils, and will heale still to day, and to morowe, and the third day I shalbe perfected.

33 Neuertheless I must walke to day, and to morowe, and the day following: for it cannot be that a Prophet should perish out of Hierusalem.

34 *O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest the Prophets, & stonest them that are sent to thee, howe often would I haue gathered thy children together, as the henne *gathereth* her brood vnder *her* wings, and ye would not! *Mat.23.37.*

35 Beholde, your house is left vnto you desolate: and verely I tell you, ye shall not see me vntill *the time* come that ye shall say, Blessed *is* he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

## CHAP. XIIII.

1 *The dropsie healed on the Sabbath.* 8 *The chiefe places at bankets.* 12 *The poore must be called to our feastes.* 16 *Of those that were bid to the great supper.* 23 *Some compelled to come in.* 28 *One about to builde a towre.*

AND it came to passe that when he was entred into the house of one of the chiefe Pharises on the Sabbath *day*, to eate bread, they watched him.

2 And behold, there was a certaine man before him, which had the dropsie.

3 Then Iesus answering, spake vnto the Lawyers and Pharises, saying, Is it lawfull to heale on the Sabbath *day*?

4 And they held their peace. Then he tooke him, and healed him, and let him goe,

5 And answered them, saying, Which of you *shall haue* an asse, or an oxe fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the Sabbath day?

6 And they could not answere him againe to those things.

7 ¶He spake also a parable to the ghestes, when he marked howe they chose out the chiefe roomes, and said vnto them,

8 When thou shalt be bidden of any man to a wedding, set not thy selfe downe in the chiefest place, least a more honourable man then thou, be bidden of him,

9 And he that bade both him and thee, come, and say to thee, Giue this man roome, and thou then begin with shame to take the lowest roome.

*Prou.25.5.* 10 *But when thou art bidden, goe and sit downe in the lowest roome, that when he that bade thee, commeth, he may say vnto thee, Friend, sit vp hier: then shalt thou haue worship in the presence of them that sit at table with thee.

*Chap.18.14. mat.23.12.* 11 *For whosoeuer exalteth himselfe, shall be brought lowe, and he that humbleth himselfe, shalbe exalted.

*Prou.3.27. rob.4.7.* 12 ¶Then said he also to him that had bidden him, *When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor the rich neighbours, least they also bid thee againe, and a recompense be made thee.

13 But when thou makest a feast, call the poore, the maimed, the lame, *and* the blinde,

14 And thou shalt be blessed, because they can not recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the iust.

15 ¶Now when one of them that sate at table, heard these things, he sayd vnto him, Blessed *is* he that eateth bread in the kingdome of God.

*Mat.22.1. rene.19.9.* 16 Then said he to him, *A certaine man made a great supper, and bade many,

17 And sent his seruant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come: for all things are now ready.

18 But they all with one *mind* began to make excuse. The first sayd vnto him, I haue bought a farme, and I must needes goe out and see it: I pray thee haue me excused.

19 And another said, I haue bought fiue yoke of oxen, and I goe to proue them: I pray thee haue me excused.

20 And another said, I haue married a wife, and therefore I cannot come.

21 So that seruant returned, and shewed his master these things. Then was the good man of the house angrie, and sayd to his seruant, Goe out quickly into the streetes and lanes of the citie, and bring in hither the poore, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blinde.

22 And the seruant said, Lorde, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is roome.

23 Then

23 Then the Master saide to the seruant, Goe out into the hie waies, & hedges, and compell them to come in, that mine house may be filled.

24 For I say vnto you, that none of those men which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.

25 Nowe there went great multitudes with him, and he turned and said vnto them,

26 * If any man come to mee, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters: yea, and his owne life also, he cannot be my disciple. *Mat.* 10.37.

27 * And whosoeuer beareth not his crosse, and commeth after me, cannot be my disciple. *Chap.* 9.23. *mat.* 16.24.

28 For which of you minding to build a towre, sitteth not downe before, and counteth the cost, whether he haue sufficient to performe it,

29 Lest that after he hath laide the foundation, and is not able to performe it, all that beholde it, begin to mocke him,

30 Saying, This man began to builde, and was not able to make an ende?

31 Or what king going to make warre against an other king, sitteth not downe first, and taketh counsell, whether he be able with ten thousande, to meete him that commeth against him with twentie thousand?

32 Or els while he is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth peace.

33 So likewise, whosoeuer he be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

34 *Salt is good: but if salt haue lost his sauour, wherewith shall it be salted? *Mat.* 5.13. *mar.* 9.50.

35 It is neither meete for the land, nor yet for ỹ dounghil, but men cast it out. He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

## CHAP. XV.

*4 The parable of the lost sheepe, 8 Of the groate, 11 And of the prodigall sonne.*

THen ‖ resorted vnto him all the Publicanes and sinners, to heare him. ‖ *Or drewe neere.*

2 Therefore the Pharises and Scribes murmured, saying, He receiueth sinners, and eateth with them.

3 Then spake he this parable to them, saying,

4 *What man of you hauing an hundred sheepe, if he lose one of them, doeth not leaue ninetie and nine in the wildernesse, and goe after that which is lost, vntill he finde it? *Mat.* 18.12.

5 And

5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders with ioy.

6 And when he commeth home, he calleth together his friendes and neighbours, saying vnto them, Reioyce with me: for I haue found my sheepe which was lost.

7 I say vnto you, that likewise ioy shall be in heauen for one sinner that conuerteth, *more* then for ninetie and nine iust men, which neede none amendment of life.

8 Either what woman hauing tenne groates, if she lose one groate, doeth not light a candle, and sweepe the house, and seeke diligently till she finde it?

9 And when she hath found it, she calleth her friendes, and neighbours, saying, Reioyce with me: for I haue founde the groate which I had lost.

10 Likewise I say vnto you, there is ioy in the presence of the Angels of God, for one sinner that conuerteth.

11 ¶He said moreouer, A certaine man had two sonnes.

12 And the yonger of them saide to his father, Father, giue me the portion of the goods that falleth to me. So he deuided vnto them *his* substance.

13 So not many dayes after, when the yonger sonne had gathered all together, he tooke his iourney into a farre countrey, and there he wasted his goods with riotous liuing.

14 Nowe when he had spent all, there arose a great dearth throughout that land: and he began to be in necessitie.

15 Then he went and claue to a citizen of that countrey, and he sent him to his farme, to feede swine.

16 And he woulde faine haue filled his bellie with the huskes, that the swine ate: but no man gaue *them* him.

17 Then he came to himselfe, and saide, Howe many hyred seruants at my fathers haue bread ynough, & I die for hunger?

18 I will rise and goe to my father, and say vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, and before thee,

19 And am no more worthy to be called thy sonne: make me as one of thy hired seruants.

20 So he arose and came to his father, and when he was yet a great way off, his father sawe him, and had compasion, and ranne and fell on his necke, and kissed him.

21 And the sonne saide vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, and before thee, and am no more worthie to be called thy sonne.

22 Then the father said to his seruants, Bring forth the best

robe, and put it on him, and put a *ring* on his hand, and shoes on his feete,

23 And bring the fat calfe, and kill him, & let vs eate, and be mery:

24 For this my sonne was dead, and is aliue againe: and he was lost, but he is found. And they began to be mery.

25 Now ỹ elder brother was in the field, & when he came and drewe neere to the house, he heard melodie & dauncing,

26 And called one of his seruants, and asked what those things meant.

27 And he said vnto him, Thy brother is come, and thy father hath killed the fatted calfe, because he hath receiued him safe and sound.

28 Then he was angrie, and would not goe in: therefore came his father out and entreated him.

29 But he answered, and said to his father, Loe, these many yeeres haue I done thee seruice, neither brake I at any time thy commandement, and yet thou neuer gauest me a kid, that I might make merie with my friendes.

30 But when this thy sonne was come, which hath deuoured thy goods with harlots, thou hast for his sake killed the fat calfe.

31 And he said vnto him, Sonne, thou art euer with me, and all that I haue, is thine. It was meete that we shoulde make merie, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is aliue againe: and he was lost, but he is found.

## CHAP. XVI.

1 *The parable of the Steward accused to his master.* 13 *To serue two masters.* 16 *The Lawe and the Prophets.* 19 *Of Diues and Lazarus.*

AND he saide also vnto his disciples, There was a certaine riche man, which had a steward, and he was accused vnto him, that he wasted his goods.

2 And he called him, and saide vnto him, Howe *is it* that I heare this of thee? Giue an accounts of thy stewardship: for thou mayest be no longer steward.

3 Then the steward said within himselfe, What shall I do? for my master taketh away from me the stewardship. I cannot digge, *and* to begge I am ashamed.

4 I knowe what I will doe, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receiue me into their houses.

5 Thē called he vnto him euery one of his masters detters,

and

and ſaid vnto the firſt, How much oweſt thou vnto my maſter?

6 And he ſaid, An hundreth meaſures of oyle. And he ſaide to him, Take thy writing, & ſit downe quickly, and write fiftie.

7 Then ſaid he to another, How much oweſt thou? And he ſaid, An hũdreth meaſures of wheat. Then he ſaid to him, Take thy writing, and write foure ſcore.

8 And the Lord commended the vniuſt ſtewarde, becauſe he had done wiſely. Wherefore the children of this worlde are in their generation wiſer then the children of light.

9 And I ſay vnto you, Make you friends with the riches of iniquitie, that when yee ſhall want, they may receiue you into euerlaſting habitations.

10 Hee that is faithfull in the leaſt, hee is alſo faithfull in much: and he that is vniuſt in the leaſt, is vniuſt alſo in much.

11 If then yee haue not bene faithfull in the wicked riches, who will truſt you in the true *treaſure*?

12 And if ye haue not bene faithfull in another mans *goods*, who ſhall giue you that which is yours?

*Mat.6.24.* 13 * No ſeruaunt can ſerue two maſters: for either he ſhall hate the one, and loue the other: or els he ſhall leane to the one, and deſpiſe the other. Ye can not ſerue God and riches.

14 All theſe things heard the Phariſes alſo which were couetous, and they ſcoffed at him.

15 Then he ſaid vnto them, Ye are they, which iuſtifie your ſelues before men: but God knoweth your hearts: for ỹ which is highly eſteemed among men, is abomination in the ſight of God.

*Mat.11.12.*

16 * The Lawe and the Prophets *endured* vntill Iohn: and ſince that time the kingdome of God *is* preached, and euery man preaſſeth into it.

*Mat.5.18.* 17 * Nowe it is more eaſie that heauen and earth ſhoulde paſſe away, then that one title of the Lawe ſhould fall.

*Mat.5.32. and 19.9. 1.Cor.7.11.* 18 ¶ * Whoſoeuer putteth away his wife, & marrieth another, committeth adulterie: and whoſoeuer marrieth her that is put away from her husband, committeth adulterie.

19 ¶ There was a certaine rich man, which was clothed in purple, and fine linnen, and fared wel & delicately euery day.

20 Alſo there was a certaine begger named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate full of ſores,

21 And deſired to be refreſhed with the crummes that fell from the rich mans table: yea, and the dogges came and licked his ſores.

22 And

22 And it was so that the begger dyed, and was caried by the Angels into Abrahams bosome. The rich man also dyed, and was buried.

23 And being in hell in torments, he list vp his eyes, and sawe Abraham a farre off, and Lazarus in his bosome.

24 Then he cryed, and saide, Father Abraham, haue mercie on me, and sende Lazarus that he may dippe the tippe of his finger in water, and coole my tongue: for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham saide, Sonne, remember that thou in thy life time receiuedst thy pleasures, & likewise Lazarus paines: nowe therefore is he comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 Besides all this, betweene you and vs there is a great gulfe set, so that they which woulde goe from hence to you, cannot: neither can they come from thence to vs.

27 Then he saide, I pray thee therefore father, that thou wouldest send him to my fathers house,

28 (For I haue fiue brethren) that he may testifie vnto them, least they also come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham said vnto him, They haue Moses and the Prophets: let them heare them.

30 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one came vnto them from the dead, they will amend their liues.

31 Then he said vnto him, If they heare not Moses and the Prophets, neither will they be perswaded, though one arise from the dead againe.

## CHAP. XVII.

1 *Offences.* 3 *We must forgiue him that trespasseth against vs.* 10 *We are vnprofitable seruants.* 11 *Of the ten lepers.* 20 *Of the comming of the kingdome of heauen.* 33 *Passe Christes.* 36 *After what maner Christes comming shall be.*

THen said he to the disciples, *It cannot be auoyded, but that offences will come, but woe be to him by whom they come. *Mat.*18.7. *mar.*9.42.

2 It is better for him that a great millstone were hanged about his necke, and that he were cast into the sea, then that he should offend one of these litle ones.

3 ¶ Take heede to your selues: if thy brother trespasse against thee, rebuke him: and if he repent, forgiue him.

4 * And though he sinne against thee seuen times in a day, and seuen times in a day turne againe to thee, saying, It repenteth me, thou shalt forgiue him. *Mat.*18.21.

5 ¶ And

5 ¶ And the Apoſtles ſaide vnto the Lorde, Increaſe our faith.

*Mat.* 17.20. 6 And the Lord ſaid, *If ye had faith *as much* as is a graine of muſtard ſeede, and ſhoulde ſay vnto this mulberie tree, Plucke thy ſelfe vp by the rootes, and plant thy ſelfe in the ſea, it ſhould euen obey you.

7 ¶ Who is it alſo of you, that hauing a ſeruant plowing or feeding cattell, woulde ſay vnto him by and by, when he were come from the fielde, Goe, and ſit downe at table?

8 And woulde not rather ſay to him, Dreſſe wherewith I may ſuppe, and girde thy ſelfe, and ſerue me, till I haue eaten and drunken, and afterward thou ſhalt eate and drinke?

9 Doeth he thanke that ſeruant, becauſe he did that which was commanded vnto him? I trowe not.

10 So likewiſe ye, when ye haue done all thoſe thinges which are commaunded you, ſay, We are vnprofitable ſeruants: we haue done that which was our duetie to doe.

11 ¶ And ſo it was when he went to Hieruſalem, that he paſſed through the middes of Samaria, and Galile.

12 And as he entred into a certaine towne, there met him tenne men that were lepers, which ſtoode a farre off.

13 And they lift vp their voyces, & ſaid, Ieſus, Maſter, haue mercie on vs.

*Leuit.* 14.2. 14 And when he ſawe *them*, he ſaid vnto them, *Goe, ſhew your ſelues vnto the Prieſts. And it came to paſſe, that as they went, they were cleanſed.

15 Then one of them, when he ſawe that he was healed, turned backe, and with a loude voyce prayſed God,

16 And fell downe on his face at his feete, and gaue him thankes: and he was a Samaritan.

17 And Ieſus anſwered, and ſaide, Are there not ten cleanſed? but where *are* the nine?

18 There are none found that returned to giue God praiſe, ſaue this ſtranger.

19 And he ſaid vnto him, Ariſe, goe thy way, thy faith hath ſaued thee.

20 ¶ And when he was demaunded of the Phariſes, when the kingdome of God ſhoulde come, he anſwered them, and ſaid, The kingdome of God commeth not with obſeruation.

21 Neither ſhall men ſay, Loe here, or loe there: for beholde, the kingdome of God is within you.

22 And he ſaide vnto the diſciples, The dayes will come, when

when ye shall desire to see one of the dayes of the Sonne of man, and ye shall not see it.

23 *Then they shall say to you, Beholde here, or beholde there: *but* goe not thither, neither followe them. *Mat.24.23. mar.13.21.*

24 For as the lightning that lighteth out of the one *part* vnder heauen, shineth vnto the other *part* vnder heauen, so shall the Sonne of man be in his day.

25 But first must he suffer many things, and be reproued of this generation.

26 *And as it was in the dayes of Noe, so shall it be in the dayes of the Sonne of man. *Gen.7.5. mat.24.38.*

27 They ate, they dranke, they maried wiues, and gane in mariage vnto the day that Noe went into the Arke: and the flood came, and destroyed them all. *1.pet.3.20.*

28 *Likewise also, as it was in the dayes of Lot, they ate, they dranke, they bought, they solde, they planted, they built. *Gen.19.24.*

29 But in the day that Lot went out of Sodome, it rained fire and brimstone from heauen, and destroyed them all.

30 After these *ensamples* shall it be in the day when the Sonne of man is reueiled.

31 At that day he that is vpon the house, and his stuffe in the house, let him not come downe to take it out: and he that is in the fielde likewise, let him not turne backe, to that he left behinde.

32 *Remember Lots wife. *Gen.19.26.*

33 * Whosoeuer will seeke to saue his soule, shall lose it: and whosoeuer shall lose it, shall get it life. *Chap.9.24. mat.10.39.*

34 *I tell you, in that night there shall be two in one bed: the one shall be receiued, and the other shall be left. *mar.8.35. iohn 12.25.*

35 Two women shall be grinding together: the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. *Mat.24.41.*

36 Two shall be in the fielde: one shall be receiued, and an other shall be left.

37 And they answered, and said to him, Where, Lord? And he said vnto them, *Whereseuer the body *is*, thither shall also the egles be gathered together. *Mat.24.28.*

## CHAP. XVIII.

2 *The parable of the vnrighteous iudge and the widowe.* 10 *Of the Pharise and the Publicane.* 15 *Children are of the kingdome of heauen.* 22 *To sell all and giue to the poore.* 28 *The Apostles forsake all.* 31 *Christ foretelleth his death.* 35 *The blind man receiueth sight.*

And

AND he spake also a parable vnto them, *to this end*, that they
Rom.12.12. 1.Thes.5.17. * ought alwayes to pray, and not to waxe faint,

2 Saying, There was a iudge in a certaine citie, which feared not God, neither reuerenced man.

3 And there was a widowe in that citie, which came vnto him, saying, Doe me iustice against mine aduersarie.

4 And he would not of a long time: but afterward he said with himselfe, Though I feare not God, nor reuerence man,

5 Yet because this widowe troubleth me, I will doe her right, lest at the last she come and make me wearie.

6 And the Lorde saide, Heare what the vnrighteous iudge saith.

7 Nowe shall not God auenge his elect, which crie day and night vnto him, yea, though he suffer long for them?

8 I tell you he will auenge them quickly: but when the Sonne of man commeth, shall he finde faith on the earth?

9 ¶ He spake also this parable vnto certaine which trusted in themselues that they were iust, and despised other.

10 Two men went vp into the Temple to pray: the one a Pharise, and the other a Publicane.

11 The Pharise stoode and prayed thus with himselfe, O God, I thanke thee, that I am not as other men, extortioners, vniust, adulterers, or euen as this Publicane.

12 I fast twise in the weeke: I giue tithe of all that euer I possesse.

13 But the Publicane standing a farre off, would not lift vp so much as his eyes to heauen, but smote his brest, saying, O God be mercifull to me a sinner.

14 I tell you, this man departed to his house iustified, rather then the other: * for euery man that exalteth himselfe,
Chap.14.11. mat.23.12. shall be brought lowe, and he that humbleth himselfe, shall be exalted.

Mat.19.13. mar.10.13. 15 ¶ * They brought vnto him also babes that he shoulde touche them. And when his disciples sawe it, they rebuked them.

16 But Iesus called them vnto him, and saide, Suffer the babes to come vnto me, and forbid them not; for of such is the kingdome of God.

17 Verely I say vnto you, whosoeuer receiueth not ✝ kingdome of God as a babe, he shall not enter therein.

Mat.19.16. mar.10.17. 18 *Then a certaine ruler asked him, saying, Good master, what ought I to doe, to inherite eternall life?

19 And

19 And Iesus sayd vnto him, Why callest thou mee good? none is good saue one, *euen* God.

20 Thou knowest the commandements, * Thou shalt not commit adulterie: Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steale: Thou shalt not beare false witnesse: Honour thy father and thy mother. *Exod.* 20.13.

21 And he said, All these haue I kept from my youth.

22 Nowe when Iesus heard that, he said vnto him, Yet lackest thou one thing. Sell all that euer thou hast, and distribute vnto the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come followe me.

23 But when he heard those things, he was very heauie: for he was marueilous riche.

24 And when Iesus sawe him very sorowfull, he said, With what difficultie shall they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God!

25 Surely it is easier for a camel to goe through a needles eie, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 Then saide they that heard it, And who then can be saued?

27 And he saide, The things which are vnpossible with men, are possible with God.

28 ¶ * Then Peter saide, Loe, we haue left all, and haue followed thee. *Mat.* 19.27. *mar.* 10.28.

29 And he said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, there is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children for the kingdome of Gods sake,

30 Which shall not receiue much more in this world, and in the world to come life euerlasting.

31 ¶ * Then Iesus tooke vnto him the twelue, and said vnto them, Behold, we goe vp to Hierusalem, and all things shall be fulfilled to the Sonne of man, that are written by the Prophets. *Mat.* 20.17. *mar.* 10.32.

32 For he shall be deliuered vnto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and shall be spitefully entreated, and shall be spitted on.

33 And when they haue scourged him, they will put him to death: but the third day he shall arise againe.

34 But they vnderstood none of these things, and this saying was hid from them, neither perceiued they the things which were spoken.

35 ¶ * And it came to passe, that as he was come neere vnto Iericho, *Mat.* 20.29. *mar.* 10.46.

Iericho, a certaine blind man sate by the way side, begging.

36 And when he heard the people passe by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they told vnto him, ỹ Iesus of Nazareth passed by.

38 Then he cried, saying, Iesus the sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

39 And they which went before, rebuked him that he should holde his peace, but he cried much more, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me.

40 And Iesus stood still, & commanded him to be brought vnto him. And when he was come neere, he asked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I doe vnto thee? And he sayd, Lord, that I may receiue my sight.

42 And Iesus sayd vnto him, Receiue thy sight: thy faith hath saued thee.

43 Then immediatly he receiued his sight, and followed him, praysing God: and all the people, when they sawe *this*, gaue prayse to God.

## CHAP. XIX.

*2 Zacchæus the Publicane. 13 Tenne pieces of money deliuered to seruants to occupie withall. 29 Iesus entreth into Hierusalem. 41 He foretelleth the destruction of the citie with teares. 45 He casteth the sellers out of the Temple.*

NOw, when Iesus entred and passed through Iericho,

2 Beholde, there was a man named Zaccheus, which was the chiefe receiuer of the tribute, and he was riche.

3 And he sought to see Iesus, who he should be, and could not for the preasse, because he was of a lowe stature.

4 Wherefore he ranne before, & climed vp into a wilde fig tree, that he might see him: for he should come that way.

5 And when Iesus came to the place, he looked vp, and sawe him, and sayd vnto him, Zaccheus, come downe at once: for to day I must abide at thine house.

6 Then he came downe hastily, and receiued him ioyfully.

7 And when all they sawe it, they murmured, saying, that he was gone in to lodge with a sinnefull man.

8 And Zaccheus stoode forth, and said vnto the Lord, Beholde, Lorde, the halfe of my goods I giue to the poore: and if I haue taken from any man by forged cauillation, I restore him foure folde.

9 Then Iesus said to him, This day is saluation come vnto this house, forasmuch as he is also become ỹ sonne of Abrahã.

10 *For

10 *For the sonne of man is come to seeke, and to saue that which was lost. *Mat.18.11.

11 And whiles they heard these things, he continued and spake a parable, because he was neere to Hierusalem, and because also they thought that the kingdome of God shoulde shortly appeare.

12 He sayd therefore, * A certaine noble man went into a farre countrey, to receiue for himselfe a kingdome, and so to come againe. *Mat.25.14.

13 And he called his ten seruants, and delinered them ten pieces of money, and sayd vnto them, Occupie till I come.

14 Now his citizens hated him, and sent an ambassage after him, saying, We wil not haue this man to reigne ouer vs.

15 And it came to passe, when he was come againe, and had receiued his kingdome, that he commaunded the seruants to be called to him, to whome he gaue his money, that he might knowe what euery man had gained.

16 Then came the first, saying, Lorde, thy piece hath encreased ten pieces.

17 And hee said vnto him, Well, good seruant: because thou hast bene faithfull in a very litle thing, take thou authoritie ouer ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying, Lorde, thy piece hath encreased fiue pieces.

19 And to the same he sayd, Be thou also *ruler* ouer fiue cities.

20 So the other came, and sayd, Lord, beholde thy piece, which I haue layde vp in a napkin:

21 For I feared thee, because thou art a straite man: thou takest vp that thou layedst not downe, and reapest that thou diddest not sowe.

22 Then he sayd vnto him, Of thine owne mouth will I iudge thee, O euill seruant, Thou knewest that I am a straite man, taking vp that I layed not downe, and reaping that I did not sowe.

23 Wherefore then gauest not thou my money into the banke, that at my comming I might haue required it with vantage?

24 And he said to them that stood by, Take from him that piece, and giue it him that hath ten pieces. *Chap.8.18.*

25 (And they said vnto him, Lord, he hath ten pieces) *matt.13.12.*

26 *For I say vnto you, that vnto all them that haue, it shal *and 25.29.*

 *mar.4.25.*

be giuen: and from him that hath not, euen that he hath, shall be taken from him.

27 Moreouer, those mine enemies, which would not that I should reigne ouer them, bring hither, and slay them before mee.

28 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he went foorth before, ascending vp to Hierusalem.

*Mat.21.1. mar.11.1.* 29 * And it came to passe, when hee was come neere to Bethphage, and Bethania, besides the mount which is called *the mount* of Oliues, he sent two of his disciples,

30 Saying, Go ye to the towne which is before you, wherein, assoone as ye are come, ye shall finde a colte tied, whereon neuer man sate: loose him, and bring him *hither*.

31 And if any man aske you, why ye loose *him*, thus shal ye say vnto him, Because the Lord hath neede of him.

32 So they that were sent, went their way, and found it as he had sayd vnto them.

33 And as they were loosing the colte, the owners thereof sayd vnto them, Why loose ye the colte?

34 And they sayd, The Lord hath neede of him.

*Mat.21.7. iohn 12.14.* 35 ¶ * So they brought him to Iesus, and they cast their garments on the colte, and set Iesus thereon.

36 And as he went, they spred their clothes in the way.

37 And when he was now come neere to the going downe of the mount of Olines, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rhioyce, and to prayse God with a loude voyce, for all the great workes that they had seene,

38 Saying, Blessed *be* the King that commeth in the Name of the Lord: peace in heauen, and glory in the highest *places*.

39 Then some of the Pharises of the company sayde vnto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.

40 But he answered, and sayd vnto them, I tell you, that if these should holde their peace, the stones would cry.

*Chap.21.6. mat.24.1. mar.13.1.* 41 ¶ * And when he was come neere, he beheelde the Citie, and wept for it,

42 Saying, O if thou haddest euen knowen at the least, in this thy day those things, which *belong* vnto thy peace! but nowe are they hid from thine eyes.

43 For the dayes shall come vpon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trenche about thee, and compasse thee round, and keepe thee in on euery side,

44 And shall make thee euen with the ground, and thy children

children which are in thee, and they shall not leaue in thee a stone vpon a stone, because thou knewest not that season of thy visitation.

45 ¶ * He went also into the Temple, and began to cast out them that solde therein, and them that bought, *Mat.21.13.*

46 Saying vnto them, It is written, * Mine house is the house of prayer, * but ye haue made it a denne of theeues. *Mar.11.17. isai.56.7.*

47 And hee taught dayly in the Temple. And the high Priestes and the Scribes, and the chiefe of the people sought to destroy him. *Jere.7.11.*

48 But they could not finde what they might doe to him: for all the people hanged vpon him when they heard him.

## CHAP. XX.

*4 From whence Iohns baptisme was. 9 The wickednesse of the Priests is noted by the parable of the vineyarde and the husbandmen. 21 To giue tribute to Cesar. 27 He conuinceth the Sadduces denying the resurrection. 41 How Christ is the sonne of Dauid.*

AND it came to passe, ỹ on one of those daies, as he taught the people in the Temple, & preached the Gospel, the hie Priestes and the Scribes came vpon him with the Elders, *Mat.21.23. mar.11.27.*

2 And spake vnto him, saying, Tell vs by what authoritie thou doest these things, or who is he that hath giuen thee this authoritie?

3 And he answered, and sayd vnto them, I also will aske you one thing: tell me therefore:

4 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men?

5 And they reasoned within themselues, saying, If we shall say, From heauen, he wil say, Why then beleeued ye him not?

6 But if we shall say, Of men, all the people wil stone vs: for they be perswaded that Iohn was a Prophet.

7 Therefore they answered, that they coulde not tell whence it *was*.

8 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Neither tell I you, by what authoritie I doe these things.

9 ¶ * Then began he to speake to the people this parable, A certaine man planted a vineyarde, and let it foorth to husbandmen: and went into a strange country, for a great time. *Mat.21.33. mar.12.1. isai.5.1.*

10 And at the time conuenient he sent a seruant to the husbandmen, that they should giue him of the fruite of the vineyarde, but the husbandmen did beate him, and sent him away emptie. *Jere.2.21.*

12 Againe he sent yet another seruant: and they did beate him, and foule entreated him, and sent him away emptie.

12 Moreouer he sent the third, and him they wounded, and cast out.

13 Then said the Lord of the vineyarde, What shall I doe? I wil send my beloued Sonne: it may be that they will doe reuerence, when they see him.

14 But when the husbandman sawe him, they reasoned with themselues, saying, This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

15 So they cast him out of the vineyarde, and killed him. What shal the Lord of the vineyard therefore doe vnto them?

16 He wil come and destroy these husbandmen, and will giue out his vineyard to others. But when they heard it, they said, God forbid.

17 ¶ And he beheelde them, and sayd, What meaneth this then that is written, *The stone that the builders refused, that
*Psal.118.22. Isai.28.16. Act.4.11. Rom.9.33. 1.Pet.2.8.* is made the head of the corner?

18 Whosoeuer shall fall vpon that stone, shalbe broken: and on whomsoeuer it shall fall, it wil grinde him to powder.

19 Then the hie Priests, & the Scribes the same houre went about to lay hands on him: (but they feared the people) for they perceiued that he had spoken this parable against them.

20 ,* And they watched *him*, and sent foorth spies, which
*Mat.22.16. Mar.12.13.* should faine themselues iust men, to take him in his talke, and to deliuer him vnto the power & authoritie of the gouernour.

21 And they asked him, saying, Master, we know that thou sayest, and teachest right, neither doest thou accept mans person, but teachest the way of God truely.

22 Is it lawfull for vs to giue Cesar tribute or no?

23 But hee perceiued their craftines, and said vnto them, Why tempt ye me?

24 Shewe me a penny: Whose image and superscription hath it? They answered, and said, Cesars.

*Rom.13.7.* 25 Then he saide vnto them, * Giue then vnto Cesar the things which are Cesars, and to God those which are Gods.

26 And they could not reproue his saying before the people: but they marueiled at his answere, and helde their peace.

*Mat.22.23. Mar.12.18. Deut.25.5.* 27 * Then came to him certaine of the Sadducees (which denie that there is any resurrection) and they asked him,

28 Saying, Master, *Moses wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother die hauing a wife, and he die without children, that his

brother

brother should take his wife, and raise vp seede to his brother.

29 Now there were seuen brethren, and the first tooke a wife, and he died without children.

30 And the second tooke the wife, and he died childlesse.

31 Then the thirde tooke her: and so likewise the seuen died, and left no children.

32 And last of all the woman died also.

33 Therefore at the resurrection, whose wife of them shal she be? for seuen had her to wife.

34 Then Iesus answered, and sayd vnto them, The children of this world marrie wiues, and are married.

35 But they which shall be counted worthy to enioy that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marrie wiues, neither are married.

36 For they can die no more, forasmuch as they are equall vnto the Angels, and are the sonnes of God, since they are the children of the resurrection.

37 And that the dead shal rise againe, euen *Moses shewed it beside the bush, when he said, The Lorde is the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob. *Exod.3.6.*

38 For he is not the God of the dead, but of them which liue: for all liue vnto him.

39 Then certaine of the Scribes answered, and said, Master, thou hast well sayd.

40 And after that, durst they not aske him any thing at all.

41 ¶ *Then sayd he vnto them, Howe say they that Christ is Dauids sonne? *Mat.22.44. mar.12.35.*

42 And David himselfe saith in the booke of the Psalmes, *The Lord sayd vnto my Lord, Sit at my right hand, *Psal.110.1.*

43 Till I shall make thine enemies thy footestoole.

44 Seeing Dauid calleth him Lord, how is he thē his sonne?

45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people he sayd vnto his disciples,

46 *Beware of the Scribes, which willingly goe in long robes, and loue salutations in the markets, & the hieſt seates in the assemblies, and the chiefe roomes at feastes: *Chap.11.43. mat.23.6. mar.12.38.*

47 Which deuoure widowes houses, and in shewe make long prayers: These shall receiue greater damnation.

## CHAP. XXI.

1 *The widowes liberalitie aboue her riches.* 5 *Of the time of the destruction of the Temple,* 19 *and Hierusalem.* 25 *The signes going before the last iudgement.*

Mar.12.41. AND * as he beheilde, he sawe the rich men, which cast their
gyftes into the treasurie.

2 And he sawe also a certaine poore widow which cast in
thither two mites:

3 And he sayd, Of a trueth I say vnto you, that this poore
widowe hath cast in more then they all.

4 For they all haue of their superfluitie cast into the of-
frings of God: but she of her penurie hath cast in all the liuing
that she had.

Chap.19.4. 5 * Nowe as some spake of the Temple, howe it was gar-
matt.24.1. nished with goodly stones, & with consecrate things, he said,
mar.13.1. 6 Are these the things that ye looke vpon? the dayes will
come wherein a stone shall not be left vpon a stone, that shall
not be throwen downe.

7 Then they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall
these things be? and what signe *shall* there *be* when these
things shall come to passe?

Ephes.5.6. 8 * And he sayd, Take heede, that ye be not deceiued: for
2.thes.2.3. many will come in my Name, saying, I am *Christ*, & the time
draweth neere: followe ye not them therefore.

9 And when ye heare of warres and seditions, be not a-
frayd: for these things must first come, but the ende followeth
not by and by.

10 Then sayd he vnto them, Nation shall rise against nati-
on, and kingdome against kingdome,

Mat.24.7. 11 * And great earthquakes shall be in diuers places, and
mar.13.8. hunger, and pestilence, and fearefull things, and great signes
shall there be from heauen.

12 But before all these, they shall lay their handes on you,
and persecute *you*, deliuering you vp to the assemblies, and in-
to prisons, and bring you before Kings and rulers for my
Names sake.

13 And this shall turne to you, for a testimoniall.

Chap.12.11. 14 * Lay it vp therefore in your hearts, that yee cast not
mat.10.19. before hand, what ye shall answere.
mar.13.11. 15 For I will giue you a mouth and wisdome, where against
all your aduersaries shall not be able to speake, nor resist.

16 Yea, ye shalbe betrayed also of your parents, & of your
brethren, and kinsmen, and friends, and *some* of you shall they
put to death.

17 And ye shalbe hated of all men for my Names sake.

Mat.10.30. 18 * Yet there shall not one heare of your heads perish.

19 By

19 By your patience possesse your soules.

20 ¶ * And when ye see Hierusalem besieged with souldiers, then vnderstand that the desolation thereof is neere. *Dan.9.27. matt.24.15.*

21 Then let them which are in Iudea, flee to the mountaines: and let them which are in the middes thereof, depart out: and let not them that are in the countrey, enter therein. *mar.13.14.*

22 For these be the dayes of vengeance, to fulfil all things that are written.

23 But woe *bee* to them that bee with childe, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes: for there shal be great distresse in this land, and wrath ouer this people.

24 And they shall fall on the edge of the sworde, and shall be led captiue into all nations, and Hierusalem shall be troden vnder foote of the Gentiles, vntill the time of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

25 * Then there shall bee signes in the Sunne, and in the moone, and in the starres, & vpon the earth trouble among the nations with perplexitie: the sea and the waters shall roare. *Isai.13.10. ezek.32.7. mat.24.29. mar.13.24.*

26 And mens hearts shall faile them for feare, and for looking after those thinges which shall come on the worlde: for the powers of heauen shalbe shaken.

27 And then shall they see the Sonne of man come in a cloude, with power and great glorie.

28 And whē these things begin to come to passe, then looke vp, & lift vp your heads: * for your redemption draweth neere. *Rom.8.27.*

29 And he spake to them a parable, Beholde, the figge tree and all trees,

30 When they nowe shoote foorth, ye seeing them, know of your owne selues, that sommer is then neere.

31 So likewise ye, when ye see these thinges come to passe, know ye that the kingdome of God is neere.

32 Verely I say vnto you, This age shall not passe, till all *these* things be done:

33 Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my wordes shall not passe away.

34 * Take heede to your selues, least at any time your heartes be oppressed with surfetting and drunkennesse, and cares of this life, and lest that day come on you at vnwares. *Rom.13.13.*

35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.

36 Watch therefore, and pray continually, that ye may be counted worthie to escape all these thinges that shall come

to

to passe, and that ye may stand before the Sonne of man.

37 ¶Now in the day time he taught in the Temple, and at night hee went out, and abode in the mount that is called *the mount* of Oliues.

38 And all the people came in the morning to him, to heare him in the Temple.

## CHAP. XXII.

*3 Iudas selleth Christ. 7 The Apostles prepare the Passeouer. 24 They striue who should bee chiefest. 31 Satan desireth them. 35 Christ sheweth that they wanted nothing. 42 He prayeth in the mount. 44 He sweateth blood. 50 Malchus eare cut off and healed. 57. 58. 60 Peter denieth Christ thrise. 63 Christ is mocked & stroken. 69 He confesseth himself to be the Sonne of God.*

*Matt.26.1. mar.14.1.* NOw *the feast of vnleauened bread drew neere, which is called the Passeouer.

2 And the hie Priests and Scribes sought how they might kill him: for they feared the people.

*Matt.26.14. mar.14.10.* 3 *Then entred Satan into Iudas, who was called Iscariot, and was of the nomber of the twelue.

4 And he went his way, & communed with the hie Priests and captaines, how he might betray him to them.

5 So they were glad, and agreed to giue him money.

6 And hee consented, and sought opportunitie to betray him vnto them, when the people were away.

*Mat.26.17. mar.14.13.* 7 ¶ *Then came the day of vnleauened bread, when the Passeouer must be sacrificed.

8 And he sent Peter and Iohn, saying, Goe and prepare vs the Passeouer, that we may eate it.

9 And they saide to him, Where wilt thou, that wee prepare *it*?

10 Then hee saide vnto them, Beholde, when ye be entred into the citie, there shall a man meete you, bearing a pitcher of water: follow him into the house that he entreth in,

11 And say vnto the good man of the house, The Master saith vnto thee, Where is the lodging where I shall eate my Passeouer with my disciples?

12 Then he shall shew you a great hie chamber trimmed: there make it readie.

13 So they went, and found as he had saide vnto them, and made readie the Passeouer.

*Mat.26.20. mar.14.17.* 14 *And when the houre was come, hee sate downe, and the twelue Apostles with him.

15 Then

15 Then he said vnto them, I haue earnestly desired to eate this Passeouer with you, before I suffer.

16 For I say vnto you, Henceforth I wil not eate of it any more, vntill it be fulfilled in the kingdome of God.

17 And he tooke the cup, and gaue thankes, and said, Take this, and deuide it among you,

18 For I say vnto you, I will not drinke of the fruite of the vine, vntill the kingdome of God be come.

19 *And he tooke bread, and when he had giuen thankes, he brake it, and gaue to them, saying, This is my body, which is giuen for you: do this in the remembrance of me. *Matt.26.26. mar. 14.22. 1.cor.11.24.*

20 Likewise also after supper *he tooke* the cup, saying, This cup *is* that new Testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

21 *Yet beholde, the hande of him that betrayeth mee, is with me at the table. *Mat.26.22. mar.14.18.*

22 And truely the Sonne of man goeth as it is appointed: but woe *be* to that man, by whom he is betrayed. *psal.41.9.*

23 Then they began to enquire among themselues, which of them it should be, that should doe that.

24 ¶ * And there arose also a strife among them, which of them should seeme to be the greatest. *Mat.20.25. mar.10.42.*

25 But he said vnto them, The kings of the Gentiles reigne ouer them, and they that beare rule ouer them, are called bountifull.

26 But ye *shall not be so*: but let the greatest among you be as the least: and the chiefest as he that serueth.

27 For who is greater, hee that sitteth at table, or hee that serueth? Is not hee that sitteth at table? And I am among you as he that serueth.

28 And ye are they which haue continued with me in my tentations.

29 Therefore I appoint vnto you a kingdome, as my Father hath appointed to me,

30 *That ye may eate, and drinke at my table in my kingdome, and sit on seates, and iudge the twelue tribes of Israel. *Mat.19.28.*

31 ¶ And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, Behold, *Satan hath desired you, to winowe you as wheate. *1.Pet.5.8.*

32 But I haue prayed for thee, that thy faith faile not: therefore when thou art conuerted, strengthen thy brethren.

33 * And he said vnto him, Lord, I am readie to goe with thee into prison, and to death. *Mat.26.34. mar.14.30. iohn 13.38.*

34 But he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cocke shall not crowe this

this day, before thou hast thrise denied that thou knewest me.

*Matt.10.9.* 35 ¶ And he saide vnto them, * When I sent you without bagge, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing.

36 Then he said to them, But now he that hath a bagge, let him take it, and likewise a scrip: and hee that hath none, let him sell his coate, and bye a sword.

*Isai.53.12.* 37 For I say vnto you, that yet the same which is written, must be performed in mee, * Euen with the wicked was hee nombred: for doubtlesse those thinges which *are written* of me, haue an ende.

38 And they said, Lord, beholde, here are two swordes. And he said vnto them, It is ynough.

*Mat.26.36. mar.14.32. iohn 18.1.* 39 ¶ * And he came out, and went (as he was wont) to the mount of Oliues: and his disciples also folowed him.

*Mat.26.41. mar.14.38.* 40 * And when he came to the place, he said to them, Pray, lest ye enter into tentation.

41 And hee was drawen aside from them about a stones cast, and kneeled downe, and prayed,

42 Saying, Father, if thou wilt, take away this cuppe from me: neuertheless, not my will, but thine be done.

43 And there appeared an Angell vnto him from heauen, comforting him.

44 But being in an agonie, hee prayed more earnestly: and his sweate was like droppes of blood, trickling downe to the ground.

45 And he arose vp from prayer, and came to *his* disciples, and found them sleeping for heauinesse.

46 And he saide vnto them, Why sleepe ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into tentation.

*Mat.26.47. mar.14.43. iohn 18.3.* 47 ¶ * And while he yet spake, beholde, a companie, and he that was called Iudas one of the twelue, went before them, and came neere vnto Iesus to kisse him.

48 And Iesus said vnto him, Iudas, betrayest thou the Sonne of man with a kisse?

49 Now whē they which were about him, saw what would folow, they said vnto him, Lord, shall we smite with sword?

50 And one of them smote a seruant of the hie Priest, and stroke off his right eare.

51 Then Iesus answered, and saide, Suffer *them* thus farre: and he touched his eare, and healed him.

52 Then Iesus saide vnto the hie Priestes, and captaines of the

the Temple, and the Elders which were come to him, Bee ye come out as vnto a thiefe with swordes and staues?

53 When I was dayly with you in the Temple, ye stretched not forth the handes against mee: but this is your very houre, and the power of darkenes.

54 ¶ Then tooke they him, and led him, and brought him to the hie Priestes house. And Peter folowed afarte off. *Matt.26.58.*

55 * And when they had kindled a fire in the middes of the hall, and were set downe together, Peter also sate downe among them. *Matt.26.58, 69.mar.14. 66.ioh.18.*

56 And a certaine mayd beheilde him as he sate by the fire, and hauing wel looked on him, said, This man was also with him. 25.

57 But he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not.

58 And after a litle while, another man sawe him, and said, Thou art also of them. But Peter said, Man, I am not.

59 And about the space of an houre after, a certaine other affirmed, saying, Verely euen this man was with him: for he is also a Galilean.

60 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediatly while he yet spake, the cocke crewe.

61 Then the Lorde turned backe, and looked vpon Peter: and Peter remembred the word of the Lord, how he had said vnto him, *Before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie me thrise. *Mat.26.34.*

62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly. *ioh.13.38.*

63 ¶ * And the men that helde Iesus, mocked him, and strooke him. *Mat.26.67. mar.14.65.*

64 And when they had blindefolded him, they smote him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophecie who it is that smote thee.

65 And many other thinges blasphemously spake they against him.

66 * And assoone as it was day, the Elders of the people, and the hie Priestes and the Scribes came together, and ledde him into their councill, *Mat.27.1. mar.15.1. ioh.18.28.*

67 Saying, Art thou that Christ? tell vs. And he saide vnto them, If I tell you, ye will not beleeue it.

68 And if also I aske you, ye will not answere mee, nor let me goe.

69 Hereafter shall the Sonne of man sit at the right hande of the power of God.

70 Then saide they all, Art thou then the Sonne of God? And he said to them, Ye say, that I am.

71 Then

71 Then said they, What neede we any further witnes? for we our selues haue heard it of his owne mouth.

## CHAP. XXIII.

*1 He is accused before Pilate. 7 Hee is sent to Herod. 11 Hee is mocked. 24 Pilate yeeldeth him vp to the Iewes request. 27 The women bewaile him. 33 Hee is crucified. 39 One of the theeues reuileth him: 43 The other is saued by faith. 45 Hee dieth. 53 He is buried.*

THen the whole multitude of them arose, and led him vnto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We haue founde this man perverting the nation, * and forbidding to pay tribute to Cesar, saying, That he is Christ a King.

*Matt.22.21. mar.12.17.*

*Matt.27.11. mar.15.2. iohn 18.33.*

3 *And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Iewes? And he answered him, and said, Thou sayest it.

4 Then said Pilate to the hie Priestes, and to the people, I finde no fault in this man.

5 But they were the more fierce, saying, Hee mooueth the people, teaching throughout all Iudea, beginning at Galile, euen to this place.

6 Nowe when Pilate heard of Galile, hee asked whether the man were a Galilean.

7 And when he knewe that hee was of Herodes iurisdiction, hee sent him to Herod, which was also at Hierusalem in those dayes.

8 And when Herod sawe Iesus, hee was exceedingly glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many thinges of him, and trusted to haue seene some signe done by him.

9 Then questioned he with him of many things: but he answered him nothing.

10 The hie Priestes also and Scribes stoode foorth, and accused him vehemently.

11 And Herod with his men of warre, despised him, & mocked him, & arayed him in white, & sent him againe to Pilate.

12 And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together: for before they were enemies one to another.

13 ¶ Then Pilate called together the hie Priestes and the rulers, and the people,

*Matt.27.23. mar.15.14. iohn 18.34.*

14 *And saide vnto them, Ye haue brought this man vnto me, as one that perverteth the people: and behold, I haue examined him before you, and haue founde no fault in this man,

of those things whereof ye accuse him:

15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him: and loe, nothing worthy of death is done of him.

16 I will therefore chastise him, and let him loose.

17 (For of necessitie he must haue let one loose vnto them at the feast)

18 Then all the multitude cryed at once, saying, Away with him, and deliuer to vs Barabbas:

19 Which for a certaine insurrection made in the citie, and murther, was cast in prison.

20 Then Pilate spake againe to them, willing to let Iesus loose.

21 But they cried, saying, Crucifie, crucifie him.

22 And he saide vnto them the thirde time, But what euill hath he done? I finde no cause of death in him: I wil therefore chastise him, and let him loose.

23 But they were instant with loude voyces, and required that he might be crucified: and the voyces of them and of the hie Priestes preuailed.

24 So Pilate gaue sentence, ỹ it should be as they required.

25 And hee let loose vnto them him that for insurrection and murther was cast into prison, whom they desired, and deliuered Iesus to doe with him what they would.

26 ¶ * And as they led him away, they caught one Simon of Cyrene, comming out of the fielde, and on him they layde the crosse, to beare it after Iesus. *Mat.* 27.32. *mar.* 15.21.

27 And there followed him a great multitude of people, and of women, which women bewailed and lamented him.

28 But Iesus turned backe vnto them, and said, Daughters of Hierusalem, weepe not for mee, but weepe for your selues, and for your children.

29 For beholde, the dayes will come, when men shall say, Blessed *are* the barren, and the wombes that neuer bare, and the pappes which neuer gaue sucke.

30 Then shall they begin to say to the mountaines, * Fall on vs: and to the hilles, Couer vs. *Isai.* 2.19. *hose.* 10.8. *reuel.* 6.16.

31 * For if they do these things to a greene tree, what shall be done to the drie? 1.*Pet.* 4.17.

32 * And there were two others, which were euill doers, led with him to be slaine. *Mat.* 27.38. *mar.* 15.27.

33 And when they were come to the place, which is called Caluarie, there they crucified him, and the euill doers, one *iohn* 19.18.

at

at the right hand, and the other at the left.

34 Then saide Iesus, Father, forgiue them: for they knowe not what they do. And they parted his raiment, and cast lots.

35 And the people stood, and beheld. And the rulers mocked him with them, saying, He saued others: let him saue himselfe, if he be that Christ, the Chosen of God.

36 The souldiers also mocked him, and came and offered him vineger,

37 And said, If thou be the King of the Iewes, saue thy selfe.

38 And a superscription was also written ouer him, in Greeke letters, and in Latin, and in Hebrewe, THIS IS THAT KING OF THE IEWES.

39 ¶ And one of the euill doers which were hanged, railed on him, saying, If thou be that Christ, saue thy selfe and vs.

40 But the other answered, and rebuked him, saying, Fearest thou not God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 We are in deede righteously *here*: for we receiue things worthy of that wee haue done: but this man hath done nothing amisse.

42 And he said vnto Iesus, Lord, remember me, when thou commest into thy kingdome.

43 Then Iesus said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, to day shalt thou be with me in Paradise.

44 ¶ And it was about the sixth houre: and there was a darkenes ouer all the land, vntill the ninth houre:

45 And the Sunne was darkened, & the vaile of the Temple rent through the middes.

*Psal.31.6.* 46 And Iesus cried with a loude voyce, and saide, Father, into thine handes I commende my spirit. And when hee thus had said, he gaue vp the ghost.

47 ¶ Now when the Centurion saw what was done, hee glorified God, saying, Of a surete this man was iust.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their brestes, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance stoode a farre off, and the women that followed him from Galile, beholding these things.

*Mat.27.57. mar.15.43. Ioh.19.38.* 50 ¶ *And beholde, there was a man named Ioseph, which was a counsellour, a good man and a iust.

51 He did not consent to the counsell, and deede of them, *which was* of Arimathea, a citie of the Iewes: who also himselfe waited for the kingdome of God.

52 He

52 He went vnto Pilate, and asked the body of Iesus,
53 And tooke it downe, and wrapped it in a linnen cloth, and laide it in a tombe hewen out of a rocke, wherein was neuer man yet laied.
54 And that day was the preparation, and the Sabbath drewe on.
55 And the women also that followed after, which came with him from Galile, beheilde the sepulchre, and how his bodie was laide.
56 And they returned & prepared odours, and oyntments, and rested the Sabbath *day* according to the commandement.

## CHAP. XXIIII.

1 *The women come to the sepulchre.* 9 *They report that which they heard of the Angels vnto the Apostles.* 13 *Christ doth accompanie two going to Emmaus.* 27 *He expoundeth the Scriptures vnto them.* 39 *He offereth himselfe to his Apostles to be handled.* 49 *He promiseth the holy Ghost.* 51 *He is caried vp into heauen.*

NOwe the *first *day* of the weeke earely in the morning, they came vnto the sepulchre, and brought the odours, which they had prepared, and certaine *women* with them. *Mar.16.1. iohn 20.1.*
2 And they found the stone rolled away frō the sepulchre,
3 And went in, but found not the body of the Lord Iesus.
4 And it came to passe, ỹ as they were amased thereat, beholde, two men suddenly stoode by them in shining vestures.
5 And as they were afraide, and bowed downe their faces to the earth, they said to them, Why seeke ye him that liueth, among the dead?
6 He is not here, but is risen: remember *howe he spake vnto you, when he was yet in Galile, *Chap.9.22. mat.17.23.*
7 Saying, that the Sonne of man must be deliuered into the hands of sinnefull men, and be crucified, and the third day rise againe. *mar.9.31.*
8 And they remembred his wordes,
9 And returned from the sepulchre, & told all these things vnto the eleuen, and to all the remnant.
10 Nowe it was Marie Magdalene and Ioanna, and Marie the *mother* of Iames, & other women with them, which tolde these things vnto the Apostles.
11 But their woordes seemed vnto them, as a fained thing, neither beleeued they them.
12 *Then arose Peter, and ranne vnto the sepulchre; and *John 20.6.*

looked in, & sawe the linnen clothes laide by themselues, and departed wõdring in himself at that which was come to passe.

*Mar.16,12.* 13 ¶ * And beholde, two of them went that same day to a towne which was from Hierusalem about threescore furlõgs, called Emmaus.

14 And they talked together of all these things that were done.

15 And it came to passe, as they communed together, and reasoned, that Iesus himself drew neere, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were holden, that they could not knowe him.

17 And he said vnto them, What maner of cõmunications are these that ye haue one to another as ye walke, and are sad?

18 And the one (named Cleopas) answered, and saide vnto him, Art thou onely a stráger in Hierusalem, & hast not known the things which are come to passe therein in these daies?

19 And he said vnto them, What things? And they said vnto him, Of Iesus of Nazareth, which was a Prophet, mightie in deede and in worde before God, and all the people,

20 And howe the hie Priests, and our rulers deliuered him to be condemned to death, and haue crucified him.

21 But we trusted that it had bene he that should haue deliuered Israel, and as touching all these things, to day is the third day, that they were done.

22 Yea, and certaine women among vs made vs astonied, which came early vnto the sepulchre.

23 And when they founde not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seene a vision of Angels, which saide that he was aliue.

24 Therefore certaine of them which were with vs, went to the sepulchre, and found it euen so as the women had said, but him they sawe not.

25 Then he said vnto them, O fooles and slowe of heart to beleeue all that the Prophets haue spoken!

26 Ought not Christ to haue suffered these thinges, and to enter into his glorie?

27 And he began at Moses, and at all the Prophets, and interpreted vnto them in al the Scriptures ℣ things which were *written* of him.

28 And they drew neere vnto the towne, which they went to, but he made as though he would haue gone further.

29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with vs: for it

is

is towards night, and the day is farre spent. So he went in to tarie with them.

30 And it came to passe as hee sate at table with them, hee tooke the bread, and blessed, and brake it, and gaue it to them.

31 Then their eyes were opened, and they knew him: and he was no more seene of them.

32 And they said betweene themselues, Did not our hearts burne within vs, while he talked with vs by the way, & when he opened to vs the Scriptures?

33 And they rose vp the same houre, and returned to Hierusalem, and founde the Eleuen gathered together, and them that were with them,

34 Which said, The Lord is risen in deede, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 Then they told what things *were* done in the way, and how he was knowen of them in breaking of bread.

36 ¶ And as they spake these things, Iesus himselfe stoode in the middes of them, and said vnto them, Peace *be* to you. *Mar.16.14. Iohn 20.19.*

37 But they were abashed and afraide, supposing that they had seene a spirit.

38 Then he saide vnto them, Why are yee troubled? and wherefore doe doutes arise in your hearts?

39 Beholde mine hands and my feete: for it is I my selfe: handle me, and see: for a spirite hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me haue.

40 And when he had thus spoke, he shewed them *his* hands and feete.

41 And while they yet beleeued not for ioy, and wondered, he said vnto them, Haue ye here any meat?

42 And they gaue him a piece of a broyled fish, and of an honie combe,

43 And he tooke it, and did eate before them.

44 And he saide vnto them, These are the wordes, which I spake vnto you while I was yet with you, that all must be fulfilled which are written of me in the Law of Moses, and in the Prophets, and in the Psalmes.

45 Then opened he their vnderstanding, that they might vnderstand the Scriptures,

46 And said vnto thē, Thus it is written, & thus it behoued Christ to suffer, and to rise againe from the dead the third day,

47 And ỹ repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his Name among all natiōs, beginning at Hierusalem.

48 Nowe ye are witnesses of these things.

*Iohn 15.26. actes 1.4.* 49 And beholde, I do sende the * promes of my Father vpon you: but tarie ye in the citie of Hierusalem, vntill ye be endued with power from an hie.

50 Afterwarde he led them out into Bethania, and lift vp his hands, and blessed them.

*Mar.16.19. actes 1.9.* 51 And it came to passe, that as he blessed them, *he departed from them, and was caried vp into heauen.

52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Hierusalem with great ioy,

53 And were continually in the Temple, praising, and landing God, Amen.

# THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS CHRIST, ACCORding to Iohn.

## CHAP. I.

1 *That worde begotten of God before all worlde,* 2 *and which was euer with the Father,* 14 *is made man.* 6.7 *For what ende Iohn was sent from God:* 16 *His preaching of Christes office:* 19.20 *The recorde that hee bare giuen out vnto the Priests.* 40 *The calling of Andrew,* 42 *of Peter,* 45 *Philippe,* 45 *and Nathanael.*

IN the beginning was that Word, and that Word was w God, and y Word was God.

2 This same was in the beginning with God.

*Col.1.16.* 3 * All things were made by it, & without it was made nothing that was made.

4 In it was life, and that life was that light of men.

5 And that light shineth in the darkenesse, and the darkenesse comprehended it not.

*Matt.3.1. mar.1.4. luke 3.2.* 6 ¶ *There was a man sent frō God, whose name was Iohn.

7 *This* same came for a witnesse, to beare witnesse of that light, that all men through him might beleeue.

8 He was not that light, but *was sent* to beare witnesse of that light.

9 This was that true light, which lighteth euery man that commeth into the world.

10 He

10 He was in the world, and the world was* made by him: and the world knew him not. *Hebr.11 3.*

11 He came vnto his owne, and his owne receiued him not.

12 But as many as receiued him, to them he gaue prerogatiue to be the ſonnes of God, *euen* to them that beleeue in his Name.

13 Which are borne not of blood, nor of the will of the fleſh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

14 * And that Word was made fleſh, and dwelt among vs, (and we ſaw * the glory thereof, as the glory of the onely begotten *Sonne* of the Father) full of grace and trueth. *Mat.6.16. Mat.17.2. 2.pet.1.17.*

15 ¶ Iohn bare witneſſe of him, and cried, ſaying, This was he of whom I ſaid, He that commeth after me, was before me: for he was better then I.

16 * And of his fulneſſe haue all we receiued, and grace for grace. *Col.1.19. and 2.9.*

17 For the Law was giuen by Moſes: but grace, and trueth came by Ieſus Chriſt.

18 * No man hath ſeene God at any time: that onely begotten Sonne, which is in the boſome of the Father, hee hath declared him. *1.Tim.6.16. 1.Iohn 4.12.*

19 ¶ Then this is the record of Iohn, when the Iewes ſent Prieſtes and Leuites from Hieruſalem, to aske him, Who art thou?

20 And he confeſſed and denied not, and ſaide plainely, I *am not that Chriſt. *Act.13.25.*

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he ſaid, I am not. Art thou that Prophet? And he anſwered, No.

22 Then ſaid they vnto him, Who art thou, ſ we may giue an anſwere to them that ſent vs? what ſaieſt thou of thy ſelfe?

23 He ſaide, I * am the voice of him that crieth in the wilderneſſe, Make ſtraight the way of the Lorde, as ſaide the Prophet Eſaias. *Iſa.40.3. matt.3.3. luke 3.4.*

24 Nowe they which were ſent, were of the Phariſies.

25 And they asked him, and ſaid vnto him, Why baptizeſt thou then, if thou be not that Chriſt, neither Elias, nor that Prophet?

26 Iohn anſwered them, ſaying, I baptize with water: but there is one among you, whome ye knowe not: *Mat.3.11. mar.1.7.*

27 * He it is that commeth after me, which was before me, whoſe ſhooe latchet I am not worthy to vnlooſe. *luke 3.16. actes 1.5.*

28 Theſe things were done in Bethabara beyonde Iordan, where *and 11.16. and 19.4.*

where Iohn did baptize.

29 ¶ The next day Iohn seeth Iesus comming vnto him, and saieth, Beholde that lambe of God, which taketh away the sinne of the world.

30 This is he of whome I said, After me commeth a man, which was before me: for he was better then I,

31 And I knewe him not: but because he shoulde be declared to Israel, therefore am I come, baptizing with water.

*Mat. 3.16. mar. 1.10. luke 3.22.*

32 So Iohn bare recorde, saying, I beheld *that Spirit come downe from heauen, like a doue, and it abode vpon him.

33 And I knewe him not: but hee that sent me to baptize with water, he said vnto me, Vpon whome thou shalt see that Spirite come downe, and tarie still on him, that is hee which baptizeth with the holy Ghost.

34 And I sawe, and bare recorde that this is that Sonne of God.

35 ¶ The next day, Iohn stoode againe, and two of his disciples:

36 And he beholde Iesus walking by, and said, Behold the Lambe of God:

37 And the two disciples heard him speake, and followed Iesus.

38 Then Iesus turned about, and sawe them followe, and saide vnto them, What seeke yee? And they sayde vnto him, Rabbi, (which is to say by interpretatiō, Master,) where dwellest thou?

39 He said vnto them, Come, and see. They came and sawe where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the tenth houre.

40 Andrewe, Simon Peters brother, was one of the two which heard it of Iohn, and that followed him.

41 The same founde his brother Simon first, and saide vnto him, We haue found that Messias, which is by interpretation, that Christ.

42 And he brought him to Iesus. And Iesus beholde him, and saide, Thou art Simon the sonne of Iona: thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, a stone.

43 ¶ The day following, Iesus would goe into Galile, and found Philippe, and said vnto him, Followe me.

44 Nowe Philippe was of Bethsaida, the citie of Andrewe and Peter.

45 Philippe found Nathanael, and said vnto him, We haue found

found him, of whome * Moſes did write in the Lawe, and the *Prophets, Ieſus that ſonne of Ioſeph, that was of Nazareth. *Gen.49.10. deut.18.18.*

46 Then Nathanael ſaid vnto him, Cã there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philippe ſaid to him, Come, and ſee. *Iſa.4.2.and 40.10.and*

47 Ieſus ſawe Nathanael comming to him, & ſaide of him, Beholde, in deede an Iſraelite, in whom is no guile. *45.8.iere. 23.5.and 33.*

48 Nathanael ſaide vnto him, Whence knoweſt thou me? Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Before that Philippe called thee, when thou waſt vnder the figge tree, I ſawe thee. *14 ezek.34. 23.and 37. 24.dan.9.24.*

49 Nathanael anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Rabbi, thou art that Sonne of God: thou art that King of Iſrael.

50 Ieſus anſwered, and ſaide vnto him, Becauſe I ſaide vnto thee, I ſaw thee vnder the figge tree, beleeueſt thou? thou ſhalt ſee greater things then theſe.

51 And hee ſaide vnto him, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, hereafter ſhall ye ſee heauen open, and the Angels of God *aſcending, and deſcending vpon that Sonne of man. *Gen.28.12.*

## CHAP. II.

*1 Chriſt turneth water into wine, 11 which was the beginning of his miracles. 12 He goeth downe to Capernaum, 13 from thence he goeth vp to Hieruſalem, 15 and caſteth the marchandiſe out of the Temple. 19 He foretelleth that the Temple, that is, his body, ſhall be deſtroied of the Iewes. 23 Many beleeue in him, ſeeing the miracles which he did.*

AND the third day, was there a mariage in Cana, *a towne* of Galile, and the mother of Ieſus was there.

2 And Ieſus was called alſo, and his diſciples vnto the mariage.

3 Nowe when the wine failed, the mother of Ieſus ſayde vnto him, They haue no wine.

4 Ieſus ſaide vnto her, Woman, what haue I to doe with thee? mine houre is not yet come.

5 His mother ſaid vnto the ſeruants, Whatſoeuer he ſaieth vnto you, doe it.

6 And there were ſet there, ſixe waterpots of ſtone, after the maner of the purifying of the Iewes, conteining two or three firkins a piece.

7 And Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Fil the waterpots with water. Then they filled them vp to the brimme.

8 Then he ſaid vnto them, Draw out nowe and beare vnto the gouernour of the feaſt. So they bare it.

9 Nowe when the gouernour of the feaſt had taſted the

water that was made wine, (for he knewe not whence it was: but the seruants, which drewe the water, knewe) the gouernour of the feast called the bridegrome,

10 And saide vnto him, All men at the beginning set forth good wine, & when men haue well drunke, then that which is worse: *but* thou hast kept backe the good wine vntill nowe.

11 This beginning of miracles did Iesus in Cana *a towne* of Galile, and shewed foorth his glory: and his disciples beleeued on him.

12 After that, he went downe into Capernaum, he and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples: but they continued not many daies there.

13 For the Iewes Passeouer was at hande. Therefore Iesus went vp to Hierusalem.

14 And he found in the Temple those that solde oxen, and sheepe, and doues, and changers of money, sitting *there*.

15 Then he made a scourge of small cordes, and draue them all out of the Temple with the sheepe and oxen, and powred out the changers money, and ouerthrewe the tables,

16 And said vnto them that solde doues, Take these things hence: make not my fathers house an house of marchandise.

*Psal. 69.9.* 17 And his disciples remembred, that it was written, *The zeale of thine house hath eaten me vp.

18 Then answered the Iewes, & said vnto him, What signe sheweste thou vnto vs, that thou doest these things?

*Mat. 26.61. and 27.40. mar. 14.58. and 15.29.* 19 Iesus answered and said vnto them, *Destroy this Temple, and in three daies I will raise it vp againe.

20 Then saide the Iewes, Fourtie and sixe yeeres was this Temple a building, and wilt thou reare it vp in three daies?

21 But he spake of the Temple of his body.

22 Assoone therefore as he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembred that he thus said vnto them: and they beleeued the Scripture, and the word which Iesus had said.

23 Nowe when he was at Hierusalem at the Passeouer in the feast, many beleeued in his Name, when they sawe his miracles which he did.

24 But Iesus did not commit himselfe vnto them, because he knewe them all,

25 And had no neede that any shoulde testifie of man: for he knewe what was in man.

## CHAP. III.

1 *Christ teacheth Nicodemus the very principles of Christian regene-*

*regeneration. 14 The serpent in the wildernesse. 23 Iohn baptizeth. 27 and teacheth him, that he is not Christ.*

THere was nowe a man of the Pharises, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Iewes.

2 This *man* came to Iesus by night, and said vnto him, Rabbi, we knowe that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man coulde doe these miracles that thou doest, except God were with him.

3 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Verely, verely I say vnto thee, except a man be borne againe, he cannot see the kingdome of God.

4 Nicodemus saide vnto him, Howe can a man be borne which is olde? can he enter into his mothers wombe againe, and be borne?

5 Iesus answered, Verely, verely I say vnto thee, except that a man be borne of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdome of God.

6 That which is borne of the flesh, is flesh: and that that is borne of the Spirit, is spirit.

7 Marueile not that I said to thee, Ye must be borne againe.

8 The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it commeth, and whither it goeth: so is euery man that is borne of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered, and said vnto him, How can these things be?

10 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Art thou a teacher of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verely, verely I say vnto thee, we speake that we know, and testifie that we haue seene: but ye receiue not our witnes.

12 If when I tell you earthly things, ye beleeue not, howe should ye beleeue, if I shall tell you of heauenly things?

13 For no man ascendeth vp to heauen, but he that hath descended from heauē, that Sonne of man which is in heauen.

14 *And as Moses lift vp the serpent in the wildernesse, so must that Sonne of man be lift vp, *Nom. 21. 9. chap. 12. 32.*

15 That whosoeuer beleeueth in him, shoulde not perish, but haue eternall life.

16 *For God so loued the worlde, that he hath giuen his onely begotten Sonne, that whosoeuer beleeueth in him, should not perish, but haue euerlasting life. *1. Iohn 4. 9.*

17 * For God sent not his Sonne into the worlde, that he should condemne the worlde, but that the worlde through *Chap. 9. 39. and 12. 47.*

him

him might be saued.

18 He that beleeueth in him, is not condemned: but he that beleeueth not, is condemned already, because he hath not beleeued in the Name of that onely begotten Sonne of God.

Chap.1.9. 19 * And this is the condemnation, that that light came into the world, & men loued darkenes rather then that light, because their deedes were euill.

20 For euery man that euill doeth, hateth the light, neither commeth to light, lest his deedes should be reproued.

21 But he that doeth trueth, commeth to the light, that his deedes might be made manifest, that they are wrought according to God.

22 ¶ After these things came Iesus & his disciples into the

Chap.4.1. land of Iudea, and there taried with them, and * baptized.

23 And Iohn also baptized in Enon besides Salim, because there was much water there: & they came, & were baptized.

24 For Iohn was not yet cast into prison.

25 Then there arose a question betweene Iohns disciples and the Iewes, about purifying.

26 And they came vnto Iohn, and said vnto him, Rabbi, he

Chap.1.34. that was with thee beyonde Iordan, to whom * thou barest witnesse, beholde, he baptizeth, and all men come to him.

27 Iohn answered, and said, A man can receiue nothing, except it be giuen him from heauen.

Chap.1.20. 28 Ye your selues are my witnesses, that * I said, I am not that Christ, but that I am sent before him.

29 Hee that hath the bride, is the bridegrome: but the friende of the bridegrome which standeth and heareth him, reioyceth greatly, because of the bridegromes voyce. This my ioy therefore is fulfilled.

30 He must increase, but I *must* decrease.

31 He that is come from on hie, is aboue all: he that is of the earth, is of the earth, and speaketh of the earth: he that is come from heauen, is aboue all:

32 And what he hath seene and heard, that he testifieth: but no man receiueth his testimonie.

33 He that hath receiued his testimonie, hath sealed that

Rom.3.4. * God is true.

34 For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the wordes of God: for God giueth *him* not the Spirit by measure.

Mat.11.27. 35 The Father loueth the Sonne, & hath * giuen al things into his hand.

36 *He

36 *He that beleeueth in the Sonne, hath euerlasting life, and he that obeyeth not the Sonne, shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him. *Abac.2.4. 1.John 5.10.

## CHAP. IIII.

*6 Iesus being wearie asketh drinke of the woman of Samaria. 21 He teacheth the true worship. 26 He confesseth that he is the Messias. 32 His meate. 39 The Samaritanes beleeue in him. 46 He healeth the rulers sonne.*

NOw when the Lord knewe, how the Pharises had heard, that Iesus made* and baptized moe disciples then Iohn, *Chap.3.22.
2 (Thongh Iesus himselfe baptized not: but his disciples)
3 He left Iudea, and departed againe into Galile.
4 And he must needes goe through Samaria.
5 Then came he to a citie of Samaria called Sychar, neere vnto the possession that * Iacob gaue to his sonne Ioseph. *Gen.33.19. and 48.22. Ioſh.24.32.
6 And there was Iacobs well. Iesus then wearied in the iourney, sate thus on the well: it was about the sixt houre.
7 There came a woman of Samaria to drawe water. Iesus said vnto her, Giue me drinke.
8 For his disciples were gone away into the citie, to bye meate.
9 Then said the woman of Samaria vnto him, Howe is it, that thou being a Iewe, askest drinke of me, which am a woman of Samaria? For the Iewes meddle not with the Samaritanes.
10 Iesus answered and saide vnto her, If thou knewest that gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Giue me drinke, thou wouldest haue asked of him, and he woulde haue giuen thee water of life.
11 The woman saide vnto him, Syr, thou hast nothing to drawe with, & the well is deepe: from whence then hast thou that water of life?
12 Art thou greater then our father Iacob, which gaue vs the well, and he himselfe dranke thereof, and his sonnes, and his cattell?
13 Iesus answered, and said vnto her, Whosoeuer drinketh of this water, shall thirst againe:
14 But whosoeuer drinketh of the water that I shall giue him, shall neuer be more a thirst: but the water that I shall giue him, shall be in him a well of water, springing vp into euerlasting life.
15 The woman said vnto him, Sir, giue me of that water, that

that I may not thirſt,neither come hither to drawe.

16 Ieſus ſaide vnto her, Goe,call thine husband, and come hither.

17 The woman anſwered,and ſaid,I haue no husband.Ieſus ſaid vnto her,Thou haſt well ſaid,I haue no husband.

18 For thou haſt had fiue husbands, and he whom thou nowe haſt,is not thine husband: that ſaydeſt thou truely.

19 The woman ſaide vnto him, Syr, I ſee that thou art a Prophet.

20 Our fathers worſhipped in this mountaine, and ye ſay, that in * Hieruſalem is ye place where men ought to worſhip. *Deu.12.6.*

21 Ieſus ſaid vnto her, Woman,beleeue me, ye houre commeth,when ye ſhall neither in this mountaine, nor at Hieruſalem worſhip the Father.

22 Ye worſhip that which ye * know not:we worſhip that which we knowe: for ſaluation is of the Iewes. *2.King.17.29.*

23 But the houre commeth, and nowe is, when the true worſhippers ſhall worſhip the Father in ſpirit, and trueth: for the Father requireth euen ſuch to worſhip him.

24 * God is a ſpirit,and they that worſhip him, muſt worſhip him in ſpirit and trueth. *2.Cor.3.27.*

25 The woman ſaide vnto him,I knowe well that Meſsias ſhall come which is called Chriſt: when he is come, he will tell vs all things.

26 Ieſus ſaid vnto her,I am he,that ſpeake vnto thee.

27 ¶And vpon that came his diſciples,and marueiled that he talked with a woman: yet no man ſaide vnto him, What askeſt thou? or why talkeſt thou with her?

28 The woman then left her waterpot, and went her way into the citie,and ſaid to the men,

29 Come, ſee a man which hath tolde me all things that euer I did: is not he that Chriſt?

30 Then they went out of the citie, and came vnto him.

31 ¶In the meane while, the diſciples prayed him, ſaying, Maſter,eate.

32 But he ſaide vnto them, I haue meate to eate that ye knowe not of.

33 Then ſaide the diſciples betweene themſelues, Hath any man brought him meate?

34 Ieſus ſaide vnto them, My meate is that I may doe the will of him that ſent me,and finiſh his worke.

35 Say not ye,There are yet foure moneths,and *then* commeth

meth harueſt? Beholde, I ſay vnto you, Lift vp your eyes, and looke on ỹ regions: *for they are white already vnto harueſt. *Mat.9.37.*

36 And he that reapeth, receiueth rewarde, and gathereth fruite vnto life eternall, that both he that ſoweth, and he that reapeth, might reioyce together. *luke 10.2.*

37 For herein is the ſaying true, that one ſoweth, and another reapeth.

38 I ſent you to reape that, whereon ye beſtowed no labour: other men laboured, & ye are entred into their labours.

39 Nowe many of the Samaritans of that citie beleeued in him, for the ſaying of the woman which teſtified, He hath tolde me all things that euer I did.

40 Then when the Samaritans were come vnto him, they beſought him, that he would tarie with them: and he abode there two dayes.

41 And many mo beleeued becauſe of his owne worde.

42 And they ſaid vnto the woman, Nowe we beleeue, not becauſe of thy ſaying: for we haue heard him our ſelues, and know that this is in deede that Chriſt the Sauiour of ỹ world.

43 ¶So two dayes after he departed thence, and went into Galile.

44 For Ieſus himſelfe had * teſtified, that a Prophet hath none honour in his owne countrey. *Mat.13.57. mar.6.4. luke.4.24.*

45 Then when he was come into Galile, the Galileans receiued him, which had ſeene all the things that he did at Hieruſalem at the feaſt: for they went alſo vnto the feaſt.

46 And Ieſus came againe into * Cana *a towne* of Galile, where he had made of water wine. And there was a certaine ruler, whoſe ſonne was ſicke at Capernaum. *Chap.2.1,12.*

47 When he heard that Ieſus was come out of Iudea into Galile, he went vnto him, and beſought him that he would go downe, and heale his ſonne: for he was euen ready to die.

48 Then ſaid Ieſus vnto him, Except ye ſee ſignes & wonders, ye will not beleeue.

49 The ruler ſaide vnto him, Syr, goe downe before my Sonne die.

50 Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Goe thy way, thy ſonne liueth: and the man beleeued the worde that Ieſus had ſpoken vnto him, and went his way.

51 And as he was nowe going downe, his ſeruants mette him, ſaying, Thy ſonne liueth.

52 Then enquired he of them the houre when he began to amend.

amend. And they saide vnto him, Yesterday the seuenth houre the feuer left him.

53 Then the father knewe, that it was the same houre in the which Iesus had said vnto him, Thy sonne liueth. And he beleeued, and all his houshold.

54 This second miracle did Iesus againe, after he was come out of Iudea into Galile.

## CHAP. V.

*2 One lying at the poole, 5 is healed of Christ on the Sabbath: 10 The Iewes that rashly finde fault with that his deede, 19 he conuinceth with the authoritie of his Father. 19. 20 He proueth his diuine power by many reasons, 45 and with Moses testimonie.*

*Leuit.23.3. deut.16.1.* AFter * that, there was a feast of the Iewes, and Iesus went vp to Hierusalem.

2 And there is at Hierusalem by the place of the sheepe, a poole called in Ebrew Bethesda, hauing fiue porches:

3 In the which lay a great multitude of sicke folke, of blinde, halte, and withered, wayting for the mouing of the water.

4 For an Angel went downe at a certaine season into the poole, and troubled the water: whosoeuer then first, after the stirring of the water, stepped in, was made whole of whatsoeuer disease he had.

5 And a certaine man was there, which had bene diseased eight and thirtie yeeres.

6 When Iesus sawe him lie, and knewe that he now long time had bene diseased, he said vnto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The sicke man answered him, Sir, I haue no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the poole: but while I am comming, another steppeth downe before me.

8 Iesus said vnto him, Rise: take vp thy bed, and walke.

9 And immediatly the man was made whole, and tooke vp his bed, and walked: and the same day was the Sabbath.

10 The Iewes therefore saide to him that was made *Ierr.17.22.* whole, It is the Sabbath *day:* * It is not lawfull for thee to carie thy bed.

11 He answered them, He that made me whole, he saide vnto me, Take vp thy bed, and walke.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said vnto thee, Take vp thy bed, and walke?

13 And

13 And he that was healed, knewe not who it was: for Ie-
sus had conueyed himselfe away from the multitude that was
in that place.

14 And after that, Iesus found him in the Temple, and said
vnto him, Beholde, thou art made whole: sinne no more, least
a worse thing come vnto thee.

15 ¶ The man departed, and tolde the Iewes that it was
Iesus, which had made him whole.

16 And therefore the Iewes did persecute Iesus, & sought
to slay him, because he had done these things on the Sabbath
day.

17 But Iesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto,
and I worke.

18 * Therefore the Iewes sought the more to kill him: not *Chap.7.19.
onely because he had broken the Sabbath: but saide also that
God was his Father, and made himselfe equall with God.

19 Then answered Iesus, and said vnto them, Verely, verely
I say vnto you, The Sonne can doe nothing of himselfe, saue
that he seeth the Father doe: for whatsoeuer things he doeth,
the same things doeth the Sonne in like maner.

20 For the father loueth the Sonne, and sheweth him all
things, whatsoeuer he himselfe doeth, and he will shewe him
greater workes then these, that ye should marueile.

21 For likewise as the Father raiseth vp the dead, & quicke-
neth them, so the Sonne quickeneth whom he will.

22 For the Father iudgeth no man, but hath committed
all iudgement vnto the Sonne,

23 Because that all men should honour the Sonne, as they
honour the Father: he that honoureth not the Sonne, the
same honoureth not the Father, which hath sent him.

24 Verely, verely I say vnto you, he that heareth my word,
and beleeueth him that sent me, hath euerlasting life, and shall
not come into condemnation, but hath passed from death vn-
to life.

25 Verely, verely I say vnto you, the houre shall come, and
nowe is, when the dead shall heare the voyce of the Sonne of
God: and they that heare it, shall liue.

26 For as the Father hath life in himselfe, so likewise hath
he giuen to the Sonne to haue life in himselfe,

27 And hath giuen him power also to execute iudgement,
in that he is the Sonne of man.

28 Marueile not at this: for ỹ houre shall come in ỹ which
all

all that are in the graues ſhall heare his voyce.

*Mat.25.41.* 29 And they ſhall come foorth, * that haue done good, vnto the reſurrection of life: but they that haue done euill, vnto the reſurrection of condemnation.

30 I can doe nothing of mine owne ſelfe: as I heare, I iudge: and my iudgement is iuſt, becauſe I ſeeke not mine owne will, but the will of the Father who hath ſent me.

*Chap.8.14.* 31 If I * ſhoulde beare witneſſe of my ſelfe, my witneſſe were not true.

*Mar.3.17.* 32 *There is another that beareth witneſſe of me, and I knowe that the witneſſe which he beareth of me, is true.

*Chap.1.27.* 33 * Ye ſent vnto Iohn, and he bare witneſſe vnto the trueth.

34 But I receiue not the recorde of man: neuertheleſſe theſe things I ſay, that ye might be ſaued.

35 He was a burning, and a ſhining candle: and ye woulde for a ſeaſon haue reioyced in his light.

36 But I haue greater witnes then the witnes of Iohn: for the workes which the Father hath giuen me to finiſh, the ſame workes that I doe, beare witneſſe of me, that the Father ſent me.

*Mat.3.17. and 17.5. Deut.4.12.* 37 And the * Father himſelfe which hath ſent me, beareth witneſſe of me. Ye haue not heard his voyce at any time, * neither haue ye ſeene his ſhape.

38 And his worde haue ye not abiding in you: for whom he hath ſent, him ye beleeue not.

*Act.17.11.* 39 *Searche the Scriptures: for in them ye thinke to haue eternall life, and they are they which teſtifie of me.

40 But you will not come to me, that ye might haue life.

41 I receiue not praiſe of men.

42 But I knowe you, that ye haue not the loue of God in you.

43 I am come in my Fathers Name, and ye receiue me not: if another ſhall come in his owne name, him will ye receiue.

*Chap.12.43.* 44 How can ye beleeue, which receiue * honour one of another, & ſeeke not the honour that commeth of God alone?

45 Doe not thinke that I will accuſe you to my Father: there is one that accuſeth you, *euen* Moſes, in whom ye truſt.

*Gene.3.15. and 22.18. and 49.10. deut.18.15.* 46 For had ye beleeued Moſes, ye woulde haue beleeued me: * for he wrote of me.

47 But if ye beleeue not his writings, how ſhal ye beleeue my wordes?

CHAP.

## CHAP. VI.

*5 Fiue thousande are fed with fiue loaues and two fishes. 19 Christ goeth apart from the people. 17 As his disciples were rowing, 19 he commeth to them walking on the water. 26 He reasoneth of the true, 27 and euerlasting 35 bread of life. 41. 52 The Iewes murmure, 60 and many of the disciples 66 depart from him. 69 The Apostles confesse him to be the Sonne of God.*

AFter these things, Iesus went his way ouer the sea of Galile, which is Tiberias.

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles, which he did on them that were diseased.

3 Then Iesus went vp into a mountaine, and there he sate with his disciples.

4 Now the Passeouer, a * feast of the Iewes was neere. *Leui.23.7.*

5 *Then IESVS lift vp *his* eyes, and seeing that a great multitude came vnto him, hee said vnto Philippe, Whence shall we bye bread, that these might eate? *deut.16.1. Mat.14.16. mar.6.37. luke 9.13.*

6 (And this he said to proue him: for he himselfe knewe what he would doe.)

7 Philippe answered him, Two hundreth peniworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that euery one of them may take a litle.

8 Then said vnto him one of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peters brother,

9 There is a litle boye here, which hath fiue barly loaues, and two fishes: but what are they among so many?

10 And Iesus said, Make the people sit downe. (Now there was much grasse in that place.) Then the men sate downe, in number about fiue thousand.

11 And Iesus tooke the bread, and gaue thankes, and gaue to the disciples, & the disciples to them that were set downe: and likewise of the fishes as much as they would.

12 And when they were satisfied, he said vnto his disciples, Gather vp the broken meate which remaineth, that nothing be lost.

13 Then they gathered it together, and filled twelue baskets with the broken meate of the fiue barly loaues, which remained vnto them that had eaten.

14 Then the men, when they had seene the miracle that Iesus did, saide, This is of a trueth that Prophet that shoulde come into the world.

15 When Iesus therefore perceiued that they would come,

and take him to make him a King, he departed againe into a mountaine himselfe alone.

16 ¶ When euen was now come, his disciples went downe vnto the sea,

*Mat.14.25. mar.6.47.* 17 * And entred into a ship, and went ouer the sea towards Capernaum: and now it was darke, and Iesus was not come to them.

18 And the sea arose with a great winde that blewe.

19 And when they had rowed about fiue and twentie or thirtie furlongs, they saw Iesus walking on the sea, & drawing neere vnto the ship: so they were afrayd,

20 But he said vnto them, It is I: be not afrayd.

21 Then willingly they receiued him into the ship, and the ship was by and by at the land, whither they went.

22 ¶ The day following, the people which stoode on the other side of the sea, sawe that there was none other ship there, saue that one, whereinto his disciples were entred, and that Iesus went not with his disciples in the ship, but that his disciples were gone alone,

23 And that there came other shippes from Tiberias, neere vnto the place where they ate the bread, after the Lorde had giuen thankes.

24 Now when the people sawe that Iesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also tooke shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Iesus.

25 And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they sayd vnto him, Rabbi, when cameste thou hither?

26 Iesus answered them, and sayd, Verely, verely I say vnto you, ye seeke me not because ye sawe the miracles, but because ye ate of the loaues, and were filled.

27 Labour not for the meate which perisheth, but for the meate that endureth vnto euerlasting life, which the Sonne of man shal giue vnto you: for him hath *God the Father sealed.

*Chap.1.32. mat.3.17. and 17.3.*

28 Then sayd they vnto him, What shall we doe, that we might worke the workes of God?

*1.Iohn 3.23.*

29 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, *This is the worke of God, that ye beleeue in him, whom he hath sent.

30 They said therefore vnto him, What signe shewest thou then, that we may see it, and beleeue thee? what doest thou worke?

*Exo.16.14. nom.11.7. psal.78.25.*

31 Our fathers did eate Manna in the desert, as it is * written, He gaue them bread from heauen to eate.

32 Then

32 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Moses gaue you not that bread from heauen, but my Father giueth you that true bread from heauen.

33 For the bread of God is hee which commeth downe from heauen, and giueth life vnto the world.

34 Then they said vnto him, Lord, euermore giue vs this bread.

35 And Iesus said vnto them, I am that bread of life: hee that commeth to me, shall not hunger, and he that beleeueth in me, shall neuer thirst.

36 But I said vnto you, that ye also haue seene me, and beleeue not.

37 All that the Father giueth me, shall come to me: and him that commeth to me, I cast not away.

38 For I came downe from heauen, not to doe mine owne will, but his will which hath sent me.

39 And this is the Fathers will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath giuen me, I should lose nothing, but should raise it vp againe at the last day.

40 And this is the wil of him that sent me, that euery man which seeth the Sonne, and beleeueth in him, shoulde haue euerlasting life: and I wil raise him vp at the last day.

41 The Iewes then murmured at him, because he said, I am that bread, which is come downe from heauen.

42 And they said, *Is not this Iesus that sonne of Ioseph, whose father and mother we knowe? howe then saith hee, I came downe from heauen? *Mat.13.55.*

43 Iesus then answered, and sayd vnto them, Murmure not among your selues.

44 No man can come to mee, except the Father, which hath sent me, drawe him: and I wil raise him vp at the last day.

45 It is written in the *Prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Euery man therefore that hath heard, & hath learned of the Father, commeth vnto me: *Isai.54.13. Iere.31.33.*

46 *Not that any man hath seene the Father, saue hee which is of God, he hath seene the Father. *Mat.11.27.*

47 Verely, verely I say vnto you, He that beleeueth in me, hath euerlasting life.

48 I am that bread of life.

49 *Your fathers did eate Manna in the wildernesse, and are dead. *Exo.16.15.*

50 This is that bread which commeth downe from heauen,

that he which eateth of it, ſhould not die.

51 I am that liuing bread, which came downe from heauen: if any man eate of this bread, he ſhall liue for euer: and the bread that I wil giue, is my fleſh, which I wil giue for the life of the world.

52 Then the Iewes ſtrone among themſelues, ſaying, How can this man giue vs *his* fleſh to eate?

53 Then Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, Except ye eate the fleſh of the Sonne of man, and drinke his blood, ye haue no life in you.

3. Cor. 11. 27. 54 Whoſoeuer * eateth my fleſh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternall life, and I will raiſe him vp at the laſt day.

55 For my fleſh is meate in deede, and my blood is drinke in deede.

56 He that eateth my fleſh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

57 As that liuing Father hath ſent me, ſo liue I by the Father, and he that eateth me, euen he ſhall liue by me.

58 This is the bread which came downe from heauen: not as your fathers haue eaten Manna, and are dead. He that eateth of this bread, ſhall liue for euer.

59 Theſe things ſpake he in the Synagogue, as hee taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his diſciples (when they heard this) ſayd, This is an hard ſaying: who can heare it?

61 But Ieſus knowing in himſelfe, that his diſciples murmured at this, ſaid vnto them, Doeth this offend you?

62 *What* then if yee ſhould ſee that Sonne of man aſcend
*Chap. 3. 13.* vp * where he was before?

63 It is the Spirit that quickeneth: the fleſh profiteth nothing: the wordes that I ſpeake vnto you, are ſpirit and life.

64 But there are ſome of you that beleeue not: for Ieſus knewe from the beginning, which they were that beleeued not, and who ſhould betray him.

65 And he ſayd, Therefore ſaid I vnto you, that no man can come vnto me, except it be giuen vnto him of my Father.

66 From that time, many of his diſciples went backe, and walked no more with him.

67 Then ſaid Ieſus to the twelue, Will ye alſo go away?

68 Then Simon Peter anſwered him, Maſter, to whome ſhall we goe? thou haſt the wordes of eternall life:

69 And we beleeue & know that thou art that Chriſt that Sonne

Sonne of the liuing God.

70 Iesus answered them, Haue not I * chosen you twelue, and one of you is a deuill? *Mat.26.16.*

71 Nowe he spake it of Iudas Iscariot the *sonne* of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, though hee was one of the twelue.

## CHAP. VII.

*2 Christ, after his cousins were gone vp to the feast of Tabernacles, 10 goeth thither priuily. 12 The peoples sundry opinions of him. 14 He teacheth in the Temple. 32 The Priests commaund to take him. 41 Strife among the multitude about him, 47 and betweene the Pharises and the officers that were sent to take him, 50 and Nicodemus.*

AFter these things, Iesus walked in Galile, and would not walke in Iudea: for the Iewes sought to kill him.

2 Now the Iewes * feast of the Tabernacles was at hand. *Leui.23.34.*

3 His brethren therefore said vnto him, Depart hence, and goe into Iudea, that thy disciples may see thy workes that thou doest.

4 For there is no man that doeth any thing secretly, and he himselfe seeketh to be famous. If thou doest these things, shewe thy selfe to the world.

5 For as yet his brethren beleeued not in him.

6 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway ready.

7 The world can not hate you: but me it hateth, because I testifie of it, that the workes thereof are euill.

8 Go ye vp vnto this feast: I will not go vp yet vnto this feast: * for my time is not yet fulfilled. *Chap.8 20.*

9 ¶ These things he said vnto them, & abode still in Galile.

10 But assoone as his brethren were gone vp, then went he also vp vnto the feast, not openly, but as *it were* priuily.

11 Then the Iewes sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he?

12 And much murmuring was there of him among the people. Some sayd, He is a good man: other said, Nay: but he deceiueth the people.

13 Howbeit no man spake openly of him, for feare of the Iewes.

14 Now when halfe the feast was done, Iesus went vp into the Temple, and taught.

15 And the Iewes marueiled, saying, Howe knoweth this

man the Scriptures, seeing the he neuer learned?

16 Iesus answered them, and sayd, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.

17 If any man wil doe his wil, he shal know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speake of my selfe.

18 He that speaketh of himselfe, seeketh his owne glory: but hee that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no vnrighteousnes is in him.

Exo.24.3. 19 * Did not Moses giue you a Lawe, and *yet* none of you
Chap.5.18. keepeth the Lawe? * Why goe ye about to kill me?

20 The people answered, and sayde, Thou hast a deuill: who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Iesus answered, & said to them, I haue done one worke, and ye all marueile.

Leuit.12.3. 22 * Moses therefore gaue vnto you circumcision, (not be-
Gen.17.10. cause it is of Moses, but of the * fathers,) and ye on the Sabbath *day* circumcise a man.

23 If a man on the Sabbath receiue circumcision, that the Law of Moses should not be broken, be ye angry with me, because I haue made a mā enery whit whole on the Sabbath day?

Deut.1.16. 24 * Iudge not according to the appearnce, but iudge righteous iudgement.

25 ¶ Then said some of them of Hierusalem, Is not this he, whom they goe about to kill?

26 And beholde, he speaketh openly, and they say nothing to him: doe the rulers knowe in deede that this is in deede that Christ?

27 Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when that Christ commeth, no man shall know whence he is.

28 ¶ Then cried Iesus in the Temple as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, & know whence I am: yet am I not come of my selfe, but he that sent me, is true, whome ye know not.

29 But I know him: for I am of him, and he hath sent me.

30 Then they sought to take him, but no man layde hands on him, because his houre was not yet come.

31 Now many of the people beleeued in him, and sayde, When that Christ commeth, will he doe mo miracles then this man hath done?

32 The Pharises heard that the people murmured these things of him, and the Pharises, and hie Priestes sent officers to take him.

33 Then said Iesus vnto them, Yet am I a litle while with you,

you, and then goe I vnto him that sent me.

34 * Ye shall seeke me, and shall not finde *me*, and where I am, can ye not come. *Chap.13.33.*

35 Then said the Iewes among themselues, Whither will he go, that we shal not finde him? Wil he go vnto them that are dispersed among the Grecians, and teach the Grecians?

36 What saying is this that he said, Ye shall seeke me, and shall not finde *me*? and where I am, can ye not come?

37 Now in the last *and* * great day of the feast, Iesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come vnto mee, and drinke. *Leui.23.36.*

38 He that beleeueth in me, * as saith the Scripture, out of his belly shall flowe riuers of water of life. *Deu.18.15.*

39 (*This spake he of the Spirit which they that beleeued in him, should receiue: for the holy Ghost was not yet *giuen*, because that Iesus was not yet glorified.) *Ioel 2.28. actis.2.17.*

40 So many of the people, when they heard this saying, said, * Of a trueth this is that Prophet. *Deu.18.15.*

41 Other said, This is that Christ: and some said, But shall that Christ come out of Galile?

42 *Sayeth not the Scripture that that Christ shal come of the seede of Dauid, and out of the towne of Bethleem, where Dauid was? *Mich.5.2. mat.2.5.*

43 So was there dissension among the people for him.

44 And some of them would haue taken him, but no man laide hands on him.

45 Then came the officers to the hie Priests and Pharises, and they sayd vnto them, Why haue ye not brought him?

46 The officers answered, Neuer man spake like this man.

47 Then answered them the Pharises, Are ye also deceiued?

48 Doeth any of the rulers, or of ȳ Pharises beleeue in him?

49 But this people which know not the Lawe, are cursed.

50 Nicodemus sayd vnto them, (*he that came to Iesus by night, and was one of them) *Chap.3.2.*

51 Doeth our Lawe iudge a man before it heare him, * and know what he hath done? *Deu.17.8. and 19.5.*

52 They answered, and sayd vnto him, Art thou also of Galile? Search and looke: for out of Galile ariseth no Prophet.

53 And euery man went vnto his owne house.

## CHAP. VIII.

3 *The woman taken in adultrie,* 11 *hath her sinnes forgiuen her,* 12 *Christ the light of the world,* 19 *The Pharises aske*

*where his Father is. 39 The sonnes of Abraham. 42 The sonnes of God. 44 The deuill the father of lying. 56 Abraham sawe Christs day.*

AND Iesus went vnto the mount of Olines,

2 And early in the morning came againe into the Temple, and all the people came vnto him, & he sate downe, and taught them.

3 Then the Scribes and the Pharises brought vnto him a woman, taken in adulterie, and set her in the middes,

4 And said vnto him, Master, we found this woman committing adulterie, euen in the very acte.

*Leui.20.10.* 5 *Now Moses in our Law commanded, that such should be stoned: what sayest thou therefore?

6 And this they sayd to tempt him, that they might haue, whereof to accuse him. But Iesus stouped downe, and with his finger wrote on the ground.

7 And while they continued asking him, he lift himselfe vp, and said vnto them, *Let him that is among you without sinne, cast the first stone at her.

*Deu.17.7.*

8 And againe he stouped downe, & wrote on the ground.

9 And when they heard it, being accused by their owne conscience, they went out one by one, beginning at the eldest euen to the last: so Iesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the mids.

10 When Iesus had lift vp him selfe againe, and sawe no man, but the woman, hee said vnto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

11 She said, No man, Lord. And Iesus said, Neither doe I condemne thee: goe and sinne no more.

*Chap.1.5. and 9.5.* 12 Then spake Iesus againe vnto them, saying, I *am that light of the world: he that followeth me, shall not walke in darkenes, but shall haue that light of life.

13 The Pharises therefore sayd vnto him, Thou beares record of thy selfe: thy record is not true.

*Chap.5.31.* 14 *Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Though I beare record of my selfe, *yet* my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I goe: but ye cannot tell whence I come,

*Deut.17.6. and 19.15. mat.18.16. 2.cor.13.1. hebr.10.28.* and whither I goe.

15 Ye iudge after the flesh: I iudge no man.

16 And if I also iudge, my iudgement is true: for I am not alone, but I, and the Father, that sent me.

17 And it is also written in your Law, *that the testimonie

of

of two men is true.

18 I am one that beare witnes of my ſelfe, and the Father that ſent me, beareth witnes of me.

19 Then ſaide they vnto him, Where is that Father of thine? Ieſus anſwered, Ye neither knowe me, nor that Father of mine. If ye had knowen mee, ye ſhould haue knowen that Father of mine alſo.

20 Theſe wordes ſpake Ieſus in the treaſurie, as he taught in the Temple, and no man layde hands on him: for his houre was not yet come.

21 Then ſaid Ieſus againe vnto them, I go my way, and ye ſhall ſeeke me, and ſhall die in your ſinnes. Whither I go, can ye not come.

22 Then ſaide the Iewes, Will he kill himſelfe, becauſe he ſaith, Whither I goe, can ye not come?

23 And he ſaid vnto them, Ye are from beneath: I am from aboue: ye are of this world: I am not of this world.

24 I ſaid therfore vnto you, That ye ſhal die in your ſinnes: for except ye beleeue, that I am he, ye ſhal die in your ſinnes.

25 Then ſaid they vnto him, Who art thou? And Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Euen the ſame thing that I ſaid vnto you from the beginning.

26 I haue many things to ſay, and to iudge of you: but hee that ſent mee, is true, and the things that I haue heard of him, thoſe ſpeake I to the world.

27 They vnderſtood not ỹ he ſpake to them of the Father.

28 Then ſaide Ieſus vnto them, When ye haue lift vp the Sonne of man, then ſhall ye know that I am he, and that I doe nothing of my ſelfe, but as my Father hath taught mee, ſo I ſpeake theſe things.

29 For he that ſent me, is with me: the Father hath not left me alone, becauſe I do alwayes thoſe things that pleaſe him.

30 ¶ As he ſpake theſe things, many beleeued in him.

31 Then ſaid Ieſus to the Iewes which beleeued in him, If ye continue in my word, ye are verely my diſciples,

32 And ſhall knowe the trueth, and the trueth ſhall make you free.

33 They anſwered him, We be Abrahams ſeede, and were neuer bond to any man: why ſayeſt thou then, Yee ſhall be made free?

34 Ieſus anſwered them, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, that whoſoeuer committeth ſinne, is the *ſeruant of ſinne. *Rom 6.20. 2 pet 2.19.

35 And

35 And the ſeruant abideth not in the houſe for euer: but the Sonne abideth for euer.

36 If that Sonne therefore ſhall make you free, ye ſhall be free in deede.

37 I know that ye are Abrahams ſeede, but ye ſeeke to kill me, becauſe my word hath no place in you.

38 I ſpeake that which I haue ſeene with my Father: and ye doe that which ye haue ſeene with your father.

39 They anſwered, and ſaide vnto him, Abraham is our father. Ieſus ſaide vnto them, If ye were Abrahams children, ye would doe the workes of Abraham.

40 But now ye go about to kill me, a man ỹ haue told you the trueth, which I haue heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Ye do ỹ works of your father. Then ſaid they to him, We are not borne of fornicatiõ: we haue one father, which is God.

42 Therefore Ieſus ſaide vnto them, If God were your Father, then would ye loue me: for I proceeded forth, and came from God, neither came I of my ſelfe, but he ſent me.

43 Why doe ye not vnderſtand my talke? becauſe ye cannot heare my word.

1. *Iohn* 3.8. 44 *Ye are of your father the deuil, and the luſtes of your father ye will doe: he hath bene a murtherer from the beginning, and abode not in the trueth, becauſe there is no trueth in him. When he ſpeaketh a lie, then ſpeaketh he of his owne: for he is a liar, and the father thereof.

45 And becauſe I tell you the trueth, ye beleene me not.

46 Which of you can rebuke me of ſinne? and if I ſay the trueth, why doe ye not beleeue me?

1. *Iohn* 4.6. 47 *He that is of God, heareth Gods wordes: ye therefore heare them not, becauſe ye are not of God.

48 Then anſwered the Iewes, and ſaide vnto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and haſt a deuil?

49 Ieſus anſwered, I haue not a deuil, but I honour my Father, and ye haue diſhonoured me.

50 And I ſeeke not mine owne praiſe: but there is one that ſeeketh it, and iudgeth.

51 Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, If a man keepe my worde, he ſhall neuer ſee death.

52 Then ſaid the Iewes to him, Now knowe we that thou haſt a deuil. Abraham is dead, and the Prophets, & thou ſayeſt, If a man keepe my word, he ſhall neuer taſte of death.

53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead?

dead? and the Prophets are dead: whom makest thou thy selfe?

53 Iesus answered, If I honour my selfe, mine honour is nothing worth: it is my father that honoureth me, whom ye say, that he is your God.

55 Yet ye haue not knowen him: but I know him, and if I should say, I knowe him not, I should be a liar like vnto you: but I know him, and keepe his word.

56 Your father Abraham reioyced to see my day, and hee sawe it, and was glad.

57 Then saide the Iewes vnto him, Thou art not yet fiftie yeere olde, and hast thou seene Abraham?

58 Iesus saide vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, before Abraham was, I am.

59 Then tooke they vp stones, to cast at him, but Iesus hid himselfe, and went out of the Temple: And he passed through the middes of them, and so went his way.

## CHAP. IX.

*1 Christ giueth sight on the Sabbath day, 10 him that was borne blinde: 13 Whom, after he had long reasoned against the Pharises, 22.35 and was cast out of the Synagogue, 36 Christ endueth with the knowledge of the euerlasting light.*

AND as Iesus passed by, hee sawe a man which was blinde from his birth.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sinne, this man, or his parents, that he was borne blinde?

3 Iesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the workes of God should be shewed on him.

4 I must worke the workes of him that sent mee, while it is day: the night commeth when no man can worke.

5 As long as I am in ỹ world, *I am the light of the world. *Chap.1.9.*

6 Assoone as he had thus spoken, hee spat on the ground, and made claye of the spittle, and anoynted the eyes of the blinde with the clay, *and 8.12. and 12.35.*

7 And saide vnto him, Goe wash in the poole of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent:) Hee went his way therefore, and washed, and came againe seeing.

8 Now the neighbours & they that had seene him before, when he was blinde, saide, Is not this he that sate and begged?

9 Some said, This is he: and other said, He is like him: but he himselfe said, I am he.

10 Therefore they saide vnto him, Howe were thine eyes opened?

11 He answered, and said, The man that is called Iesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, & said vnto me, Go to the poole of Siloam, and wash. So I went, and washed, & receiued sight.

12 Then they saide vnto him, Where is hee? He said, I can not tell.

13 ¶ They brought to the Pharises him that was once blinde.

14 And it was the Sabbath *day*, when Iesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then againe the Pharises also asked him, howe hee had receiued sight. And he saide vnto them, Hee layde clay vpon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see.

16 Then said some of the Pharises, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the Sabbath *day*. Others saide, Howe can a man that is a sinner, doe such miracles? and there was a dissention among them.

17 Then spake they vnto the blinde againe, What sayest thou of him, because he hath opened thine eyes? And he said, He is a Prophet.

18 Then the Iewes did not beleeue him, (that hee had bene blinde, and receiued his sight) vntill they had called the parents of him that had receiued sight.

19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your sonne, whom ye say was borne blinde? How doeth he now see then?

20 His parents answered them, and saide, We knowe that this is our sonne, and that he was borne blinde:

21 But by what meanes hee nowe seeth, we knowe not: or who hath opened his eyes, can we not tell: he is olde ynough: aske him: he shall answere for himselfe.

22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Iewes: for the Iewes had ordeined alreadie, that if any man did confesse that he was Christ, he should be *excommunicate* out of the Synagogue.

23 Therefore said his parents, He is old ynough: aske him.

24 Then againe called they the man that had bene blinde, and said vnto him, Giue glorie vnto God: we knowe that this man is a sinner.

25 Then he answered, & said, Whether he be a sinner, or no, I cannot tel: one thing I know, that I was blinde, & now I see.

26 Then saide they to him againe, What did hee to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

27 He answered them, I haue told you already, and ye haue

not

not heard it: wherefore would ye heare it againe? will ye also be his disciples?

28 Then reuiled they him, and saide, Thou art his disciple, we be Moses disciples.

29 Wee knowe that God spake with Moses: but this man we know not from whence he is.

30 The man answered, and said vnto them, Doubtlesse, this is a marueilous thing, that ye know not whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now we know, that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, & doth his wil, him heareth he.

32 Since the worlde began was it not heard, that any man opened the eyes of one that was borne blinde.

33 If this mā were not of God, he could haue done nothing.

34 They answered, and said vnto him, Thou art altogether borne in sinnes, and doest thou teach vs? so they cast him out.

35 Iesus heard that they had cast him out: and when hee had founde him, he saide vnto him, Doest thou beleeue in the Sonne of God?

36 He answered, and saide, Who is he, Lorde, that I might beleeue in him?

37 And Iesus said vnto him, Both thou hast seene him, and he it is that talketh with thee.

38 Then he said, Lord, I beleeue, and worshipped him.

39 And Iesus saide, I am come vnto iudgement into this worlde, that they which see not, might see: and that they *which see, might be made blinde. *Chap 3.17. and 12.47.

40 And some of the Pharises which were with him, heard these things, and said vnto him, Are we blinde also?

41 Iesus said vnto thē, If ye were blind, ye should not haue sinne: but now ye say, We see: therfore your sinne remaineth.

## CHAP. X.

*1 Christ prooueth that the Pharises are the euill shepheardes, 8 and by many reasons, that himselfe 11. 14 is the good shepheard: 19 And thereof distention ariseth. 31 They take vp stones, 39 and goe about to take him, but he escapeth.*

VErely, verely I say vnto you, He that entreth not in by the doore into the sheepefolde, but climeth vp another way, he is a thiefe and a robber.

2 But hee that goeth in by the doore, is the shepheard of the sheepe.

3 To him the porter openeth, & the sheepe heare his voice, and

and he calleth his owne ſheepe by name,& leadeth them out.

4 And when hee hath ſent foorth his owne ſheepe, he goeth before them, and the ſheepe follow him: for they knowe his voyce.

5 And they will not follow a ſtranger, but they flee from him: for they knowe not the voyce of ſtrangers.

6 This parable ſpake Ieſus vnto them: but they vnderſtood not what things they were, which he ſpake vnto them.

7 Then ſaid Ieſus vnto them againe, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, I am that doore of the ſheepe.

8 All that euer came before mee, are theeues and robbers: but the ſheepe did not heare them.

9 I am that doore: by me if any man enter in, he ſhalbe ſaued, and ſhall go in, and go out, and finde paſture.

10 The thiefe commeth not, but for to ſteale, and to kill, and to deſtroy: I am come that they might haue life, and haue it in abundance.

*Iſa.40.11. ezek.34.23.* 11 *I am that good ſhepheard: that good ſhepheard giueth his life for his ſheepe.

12 But an hireling, and he which is not the ſhepheard, neither the ſheepe are his owne, ſeeth the wolfe comming, and he leaueth the ſheepe, and fleeth, & the wolfe catcheth them, and ſcattereth the ſheepe.

13 So the hireling fleeth, becauſe hee is an hireling, and careth not for the ſheepe.

14 I am that good ſhepheard, and knowe mine, and am knowen of mine.

15 As the Father knoweth me, ſo know I the Father: and I lay downe my life for *my* ſheepe.

16 Other ſheepe I haue alſo, which are not of this folde: them alſo muſt I bring, and they ſhall heare my voyce: and *Ezek.37 22.* *there ſhalbe one ſheepefolde, *and* one ſhepheard.

*Iſa.53.7.* 17 Therefore doeth my Father loue mee, becauſe * I laye downe my life, that I might take it againe.

18 No man taketh it from mee, but I lay it downe of my ſelfe: I haue power to lay it downe, & haue power to take it *Acts.2.24.* againe: this *commaundement haue I receiued of my Father.

19 ¶Then there was a diſſention againe among the Iewes for theſe ſayings,

20 And many of them ſaid, He hath a deuill, and is madde: why heare ye him?

21 Others ſaid, Theſe are not the words of him that hath a deuil:

a deuil: can the deuil open the eyes of the blinde?

22 And it was at Hierusalem the *feast of the* Dedication, and it was winter.

23 And Iesus walked in the Temple, in Solomons porch.

24 Then came the Iewes round about him, and saide vnto him, Howe long doest thou make vs doubt? If thou bee that Christ, tell vs plainely.

25 Iesus answered them, I told you, & ye beleeue not: the workes ỹ I do in my Fathers Name, they beare witnes of me.

26 But ye beleeue not: for ye are not of my sheepe, as I said vnto you.

27 My sheepe heare my voyce, and I know them, and they followe me,

28 And I giue vnto them eternall life, and they shall neuer perish, neither shall any plucke them out of mine hand.

29 My Father which gaue *them* me, is greater then all, and none is able to take them out of my Fathers hand.

30 I and my Father are one.

31 *Then the Iewes againe tooke vp stones, to stone him. *Chap.8.59.*

32 Iesus answered them, Many good works haue I shewed you frō my Father: for which of these workes do ye stone me?

33 The Iewes answered him, saying, For the good worke we stone thee not, but for blasphemie, and that thou being a man, makest thy selfe God.

34 Iesus answered them, Is it not written in your Lawe, *I said, Ye are gods? *Psal.82.6.*

35 If he called them gods, vnto whome the word of God was *giuen*, and the Scripture cannot be broken,

36 Say yee of him, whome the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest, because I said, I am the sonne of God?

37 If I do not the workes of my Father, beleeue me not.

38 But if I doe, then though ye beleeue not mee, *yet* beleeue the workes, that ye may know and beleeue, that the Father *is* in me, and I in him.

39 Againe they went about to take him: but hee escaped out of their handes,

40 And went againe beyond Iordane, into the place where Iohn first baptized, and there abode.

41 And many resorted vnto him, and said, Iohn did no miracle: but all things that Iohn spake of this man, were true.

42 And many beleeued in him there.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XI.

*1 Christ, to shew that he is 25 the life and the resurrection, 14 commeth to Lazarus being dead, 17. 34 and buried, 43 and raiseth him vp. 47 As the Priests were consulting together, 49 Caiaphas 50 prophecieth that one must die for the people: 56. 57 They commaunde to seeke Christ out, and to take him.*

AND a certaine man was sicke, *named* Lazarus of Bethania, the towne of Marie, and her sister Martha.

*Chap.12.3. matt.26.7.* 2 (And it was that *Marie which anoynted the Lord with oyntment, and wiped his feete with her heare, whose brother Lazarus was sicke.)

3 Therefore *his* sisters sent vnto him, saying, Lord, beholde, he whome thou loueſt, is sicke.

4 When Iesus heard it, he saide, This sickenes is not vnto death, but for the glorie of God, that the Sonne of God might be glorified thereby.

5 ¶Nowe Iesus loued Martha and her sister, and Lazarus.

6 And after he had heard that he was sicke, yet abode hee two dayes still in the same place where he was.

7 Then after that, said he to his disciples, Let vs go into Iudea againe.

8 The disciples saide vnto him, Master, the Iewes lately sought to *stone thee, and doest thou goe thither againe?

*Chap.7.30. and 8.59. and 10.33.* 9 Iesus answered, Are there not twelue houres in the day? If a man walke in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.

10 But if a man walke in the night, hee stumbleth, because there is no light in him.

11 These things spake he, and after he said vnto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth: but I goe to wake him vp.

12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleepe, he shalbe safe.

13 Howbeit, Iesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of the naturall sleepe.

14 Then said Iesus vnto them plainely, Lazarus is dead.

15 And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not there, that ye may beleeue: but let vs goe vnto him.

16 Then said Thomas (which is called Didymus) vnto his fellowe disciples, Let vs also goe, that we may die with him.

17 ¶Then came Iesus, and founde that hee had lien in the graue foure dayes alreadie.

18 (Nowe Bethania was neere vnto Hierusalem, about fifteene furlongs off.)

19 And

19 And many of the Iewes were come to Martha and Marie to comfort them for their brother.

20 Then Martha, when she heard that Iesus was comming, went to meete him: but Marie sate still in the house.

21 Then said Martha vnto Iesus, Lord, if thou haddest bene here, my brother had not bene dead.

22 But nowe I know also, that whatsoeuer thou askest of God, God will giue it thee.

23 Iesus said vnto her, Thy brother shall rise againe.

24 Martha said vnto him, I knowe that he shall rise againe *in the resurrection at the last day. *Chap.5.29.*

25 Iesus saide vnto her, I am the resurrection and the life: *Luk.14.14.* *he ỹ beleeueth in me, though he were dead, *yet* shal he liue. *Chap.6.35.*

26 And whosoeuer liueth, and beleeueth in me, shall neuer die: Beleeuest thou this?

27 She said vnto him, Yea, Lord, I beleeue that thou art that Christ that Sõne of God, which should come into the world.

28 ¶ And when she had so said, shee went her way, and called Marie her sister secretely, saying, The master is come, and calleth for thee.

29 And when she heard it, shee arose quickly, and came vnto him.

30 For Iesus was not yet come into the towne, but was in the place where Martha met him.

31 The Iewes then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Marie, that she rose vp hastily, and went out, folowed her, saying, Shee goeth vnto the graue, to weepe there.

32 Then when Marie was come where Iesus was, and sawe him, shee fel downe at his feete, saying vnto him, Lord, if thou haddest bene here, my brother had not bene dead.

33 When Iesus therefore sawe her weepe, and the Iewes *also* weepe which came with her, he groned in the spirit, and was troubled in himselfe,

34 And said, Where haue ye laid him? They said vnto him, Lord, come and see.

35 *And* Iesus wept.

36 Then said the Iewes, Behold, howe he loued him.

37 And some of them saide, * Could not he, which opened the eyes of the blinde, haue made also, that this man shoulde not haue died? *Chap.9.6.*

38 Iesus therefore againe groned in himselfe, and came to

the graue. And it was a caue, and a ſtone was laid vpon it.

39 Ieſus ſaide, Take ye away the ſtone. Martha the ſiſter of him that was dead, ſaide vnto him, Lorde, he ſtinketh already: for he hath bene *dead* foure daies.

40 Ieſus ſaide vnto her, Saide I not vnto thee, that if thou diddeſt beleeue, thou ſhouldeſt ſee the glory of God?

41 Then they tooke away the ſtone *from the place* where the dead was laid. And Ieſus liſt vp his eyes, and ſaid, Father, I thanke thee, becauſe thou haſt heard me.

42 I knowe that thou heareſt me alwaies, but becauſe of the people that ſtande by, I ſaide it, that they may beleeue, that thou haſt ſent me.

43 As hee had ſpoken theſe things, he cried with a loude voyce, Lazarus, come forth.

44 Then hee that was dead, came forth, bounde hande and foote with bands, and his face was bound with a napkin. Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Looſe him, and let him goe.

45 ¶ Then many of the Iewes, which came to Marie, and had ſeene the things, which Ieſus did, beleeued in him.

46 But ſome of them went their way to the Phariſes, and tolde them what things Ieſus had done.

47 Then gathered the hie Prieſts, & the Phariſes a council, and ſaid, What ſhal we do? For this man doth many miracles.

48 If we let him thus alone, all men will beleeue in him, and the Romanes will come and take away both our place, and the nation.

49 Then one of them *named* Caiaphas, which was the hie prieſt that ſame yere, ſaid vnto thē, Ye perceiue nothing at all,

*Chap. 18. 14.* 50 *Nor yet do you cōſider that it is expedient for vs, that one man die for ỹ people, & that the whole natiō periſh not.

51 This ſpake he not of him ſelfe: but being hie Prieſt that ſame yere, he prophecied that Ieſus ſhould die for that nation:

52 And not for that nation onely, but that he ſhould gather together in one, the children of God, which were ſcattered.

53 Then from that day forth they conſulted together, to put him to death.

54 Ieſus therefore walked no more openly among ỹ Iewes, but went thence vnto a countrey neere to the wildernes, into a citie called Ephraim, & there continued with his diſciples.

55 ¶ And the Iewes Paſſeouer was at hand, and many went out of the countrey vp to Hieruſalem before the Paſſeouer, to purifie themſelues.

56 Then sought they for Iesus, and spake among themselues, as they stoode in the Temple, What thinke yee, that he commeth not to the feast?

57 Now both the hie Priests and the Pharises had giuen a commaundement, that if any man knewe where hee were, hee should shewe it, that they might take him.

## CHAP. XII.

*2 As Christ is at supper with Lazarus, 3 Marie anoynteth his feete. 5 Iudas findeth fault with her: 7 Christ defendeth her. 10 The Priests would put Lazarus to death. 12 As Christ commeth to Hierusalem, 18 the people meete him. 20 The Grecians desire to see him. 42 The chiefe Rulers that beleeue in him, but for feare do not confesse him, 44 he exhorteth to faith.*

THen * Iesus, sixe daies before the Passeouer, came to Bethania, where Lazarus was, who died, whom he had raised from the dead. *Matt.26.7. mar.14.3.*

2 There they made him a supper, and Martha serued: but Lazarus was one of them that sate at the table with him.

3 Then tooke Marie a pounde of oyntment of Spikenarde very costly, and annoynted Iesus feete, and wiped his feete with her heare, and the house was filled with the sauour of the oyntment.

4 Then saide one of his disciples, *euen* Iudas Iscariot Simons *sonne*, which should betray him:

5 Why was not this oyntment solde for three hundreth pence, and giuen to the poore?

6 Nowe hee saide this, not that he cared for the poore, but because hee was a thiefe, and * had the bagge, and bare that which was giuen. *Chap.13.29.*

7 Then saide Iesus, Let her alone: against the day of my burying shee kept it.

8 For the poore alwaies ye haue with you, but me ye shall not haue alwaies.

9 Then much people of ℣ Iewes knew that he was there: and they came, not for Iesus sake onely, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

10 The hie Priestes therefore consulted, that they might put Lazarus to death also,

11 Because that for his sake many of the Iewes went away, and beleeued in Iesus. *Mat.21.8.*

12 ¶ * On the morow a great multitude that were come to *mar.11.8.*

 *Iuke 19.35.*

the feast, whē they heard ỳ Iesus should come to Hierusalem,

13 Tooke branches of palme trees,& went foorth to meete him,and cried, Hosanna, Blessed *is* the king of Israel that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

14 And Iesus fould a yong asse,& sate theron,as it is written,

*Zech.9.9.* 15 *Feare not,daughter of Sion:behold,thy king commeth sitting on an asses colte.

16 But his disciples vnderstoode not these thinges at the first: but when Iesus was glorified, then remembred they,that these things were written of him, & that they had done these things vnto him.

17 The people therefore that was with him,bare witnesse that hee called Lazarus out of the graue, and raised him from the dead.

18 Therefore met him the people also,because they heard that he had done this miracle.

19 And the Pharises saide among themselues, Perceiue ye how ye preuaile nothing? Behold,the world goeth after him.

20 ¶Nowe there were certaine Greekes among them that came vp to worship at the feast.

21 And they came to Philippe, which was of Bethsaida in Galile,and desired him,saying,Sir,we would see that Iesus.

22 Philippe came and told Andrewe:and againe Andrewe and Philippe tolde Iesus.

23 And Iesus answered them, saying, The houre is come, that the Sonne of man must be glorified.

24 Verely,verely I say vnto you,Except the wheate corne fall into the grounde and dye,it bideth alone: but if it dye,it bringeth forth much fruite.

*Mat.10.39. and 16.25. mar.8.35. luke 9.24. and 17.33.* 25 *He that loueth his life, shall lose it,and he that hateth his life in this world,shall keepe it vnto life eternall.

26 * If any man serue me,let him followe me: for where I am,there shal also my seruant be: and if any man serue me,him will my Father honour.

*Chap.17.24.* 27 Now is my soule troubled:and what shall I say?Father, saue me from this houre: but therfore came I vnto this houre.

28 Father,glorifie thy Name.Then came there a voyce frō heauen, *saying*, I haue both glorified it,& wil glorifie it againe.

29 Then saide the people that stoode by,and heard,that it was a thunder: other sayd,An Angel spake to him.

30 Iesus answered,and saide, This voyce came not because of me,but for your sakes.

31 Nowe

31 Nowe is the iudgement of this worlde: nowe shall the prince of this world be cast out.

32 *And I, if I were lift vp from the earth, will drawe all men vnto me. *Chap.3.14.*

33 Nowe this said he, signifying what death he should die.

34 The people answered him, We haue heard out of the *Law, that that Christ bideth for euer: & how saiest thou, that that Sõne of man must be lift vp? Who is that Sonne of man? *Psal.89.36. and 110.4.*

35 Then Iesus saide vnto them, Yet a litle while is *the light with you: walke while ye haue that light, least the darkenesse come vpon you: for he that walketh in the darke, knoweth not whither he goeth. *and 117.2. isa.40.8. ezek.37.25. Chap.1.9.*

36 While ye haue that light, beleeue in that light, that ye may be the children of the light. These things spake Iesus, and departed, and hid himselfe from them.

37 ¶ And though hee had done so many miracles before them, *yet* beleeued they not on him,

38 That the saying of Esaias the Prophet might be fulfilled, that hee saide, *Lorde, who beleeued our report? and to whome is the arme of the Lord reueiled? *Isa.53.1. rom.10.16.*

39 Therefore could they not beleeue, because that Esaias sayeth againe,

40 *He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart, that they should not see with *their* eyes, nor vnderstand with *their* heart, and should be conuerted, and I should heale them. *Isa.6.9. mat.13.14. mar.4.12.*

41 These things saide Esaias when he sawe his glorie, and spake of him. *luke 8.10. act.28.26.*

42 Neuertheless, euen among the chiefe rulers, many beleeued in him: but because of the Pharises they did not confesse him, least they should be *cast* out of the Synagogue. *rom.11.8.*

43 *For they loued the praise of men, more then the praise of God. *Chap.5.44.*

44 And Iesus cried, and saide, He that beleeueth in me, beleeueth not in me, but in him that sent me.

45 And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me.

46 I* am come a light into the world, that whosoeuer beleeueth in me, should not abide in darkenesse. *Chap.3.17. and 9.39.*

47 *And if any man heare my woordes, and beleeue not, I iudge him not: for I came not to iudge the world, but to saue the world. *Chap.3.17.*

48 He that refuseth me, and receiueth not my wordes, hath one that iudgeth him: *the worde that I haue spoken, it shall *Mat.10.16.*

iudge him in the last day.

49 For I haue not spoken of my selfe: but the Father, which sent me, he gaue me a commandement what I shoulde say, and what I should speake.

50 And I know that his commandement is life euerlasting: the things therefore that I speake, I speake *them* so as the Father said vnto me.

## CHAP. XIII.

*4. Christ rising from supper, 15 to commend humilitie to his Apostles, washeth their feete. 21 Hee noteth the traitour Iudas 26 with an euident token. 34 He commendeth charitie. 37. 39 He foretelleth Peter of his denial.*

*Mat.26.2. mar.14.1. luke 22.1.* NOw *before the feast of the Passeouer, when Iesus knew that his houre was come, that hee shoulde depart out of this worlde vnto the Father, forasmuch as hee loued his owne which were in the world, vnto the ende he loued them.

2 And when supper was done (and that the deuil had now put in the heart of Iudas Iscariot, Simõs *sonne*, to betray him)

3 Iesus knowing ỹ the Father had giuen al things into his hands, & that he was come forth from God, and went to God,

4 He riseth from supper, & laieth aside *his vpper* garments, and tooke a towel, and girded himselfe.

5 After that, hee powred water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples feete, and to wipe them with the towell, wherewith he was girded.

6 Then came he to Simon Peter, who saide to him, Lorde, doest thou wash my feete?

7 Iesus answered and saide vnto him, What I doe, thou knowest not nowe: but thou shalt knowe it hereafter.

8 Peter said vnto him, Thou shalt neuer wash my feete. Iesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou shalt haue no part w̃ me.

9 Simon Peter said vnto him, Lord, not my feete only, but also the handes and the head.

10 Iesus saide to him, He that is washed, needeth not, saue *Chap.15.3.* to wash *his* feete, but is cleane euery whit: and *ye are cleane, but not all:

11 For he knewe who should betraie him: therefore sayde he, Ye are not all cleane.

12 ¶ So after he had washed their feete, and had taken his garments, and was set downe againe, he said vnto them, Know ye what I haue done to you?

13 Ye call me Master, and Lord, and ye say well: for *so* am I.

14 If

14 If I then your Lord, and Master, haue washed your feete, ye also ought to wash one an others feete.

15 For I haue giuen you an example, that yee should doe, euen as I haue done to you.

16 Verely, verely I say vnto you, *The seruant is not greater then his master, neither the ambassadour greater then he that sent him. *Chap.15.20. matt.10.24. luke 6.40.

17 If ye knowe these things, blessed are ye, if ye doe them.

18 ¶ I speake not of you all: I know whom I haue chosen: but *it is* that the Scripture might be fulfilled, *He that eateth bread with me, hath lift vp his heele against me. *Psal.41 9.

19 From henceforth tel I you before it come, that when it is come to passe, ye might beleeue that I am he.

20 *Verely, verely I say vnto you, If I sende any, he that receiueth him, receiueth me, and he that receiueth me, receiueth him that sent me. *Mat.10.40. luke 10.16.

21 When Iesus had saide these things, he was troubled in the Spirit, and testified, and said, Verely, verely I say vnto you, that one of you shall betraie me.

22 *Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whome he spake. *Mat.26.21. mar.14.18.

23 Nowe there was one of his disciples, which leaned on Iesus bosome, whome Iesus loued. luke 22.21.

24 To him therefore beckened Simon Peter, that he should aske who it was of whome he spake.

25 He then, as hee leaned on Iesus breast, saide vnto him, Lord, who is it?

26 Iesus answered, He it is, to whome I shall giue a soppe, when I haue dipt it: and he wet a soppe, and gaue it to Iudas Iscariot, Simons *sonne*.

27 And after the soppe, Satan entred into him. Then sayde Iesus vnto him, That thou doest, doe quickly.

28 But none of them that were at table, knewe for what cause he spake it vnto him.

29 For some of them thought because Iudas had ỹ bag, that Iesus had saide vnto him, Bye those things ỹ we haue needs of against the feast: or that he should giue some thing to ỹ pore.

30 Assoone then as he had receiued the soppe, he went immediatly out, and it was night.

31 ¶ When he was gone out, Iesus said, Now is the Sonne of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

32 If God be glorified in him, God shal also glorifie him in

himselfe,and shall straightway glorifie him.

33 Litle children,yet a litle while am I with you:yee shall
*Chap.7.34.* seeke me,but as I said vnto the *Iewes,Whither I goe,can ye
not come:also to you say I nowe,

*Chap.15.12. leu.19.18.* 34 A *newe commandement giue I vnto you,that ye loue
one another: as I haue loued you,ỹ ye also loue one another.

*matt.22.39.* 35 By this shall all men knowe that yee are my disciples,if
*1.Iohn 4.21.* ye haue loue one to another.

36 Simon Peter said vnto him,Lorde,whither goest thou?
Iesus answered him,Whither I goe,thou canst not follow me
nowe: but thou shalt followe me afterward.

37 Peter said vnto him,Lorde,why can I not followe thee
*Mat.26.33.* nowe? * I will lay downe my life for thy sake.

*mar.14.29.* 38 Iesus answered him, Wilt thou laie downe thy life for
*luke 22.33.* my sake? Verely,verely I say vnto thee, The cocke shall not
crowe,till thou haue denied me thrise.

## CHAP. XIIII.

*1 He comforteth his disciples, 2. 7 declaring his distinction and the fruite of his death, 16 promising the Comforter, 17 euen the holy Spirite, 26 whose office he setteth out. 27 He promiseth his peace.*

LEt not your heart be troubled: ye beleeue in God,beleeue
also in me.

2 In my Fathers house are many dwelling places:if it were
not so,I would haue told you:I go to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I go to prepare a place for you,I wil come again,&
receiue you vnto my selfe,ỹ where I am,there may ye be also.

4 And whither I goe,ye knowe,and the way ye knowe.

5 Thomas saide vnto him, Lorde, we knowe not whither
thou goest: howe can we then knowe the way?

6 Iesus said vnto him,I am that Way,and that Trueth,and
that Life.No man commeth vnto the Father,but by me.

7 If ye had knowen me,ye should haue knowen my Father
also: and from henceforth ye know him,and haue seene him.

8 Philippe said vnto him,Lord,shewe vs *thy* Father,and it
sufficeth vs.

9 Iesus said vnto him, I haue bene so long time w̃ you,and
hast thou not knowen me,Philip? he that hath seene me, hath
seene my Father:how then saiest thou,Shewe vs *thy* Father?

10 Beleeuest thou not, ỹ I am in the Father, & the Father
is in me? The wordes ỹ I speake vnto you, I speake not of my
selfe: but the Father that dwelleth in me,he doeth ỹ workes.

11 Beleeue

11 Beleeue me, that I *am* in the Father, and the Father *is* in me: at the leaſt beleeue me for the very workes ſake.

12 Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, he that beleeueth in me, the workes that I doe, he ſhall doe alſo, and greater then theſe ſhall he doe: for I goe vnto my Father.

13 * And whatſoeuer ye aske in my Name, that will I doe, that the Father may be glorified in the Sonne. *Chap.16.23. mat.7.7.*

14 If ye ſhall aske any thing in my Name, I will doe it. *mar.11.24.*

15 If ye loue me, keepe my commandements, *iames 1.5.*

16 And I will pray the Father, and he ſhall giue you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for euer,

17 *Euen* the Spirit of trueth, whom the worlde cannot receiue, becauſe it ſeeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye knowe him: for he dwelleth with you, and ſhalbe in you.

18 I will not leaue you fatherleſſe: *but* I will come to you.

19 Yet a litle *while*, and the worlde ſhall ſee me no more, but ye ſhall ſee me: becauſe I liue, ye ſhall liue alſo.

20 At that day ſhall ye knowe that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.

21 He that hath my commandements, and keepeth them, is he that loueth me: and he that loueth me, ſhalbe loued of my Father: and I will loue him, and will ſhewe mine owne ſelfe to him.

22 Iudas ſaid vnto him (not Iſcariot) Lord, what is ȳ cauſe that thou wilt ſhew thy ſelfe vnto vs, & not vnto the worlde?

23 Ieſus anſwered and ſaide vnto him, If any man loue me, he will keepe my word, and my Father will loue him, and we will come vnto him, and wil dwell with him.

24 He that loueth me not, keepeth not my wordes, and the worde which ye heare, is not mine, but the Fathers which ſent me.

25 Theſe things haue I ſpoken vnto you, being preſent with you.

26 *But the Comforter, which is the holy Ghoſt, whom the Father wil ſend in my Name, he ſhal teache you al things, and bring all things to your remembrance, which I haue told you. *Chap.15.26.*

27 Peace I leaue with you: my peace I giue vnto you: not as the worlde giueth, giue I vnto you. Let not your heart be troubled, nor feare.

28 Ye haue heard how I ſaid vnto you, I go away, and will come vnto you. If ye loued me, ye woulde verely reioyce, becauſe

because I saide, I goe vnto the Father: for the Father is greater then I.

29 And nowe haue I spoken vnto you, before it come, that when it is come to passe, ye might beleeue.

30 Hereafter will I not speake many things vnto you: for the prince of this world commeth, and hath nought in me.

31 But *it is* that the worlde may know that I loue *my* Father: and as the Father hath commaunded me, so I doe. Arise, let vs goe hence.

## CHAP. XV.

1 *The parable of the vine* 2 *and the branches,* 5. 6 *he declareth howe the disciples may beere fruite.* 12. 17 *He commendeth mutuall loue.* 18 *He exhorteth them to beare afflictions patiently,* 20 *by his owne example.*

I Am that true vine, and my Father is that husbandman.

*Mat.15.13.* 2 *Every branche that beareth not fruite in me, he taketh away: and euery one that beareth fruite, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruite.

*Chap.13.10.* 3 *Nowe are ye cleane through the worde, which I haue spoken vnto you.

4 Abide in me, and I in you: as the branche can not beare fruite of it selfe, except it abide in the vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

5 I am that vine: ye *are* the branches: he that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth foorth much fruite: for without me can ye doe nothing.

*Colos.1.23.* 6 *If a man abide not in me, he is cast foorth as a branch, and withereth: and men gather them, and cast *them* into the fire, and they burne.

*1.Joh.3.22.* 7 *If ye abide in me, and my wordes abide in you, aske what ye will, and it shalbe done to you.

8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye beare much fruit, and be made my disciples.

9 As the Father hath loued me, so haue I loued you: continue in that my loue.

10 If ye shall keepe my commandements, ye shall abide in my loue, as I haue kept my Fathers commandements, and abide in his loue.

*Chap.13.34.* 11 These things haue I spoke vnto you, that my ioy might
*1.Thes.4.9.* remaine in you, and that your ioy might be full.
*1 Joh.3.11.* 12 *This is my commandement, that ye loue one another,
*and 4.21.* as I haue loued you.

13 Greater

13 Greater loue then this hath no man, when any man be-
stoweth his life for his friendes.

14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoeuer I command you.

15 Henceforth, call I you not seruants: for the seruaunt knoweth not what his master doth: but I haue called you friendes: for all things that I haue heard of my Father, haue I made knowen to you.

16 Ye haue not chosen me, but I haue chosen you, and ordeined you, *that ye goe and bring forth fruite, and that your fruite remaine, that whatsoeuer ye shall aske of the Father in my Name, he may giue it you. *Mat.28.19.

17 These things command I you, that ye loue one another.

18 If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before you.

19 If ye were of the worlde, the worlde woulde loue his owne: but because ye are not of the world, but I haue chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

20 Remember the worde that I saide vnto you, *The seruaunt is not greater then his master. * If they haue persecuted me, they will persecute you also: if they haue kept my word, they will also keepe yours. *Chap.13.16. mat.10.24. Mat.24.9.

21 But *all these things will they doe vnto you for my Names sake, because they haue not knowen him that sent me. *Chap.16.4.

22 If I had not come & spoken vnto them, they should not haue had sinne: but now haue they no cloke for their sinne.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.

24 If I had not done workes among them which none other man did, they had not had sinne: but now haue they both seene, and haue hated both me, and my Father.

25 But *it is* that the worde might be fulfilled, that is written in their Lawe, *They hated me without a cause. *Psal.35.19.

26 But when that Comforter shall come, * whom I will send vnto you from the Father, *euen* ℣ Spirit of trueth, which proceedeth of the Father, he shall testifie of me. *Chap.14.26. Iake 24.49.

27 And ye shall witnes also, because ye haue bene with me from the beginning.

## CHAP. XVI.

1 *He foretelleth the disciples of persecution.* 7 *He promiseth the Comforter, and declareth his office.* 21 *He compareth the afflictions of his to a woman that trauaileth with childe.*

THese things haue I said vnto you, that ye should not be offended.

2 They

2 They ſhal excommunicate you: yea, the time ſhal come, that whoſoeuer killeth you, will thinke that he doeth God ſeruice.

3 And theſe things will they doe vnto you, becauſe they haue not knowen the Father, nor me.

(Chap. 15.21.) 4 *But theſe things haue I tolde you, that when the houre ſhall come, ye might remember, that I tolde you them. And theſe things ſaid I not vnto you from the beginning, becauſe I was with you.

5 But now I goe my way to him that ſent me, and none of you asketh me, Whither goeſt thou?

6 But becauſe I haue ſaide theſe things vnto you, your heartes are full of ſorowe.

7 Yet I tell you the trueth, It is expedient for you that I goe away: for if I go not away, that Comforter will not come vnto you: but if I depart, I will ſend him vnto you.

8 And when he is come, he will reproue the worlde of ſinne, and of righteouſneſſe, and of iudgement:

9 Of ſinne, becauſe they beleeue not in me:

10 Of righteouſneſſe, becauſe I goe to my Father, and ye ſhall ſee me no more:

11 Of iudgement, becauſe the prince of this worlde is iudged.

12 I haue yet many things to ſay vnto you, but ye cannot beare them nowe.

13 Howbeit, when he is come which is the Spirit of trueth, he will leade you into all trueth: for he ſhal not ſpeake of himſelfe, but whatſoeuer he ſhall heare, ſhall he ſpeake, and he will ſhewe you the things to come.

14 He ſhall glorifie me: for he ſhall receiue of mine, and ſhall ſhewe it vnto you.

15 All things that the Father hath, are mine: therefore ſaid I, that he ſhall take of mine, and ſhewe it vnto you.

16 A litle *while*, and ye ſhall not ſee me: and againe a litle *while*, and ye ſhall ſee me: for I goe to the Father.

17 Then ſaide *ſome* of his diſciples among themſelues, What is this that he ſaith vnto vs, A litle *while*, and ye ſhall not ſee me, and againe, A litle *while*, and ye ſhall ſee me, and, For I goe to the Father?

18 They ſaid therefore, What is this that he ſaith, A litle *while*? we knowe not what he ſayth.

19 Nowe Ieſus knewe that they would aske him, & ſaide vnto

vnto them, Doe ye enquire among your selues, of that I saide, A litle *while*, and ye shall not see me: and againe, A litle *while*, and ye shall see me?

20 Verely, verely I say vnto you, that ye shall weepe and lament, and the world shall reioyce: and ye shall sorowe, but your sorowe shalbe turned to ioy.

21 A woman when she trauaileth, hath sorow, because her houre is come: but assoone as she is deliuered of the child, she remembreth no more the anguish, for ioy that a man is borne into the world.

22 And ye nowe therefore are in sorowe: but I will see you againe, and your hearts shall reioyce, and your ioy shall no man take from you.

23 And in that day shall ye aske me nothing. *Verely, verely I say vnto you, Whatsoeuer ye shall aske the Father in my Name, he will giue it you. *Chap.14.13. mat.7.7. and 21.22.*

24 Hitherto haue ye asked nothing in my Name: aske, and ye shall receiue, that your ioy may be full. *mar.11.24. luke 11.9.*

25 These things haue I spoken vnto you in parables: but the time will come, when I shal no more speake to you in parables: but I shall shewe you plainely of the Father. *iames 1.5.*

26 At that day shall ye aske in my Name, and I say not vnto you, that I will pray vnto the Father for you:

27 For the Father himselfe loueth you, because ye haue loued me, *and haue beleeued that I came out from God. *Chap.17.8.*

28 I am come out from the Father, and came into the world: againe I leaue the worlde, and goe to the Father.

29 His disciples saide vnto him, Loe, nowe speakest thou plainely, and thou speakest no parable.

30 Nowe knowe we that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man shoulde aske thee. By this we beleeue, that thou art come out from God.

31 Iesus answered them, Doe you beleeue nowe?

32 *Behold, the houre commeth, and is already come, that ye shalbe scattered euery man into his owne, and shall leaue me alone: but I am not alone: for the Father is with me. *Mat.26.31. mar.14.27.*

33 These things haue I spoken vnto you, that in me ye might haue peace: in the world ye shall haue affliction, but be of good comfort: I haue ouercome the world.

## CHAP. XVII.

*1 Christ praieth ỹ his glory together vv his Fathers may be made manifest. 9 He praieth for his Apostles, 20 and for al beleeuers.*

These

THese things spake Iesus, and lift vp his eies to heauen, and
saide, Father, that houre is come: glorifie thy Sonne, that
thy Sonne also may glorifie thee,
Mat. 28.18. 2 * As thou hast giuen him power *ouer* all flesh, that he
should giue eternall life to all them that thou hast giuen him.
3 And this is life eternall, that they knowe thee *to be* the
onely very God, and whom thou hast sent, Iesus Christ.
4 I haue glorified thee on the earth: I haue finished the
worke which thou gauest me to doe.
5 And nowe glorifie me, thou Father, with thine owne
selfe, with ȳ glory which I had with thee before ȳ world was.
6 I haue declared thy name vnto the men which thou ga-
uest me out of the worlde: thine they were, and thou gauest
them me, and they haue kept thy worde.
Chap. 16.27. 7 *Now they knowe that all things whatsoeuer thou hast
giuen me, are of thee.
8 For I haue giuen vnto them the wordes, which thou ga-
uest me, and they haue receiued *them*, and haue knowen sure-
ly that I came out from thee, & haue beleeued that thou hast
sent me.
9 I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them
which thou hast giuen me: for they are thine.
10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine, and I am
glorified in them.
11 And nowe am I no more in the worlde, but these are in
the worlde, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keepe them in
thy Name, *euen* them whom thou hast giuē me, that they may
be one, as we *are*.
12 While I was with them in the worlde, I kept them in
thy Name: those that thou gauest mę, haue I kept, and none
Psal. 109.7. of them is lost, but the child of perdition, that the *Scripture
might be fulfilled.
13 And now come I to thee, & these things speake I in the
world, that they might haue my ioy fulfilled in themselues.
14 I haue giuen them thy worde, and the world hath hated
them, because they are not of the worlde, as I am not of the
worlde.
15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the
world, but that thou keepe them from euill.
16 They are not of the world, as I am not of the world.
17 Sanctifie them with thy trueth: thy word is trueth.
18 As thou diddest send me into the worlde, so haue I sent
them

them into the world.

19 And for their sakes sanctifie I my selfe, that they also may be sanctified through the trueth.

20 I pray not for these alone, but for them also which shall beleeue in me through their worde,

21 That they all may be one, as thou, O Father, *art* in me, and I in thee: *euen* that they may be also one in vs, that the world may beleeue that thou hast sent me.

22 And the glory that thou gauest me, I haue giuen them, that they may be one, as we are one,

23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loued them, as thou hast loued me.

24 * Father, I will that they which thou hast giuen me, be with me euen where I am, that they may behold that my glorie, which thou hast giuen me: for thou louedst me before the foundation of the world. *Chap.* 12.26.

25 O righteous Father, the worlde also hath not knowen thee, but I haue knowen thee, & these haue knowen that thou hast sent me.

26 And I haue declared vnto them thy name, and will declare it, that the loue wherewith thou hast loued me, may be in them, and I in them.

## CHAP. XVIII.

1 *By Christes power, whom Iudas betrayeth, 6 the souldiers are cast downe to the ground. 13 Christ is led to Annas, and from him to Caiaphas. 22. 23 His answere to the officer that smote him with a rod. 28 Being deliuered to Pilate, 36 he declareth his kingdome.*

WHen Iesus had spoken these things, he went forth with his disciples ouer the brooke * Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entred, and his disciples. *Mat.* 26.36. *mar.* 14.32.

2 And Iudas which betrayed him, knewe also the place: for Iesus oft times resorted thither with his disciples. *luke* 22.39.

3 * Iudas then, after he had receiued a band of men and officers of the hie Priests, and of the Pharises, came thither with lanternes, and torches, and weapons. *Mat.* 26.47. *mar.* 14 43. *luke* 22.47.

4 Then Iesus, knowing all things that should come vnto him, went forth and said vnto them, Whom seeke ye?

5 They answered him, Iesus of Nazareth. Iesus saide vnto them, I am he. Nowe Iudas also, which betrayed him, stoode with them.

6 Assoone then as he had saide vnto them, I am he, they went away backwards, and fell to the ground.

7 Then he asked them againe, Whom seeke ye? And they said, Iesus of Nazareth.

8 Iesus answered, I said vnto you, that I am he: therefore if ye seeke me, let these goe their way.

9 *This was* that the worde might be fulfilled which he spake, *Of them which thou gauest me, haue I lost none.

*Chap.17.12.*

10 Then Simon Peter hauing a sworde drewe it, & smote the hie Priestes seruant, and cut off his right eare. Nowe the seruants name was Malchus.

11 Then saide Iesus vnto Peter, Put vp thy sword into the sheath: shall I not drinke of the cup which *my* Father hath giuen me?

12 Then the band and the captaine, and the officers of the Iewes tooke Iesus and bound him,

13 And led him away to *Annas first (for he was father in lawe to Caiaphas, which was the hie Priest that same yeere)

*Luke 3.2.*

*Chap.11.50.*

14 *And Caiaphas was he, that gaue counsell to ỹ Iewes, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

*Mat.26.58. mar.14.54. luke 22.54.*

15 ¶ Nowe Simon Peter folowed Iesus, and another disciple, and that disciple was knowen of the hie Priest: therefore he went in with Iesus into the hall of the hie Priest:

16 But Peter stoode at the doore without. Then went out the other disciple which was knowen vnto the hie Priest, and spake to her that kept the doore, and brought in Peter.

17 Then saide the maide that kept the doore, vnto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans disciples? He saide, I am not.

18 And the seruants and officers stoode there, which had made a fire of coles: for it was colde, and they warmed themselues. And Peter also stood among them, & warmed himselfe.

19 ¶ (The hie Priest then asked Iesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.

20 Iesus answered him, I spake openly to the worlde: I euer taught in the Synagogue and in the Temple, whither the Iewes resort continually, and in secret haue I said nothing.

21 Why askest thou me? aske them which heard me what I said vnto them: beholde, they knowe what I said.

22 When hee had spoken these things, one of the officers which stoode by, smote Iesus with *his* rod, saying, Answerest thou the hie Priest so?

23 Iesus

23 Ieſus anſwered him, If I haue euill ſpoken, beare witnes of the euill: but if I haue well ſpoken, why ſmiteſt thou me?

24 ¶ *Now Annas had ſent him bound vnto Caiaphas the hie Prieſt.) *Mat.26.57. luke 22.54.

25 * And Simon Peter ſtoode and warmed himſelfe, and they ſayd vnto him, Art not thou alſo of his diſciples? He denied it, and ſaid, I am not. *Mat.26.69. mar.14.69. luke 22.55.

26 One of the ſeruants of the hie Prieſt, his couſin whoſe eare Peter ſmote off, ſaide, Did not I ſee thee in the garden with him?

27 Peter then denied againe, and immediatly the cocke crewe.

28 ¶ * Then led they Ieſus from Caiaphas into the common hall. Now it was morning, and they themſelues went not into the common hall, leaſt they ſhould be * defiled, but that they might eate the Paſſeouer. *Mat.27.2. mar.15.1. luke 23.1. Act.10.28. and 11.3.

29 Pilate then went out vnto them, and ſaid, What accuſation bring ye againſt this man?

30 They anſwered, and ſayd vnto him, If he were not an euill doer, we would not haue deliuered him vnto thee.

31 Then ſaid Pilate vnto them, Take ye him, and iudge him after your owne Lawe. Then the Iewes ſaide vnto him, It is not lawfull for vs to put any man to death.

32 *It was* that the worde of Ieſus * might be fulfilled which he ſpake, ſignifying what death he ſhould die. *Mat.20.19.

33 * So Pilate entred into the common hall againe, and called Ieſus, and ſaide vnto him, Art thou the King of the Iewes? *Mat.27.11. mar.15.2. luke 23.3.

34 Ieſus anſwered him, Sayeſt thou that of thy ſelfe, or did other tell it thee of me?

35 Pilate anſwered, Am I a Iewe? Thine owne nation, and the hie Prieſtes haue deliuered thee vnto me. What haſt thou done?

36 Ieſus anſwered, My kingdome is not of this world: if my kingdome were of this world, my ſeruants would ſurely fight, that I ſhould not be deliuered to the Iewes: but nowe is my kingdome not from hence.

37 Pilate then ſayd vnto him, Art thou a King then? Ieſus anſwered, Thou ſayeſt that I am a King: for this cauſe am I borne, and for this cauſe came I into the worlde, that I ſhould beare witnes vnto the trueth: euery one that is of the trueth, heareth my voyce.

38 Pilate ſaid vnto him, What is trueth? And when hee had ſaid that, he went out againe vnto the Iewes, and ſayde vnto them, I finde in him no cauſe at all.

*Mat.27.15. mar.15.6. luke 23.17.* 39 *But you haue a cuſtome, that I ſhould deliuer you one looſe at the Paſſeouer: will ye then that I looſe vnto you the King of the Iewes?

*Acts.3.14.* 40 *Then cried they all againe, ſaying, Not him, but Barabbas: nowe this Barabbas was a murtherer.

## CHAP. XIX.

*1 Pilate, when Chriſt was ſcourged, 2 and crowned with thorne, 4 was deſirous to let him looſe: 8 but being ouercome with the outrage of the Iewes, 16 he deliuereth him to be crucified. 26 Ieſus committeth his mother to the diſciple. 30 Hauing taſted vineger, he dieth: 34 and being dead, his ſide is pearced with a ſpeare. 40 He is buried.*

*Mat.27.27. mar.15.16.* THen *Pilate tooke Ieſus, and ſcourged him.

2 And the ſouldiers platted a crowne of thornes, and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple garment,

3 And ſayde, Haile, king of the Iewes. And they ſmote him with *their* rods.

4 Then Pilate went forth againe, and ſaide vnto them, Beholde, I bring him foorth to you, that ye may knowe, that I finde no fault in him at all.

5 Then came Ieſus forth, wearing a crowne of thornes, and a purple garment. And *Pilate* ſayde vnto them, Beholde the man.

6 Then when the hie Prieſts and officers ſawe him, they cried, ſaying, Crucifie, crucifie him. *Pilate* ſayde vnto them, Take ye him and crucifie *him*: for I finde no fault in him.

7 The Iewes anſwered him, We haue a lawe, and by our lawe he ought to die, becauſe he made himſelfe the Sonne of God.

8 ¶ When Pilate then heard that worde, he was the more afrayd,

9 And went againe into the common hall, and ſaid vnto Ieſus, Whence art thou? But Ieſus gaue him none anſwere.

10 Then ſaid Pilate vnto him, Speakeſt thou not vnto me? Knoweſt thou not that I haue power to crucifie thee, and haue power to looſe thee?

11 Ieſus anſwered, Thou couldeſt haue no power at all againſt me, except it were giuen thee from aboue: therefore he that deliuered me vnto thee, hath the greater ſinne.

12 From

12 From thenceforth Pilate ſought to looſe him, but the Iewes cried, ſaying, If thou deliuer him, thou art not Ceſars friend: *for* whoſoeuer maketh himſelfe a King, ſpeaketh againſt Ceſar.

13 ¶ When Pilate heard this worde, hee brought Ieſus forth, and ſate downe in the iudgement ſeate in a place called the Pauement, and in Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the Preparation of the Paſſeouer, and about the ſixt houre: and he ſayd vnto the Iewes, Beholde your King.

15 But they cried, Away with him, away with him, crucifie him. Pilate ſayd vnto them, Shall I crucifie your King? The hie Prieſts anſwered, We haue no King but Ceſar.

16 Then deliuered he him vnto them, to be crucified. * And they tooke Ieſus, and led him away. *Mat.27.31. mar.15.25.*

17 And he bare his owne croſſe, & came into a place named *of dead mens* ſkulles, which is called in Hebrue, Golgotha: *Luke 23.26.*

18 Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either ſide one, and Ieſus in the middes.

19 ¶ And Pilate wrote alſo a title, and put it on the croſſe, and it was written, IESVS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE IEWES.

20 This title then read many of the Iewes: for the place where Ieſus was crucified, was neere to the citie: and it was written in Hebrew, Greeke, and Latin.

21 Then ſaid the hie Prieſts of the Iewes to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Iewes, but that he ſayd, I am King of the Iewes.

22 Pilate anſwered, What I haue written, I haue written.

23 ¶ Then the * ſouldiers, when they had crucified Ieſus, tooke his garments (and made foure partes, to euery ſouldier a part) and *his* coate: and the coate was without ſeame wouen from the top throughout. *Mat.27.35. mar.15.24.*

24 Therefore they ſayd one to another, Let vs not deuide it, but caſt lottes for it, whoſe it ſhall be. *This was* that the Scripture might be fulfilled, which ſaith, * They parted my garments among them, and on my coate did caſt lottes. So the ſouldiers did theſe things in deede. *Pſal.22.18.*

25 ¶ Then ſtood by the croſſe of Ieſus, his mother, and his mothers ſiſter, Marie *the wife of* Cleopas, & Marie Magdalene.

26 And when Ieſus ſaw his mother, and the diſciple ſtanding by, whome he loued, he ſaid vnto his mother, Woman,

beholde thy sonne.

27 Then saide he to the disciple, Beholde thy mother: and from that houre, the disciple tooke her home vnto him.

28 ¶ After, when Iesus knewe that all things were perfor-
*Psal.69.22.* med, that the *Scripture might be fulfilled, he saide, I thirst.

29 And there was set a vessel full of vineger: and they filled a spondge with vineger, and put it about an hyssope *stalke*, and put it to his mouth.

30 Now when Iesus had receiued of the vineger, he sayd, It is finished, and bowed his head, and gaue vp the ghost.

31 The Iewes then (because it was the Preparation, that the bodies should not remaine vpon the crosse on the Sabbath *day*: for that Sabbath was an hie day) besought Pilate that their legs might bee broken, and that they might be taken downe.

32 Then came the souldiers and brake the legs of the first, and of the other, which was crucified with *Iesus*.

33 But when they came to Iesus, and sawe that he was dead already, they brake not his legs.

34 But one of the souldiers with a speare pearced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

35 And he that saw it, bare record, & his record is true: and he knoweth that he sayth true, that ye might beleeue it.

36 For these things were done that the Scripture should
*Exo.12.46.* *nom.9.12.* be fulfilled, * Not a bone of him shalbe broken.

37 And againe another Scripture sayth, *They shall see
*Zech.12.10.* him whome they haue thrust through.

38 * And after these things Ioseph of Arimathea (who
*Mat.27.57.* *mar.15.42.* *luke 23.50.* was a disciple of Iesus, but secretly for feare of the Iewes) besought Pilate ỹ he might take downe the body of Iesus. And Pilate gaue him licence. He came then and tooke Iesus body.

*Chap 3.2.* 39 And there came * also Nicodemus (which first came to Iesus by night) and brought of myrrhe and aloes mingled together about an hundreth pound.

40 Then tooke they the body of Iesus, and wrapped it in linnen clothes with the odours, as the maner of the Iewes is to burie.

41 And in that place where Iesus was crucified, was a garden, and in the garden a newe sepulchre, wherein was neuer man yet laide.

42 There then laide they Iesus, because of the Iewes Preparation *day*, for the sepulchre was neere.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XX.

*1 Marie bringeth worde that Christ is risen. 3 Peter and Iohn 4 runne to see it. 14 Iesus appeareth to Marie, 19 and to the disciples that were together in the house. 25 Thomas, before faithlesse, 29 nowe beleeueth.*

NOw *the first day of the weeke came Marie Magdalene, early when it was yet darke, vnto the sepulchre, and saw the stone taken away from the tombe. *Mar.16.1. luke 24.1.*

2 Then she ranne, and came to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple whom Iesus loued, and sayd vnto them, They haue taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they haue laide him.

3 Peter therefore went foorth, and the other disciple, and they came vnto the sepulchre.

4 So they ranne both together, but the other disciple did outrunne Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.

5 And he stouped downe, and sawe the linnen clothes lying: yet went he not in.

6 Then came Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and sawe the linnen clothes lye,

7 And the kerchiefe that was vpon his head, not lying with the linnen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it selfe.

8 Then went in also the other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, and he sawe it, and beleeued.

9 For as yet they knewe not the Scripture, That he must rise againe from the dead.

10 And the disciples went away againe vnto their owne home.

11 ¶ *But Marie stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, she bowed her selfe into the sepulchre, *Mat.28.1. mar.16.5.*

12 And sawe two Angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feete, where the body of Iesus had lien.

13 And they saide vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She said vnto them, They haue taken away my Lorde, and I know not where they haue laied him.

14 When she had thus said, she turned her selfe backe, and sawe Iesus standing, and knewe not that it was Iesus.

15 Iesus sayth vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? Whome seekest thou? She supposing that hee had bene the gardiner, said vnto him, Sir, if thou hast borne him hence, tell me where thou hast layd him, and I wil take him away.

16 Iesus saith vnto her, Marie. She turned her selfe, & sayd vnto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

17 Iesus saith vnto her, Touch mee not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but goe to my brethren, and say vnto them, I ascend vnto my Father, and to your Father, and to my God, and your God.

18 Marie Magdalene came and tolde the disciples that she had seene the Lorde, and that hee had spoken these things vnto her.

*Mar.16.14. Luke 24.36. 1.cor.15.5.* 19 ¶ * The same day then at night, which was the first *day* of the weeke, and when the doores were shut where the disciples were assembled for feare of the Iewes, came Iesus and stood in the mids, and said to them, Peace *be* vnto you.

20 And when he had so saide, hee shewed vnto them *his* hands, and his side. Then were the disciples glad when they had seene the Lorde.

*Mat.28.18.* 21 * Then said Iesus to them againe, Peace *be* vnto you: as my Father sent me, so send I you.

22 And when he had said that, he breathed on them and sayd vnto them, Receiue the holy Ghost.

23 Whosoeuers sinnes yee remit, they are remitted vnto them: *and* whosoeuers sinnes ye reteine, they are reteined.

24 ¶ But Thomas one of the twelue, called Didymus, was not with them when Iesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore sayd vnto him, We haue seene the Lorde: but he sayd vnto them, Except I see in his hands the print of the nayles, and put my finger into the print of the nayles, and put my hand into his side, I will not beleeue it.

26 ¶ And eight dayes after againe his disciples were within, and Thomas with them. *Then* came Iesus, when the doores were shut, and stood in the mids, and said, Peace *be* vnto you.

27 After, said he to Thomas, Put thy finger here, and see mine hands, and put forth thine hand, and put it into my side, and be not faithlesse, but faithfull.

28 Then Thomas answered, and sayd vnto him, *Thou art* my Lord, and my God.

29 Iesus said vnto him, Thomas, because thou hast seene me, thou beleeuest: blessed *are* they that haue not seene, and haue beleeued.

*Chap.21.25.* 30 ¶ * And many other signes also did Iesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this booke.

31 But

31 But these things are written, that ye might beleeue, that Iesus is that Christ that Sonne of God, and that in beleeuing ye might haue life through his Name.

## CHAP. XXI.

1 *Iesus appeareth to his disciples as they were a fishing, 6.7 whome they knew by a miraculous draught of fishes. 15 Hee committeth the charge of the sheepe to Peter, 18 and foretelleth him of the maner of his death.*

AFter these things, Iesus shewed him selfe againe to his disciples at the sea of Tiberias: and thus shewed hee *himselfe.*

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas, which is called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galile, and the *sonnes* of Zebedeus, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter sayd vnto them, I goe a fishing. They sayd vnto him, We also will goe with thee. Then they went their way and entred into a ship straightway, and that night caught they nothing.

4 But when the morning was nowe come, Iesus stoode on the shore: neuertheless the disciples knewe not that it was Iesus.

5 Iesus then sayd vnto them, Syrs, haue ye any meate? They answered him, No.

6 Then he said vnto them, Cast out the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shal finde. So they cast out, and they were not able at all to drawe it, for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore said the disciple whom Iesus loued, vnto Peter, It is the Lord. When Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girded his coate to him (for he was naked) and cast himselfe into the sea.

8 But the other disciples came by ship (for they were not farre from land, but about two hundreth cubites) and they drewe the net with fishes.

9 Assoone then as they were come to land, they saw hoate coales, and fish laide thereon, and bread.

10 Iesus sayd vnto them, Bring of the fishes, which ye haue nowe caught.

11 Simon Peter stepped forth and drew the net to land, ful of great fishes, an hundreth fiftie and three: and albeit there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Iesus sayd vnto them, Come *and* dine. And none of the disciples durst aske him, Who art thou? seeing they knew that

hee was the Lorde.

13 Ieſus then came and tooke bread, and gaue them, and fiſh likewiſe.

14 This is nowe the third time that Ieſus ſhewed himſelfe to his diſciples, after that he was riſen againe from the dead.

15 ¶ So when they had dined, Ieſus ſaid to Simon Peter, Simon *the ſonne* of Iona, loueſt thou me more then theſe? He ſayd vnto him, Yea Lord, thou knoweſt that I loue thee. Hee ſaid vnto him, Feede my lambes.

16 He ſaid to him againe the ſecond time, Simon *the ſonne* of Iona, loueſt thou me? Hee ſaide vnto him, Yea Lord, thou knoweſt that I loue thee. He ſaid vnto him, Feede my ſheepe.

17 He ſaid vnto him the third time, Simon *the ſonne* of Iona, loueſt thou me? Peter was ſorie becauſe he ſaid to him the third time, Loueſt thou me? and ſaid vnto him, Lorde, thou knoweſt all things: thou knoweſt that I loue thee. Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Feede my ſheepe.

18 Verely, verely I ſay vnto thee, When thou waſt yong, thou girdedſt thy ſelfe and walkedſt whither thou wouldeſt: but when thou ſhalt be olde, thou ſhalt ſtreteh foorth thine hands, and another ſhall girde thee, and leade thee whither thou wouldeſt not.

19 And this ſpake he ſignifying by what death he ſhould glorifie God. And when he had ſayd this, he ſaid to him, Followe mee.

20 Then Peter turned about, and ſawe the diſciple whome *Chap.13.23.* Ieſus loued, following, which had alſo * leaned on his breſt at ſupper, and had ſaid, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?

21 When Peter therefore ſawe him, he ſayd to Ieſus, Lord, what ſhall this man *doe*?

22 Ieſus ſaide vnto him, If I will that he tary till I come, what is it to thee? followe thou me.

23 Then went this word abroad among the brethren, that this diſciple ſhuld not die. Yet Ieſus ſaid not vnto him, he ſhal not die: but if I wil that he tarie till I come, what is it to thee?

24 This is that diſciple which teſtifieth of theſe things, and wrote theſe things, and we knowe that his teſtimonie is true.

*Chap.20.30.* 25 * Nowe there are alſo many other things which Ieſus did, the which if they ſhould be written euery one, I ſuppoſe the worlde coulde not conteine the bookes that ſhould be written, AMEN.

THE

# THE ACTES OF THE HOLY APOSTLES WRITTEN BY Luke the Euangeliſt.

## CHAP. I.

*1 Luke tieth this Hiſtorie to his Goſpel. 9 Chriſt being taken into heauen, 10 the Apoſtles 11 being warned by the Angels, 12 returne, 14 and giue themſelues to prayer. 15 By Peters motion, 18 into Iudas the traitours place, Matthias is choſen.*

THe haue made the former treatiſe, O Theophilus, of all that IESVS began to doe and teach,

2 Vntill the day, that he was taken vp, after that hee through the holy Ghoſt, had giuen commandements vnto the Apoſtles, whome he had choſen:

3 To whom alſo he preſented himſelfe aliue after that hee had ſuffered, by many infallible tokens, being ſeene of them by the *ſpace* of fourtie dayes, and ſpeaking of thoſe thinges which *apperteine* to the kingdome of God.

4 * And when hee had gathered *them* together, hee commaunded them, that they ſhould not depart from Hieruſalem, but to waite for the promes of the Father, *which, ſaid he*, ye haue heard of me: *Luke 24.49. John 14.25.*

5 *For Iohn in deede baptized with water, but ye ſhall be baptized with the holy Ghoſt within theſe fewe dayes. *Chap.2.2. and 11.16. and 19.4. matt.3.11. marke 1.8. luke 3.16.*

6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, ſaying, Lord, wilt thou at this time reſtore the kingdome to Iſrael?

7 And he ſaide vnto them, It is not for you to knowe the times, or the ſeaſons, which the Father hath put in his owne power,

8 *But ye ſhall receiue power of the holy Ghoſt, when he ſhall come on you: and ye ſhall be witneſſes vnto me both in Hieruſalem and in all Iudea, and in Samaria, and vnto the vttermoſt part of the earth. *Chap.2.2.*

9 *And whē he had ſpoken theſe things, while they beheld, he was taken vp: for a cloud tooke him vp out of their ſight. *Luke 24.51.*

10 And while they looked ſtedfaſtly toward heauen, as he went, beholde, two men ſtoode by them in white apparell,

11 Which alſo ſaid, Ye men of Galile, why ſtand ye gazing into heauen? This Ieſus which is taken vp from you into heauen, ſhall ſo come, as ye haue ſeene him go into heauen.

12 ¶Then

12 ¶ Then returned they vnto Hierusalem from the mount that is called *the mount* of Oliues, which is neere to Hierusalem, being from it a Sabbath *dayes* iourney.

13 And when they were come in, they went vp into an vpper chamber, where abode both Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartlemewe, and Matthewe, Iames *the sonne* of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and Iudas Iames *brother*.

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication with the women, and Mary the mother of Iesus, and with his brethren.

15 ¶ And in those dayes Peter stoode vp in the middes of the disciples, and said (now the nomber of names that were in one place were about an hundreth and twentie)

16 Ye men *and* brethren, this Scripture must needes haue bene fulfilled, which the * holy Ghost by the mouth of Dauid spake before of Iudas, which was * guide to them that tooke Iesus.

*Psal.41.9.*
*Iohn 13.27.*

17 For he was nombred with vs, and had obteined fellowship in this ministration.

18 He therefore hath purchased a field with the reward of iniquitie: and when hee *had throwen downe himselfe headlong, he brast asunder in the mids, & al his bowels gushed out.

*Matt.27.5.*

19 And it is knowen vnto all the inhabitants of Hierusalem, in so much that that fielde is called in their owne language, Aceldema, that is, The fielde of blood.

20 For it is written in the booke of Psalmes, * Let his habitation be voyde, and let no man dwell therein: * also, Let another take his charge.

*Psal.69.26.*
*Psal.109.7.*

21 Wherefore, of these men which haue companied with vs, all the time that the Lord Iesus was conuersant among vs,

22 Beginning from the baptisme of Iohn vnto the day that he was taken vp from vs, must one of them be made a witnes with vs of his resurrection.

23 And they presented two, Ioseph called Barsabas, whose surname was Iustus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, saying, Thou Lorde, which knowest the heartes of all men, shewe whether of these two thou hast chosen,

25 That hee may take the roume of this ministration and Apostleship, from which Iudas hath gone astray, to goe to his owne place.

26 Then

26 Then they gaue foorth their lottes: and the lot fell on Matthias, and he was by a common consent counted with the eleuen Apostles.

## CHAP. II.

1 *The Apostles 4 filled with the holy Ghost 8 speake with diuers tongues: 12 They are thought to be drunke, 15 but Peter disproueth that: 34 He teacheth that Christ is the Messias: 37 and seeing the hearers astonied, 38 hee exhorteth them to repentance.*

AND when the day of Pentecost was come, they were all with one accorde in one place.

2 And suddenly there came a sounde frō heauen, as of a rushing & mightie winde, & it filled al ȳ house where they sate.

3 And there appeared vnto them clouen tongues, like fire, and it sate vpon eche of them.

4 And they were al filled with the holy Ghost, & began to speake with other tongues, as the Spirit gaue them vtterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Hierusalem Iewes, men that feared God, of euery nation vnder heauen.

6 Nowe when this was noysed, the multitude came together and were astonied, because that euery man heard them speake his owne language.

7 And they wondered all, and marueiled, saying among themselues, Beholde, are not all these which speake, of Galile?

8 Howe then heare wee euery man our owne language, wherein we were borne?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the inhabitants of Mesopotamia, and of Iudea, and of Cappadocia, of Pontus, and Asia,

10 And of Phrygia, and Pamphylia, of Egypt, and of the parts of Libya, which is befide Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, and Iewes, and proselytes,

11 Cretes, and Arabians: wee heard them speake in our owne tongues the wonderfull *workes* of God.

12 They were all then amased, and douted, saying one to another, What may this be?

13 And others mocked, & said, They are full of new wine.

14 ¶ But Peter stāding with the eleuen lift vp his voice, and said vnto them, Ye men of Iudea, & ye al that inhabite Hierusalem, be this knowen vnto you, and hearken vnto my words.

15 For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, since it is but the thirde houre of the day.

16 But

*Ioel 2.28.* 16 But this is that, which was spokē by the Prophet *Ioel,
*Isa.24.3.* 17 And it shall be in the last dayes, saith God, I will powre out of my Spirit vpon al flesh, and your sonnes, & your daughters shall prophecie, and your yong men shall see visions, and your olde men shall dreame dreames.

18 And on my seruants, and on mine handmaydes I will powre out of my Spirit in those dayes, & they shal prophecie.

19 And I will shewe wonders in heauen aboue, and tokens in the earth beneath, blood, and fire, and the vapour of smoke.

20 The Sunne shalbe turned into darkenes, and the moone into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lorde come.

21 And it shalbe, that whosoeuer shall call on the Name of the Lord, shalbe saued.

22 Ye men of Israel, heare these wordes, IESVS of Nazareth, a man approued of God amōg you with great workes, and wonders and signes, which God did by him in the middes of you, as ye your selues also know:

23 Him, *I say*, being deliuered by the determinate counsel, and foreknowledge of God, after you had taken, with wicked handes you haue crucified and slaine.

24 Whom God hath raised vp, and loosed the sorowes of death, because it was vnpossible ẏ he should be holden of it.

*Psal.16.9.* 25 For Dauid saith concerning him, *I beheelde the Lorde alwayes before me: for he is at my right hande, that I should not be shaken.

26 Therefore did mine heart reioyce, and my tongue was glad, and moreouer also my flesh shall rest in hope,

27 Because thou wilt not leaue my soule in graue, neither wilt suffer thine Holy one to see corruption.

28 Thou hast shewed me the wayes of life, and shalt make me full of ioy with thy countenance.

29 Men *and* brethren, I may boldly speake vnto you of the
*Chap.13 36.* patriarche Dauid, * that hee is both dead and buried, and his
*1.king.2.10* sepulchre remaineth with vs vnto this day.

*Psal.132 11.* 30 Therefore, seeing hee was a Prophet, and knewe that God had *sworne with an othe to him, that of the fruite of his loynes hee woulde raise vp Christ concerning the flesh, to set him vpon his throne,

31 Hee knowing this before, spake of the resurrection of
*Chap.13.35.* Christ, that * his soule should not bee left in graue, neither his
*Psal.16.10.* flesh should see corruption.

32 This

32 This Ieſus hath God raiſed vp, whereof wee all are witneſſes.

33 Since then that he by the right hand of God hath bene exalted, & hath receiued of his Father the promiſe of the holy Ghoſt, he hath ſhed forth this which ye now ſee and heare.

34 For Dauid is not aſcended into heauen, but hee ſaith, *The Lord ſaid to my Lord, Sit at my right hand,* *Pſal.110.1.*

35 Vntill I make thine enemies thy footeſtoole.

36 Therefore, let all the houſe of Iſrael know for a ſuretie, that God hath made him both Lorde, and Chriſt, this Ieſus, *I ſay*, whome ye haue crucified.

37 Nowe when they heard *it*, they were pricked in their heartes, and ſaide vnto Peter and the other Apoſtles, Men *and* brethren, what ſhall we doe?

38 Then Peter ſaid vnto them, Amend your liues, & be baptized euery one of you in the name of Ieſus Chriſt for the remiſſion of ſinnes: and ye ſhal receiue the gift of ✠ holy Ghoſt.

39 For the promiſe *is made* vnto you, and to your children, and to al that are a farre off, *euen* as many as the Lord our God ſhall call.

40 And with many other wordes he beſought and exhorted *them*, ſaying, Saue your ſelues frō this froward generation.

41 Then they that gladly receiued his worde, were baptized: and the ſame day, there were added *to the Church* about three thouſand ſoules.

42 And they ¶continued in the Apoſtles doctrine, and fellowſhip, and breaking of bread, and prayers.

43 ¶And feare came vpon euery ſoule: and many wonders and ſignes were done by the Apoſtles.

44 And all that beleeued, were in one place, and had all things common.

45 And they ſolde their poſſeſſions and goods, and parted them to all men, as euery one had neede.

46 And they continued dayly with one accord in the Temple, and breaking bread at home, did eate their meate together with gladneſſe and ſingleneſſe of heart,

47 Prayſing God, and had fauour with all the people: and the Lord added to the Church from day to day, ſuch as ſhould be ſaued.

## CHAP. III.

*1 Peter going vp into the Temple with Iohn, 2 healeth the creeple. 9 To the people gathered together to ſee the miracle, 12 he expoundeth*

*expounded the mysterie of our salvation through Christ, 14 accusing their ingratitude, 19 and requiring their repentance.*

NOw Peter and Iohn went vp together into the Temple, at the ninth houre of prayer.

2 And a certaine man which was a creeple from his mothers wombe, was caried, whome they layde dayly at the gate of the Temple called Beautifull, to aske almes of them that entred into the Temple.

3 Who seeing Peter and Iohn, that they would enter into the Temple, desired to receiue an almes.

4 And Peter earnestly beholding him with Iohn, sayde, Looke on vs.

5 And hee gaue heede vnto them, trusting to receiue some thing of them.

6 Then said Peter, Siluer and golde haue I none, but such as I haue, that giue I thee: In the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, rise vp and walke.

7 And he tooke him by the right hand, and lift *him* vp, and immediatly his feete and ankle bones receiued strength.

8 And hee leaped vp, stoode, and walked, and entred with them into the Temple, walking & leaping, and praysing God.

9 And all the people saw him walke, and praysing God.

10 And they knewe him, that it was he which sate for the almes at the Beautifull gate of the Temple: and they were amased, and sore astonied at that, which was come vnto him.

11 ¶ And as the creeple which was healed, held Peter and Iohn, all the people ranne amased vnto them in the porche which is called Solomons.

12 So when Peter sawe it, hee answered vnto the people, Ye men of Israel, why marueile ye at this? or why looke ye so stedfastly on vs, as though by our owne power or godlinesse, we had made this man goe?

*Chap. 5 30.* 13 The God of Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, the *God of our fathers hath glorified his Sonne Iesus, whom ye betrayed, and denied in the presence of Pilate, when he had iudged him to be deliuered.

14 But ye denied the Holy one and the Iust, and desired a murtherer to be giuen you,

15 And killed the Lorde of life, whome God hath raysed from the dead, whereof we are witnesses.

16 And his Name hath made this man sounde, whome ye see, and know, through faith in his Name; and the faith, which

is

is by him, hath giuen to him this perfit health of his whole body in the presence of you all.

17 And now brethren, I know that through ignorance ye did it, as *did* also your gouernours.

18 But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his Prophets, that Christ shoulde suffer, hee hath thus fulfilled.

19 Amend your liues therefore, and turne, that your sinnes may bee put away, when the time of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.

20 And he shall send Iesus Christ, which before was preached vnto you.

21 Whome the heauen must conteine vntill the time that all thinges be restored, which God had spoken by the mouth of all his holy Prophets since the world began.

22 *For Moses said vnto the Fathers, The Lorde your God shall raise vp vnto you a Prophet, *euen* of your brethren like vnto me: ye shall heare him in all things, whatsoeuer he shall say vnto you. *Chap.7.37. deut.18.15.*

23 For it shall be that euery person which shall not heare that Prophet, shalbe destroyed out of the people.

24 Also all the Prophets from Samuel, and thenceforth as many as haue spoken, haue likewise foretolde of these dayes.

25 Ye are the children of the Prophets, & of the couenant, which God hath made vnto our fathers, saying to Abraham, *Euen in thy seed shall all the kinreds of the earth be blessed. *Gen.12.3.*

26 First vnto you hath God raysed vp his Sonne Iesus, and him hee hath sent to blesse you, in turning euery one of you from your iniquities. *galat.3.8.*

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 Peter and Iohn 3 are taken and brought before the Councill: 7 and 19 They speake boldly in Christes cause. 24 The disciples pray vnto God. 32 Many sell their possessions: 36 Of whome Barnabas is one.*

AND as they spake vnto the people, the Priests & the Captaine of the Temple, and the Sadduces came vpon them,

2 Taking it grieuously that they taught the people, and preached in Iesus *Name* the resurrection from the dead.

3 And they layde handes on them, and put them in holde, vntill the next day: for it was now euentide.

4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the worde, beleeued, and the nomber of the men was about fiue thousand.

5 ¶And

5 ¶ And it came to passe on the morowe, that their rulers, and Elders, & Scribes, were gathered together at Hierusalem,
6 And Annas the chiefe Priest, and Caiaphas, and Iohn, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kinred of the hie Prieſtes.
7 And when they had set them before them, they asked, By what power, or in what Name haue ye done this?
8 Then Peter full of the holy Ghost, saide vnto them, Ye rulers of the people, and Elders of Israel,
9 For as much as wee this day are examined of the good deede *done* to the impotent man, *so wil*, by what meanes he is made whole,
10 Be it knowen vnto you all, & to all the people of Israel, that by ỹ Name of IESVS CHRIST of Nazareth, whom ye haue crucified, whome God rayſed againe from the dead, *euen* by him doeth this man stand here before you, whole.
*Psal.118.22.* *Isa.28.16.* *matt.21.42.* *mar.12.10.* *luke 20.17.* *rom.9.33.* *1.pet.2.7.*
11 * This is the stone cast aside of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.
12 Neither is there saluation in any other: for among men there is giuen none other Name vnder heauen, whereby wee must be saued.
13 Now when they sawe the boldneſſe of Peter and Iohn, and vnderstoode that they were vnlearned men and without knowledge, they marueiled, and knewe them, that they had bene with Ieſus:
14 And beholding also the man which was healed standing with them, they had nothing to say against it.
15 Then they commaunded them to goe aside out of the Councill, and conferred among themselues,
16 Saying, What shall we doe to these men? for surely a manifeſt signe is done by them, *and it is* openly knowen to all them that dwell in Hierusalem: and we cannot denie it.
17 But that it be noyſed no farther among the people, let vs threaten and charge them, that they speake henceforth to no man in this Name.
18 So they called them, and commanded them, that in no wiſe they should speake or teach in the Name of Ieſus.
19 But Peter and Iohn answered vnto them, and said, Whether it be right in the sight of God, to obey you rather then God, iudge ye.
20 For we can not but speake the thinges which wee haue seene and heard.

21 So

21 So they threatned them, and let them goe, and founde nothing howe to punish them, because of the people: for all men praised God for that which was done.

22 For the man was aboue fourtie yeeres olde, on whome this miracle of healing was shewed.

23 Then assoone as they were let goe, they came to their fellowes, and shewed all that the hie Priests and Elders had saide vnto them.

24 And when they heard it, they lift vp their voyces to God with one accorde, and saide, O Lorde, thou art the God which hast made the heauen, and the earth, the sea, and all things that are in them,

25 Which by ✠ mouth of thy seruãt Dauid hast said, *Why did the Gentiles rage, and the people imagine vaine things? *Psal.2.1.*

26 The kings of the earth assembled, and the rulers came together against the Lord, and against his Christ.

27 For doubtles, against thine holy Sonne Iesus, whome thou haddest anointed, both Herod & Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles & the people of Israel gathered thẽselues together,

28 To do whatsoeuer thine hand, and thy counsell had determined before to be done.

29 And now, O Lord, behold their threatnings, and graunt vnto thy seruants with all boldnes to speake thy word,

30 So that thou stretch foorth thine hand, that healing, and signes and wonders may be done by the name of thine holy sonne Iesus.

31 And when as they had praied, the place was shaken where they were assembled together, and they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God boldly.

32 And the multitude of them that beleeued, were of one heart, & of one soule: neither any of them saide, that any thing of that which hee possessed, was his owne, but they had all things * common. *Chap.2.44.*

33 And with great power gaue the Apostles witnes of the resurrection of the Lord Iesus: & great grace was vpon thẽ all.

34 Neither was there any among them, that lacked: for as many as were possessours of landes or houses, solde them, and brought the price of the things that were solde,

35 And laide it downe at the Apostles feete, and it was distributed vnto euery man, according as he had neede.

36 Also Ioses which was called of the Apostles, Barnabas (that is by interpretation, the sonne of consolation) being a

Leuite, and of the countrey of Cyprus,

37 Where as he had land, solde it, and brought the money, and laide it downe at the Apostles feete.

## CHAP. V.

1 *Ananias, for his deceit in keeping backe part of the price,* 5 *falleth downe dead,* 10 *and likewise Sapphira his wife.* 12 *Through diuers the Apostles myracles* 14 *the faith is increased.* 18 *The Apostles that were imprisoned* 19 *are deliuered by an Angell,* 26 *and being before the Synode of the Priests,* 36 *through Gamaliels counsell they are kept aliue,* 40 *and beaten:* 41 *They glorifie God.*

BVt a certaine man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, solde a possession,

2 And kept away *part* of the price, his wife also being of counsel, and brought a certaine part, and laide it downe at the Apostles feete.

3 Then sayde Peter, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart, that thou shouldest lie vnto the holy Ghost, and keepe away *part* of the price of this possession?

4 Whiles it remained, appertained it not vnto thee? and after it was solde, was it not in thine owne power? howe is it that thou hast conceiued this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied vnto men, but vnto God.

5 Nowe when Ananias heard these words, he fell downe, and gaue vp the ghost. Then great feare came on all them that heard these things.

6 And the yong men rose vp, and tooke him vp, and caried *him* out, and buried *him*.

7 And it came to passe about the space of three houres after, that his wife came in, ignorant of that which was done.

8 And Peter saide vnto her, Tell me, solde ye the lande for so much? And shee said, Yea, for so much.

9 Then Peter saide vnto her, Why haue yee agreed together, to tempt the Spirite of the Lorde? beholde, the feete of them which haue buried thine husband, *are* at the doore, and shall carie thee out.

10 Then shee fel downe straightway at his feete, and yeelded vp the ghost: and the yong men came in, and founde her dead, and caried her out, and buried her by her husband.

11 And great feare came on all the Church, and on as many as heard these things.

12 Thus by the handes of the Apostles were many signes and

and wonders shewed among the people (and they were all with one accord in Solomons porch.

13 And of the other durst no man ioyne himselfe to them: neuertheleſſe the people magnified them.

14 Also the number of them that beleeued in the Lorde, both of men and women, grewe more and more)

15 In so much y they brought the sicke into the streetes, and laide them on beds and couches, that at the least way the shadow of Peter, whē he came by, might shadow some of thē.

16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about vnto Hierusalem, bringing sicke folkes, and them which were vexed with vncleane spirits, who were all healed.

17 ¶ Then the chiefe Priest rose vp, and all they that were with him (which was the sect of the Sadduces) and were full of indignation,

18 And laide handes on the Apostles, and put them in the common prison.

19 But the Angel of the Lorde, by night opened the prison doores, and brought them forth, and sayde,

20 Goe your way, and stande in the Temple, and speake to the people, all the wordes of this life.

21 So when they heard it, they entred into the Temple early in the morning, and taught. And the chiefe Priest came, and they that were with him, and called the Councill together, and al the Elders of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison, to cause them to be brought.

22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned and tolde it,

23 Saying, Certainely we founde the prison shut as sure as was possible, and the keepers standing without, before the doores: but when we had opened, we found no man within.

24 Then when the *chiefe* Priest, and the captaine of the Temple, and the hie Priestes heard these things, they doubted of them, whereunto this would growe.

25 Then came one and shewed them, saying, Beholde, the men that ye put in prison, are standing in the Temple, & teach the people.

26 Then went the captaine with the officers, and brought them without violence (for they feared the people, least they should haue bene stoned)

27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the Councill, and the chiefe Priest asked them,

28 Saying, Did not we straitly commād you, that ye should not teach in this Name? and behold, ye haue filled Hierusalem w your doctrine, & ye would bring this mans blood vpon vs.

29 Then Peter and the Apostles answered, and sayde, We ought rather to obey God then men.

Chap. 3. 13. 30 The * God of our fathers hath raised vp Iesus, whome ye slewe, and hanged on a tree.

31 Him hath God lift vp with his right hand, *to be* a Prince and a Sauiour, to giue repentance to Israel, and forgiuenesse of sinnes.

32 And we are his witnesses cōcerning these things which we say: yea, and the holy Ghost, whome God hath giuen to them that obey him.

33 Now when they heard it, they brast for anger, and consulted to slaie them.

34 Then stoode there vp in the Council a certaine Pharise named Gamaliel, a doctour of the Lawe, honoured of all the people, & commanded to put the Apostles forth a litle space,

35 And saide vnto them, Men of Israel, take heede to your selues, what ye intend to doe touching these men.

36 For before these times, rose vp Theudas boasting himselfe, to whome resorted a number of men, about a foure hundreth, who was slaine: and they all which obeied him, were scattered, and brought to nought.

37 After this man, arose vp Iudas of Galile, in the daies of the tribute, and drewe away much people after him: he also perished, and all that obeied him, were scattered abroade.

38 And now I say vnto you, Refraine your selues frō these men, and let them alone: for if this counsell, or this woorke be of men, it will come to nought:

39 But if it be of God, yee can not destroy it, least yee be found euen fighters against God.

40 And to him they agreed, and called the Apostles: and when they had beaten them, they commanded ỹ they should not speake in the Name of Iesus, and let them goe.

41 So they departed from the Council, reioycing that they were counted worthy to suffer rebuke for his Name.

42 And daily in the Temple, and from house to house they ceased not to teach, and preach Iesus Christ.

## CHAP. VI.

2 *The Apostles* 3 *appoint the office of Deaconship* 5 *to seuen chosen men:* 8 *Of whom Steuen, full of faith, is one:* 12 *He is taken*

*taken 13 and accused as a transgressour of Moses Lawe.*

AND in those daies, as the number of the disciples grewe, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians towardes the Hebrewes, because their widowes were neglected in the daily ministring.

2 Then the twelue called the multitude of the disciples together, and saide, It is not meete that we shoulde leaue the worde of God to serue the tables.

3 Wherefore brethren, looke yee out among you seuen men of honest report, and full of the holy Ghost, and of wisedome, which we may appoint to this businesse.

4 And we will giue our selues continually to praier, and to the ministration of the word.

5 And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Steuen a man full of faith and of the holy Ghost, and *Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas, a Proselyte of Antiochia. *Chap. 21. 8.*

6 Which they set before the Apostles: and they praied, and laid their hands on them.

7 And the worde of God increased, and the number of the disciples was multiplied in Hierusalem greatly, and a great companie of the Priests were obedient to the faith.

8 ¶ Nowe Steuen full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.

9 Then there arose certaine of the Synagogue, which are called Libertines and Cyrenians, and of Alexandria, and of them of Cilicia, and of Asia, and disputed with Steuen.

10 But they were not able to resist the wisdome, and the Spirit by the which he spake.

11 Then they suborned men, which saide, We haue heard him speake blasphemous words against Moses, and God.

12 Thus they mooued the people and the Elders, and the Scribes: and running vpon him, caught him, and brought him to the Councill,

13 And set forth false witnesses, which said, This man ceaseth not to speake blasphemous words against this holy place, and the Lawe.

14 For we haue heard him say, that this Iesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the ordinances, which Moses gaue vs.

15 And as all that sate in the Councill, looked stedfastly on him, they sawe his face as *it had bene* the face of an Angel.

## CHAP. VII.

¶ *Steuen pleading his cause sheweth that God chose the Fathers, 20 before Moses was borne, 47 and before the Temple was built: 44 And that all outwarde ceremonies were ordeined according to the heauenly Patterne. 54 The Iewes gnashing their teeth, 59 stone him.*

THen said the chiefe Priest, Are these things so?

2 And he saide, Ye men, brethren and fathers, hearken. The God of glorie appeared vnto our father Abraham, *Gen.12.4.* while he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran,

3 And said vnto him, Come out of thy countrey, and from thy kinred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee.

4 Then came he out of the land of the Caldeans, & dwelt in Charran. And after ¶ his father was dead, *God* brought him from thence into this land, wherein ye nowe dwell,

5 And hee gaue him none inheritance in it, no, not the breadth of a foote: yet he promised that he woulde giue it to him for a possession, and to his seede after him, when as yet he had no childe.

*Gen.15.13.* 6 But God spake thus, that his * seede should be a soiourner in a strange lande, and that they shoulde keepe it in bondage, and entreate it euill foure hundreth yeeres.

7 But the nation to whome they shalbe in bondage, will I iudge, sayeth God: and after that, they shall come foorth, and serue me in this place.

*Gen.17.9.* 8 *He gaue him also the couenant of circumcision: and so
*Gen.21.3.* *Abraham* begate * Isaac, and circumcised him the eight day:
*Gen.25.24.* and Isaac *begate* *Iacob, and Iacob the twelue *Patriarkes.
*Gen.29.33.* 9 And the Patriarkes mooued with enuie solde * Ioseph
*and 30.5.* into Egypt: but God was with him,
*and 35.23.* 10 And deliuered him out of all his afflictions, and * gaue
*Gene.37.28.* him fauour and wisdom in the sight of Pharao king of Egypt,
*Gen.41.37.* who made him gouernor ouer Egypt, & *ouer* his whole house.

11 ¶ Then came there a famine ouer all the land of Egypt and Chanaan, and great affliction, that our fathers founde no sustenance.

*Gen.42.1.* 12 But when * Iacob heard that there was corne in Egypt, he sent out fathers first:

*Gen.45.4.* 13 * And at the seconde time, Ioseph was knowen of his brethren, and Iosephs kinred was made knowen vnto Pharao.

14 Then sent Ioseph and caused his father to be brought, and all his kinred, euen three score and fifteene soules,

15 So

15 So *Iacob went downe into Egypt, and he * died, and our fathers, *Gen.46.5. Gen.49.33.*

16 And were remoued into Sychem, and were put in the sepulchre, that Abraham had bought *for money of the sonnes of Emor, *sonne* of Sychem. *Gen.23.16.*

17 But when the time of the promesse drewe neere, which God had sworne to Abraham, the people * grewe and multiplied in Egypt. *Exod.1.7.*

18 Till another king arose, which knewe not Ioseph.

19 The same dealt subtilly with our kinred, and euill intreated our fathers, & made them to cast out their yong children, that they should not remaine aliue.

20 * The same time was Moses borne, and was acceptable vnto God, which was nourished vp in his fathers house three moneths. *Exod.2.2.*

21 And when he was cast out, Pharaos daughter tooke him vp, and nourished him for her owne sonne.

22 And Moses was learned in all the wisedome of the Egyptians, and was mightie in wordes and in deedes.

23 Nowe when he was full fourtie yere olde, it came into his heart to visite his brethren, the children of Israel.

24 *And when he sawe one *of them* suffer wrong, he defended him, and auenged his quarell that had the harme done to him, and smote the Egyptian. *Exod.2.11.*

25 For he supposed his brethren would haue vnderstand, that God by his hand should giue them deliuerance: but they vnderstoode it not.

26 * And the next day, hee shewed him selfe vnto them as they stroue, and woulde haue set them at one againe, saying, Sirs, ye are brethren: why do ye wrong one to another? *Exod.2.13.*

27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a prince, and a rudge ouer vs?

28 Wilt thou kill mee, as thou diddest the Egyptian yesterday?

29 Then fled Moses at that saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sonnes.

30 And when fourtie yeeres were expired, there appeared to him in the * wildernesse of mount Sina, an Angell, of the Lord in a flame of fire, in a bush. *Exod.3.2.*

31 And when Moses sawe it, he wondered at the sight: and as he drewe neere to consider it, the voyce of the Lorde came vnto him, *saying*,

32 I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not beholde it.

33 Then the Lorde saide to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feete: for the place where thou standest, is holy ground.

34 I haue seene, I haue seene the affliction of my people, which is in Egypt, and I haue heard their groning, and am come downe to deliuer them: and nowe come, and I wil send thee into Egypt.

35 This Moses whō they forsooke, saying, Who made thee a prince & a iudge? the same God sent for a prince, & a deliuerer by ϋ hand of ϋ Angel, which appeared to him in the bush.

*Exo.7.8.9.10.11.14.* 36 He *brought them out, doing wonders, and miracles, in the lande of Egypt, and in the red sea, and in the wildernesse *fourtie yeeres.

*Exod.16.1. Chap.5.22. deut.18.15.* 37 This is that Moses, which saide vnto the children of Israel, * A Prophet shall the Lorde your God raise vp vnto you, *euen* of your brethren, like vnto me: him shall ye heare.

*Exod.19.2.* 38 *This is he that was in the Cōgregation, in the wildernes ϋ the Angel, which spake to him in mount Sina, and with our fathers, who receiued the liuely oracles to giue vnto vs.

39 To whom our Fathers would not obey, but refused, and in their hearts turned backe againe into Egypt:

*Exod.32.1.* 40 Saying vnto Aaron, *Make vs gods that may goe before vs: for we knowe not what is become of this Moses that brought vs out of the land of Egypt.

41 And they made a calfe in those daies, and offered sacrifice vnto the idole, and reioyced in the workes of their owne handes.

42 Then God turned him selfe away, and gaue them vp to serue the hoste of heauen, as it is written in the booke of the *Amos 5.25.* Prophets, *O house of Israel, haue ye offred to me slaine beasts and sacrifices by the space of fourtie yeres in the wildernes?

43 And yee tooke vp the tabernacle of Moloch, and the starre of your god Remphan, figures, which ye made to worship them: therefore I will carie you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witnes in the wilder- *Exod.25.40. hebr.8.5. Iosh.3.14.* nes, as he had appointed, speaking vnto *Moses, that he should make it according to the fashion that he had seene.

45 *Which *tabernacle* also our fathers receiued, & brought in with Iesus into the possession of the Gentiles, which God draue out before our fathers, vnto the daies of Dauid:

46 *Who

46 *Who founde fauour before God, and desired that he might finde a tabernacle for the God of Iacob. 2.*Sam.*7.2. *psal.*132.5.

47 * But Solomon built him an house. 1.*Chro.*17.

48 Howbeit the most High * dwelleth not in Temples made with hands, as saith the Prophet, 12.1.*king.* 6.1.

49 * Heauen *is* my throne, and earth *is* my footestoole: what house wil ye build for me, saith the Lord? or what place is it that I should rest in? *Chap.*17.24. *Isai.*66.1.

50 Hath not mine hand made all these things?

51 *Ye stifnecked and of vncircumcised hearts and eares, ye haue alwayes resisted the holy Ghost: as your fathers *did*, so *doe* you. *Iere.*9.26. *ezek.*44.9.

52 Which of the Prophets haue not your fathers persecuted? and they haue slaine them, which shewed before of the comming of that Iust, of whom ye are now the betrayers and murtherers,

53 * Which haue receiued the Lawe by the ordinance of Angels, and haue not kept it. *Exod.*19.16. *gal.*3.19.

54 But when they heard these things, their hearts brast for anger, and they gnashed at him with *their* teeth.

55 But he being full of the holy Ghost, looked stedfastly into heauen, and sawe the glory of God, and Iesus standing at the right hand of God,

56 And said, Behold, I see the heauens open, and the Sonne of man standing at the right hand of God.

57 Then they gaue a shout with a loude voyce, & stopped their eares, and ranne vpon him violently all at once,

58 And cast him out of the citie, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid downe their clothes at a yong mans feete, named Saul.

59 And they stoned Steuen, who called on *God*, and saide, Lord Iesus, receiue my spirit.

60 And he kneeled downe, and cryed with a loude voyce, Lord, lay not this sinne to their charge. And when he had thus spoken, he slept.

## CHAP. VIII.

*2 The godly make lamentation for Steuen. 3 Saul maketh hauocke of the Church. 5 Philip preacheth Christ at Samaria. 9 Simon Magus 18 his couetousnesse reproued. 26 Philip 27 commeth to the Ethiopian Eunuche, 38 & baptizeth him.*

AND Saul consented to his death, and at that time, there was a great persecution against the Church which was at Hierusalem,

Hierusalem, and they were all scattered abroade through the regions of Iudea and of Samaria, except the Apostles.

2 Then *certaine* men fearing God, caried Steuen amongs them, *to be buried*, and made great lamentation for him.

3 But Saul made hauocke of the Chuch, and entred into euery house, and drewe out both men and women, and put them into prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went to and fro preaching the worde.

5 ¶ Then came Philip into the citie of Samaria, and preached Christ vnto them.

6 And the people gaue heede vnto those things which Philip spake, with one accorde, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did.

7 For vncleane spirits crying with a loud voyce came out of many that were possessed *of them*: and many taken with palsies, and that halted, were healed.

8 And there was great ioy in that citie.

9 And there was before in the citie a certaine man called Simon, which vsed witchcraft, and bewitched the people of Samaria, saying that he himselfe was some great man.

10 To whom they gaue heede from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is that great power of God.

11 And they gaue heede vnto him, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But assoone as they beleeued Philippe, which preached the things that concerned the kingdome of God, and the Name of Iesus Christ, they were baptized both men & womē.

13 Then Simon himselfe beleeued also, and was baptized, and continued with Philip, and wondered, when he sawe the signes and great miracles which were done.

14 ¶ Now when the Apostles, which were at Hierusalem, heard say, that Samaria had receiued the word of God, they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn.

15 Which when they were come downe, prayed for them, that they might receiue the holy Ghost.

16 (For as yet, he was fallen downe on none of them, but they were baptized onely in the Name of the Lord Iesus.)

17 Then laide they their handes on them, and they receiued the holy Ghost.

18 And when Simon sawe, ỹ through laying on of the Apostles hands ỹ holy Ghost was giuen, he offred them money,

19 Saying,

19 Saying, Giue me also this power, that on whomsoeuer I lay the hands, he may receiue the holy Ghost.

20 Then said Peter vnto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou thinkest that the gift of God may be obteined with money.

21 Thou hast neither part nor fellowship in this businesse: for thine heart is not right in the sight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednesse, and pray God, that if it be possible, the thought of thine heart may be forgiuen thee.

23 For I see that thou art in the gall of bitternesse, and in the bond of iniquitie.

24 Then answered Simon, and said, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye haue spoken, come vpon me.

25 ¶ So they, when they had testified and preached the worde of the Lord, returned to Hierusalem, and preached the Gospel in many townes of the Samaritanes.

26 Then the Angel of the Lord spake vnto Philip, saying, Arise, and goe towarde the South vnto the way that goeth downe from Hierusalem vnto Gaza, which is waste.

27 And he arose and went on: and behold, a certaine Eunuche of Ethiopia, Candaces the Queene of the Ethiopians chiefe Gouernour, who had the rule of all her treasure, and came to Hierusalem to worship:

28 And as he returned sitting in his charet, he read Esaias the Prophet.

29 Then the Spirit saide vnto Philip, Goe neere and ioyne thy selfe to yonder charet.

30 And Philippe ranne thither, and heard him reade the Prophet Esaias, and said, But vnderstandest thou what thou readest?

31 And he said, Howe can I, except I had a guide? And he desired Philip, that he would come vp and sit with him.

32 Nowe the place of the Scripture which he read, was this, * He was led as a sheepe to the slaughter: and like a lambe dumme before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth. *Isa.53.7.*

33 In his humilitie his iudgement hath bene exalted: but who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.

34 Then ỹ Eunuche answered Philip, & said, I pray thee of whō speaketh ỹ Prophet this? of himselfe, or of some other mā?

35 Then

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same Scripture, and preached vnto him Iesus.

36 And as they went on their way, they came vnto a certaine water, and the Eunuch said, See, here is water: what doeth let me to be baptized?

37 And Philip saide vnto him, If thou beleeuest with all thine heart, thou mayest. Then he answered, and said, I beleeue that that Iesus Christ is that Sonne of God.

38 Then he commaunded the charet to stand still: and they went downe both into the water, both Philip and the Eunuch, and he baptized him.

39 And assoone as they were come vp out of the water, the Spirit of the Lorde caught away Philip, that the Eunuche sawe him no more: so he went on his way reioycing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus, and he walked to and fro preaching in all the cities, till he came to Cesarea.

## CHAP. IX.

*2 Saul going towarde Damascus, 4 is stroken downe to the ground of the Lord: 10 Ananias is sent 18 to baptize him. 23 The laying awaite of the Iewes 25 he escapeth, being let downe through the wall. 33 Peter cureth Aeneas of the palsie, 36 and by him Tabitha being dead 40 is restored to life.*

*Rom. 9. 5. Gala. 1. 13.* AND * Saul yet breathing out threatnings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went vnto the hie Priest,

2 And desired of him letters to Damascus to the Synagogues, that if he founde any that were of that way (either men or women) he might bring them bound vnto Hierusalem.

*Chap. 22. 6. 1. cor. 15. 8.* 3 Nowe as he iourneyed, it came to passe that as he was comeneere to Damascus, * suddenly there shined rounde about him a light from heauen.

4 And he fell to the earth, & heard a voyce, saying to him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

5 And he saide, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord saide, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kicke against prickes.

6 He *then* both trembling, and astonied, saide, Lorde, what wilt thou that I doe? And the Lorde said vnto him, Arise, and goe into the citie, and it shalbe told thee what thou shalt do.

7 The men also which iourneyed with him, stood amased, hearing *his* voyce, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the grounde, and opened his eyes, *but* sawe no man. Then led they him by the hand, and brought him

him into Damascus,

9 Where he was three dayes without sight, and neither ate nor dranke.

10 And there was a certaine disciple at Damascus named Ananias. And to him saide the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Beholde, I am *here*, Lord.

11 Then the Lorde saide vnto him, Arise, and goe into the streete which is called Straight, and seeke in the house of Iudas after one called Saul of Tarsus: for beholde he prayeth.

12 (And he sawe in a vision a man named Ananias comming in *to him*, and putting his hands on him, that he might receiue his sight)

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I haue heard by many of this man, howe much euill he hath done to thy Saintes at Hierusalem.

14 Moreouer, here he hath authoritie of the hie Priests, to bind all that call on thy Name.

15 Then the Lord said vnto him, Goe thy way: for he is a chosen vessell vnto me, to beare my Name before the Gentiles, and Kings, and the children of Israel.

16 For I will shewe him, howe many things he must suffer for my Names sake.

17 Then Ananias went his way, & entred into that house, and put his hands on him, & said, Brother Saul, the Lord hath sent me (euē Iesus that appeared vnto thee in the way as thou camest) that thou mightest receiue thy sight, & be filled with the holy Ghost.

18 And immediatly there fell from his eyes as *it had beene* scales, and suddenly he receiued sight, and arose, and was baptized,

19 And receiued meate, and was strengthened. So was Saul certaine dayes w the disciples which were at Damascus.

20 And straightway he preached Christ in ỹ Synagogues, that he was that Sonne of God,

21 So that all that heard him, were amased, and said, Is not this he, that made hauocke of them which called on this Name in Hierusalem, and came hither for that intent, that he should bring them bound vnto the hie Priestes?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Iewes which dwelt at Damascus, confirming, that this was that Christ.

23 And after that many dayes were fulfilled, the Iewes tooke

tooke counsell together, to kill him,

24 But their laying awaite was knowen of Saul: now they watched the gates day & night, that they might kil him. 2. Cor. 11. 32.

25 Then the disciples tooke him by night, and put him through the wall, and let him downe by a rope in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Hierusalem, he assayed to ioyne himselfe with the disciples: but they were all afraide of him, and beleeued not that he was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas tooke him, and brought him to the Apostles, and declared to them howe he had seene the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken vnto him, and howe he had spoken boldly at Damascus in the Name of Iesus.

28 And he was conuersant with them at Hierusalem,

29 And spake boldly in the Name of the Lorde Iesus, and spake and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him.

30 But when the brethren knewe it, they brought him to Cesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus.

31 Then had the Churches rest through all Iudea, and Galile, and Samaria, and were edified and walked in the feare of the Lord, & were multiplied by the comfort of ỹ holy Ghost.

32 And it came to passe, as Peter walked throughout all *quarters*, he came also to the Saintes which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And there he founde a certaine man, named Aeneas, which had kept his couche eight yeeres, and was sicke of the palsie.

34 Then said Peter vnto him, Aeneas, Iesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise and trusse thy couche together. And he arose immediatly.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron, sawe him, and turned to the Lord.

36 There was also at Ioppa a certaine *woman*, a disciple named Tabitha (which by interpretation is called Dorcas) she was full of good workes and almes which she did.

37 And it came to passe in those dayes, that she was sicke and dyed: and when they had washed her, they layed her in an vpper chamber.

38 Now forasmuch as Lydda was neere to Ioppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent vnto him two men, desiring ỹ he would not delay to come vnto them.

39 Then Peter arose & came with them: and when he was come, they brought him into the vpper chamber, where al the

widowes

widowes ſtoode by him weeping, and ſhewing the coates and garments which Dorcas made, while ſhe was with them.

40 But Peter put them all ſoorth, and kneeled downe, and prayed, and turned him to the body, & ſaide, Tabitha, ariſe. And ſhe opened her eyes, and when ſhe ſawe Peter, ſate vp.

41 Then he gaue her the hand and liſt her vp, & called the Saintes and widowes, and reſtored her aliue.

42 And it was knowen throughout all Ioppa, and many beleeued in the Lord.

43 And it came to paſſe that he taried many dayes in Ioppa with one Simon a tanner.

## CHAP. X.

1 *Cornelius, 4 at the Angels commandement, 5 ſendeth for Peter, 11 who alſo by a viſion 15. 20 is taught not to deſpiſe the Gentiles: 34 He preacheth the Goſpel to Cornelius & his houſhold 45 Who hauing receiued the holy Ghoſt, 47 are baptized.*

FVrthermore there was a certaine man in Ceſarea called Cornelius, a captaine of the band called the Italian *band*,

2 A deuout man, and one that feared God with all his houſhold, which gaue much almes to the people, and prayed God continually.

3 He ſawe in a viſion euident'y (about the ninth houre of the day) an Angel of God comming in to him, and ſaying vnto him, Cornelius.

4 But when he looked on him, he was afraide, and ſaide, What is it, Lord? And he ſaid vnto him, Thy prayers and thine almes are come vp into remembrance before God.

5 Nowe therefore ſend men to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whoſe ſurname is Peter.

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whoſe houſe is by the ſea ſide: he ſhall tell thee what thou oughteſt to doe.

7 And when the Angel which ſpake vnto Cornelius, was departed, he called two of his ſeruants, and a ſouldier that feared God, one of them that waited on him,

8 And told them all things, and ſent them to Ioppa.

9 On the morowe as they went on their iourney, & drewe neere vnto the citie, Peter went vp vpon the houſe to pray, about the ſixt houre.

10 Then waxed he an hungred, and would haue eaten: but while they made *ſome thing* ready, he fell into a trance.

11 And he ſawe heauen opened, and a certaine veſſel come downe vnto him, as *it had bene* a great ſheete, knit at the foure corners,

corners, and was let downe to the earth:

12 Wherein were all maner of foure footed beastes of the earth, and wilde beasts and creeping things, and foules of the heauen.

13 And there came a voyce to him, Arise, Peter: kill, and eate.

14 But Peter said, Not so, Lord: for I haue neuer eaten any thing that is polluted, or vncleane.

15 And the voyce *spake* vnto him againe the second time, The things that God hath purified, pollute thou not.

16 This was so done thrise: and the vessell was drawen vp againe into heauen.

17 ¶ Nowe while Peter douted in himselfe what this vision which he had seene, meant, beholde, the men which were sent from Cornelius, had enquired for Simons house, & stood at the gate,

18 And called and asked, whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, were lodged there.

19 And while Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said vnto him, Beholde, three men seeke thee.

20 Arise therefore, & get thee downe, and goe with them, and doubt nothing: for I haue sent them.

21 ¶ Then Peter went downe to the men, which were sent vnto him from Cornelius, and said, Beholde, I am he whom ye seeke: what is the cause wherefore ye are come?

22 And they saide, Cornelius the captaine, a iust man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Iewes, was warned from heauen by an holy Angel, to send for thee into his house, and to heare thy wordes.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged them, and the next day, Peter went forth with them, and certaine brethren from Ioppa accompanied him.

24 ¶ And the day after, they entred into Cesarea. Nowe Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsemen, and speciall friendes.

25 And it came to passe as Peter came in, that Cornelius met him, and fell downe at his feete, and worshipped him.

26 But Peter tooke him vp, saying, Stand vp: for euen I my selfe am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, he came in, and found many that were come together.

28 And he said vnto them, Ye know that it is an vnlawfull thing

thing for a man that is a Iewe, to company, or come vnto one of another nation: but God hath shewed mee, that I should not call any man polluted, or vncleane.

29 Therfore came I vnto you wont saying nay, when I was sent for. I aske therefore, for what intent haue ye sent for me?

30 Then Cornelius sayde, Foure dayes agoe, about this houre I fasted, and at the ninth houre I prayed in mine house, and beholde, a man stood before me in bright clothing,

31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, & thine almes are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

32 Send therefore to Ioppa, and call for Simon whose surname is Peter: (he is lodged in the house of Simon a tanner by the sea side) who when he commeth, shal speake vnto thee.

33 Then sent I for thee immediatly, and thou hast well done to come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to heare all things that are commanded thee of God.

34 Then Peter opened *his* mouth, and said, Of a trueth I perceiue, that * God is no accepter of persons. *Deu.10.17.*

35 But in euery nation hee that feareth him, and worketh righteousnesse, is accepted with him. *2.chro.19.7. iob 34.19.*

36 Ye know the word which God hath sent to the children of Israel, preaching peace by Iesus Christ, which is Lord of all. *rom.2.11. galat.2.6.*

37 *Euen* the worde which came through all Iudea, *beginning in Galile, after the baptisme which Iohn preached, *ephe.6.9. colos.3.25.*

38 *To wit*, howe God anoynted Iesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost, and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the deuil: for God was with him. *1.pet.1.17. Luke 4.14.*

39 And we are witnesses of all things which he did both in the land of the Iewes, and in Hierusalem, whome they slewe, hanging him on a tree.

40 Him God raised vp the thirde day, and caused that hee was shewed openly:

41 Not to all the people, but vnto the witnesses chosen before of God, *euen* to vs which did eate & drinke with him, after he arose from the dead.

42 And he commaunded vs to preach vnto the people, and to testifie, that it is hee that is ordeined of God a iudge of quicke and dead.

43 To him also, giue all the * Prophets witnesse, that through his Name all that beleeue in him, shall receiue remission of sinnes. *Chap.15.9. ierem.31.34. micah.7.18.*

44 While Peter yet spake these wordes, the holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the worde.

45 So they of the circumcision which beleeued, were astonied, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was powred out the gift of the holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speake with tongues, and magnifie God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which haue receiued the holy Ghost, as well as we?

48 So he commaunded them to be baptized in the Name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tary certaine dayes.

## CHAP. XI.

2 *Peter being accused for going to the Gentiles,* 5 *defendeth himselfe.* 22 *Barnabas is sent to Antiochia,* 26 *where the disciples are called Christians:* 28 *And there Agabus foretelleth a famine to come.*

NOw the Apostles & the brethren ỹ were in Iudea, heard, that the Gentiles had also receiued the worde of God.

2 And when Peter was come vp to Hierusalem, they of the circumcision contended against him,

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men vncircumcised, and hast eaten with them.

4 Then Peter began, and expounded *the thing* in order to them, saying,

5 I was in the citie of Ioppa praying, and in a trance I saw *this* vision, A certaine vessel comming downe, as *it had bin* a great sheete, let downe from heauen by the foure corners, and it came to me.

6 Towarde the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and sawe foure footed beasts of the earth, & wilde beastes, and creeping things, and foules of the heauen.

7 Also I heard a voyce, saying vnto me, Arise, Peter: slay and eate.

8 And I said, God forbid, Lorde: for nothing polluted or vncleane hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voyce answered me the second time from heauen, The things that God hath purified, pollute thou not.

10 And this was done three times, and all were taken vp againe into heauen.

11 Then behold, immediatly there were three men already come vnto the house, where I was, sent from Cesarea vnto me.

12 And the Spirit saide vnto mee, that I should goe with them,

them, without douting: moreouer these sixe brethren came with me, and we entred into the mans house.

13 And he shewed vs, howe hee had seene an Angel in his house, which stoode and sayd to him, Send men to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter.

14 He shall speake wordes vnto thee, whereby both thou and all thine house shalbe saued.

15 And as I began to speake, the holy Ghost fell on them, *euen as vpon vs at the beginning. *Chap.2.4.*

16 Then I remembred the worde of the Lorde, howe hee sayd, * Iohn baptized with water, but ye shalbe baptized with the holy Ghost. *Chap.1.5. and 19.4.*

17 Forasmuch then as God gaue them a like gift, as *he did vnto vs, when we beleeued in the Lord Iesus Christ, who was I, that I could let God? *mat.3.11. mar.1.8. luke 3.16.*

18 When they heard these things, they helde their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance vnto life. *iohn 1.26.*

19 ¶ And they which were * scattered abroad because of the affliction that arose about Steuen, went throughout till they came vnto Phenice & Cyprus, and Antiochia, preaching the worde to no man, but vnto the Iewes onely. *Chap.8.1.*

20 Nowe some of them were men of Cyprus and of Cyrene, which when they were come into Antiochia, spake vnto the Grecians, and preached the Lord Iesus.

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them, so that a great number beleeued and turned vnto the Lord.

22 Then tidings of those things came vnto the eares of the Church, which was in Hierusalem, and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should goe vnto Antiochia.

23 Who when he was come and had seene the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted all, that with purpose of heart, they would continue in the Lord.

24 For he was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost, and faith, and much people ioyned them selues vnto the Lord.

25 ¶ Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus to seeke Saul:

26 And when he had found him, he brought him vnto Antiochia, & it came to passe that a whole yeere they were conuersant with the Church, and taught much people, insomuch that the disciples were first called Christians in Antiochia.

27 In those dayes also came Prophets from Hierusalem vnto Antiochia,

28 And there ſtoode vp one of them named Agabus, and ſignified by the Spirite, that there ſhould bee great famine throughout all the world, which alſo came to paſſe vnder Claudius Ceſar.

29 Then the diſciples, euery man according to his habilitie, purpoſed to ſend ſuccour vnto the brethren which dwelt in Iudea.

30 Which thing they alſo did, and ſent it to the Elders, by the hand of Barnabas and Saul.

## CHAP. XII.

*2 Herod killeth Iames with the ſword: 4 and impriſoneth Peter, 8 whom the Angel deliuereth. 20 Herod being offended with them of Tyrus, 21 is pacified: 22 And taking the honour due to God, to himſelfe, 23 he is eaten with wormes, and ſo dieth.*

NOw about that time, Herod the King ſtretched forth *his* hands to vexe certaine of the Church,

2 And hee killed Iames the brother of Iohn with the ſworde.

3 And when he ſawe that it pleaſed the Iewes, he proceeded further, to take Peter alſo: (then were the dayes of vnleauened bread.)

4 And when he had caught him, he put him in priſon, and deliuered him to foure quaternions of ſouldiers to be kept, intending after the Paſſeouer to bring him forth to ỹ people.

5 So Peter was kept in priſon, but earneſt prayer was made of the Church vnto God for him.

6 And when Herod would haue brought him ont vnto the people, the ſame night ſlept Peter betweene two ſouldiers, bound with two chaines, and the keepers before the doore, kept the priſon.

*Chap. 5. 19.* 7 * And beholde, the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, and a light ſhined in the houſe, and hee ſmote Peter on the ſide, and raiſed him vp, ſaying, Ariſe quickly. And his chaines fell off from *his* hands.

8 And the Angel ſayd vnto him, Girde thy ſelfe, and binde on thy ſandales. And ſo he did. Then hee ſayd vnto him, Caſt thy garment about thee, and followe me.

9 So *Peter* came out and followed him, and knewe not that it was true, which was done by the Angel, but thought he had ſeene a viſion.

10 Now when they were paſt the firſt & the ſecond watch, they came vnto the yron gate, that leadeth vnto the citie, which

which opened to them by it owne accorde, and they went out, and passed through one streete, and by and by the Angel departed from him.

11 ¶And when Peter was come to himselfe, he said, Nowe I know for a trueth, that the Lord hath sent his Angel, & hath deliuered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the waiting for of the people of the Iewes.

12 And as he considered *the thing*, hee came to the house of Marie, the mother of Iohn, whose surname was Marke, where many were gathered together, and prayed.

13 And when Peter knocked at the entrie doore, a mayde came foorth to hearken, named Rhode.

14 But when she knewe Peters voyce, she opened not the entrie *doore* for gladnes, but ran in, & tolde how Peter stood before the entrie.

15 But they sayd vnto her, Thou art mad. Yet she affirmed it constantly that it was so. Then said they, It is his Angel.

16 But Peter continued knocking, and when they had opened it, and sawe him, they were astonied.

17 And he beckened vnto them with the hand, to holde their peace, and tolde them howe the Lorde had brought him out of the prison. And he sayd, Goe shewe these things vnto Iames and to the brethren: and hee departed and went into another place.

18 ¶Now assoone as it was day, there was no small trouble among the souldiers, what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commaunded them to be led to be punished. And hee went downe from Iudea to Cesarea, and *there* abode.

20 Then Herod was angry with them of Tyrus and Sidon, but they came all with one accorde vnto him, and perswaded Blastus the Kings Chamberlaine, and they desired peace, because their countrey was nourished by the Kings *land*.

21 And vpon a day appointed, Herod arayed himselfe in royall apparel, and sate on the iudgement seate, and made an oration vnto them.

22 And the people gaue a shoute, *saying*, The voyce of God, and not of man.

23 But immediatly the Angel of the Lorde smote him, because he gaue not glory vnto God, so that he was eaten of wormes, and gaue vp the ghost.

24 And the worde of God grewe, and multiplied.

25 So Barnabas and Saul returned from Hierusalem, when they had fulfilled their office, & tooke with them Iohn, whose surname was Marke.

## CHAP. XIII.

2 *The holy Ghost commandeth that Paul and Barnabas be separated vnto him.* 6 *At Paphus* 8 *Elymas the sorcerer* 11 *is stroken blinde:* 14 *From whence being come to Antiochia* 17 *they preach the Gospel,* 45 *the Iewes vehemently withstanding them.*

THere were also in the Church that was at Antiochia, certaine Prophets and teachers, as Barnabas, and Simeon called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manahen (which had bene brought vp with Herod the Tetrarch) and Saul.

2 Now as they ministred to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost saide, Separate mee Barnabas and Saul, for the worke whereunto I haue called them.

3 Then fasted they and prayed, and laide their hands on them, and let them goe.

4 And they, after they were sent forth of the holy Ghost, came downe vnto Seleucia, and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the worde of God in the Synagogues of the Iewes: and they had also Iohn to *their* minister.

6 So when they had gone throughout the yle vnto Paphus, they found a certaine sorcerer, a false prophet, being a Iewe, named Barieſus,

7 Which was with the Deputie Sergius Paulus, a prudent man. Hee called vnto him Barnabas and Saul, and desired to heare the worde of God.

8 But Elymas, the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, and sought to turne away the Deputie from the faith.

9 Then Saul (which also *is called* Paul) being full of the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him,

10 And said, O full of all subtiltie and all mischiefe, the childe of the deuill, *and* enemie of all righteousnes, wilt thou not cease to peruert the straight wayes of the Lorde?

11 Nowe therefore beholde, the hand of the Lord *is* vpon thee, & thou shalt be blinde, and not see the sunne for a season. And immediatly there fell on him a mist and a darkenesse, and

hee

hee went about, seeking some to leade him by the hand.

12 Then the Deputie when he sawe what was done, beleeued, and was astonied at the doctrine of the Lord.

13 Now when Paul and they that were with him, were departed by ship from Paphus, they came to Perga *a citie* of Pamphylia: then Iohn departed from them, and returned to Hierusalem.

14 But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antiochia *a citie* of Pisidia, and went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and sate downe.

15 And after the lecture of the Law & Prophets, the rulers of the Synagogue sent vnto them, saying, Ye men & brethren, if ye haue any worde of exhortation for the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stood vp, and beckened with the hand, and sayd, Men of Israel, and ye that feare God, hearken.

17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt in the land of * Egypt, and with an † high arme brought them out thereof. *Exod.1.9.* *Exo.13.14.*

18 And about the time *of fourtie yeeres, suffered he their maners in the wildernes. *Exod.16.1.*

19 And he destroyed seuen nations in the land of Chanaan, and *deuided their land to them by lot. *Iosh.14.1.*

20 Then afterward he gaue vnto them *Iudges about foure hundreth & fiftie yeeres, vnto *the time of* Samuel the Prophet. *Iudg.3.9.*

21 So after that, they desired a * King, and God gaue vnto them *Saul, the sonne of Cis, a man of the tribe of Beniamin, *by the space* of fourtie yeeres. *1.Sam.8.5.* *1.Sam.9.15.* *and 10.1.*

22 And after he had taken him away, he raised vp * Dauid to be their King, of whom he witnessed, saying, I haue found Dauid *the sonne* of Iesse, a man after mine owne heart, which will doe all things that I will. *1.Sam.16.13.*

23 Of this mans seede hath God * according to *his* promise raised vp to Israel, the Sauiour Iesus: *Psal.89.21.* *isai.11.1.*

24 When † Iohn had first preached before his comming the baptisme of repentance to all the people of Israel. *Mala.3.1.* *matt 3.1.*

25 And when Iohn had fulfilled *his* course, he said, *Whom yee thinke that I am, I am not hee: but beholde, there commeth one after me, whose shooe of *his* feete, I am not worthy to loose. *mar.1.2.* *luke 3.2.* *Mat 3.11.* *mar.1.7.*

26 Ye men and brethren, children of the generation of Abraham, and whosoeuer among you feareth God, to you is the worde of this saluation sent. *iohn 1.20.*

27 For the inhabitants of Hierusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the wordes of the Prophets, which are read euery Sabbath *day*, they haue fulfilled them in condemning him.

*Mat.27.22. mar.15.13. luke 23 23. iohn 19.6.* 28 And though they found no cause of death *in him*, * *yet* desired they Pilate to kill him.

29 And when they had fulfilled all things that were written of him, they tooke him downe from the tree, and put him in a sepulchre.

*Mat.28.2. mar.16 6. luke 24.6. iohn 20.19.* 30 But God * raised him vp from the dead.

31 And he was seene many dayes of them, which came vp with him from Galile to Hierusalem, which are his witnesses vnto the people.

32 And we declare vnto you, that touching the promise made vnto the fathers,

33 God hath fulfilled it vnto vs their children, in that hee raised vp Iesus, euen as it is written in the second Psalme,

*Psal 2.7. hebr.1.5. and 5.5.* * Thou art my Sonne: this day haue I begotten thee.

34 Now as concerning that he raised him vp from ye dead, no more to returne to corruption, he hath sayd thus, * I will

*Isai.55.3. Chap.2.31. psal.16.11.* giue you the holy things of Dauid, which are faithfull.

35 Wherefore he saith also in another place, * Thou wilt not suffer thine holy one to see corruption.

*Chap.2.29. 1.king.2.10.* 36 Howbeit, Dauid after hee had serued his time by the counsell of God, he * slept, and was laide with his fathers, and sawe corruption.

37 But he whom God raised vp, saw no corruption.

38 Be it knowen vnto you therefore, men *and* brethren, that through this man is preached vnto you the forgiuenesse of sinnes.

39 And from all things, from which ye could not be iustified by the lawe of Moses, by him euery one that beleeueth, is iustified.

40 Beware therefore lest that come vpon you, which is spoken of in the Prophets,

*Habac.1.5.* 41 * Beholde, ye despisers, and wonder, and vanish away: for I worke a worke in your dayes, a worke which ye shal not beleeue, if a man would declare it you.

42 ¶ And when they were come out of the Synagogue of the Iewes, the Gentiles besought, that they woulde preach these wordes to them the next Sabbath *day*.

43 Nowe when the congregation was dissolued, many of the

the Iewes,and Proselytes that feared God,followed Paul and Barnabas, which spake to them, and exhorted them to continue in the grace of God.

44 And the next Sabbath *day* came almost the whole citie together,to heare the word of God.

45 But when the Iewes saw the people, they were full of enuie, and spake against those thinges, which were spoken of Paul,contrarying *them*,and rayling on *them*.

46 Then Paul and Barnabas spake boldly,& said,It was necessarie that the worde of God shoulde first haue bene spoken vnto you:but seeing ye put it from you,and iudge your selues vnworthy of euerlasting life, loe,we turne to the Gentiles.

47 For so hath the Lorde commaunded vs, *saying*, * I haue made thee a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be the saluation vnto the ende of the world. *Isai.49.6.*

48 And when the Gentiles heard it, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordeined vnto eternall life,beleeued.

49 Thus the word of the Lord was published throughout the whole countrey.

50 But the Iewes stirred *certaine* deuoute and honourable women, and the chiefe men of the citie, and raysed persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coastes.

51 But they * shooke off the dust of their feete against them,and came vnto Iconium. *Chap.18.6. matt.10.14. mar.6.11. luke 9.5.*

52 And the disciples were filled with ioy,and with the holy Ghost.

## CHAP. XIIII.

*1 Paul and Barnabas 5 are persecuted from Iconium: 6 At Lystra Paul 10 healeth a creeple: 13 They are about to do sacrifice vnto them, 15 but they forbid it: 19 Paul. by the perswasion of certaine Iewes, is stoned: 23 From thence passing through diuers Churches, 26 they returne to Antiochia.*

AND it came to passe in Iconium,that they went both together into the Synagogue of the Iewes,and so spake,that a great multitude both of the Iewes & of the Grecias beleeued.

2 And the vnbeleeuing Iewes stirred vp,and corrupted the mindes of the Gentiles against the brethren.

3 So therfore they abode there a long time,& spake boldly in the Lorde, which gaue testimonie vnto the worde of his grace,& caused signes & wonders to be done by their handes.

4 But

4 But the multitude of the citie was deuided: and some were with the Iewes, and some with the Apostles.

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and of the Iewes with their rulers, to do them violence, and to stone them,

6 They were ware of it, and fled vnto Lystra, and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and vnto the region round about,

7 And there preached the Gospel.

8 ¶ Nowe there sate a certaine man at Lystra, impotent in his feete, which was a creeple from his mothers wombe, who had neuer walked.

9 He heard Paul speake: who beholding him, and perceiuing that he had faith to be healed,

10 Said with a loud voyce, Stand vpright on thy feete. And he leaped vp, and walked.

11 Then when the people sawe what Paul had done, they lift vp their voyces, saying in the speach of Lycaonia, Gods are come downe to vs in the likenes of men.

12 And they called Barnabas, Iupiter: and Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chiefe speaker.

13 Then Iupiters priest, which was before their citie, brought bulles with garlands vnto the gates, and would haue sacrificed with the people.

14 But when the Apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard it, they rent their clothes, and ranne in among the people, crying,

15 And saying, O men, why doe ye these things? Wee are euen men subiect to the like passions that ye be, and preache vnto you, that ye should turne from these vaine thinges vnto the liuing God, * which made heauen and earth, and the sea, and all things that in them are:

*Gene.1.1.*
*psal.146.5.*
*reuel.14.7.*

16 Who in times past * suffered all the Gentiles to walke in their owne wayes.

*Psal.81.13.*
*rom.1.24.*

17 Neuertheless, he left not himselfe without witnesse, in that he did good *and* gaue vs raine from heauen, and fruitfull seasons, filling our heartes with foode, and gladnesse.

18 And speaking these thinges, scarse appeased they the multitude, that they had not sacrificed vnto them.

19 Then there came certaine Iewes from Antiochia & Iconium, which when they had perswaded the people, * stoned Paul, & drew him out of the city, supposing he had bene dead.

*2.Cor.11.25.*

20 Howbeit, as the disciples stoode rounde about him, he arose vp, and came into the citie, and the next day hee departed

ted with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And after they had preached the glad tidings of the Gospel to that citie, & had taught many, they returned to Lystra, and to Iconium, and to Antiochia,

22 Confirming the disciples heartes, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, *affirming* that we must through many afflictions enter into the kingdome of God.

23 And when they had ordained them Elders by election in euery Church, and prayed, and fasted, they commended them to the Lord in whom they beleeued.

24 Thus they wẽt throughout Pisidia,& came to Pãphylia.

25 And when they had preached the worde in Perga, they came downe to Attalia,

26 And thence sailed to Antiochia, * from whence they had bene commended vnto the grace of God, to the worke which they had fulfilled. *Chap.13.3.*

27 And when they were come & had gathered the Church together,they rehearsed all the thinges that God had done by them,& how he had opened ỹ doore of faith vnto ỹ Gentiles.

28 So there they abode a long time with the disciples.

## CHAP. XV.

*1 Certaine go about to bring in circumcisiõ at Antiochia:6 about which matter the Apostles consult:* 19 *and what must be done* 23 *they declare by letters.* 36 *Paul and Barnabas* 39 *are at great variance.*

THen came downe certaine from Iudea, and taught the brethren, *saying*, Except ye be circumcised after the maner of Moses,ye cannot be saued.

2 And when there was great dissension and disputation by Paul and Barnabas against them, they ordained that Paul and Barnabas,and certaine other of them,should goe vp to Hierusalem vnto the Apostles and Elders about this question.

3 Thus being brought foorth by the Church, they passed through Phenice and Samaria,declaring the conuersion of the Gentiles, and they brought great ioy vnto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Hierusalem,they were receiued of the Church,& of the Apostles and Elders, and they declared what things God had done by them.

5 But *saide they*, certaine of the sect of the Pharises, which did beleeue, rose vp, saying, that it was needefull to circumcise them,and to commande *them* to keepe the Law of Moses.

6 Then the Apostles & Elders came together to looke to this matter.

7 And

7 And whē there had bene great disputation, Peter rose vp, and said vnto them, *Ye men *and* brethren, ye know ye a good while agoe, among vs God chose out *me*, that the Gentiles by my mouth should heare the word of the Gospel, and beleeue.

*Chap.* 10, 20. *and* 11. 13.

8 And God which knoweth the hearts, bare them witnes, in giuing vnto them the holy Ghost euen as *he did* vnto vs.

9 And hee put no difference betweene vs and them, after that † by faith he had purified their heartes.

*Chap.* 10. 43. 1. *cor.* 1. 2.

10 Nowe therefore, why tempt ye God, to *lay a yoke on the disciples neckes, which neither our fathers, nor wee were able to beare?

*Matt.* 23. 4.

11 But we beleeue, through the grace of the Lorde Iesus Christ to be saued, euen as they *doe*.

12 Then all the multitude kept silence, and heard Barnabas and Paul, which tolde what signes and wonders God had done among the Gentiles by them.

13 And when they helde their peace, Iames answered, saying, Men *and* brethren, hearken vnto me.

14 Simeon hath declared, howe God first did visite the Gentiles, to take *of them* a people vnto his Name.

15 And to this agree the wordes of the Prophets, as it is written,

*Amos* 9. 11.

16 *After this I will returne, and wil builde againe the tabernacle of Dauid, which is fallen downe, & the ruines thereof will I builde againe, and I will set it vp,

17 That the residue of men might seeke after the Lorde, and all the Gentiles vpon whom my Name is called, saith the Lord, which doeth all these things.

18 From the beginning of the world, God knoweth all his workes.

19 Wherefore my sentence is, that wee trouble not them of the Gentiles that are turned to God,

20 But that we sende vnto them, that they abstaine themselues from filthinesse of idoles, and fornication, and that that is strangled, and from blood.

21 For Moses of old time hath in euery citie them ye preach him, seeing he is read in the Synagogues euery Sabbath *day*.

22 Then it seemed good to the Apostles and Elders with the whole Church, to send chosen men of their owne companie to Antiochia with Paul and Barnabas: *to wit*, Iudas whose surname was Barsabas, and Silas, which were chiefe men among the brethren,

23 And

23 And wrote letters by them after this maner, THE APOSTLES, and the Elders, and the brethren, vnto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antiochia, and in Syria, and in Cilicia, send greeting.

24 Forasmuch as we haue heard, that certaine which went out from vs, haue troubled you with wordes, and cumbred your mindes, saying, Yee must be circumcised, and keepe the Lawe: to whome we gaue no such commandement,

25 It seemed therefore good to vs, when wee were come together with one accord, to send chosen men vnto you, with our beloued Barnabas and Paul,

26 Men that haue giuen vp their liues for the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ.

27 We haue therefore sent Iudas and Silas, which shall also tell you the same things by mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the holy Ghost, and to vs, to lay no more burden vpon you, then these necessarie things,

29 *That is*, that ye abstaine frō things offred to idoles, and blood, and that that is strangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keepe your selues, ye shall doe well. Fare ye well.

30 Nowe when they were departed, they came to Antiochia, and after that they had assembled the multitude, they deliuered the Epistle.

31 And whē they had read it, they reioyced for ye cōsolation.

32 And Iudas and Silas being Prophets, exhorted the brethren with many wordes, and strengthened them.

33 And after they had taried there a space, they were let goe in peace of the brethren vnto the Apostles.

34 Notwithstāding Silas thought good to abide there stil.

35 Paul also & Barnabas continued in Antiochia, teaching and preaching with many other, the word of the Lord.

36 ¶But after certaine dayes, Paul said vnto Barnabas, Let vs returne, and visite our brethren in euery citie, where wee haue preached the word of the Lord, *and see* how they doe.

37 And Barnabas coūselled to take with them Iohn, called Marke.

38 But Paul thought it not meete to take him vnto their companie, which departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the worke.

39 Then were they so stirred, that they departed asunder one from the other, so that Barnabas tooke Marke, and sayled vnto Cyprus.

40 And

40 And Paul chose Silas and departed, being commended of the brethren vnto the grace of God.

41 And he went through Syria and Cilicia, stablishing the Churches,

## CHAP. XVI.

*1 Paul hauing circumcised Timotheus, 12 being at Philippi, 14 instructeth Lydia in the faith: 16 The spirit of diuination 18 is by him cast out: 20 and for that cause 22 they are whipped, 24 and imprisoned: 26 Through an earthquake 27 the prison doores are opened. 31 32 The Jailer receiueth the faith.*

THen came he to Derbe & to Lystra: and behold a certaine
*Rom 16.21.* disciple was there named * Timotheus, a womans sonne,
*phil 2.19.* which was a Ieweſſe & beleeued, but his father was a Grecian,
*1.thes.3.2.* 2 Of whom the brethren which were at Lystra and Iconium, reported well.

3 Therefore Paul would that he should goe foorth with him, and tooke and circumcised him, because of the Iewes, which were in those quarters: for they knewe all, that his father was a Grecian.

4 And as they went through the cities, they deliuered them the decrees to keepe, ordained of the Apostles and Elders, which were at Hierusalem.

5 And so were the Churches stablished in the faith, and increased in number dayly.

6 ¶ Nowe when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, they were forbidden of the holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia.

7 Then came they to Mysia, and sought to goe into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not.

8 Therefore they passed through Mysia, and came downe to Troas,

9 Where a vision appeared to Paul in the night. There stoode a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come into Macedonia, and helpe vs.

10 And after he had seene the vision, immediatly we prepared to goe into Macedonia, being assured that the Lorde had called vs to preach the Gospel vnto them.

11 Then went wee foorth from Troas, and with a straight course came to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis,

12 ¶ And from thence to Philippi, which is the chiefe citie in the partes of Macedonia, and whose inhabitants came from Rome to dwell there, and wee were in that citie abiding

ding certaine dayes.

13 And on the Sabbath day, we went out of the citie, besides a Riuer, where they were wont to pray: and wee sate downe,& spake vnto the women,which were come together.

14 And a certaine woman named Lydia,a seller of purple, of the citie of the Thyatirians,which worshipped God, heard vs: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended vnto the things,which Paul spake.

15 And when she was baptized, and her household, she besought vs,saying,If ye haue iudged me to be faithful to ye Lord, come into mine house,and abide *there*: and she constrained vs.

16 And it came to passe that as we went to prayer, a certaine mayde hauing a spirit of diuination, met vs, which gate her masters much vantage with diuining.

17 She followed Paul and vs,and cryed, saying,These men are the seruants of the most high God,which shewe vnto you the way of saluation.

18 And this did she many dayes: but Paul being grieued, turned about, and saide to the spirit, I commaunde thee in the Name of Iesus Christ,that thou come out of her.And he came out the same houre.

19 Now when her masters saw that the hope of their gaine was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drewe them into the market place vnto the magistrates,

20 And brought them to the gouernours, saying, These men which are Iewes,trouble our citie,

21 And preach ordinances which are not lawfull for vs to receiue,neither to obserue,seeing we are Romanes.

22 The people also rose vp together against them, and the gouernours rent their clothes, and commaunded *them* to bee beaten with roddes.

23 And when they had beaten them sore, they cast *them* into prison,commanding the Iayler to keepe them surely.

24 Who hauing receiued such commandement,cast them into the inner prison,and made their feete fast in the stockes.

25 Nowe at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, *and* sung Psalmes vnto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake,so that the foundation of the prison was shaken: and by and by all the doores opened,and euery mans bands were loosed.

27 Then the keeper of the prison waked out of his sleepe, and when he sawe the prison doores open, hee drewe out his sworde

sworde and woulde haue killed himselfe, supposing the prisoners had bene fled.

28 But Paul cried with a loude voyce, saying, Do thy selfe no harme: for we are all here.

29 Then he called for a light, & leaped in, and came trembling, and fell downe before Paul and Silas,

30 And brought them out, and saide, Syrs, what must I doe to be saued?

31 And they sayde, Beleeue in the Lorde Iesus Christ, and thou shalt be saued, and thine housholde.

32 And they preached vnto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house.

33 Afterward he tooke them the same houre of the nighe, and washed *their* stripes, and was baptized with all that belonged vnto him, straightway.

34 And when he had brought them into his house, hee set meate before them, and reioyced that hee with all his household beleeued in God.

35 And whē it was day, the gouernours sent the sergeants, saying, Let those men goe.

36 Then the keeper of the prison tolde these wordes vnto Paul, *saying*, The gouernours haue sent to loose you: nowe therefore get you hence, and goe in peace.

37 Then said Paul vnto them, After that they haue beaten vs openly vncondemned, which are Romanes, they haue cast vs into prison, and nowe woulde they put vs out priuily? nay verely: but let them come and bring vs out.

38 And the sergeants tolde these wordes vnto the gouernours, who feared when they heard that they were Romanes.

39 Then came they and prayed them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the citie.

40 And they went out of the prison, and entred into *the house of* Lydia: and when they had seene the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

## CHAP. XVII.

1 *Paul at Thessalonica 3 preaching Christ, 6.7. is intertained of Iason:* 10 *Hee is sent to Berea:* 15 *From thence comming to Athens,* 19 *in Mars streete* 23 *he preacheth the liuing God to them vnknowen,* 34 *and so, many are conuerted to Christ.*

NOw as they passed through Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a Synagogue of the Iewes.

2 And

2 And Paul, as his maner was, went in vnto them,& three Sabbath *daies* disputed with them by the Scriptures,

3 Opening, and alleadging that Christ must haue suffered, and risen againe from the dead:and this is Iesus Christ,whom, *said he*,I preach to you.

4 And some of them beleeued, and ioyned in companie with Paul and Silas: also of the Grecians that feared God a great multitude,and of the chiefe women not a fewe.

5 But the Iewes which beleeued not,mooued with ennie, tooke vnto them certaine vagabondes *and* wicked fellowes, and when they had assembled the multitude, they made a tumult in the citie, and made assault against the house of Iason, and sought to bring them out to the people.

6 But when they found them not,they drew Iason and certaine brethren vnto ỹ heads of the city,crying,These are they which haue subuerted the state of the world,& here they are,

7 Whom Iason hath receiued,and these all doe against the decrees of Cesar,saying,that there is another king,one Iesus.

8 Then they troubled the people,and the heads of the citie,when they heard these things.

9 Notwithstanding when they had receiued sufficient assurance of Iason and of the other,they let them goe.

10 And the brethren immediatly sent away Paul and Silas by night vnto Berea,which when they were come thither,entred into the Synagogue of the Iewes.

11 These were also more noble men then they which were at Thessalonica,which receiued the word with al redines, and searched the Scriptures daily,whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them beleeued, and of honest women,which were Grecians,and men not a fewe.

13 ¶ But when the Iewes of Thessalonica knewe, that the worde of God was also preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also,and mooued the people.

14 But by and by the brethren sent away Paul to goe as *it were* to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

15 And they that did conduct Paul, brought him vnto Athens: and when they had receiued a commaundement vnto Silas and Timotheus that they shoulde come to him at once, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens,his spirit was stirred in him,when he saw the citie subiect to idolatrie.

17 Therefore hee disputed in the Synagogue with the

Iewes, and with them that were religious, and in the market daily with whomsoeuer he met.

18 Then certaine Philosophers of the Epicures, & of the Stoicks, disputed w̄ him, & some saide, What will this babbler say? Others *said*, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strāge gods (because he preached vnto them Iesus, and the resurrection.)

19 And they tooke him, and brought him into Mars streete, saying, May we not knowe, what this newe doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is?

20 For thou bringest certaine strange things vnto our eares: we would know therefore, what these things meane.

21 For all the Athenians, and strangers which dwelt there, gaue them selues to nothing els, but either to tell, or to heare some newes.

22 Then Paul stoode in the mids of Mars streete, and saide, Yee men of Athens, I perceiue that in all things yee are too superstitious.

23 For as I passed by, and beheld your deuotions, I founde an altar wherein was written, VNTO THE VNKNOWEN GOD. Whome yee then ignorantly worship, him shewe I vnto you.

24 God that made the world, and all things that are therein, seeing that he is Lorde of heauen and earth, * dwelleth not in temples made with hands,

*Chap.7.48.*

*Psal 50.8.*

25 * Neither is worshipped with mens handes, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giueth to al life and breath and all things,

26 And hath made of one blood all mankinde, to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath assigned the seasons which were ordeined before, and the bounds of their habitation,

27 That they shoulde seeke the Lorde, if so be they might haue groped after him, and found *him*, though doubtles he be not farre from euery one of vs.

28 For in him we liue, and moue, and haue our being, as also certaine of your owne Poets haue saide, For we are also his generation.

*Isai.40.19.*

29 * Forasmuch then, as we are the generation of God, we ought not to thinke that the Godhead is like vnto golde, or siluer, or stone grauen by arte and the inuention of man.

30 And the time of this ignorance God regarded not: but nowe he admonisheth all men euery where to repent,

31 Because he hath appointed a day in ỹ which he will iudge

the

the worlde in righteousnesse, by that man whome he hath appointed, *whereof* he hath giuen an assurance to all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

32 Nowe when they heard of the resurrection from the dead, some mocked, and other saide, We wil heare thee againe of this thing.

33 And so Paul departed from among them.

34 Howbeit certaine men claue vnto Paul, and beleeued: among whome was also Denis Areopagita, and a woman named Damaris, and other with them.

## CHAP. XVIII.

1 *As Paul at Corinth* 6 *taught the Gentiles,* 9 *the Lorde comforteth him.* 12 *He is accused before Gallio,* 16 *but in vaine:* 18 *From thence he saileth to Syria,* 19 *and so to Ephesus:* 23 *At Galatia and Phrygia hee strengtheneth the disciples.* 24 *Apollos being more perfectly instructed by Aquila,* 28 *preacheth Christ with great efficacie.*

AFter these things, Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinthus,

2 And founde a certaine Iewe named * Aquila, borne in Pontus, lately come from Italie, & his wife Priscilla, (because that Claudius had commaunded all Iewes to depart from Rome) and he came vnto them. *Rom.16.3.*

3 And because hee was of the same craft, hee abode with them, and wrought (for their craft was to make tents.)

4 And hee disputed in the Synagogue euery Sabbath *day*, and exhorted the Iewes, and the Grecians.

5 Nowe when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul forced in spirit, testified to the Iewes that Iesus was the Christ.

6 And when they resisted and blasphemed, he * shooke his raiment, and saide vnto them, Your blood *be* vpon your owne head: I am cleane: from henceforth wil I go vnto the Gentiles. *Chap.13.51. mat.10.14.*

7 So hee departed thence, and entred into a certaine mans house, named Iustus, a worshipper of God, whose house ioyned hard to the Synagogue.

8 And * Crispus the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, beleeued in the Lorde with all his household: and many of the Corinthians hearing it, beleeued and were baptized. *1.Cor.1.14.*

9 Then sayde the Lorde to Paul in the night by a vision, Feare not, but speake, and hold not thy peace.

10 For I am with thee, and no man shall lay *hands* on thee

to hurt thee: for I haue much people in this citie.

11 So hee continued there a yeere and sixe moneths, and taught the word of God among them.

12 ¶Now when Gallio was Deputie of Achaia, the Iewes arose with one accorde against Paul, and brought him to the iudgement seate,

13 Saying, This felowe perswadeth men to worship God otherwise then the Lawe appointeth.

14 And as Paul was about to open his mouth, Gallio sayd vnto the Iewes, If it were a matter of wrong, or an euil deede, O ye Iewes, I would according to reason maintaine you.

15 But if it be a question of words, and names, and of your Lawe, looke yee to it your selues: for I will bee no iudge of those things.

16 And he draue them from the iudgement seate.

17 Then tooke all the Grecians Sosthenes the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, and beat him before the iudgement seate: but Gallio cared nothing for those things.

18 But when Paul had taried there yet a good while, hee tooke leaue of the brethren, and sailed into Syria (and with him Priscilla and Aquila) after that hee had shorne his head in Cenchrea: for he had a * vowe.

19 Then he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but he entred into the Synagogue and disputed with the Iewes.

20 Who desired him to tarie a longer time with them: but he would not consent,

21 But bade them farewel, saying, I must needes keepe this feast that commeth, in Hierusalem: but I will returne againe vnto you, * if God will. So he sailed from Ephesus.

22 ¶ And when he came downe to Cesarea, he went vp *to Hierusalem:* and when hee had saluted the Church, hee went downe vnto Antiochia.

23 Nowe when hee had taried *there* a while, hee departed, and went through the countrey of Galatia and Phrygia by order, strengthening all the disciples.

24 And a certaine Iewe named * Apollos, borne at Alexandria, came to Ephesus, an eloquent man, and mightie in the Scriptures.

25 The same was instructed in the way of the Lord, and he spake fervently in the Spirit, and taught diligently the things of the Lord, and knewe but the baptisme of Iohn onely.

26 And he began to speake boldly in ỹ Synagogue. Whom when

*Chap.21.24.* *nom.16.18.*

*1.Cor.4.19.* *Iam.4.15.*

*1.Cor.1.12.*

when * Aquila and Priſcilla had heard, they tooke him vnto them, & expounded vnto him the way of God more perfectly. *Rom.16.3.*

27 And when he was minded to goe into Achaia, the brethren exhorting him, wrote to the diſciples to receiue him: and after he was come thither, hee holpe them much which had beleeued through grace.

28 For mightily hee confuted publikely the Iewes, with great vehemencie, ſhewing by the Scriptures, that Ieſus was that Chriſt.

## CHAP. XIX.

1 *Certaine diſciples at Epheſus 3 hauing onely receiued Iohns baptiſme, 2 and knew not the viſible gifts of the holy Ghoſt, wherewith God had beautified his Sonnes kingdome, 5 are baptized in the Name of Ieſus. 13 The Iewiſh exorciſts 16 are beaten of the deuill. 19 Coniuring bookes are burnt. 24 Demetrius 29 raiſeth ſedition againſt Paul.*

AND it came to paſſe, while Apollos was at Corinthus, that Paul when he paſſed through the vpper coaſtes, came to Epheſus, and found certaine diſciples,

2 And ſaide vnto them, Haue yee receiued the holy Ghoſt ſince yee beleeued? And they ſaide vnto him, We haue not ſo much as heard whether there be an holy Ghoſt.

3 And he ſaide vnto them, Vnto what were ye then baptized? And they ſaid, Vnto Iohns baptiſme.

4 Then ſaide Paul, * Iohn verely baptized w̄ the baptiſme of repentance, ſaying vnto ỹ people, that they ſhould beleeue in him, which ſhould come after him, that is, in Chriſt Ieſus. *Chap.1.5. & 2.2. & 11. 16.mat.3.*

5 And when they heard it, they were baptized in ỹ Name of the Lord Ieſus. *11.mar.1.8. luke 3.16.*

6 So Paul laide his hands vpon them, and the holy Ghoſt came on them, and they ſpake the tongues, and prophecied. *iohn 1.26.*

7 And all the men were about twelue.

8 ¶ Moreouer he went into the Synagogue, & ſpake boldly for the ſpace of three moneths, diſputing and exhorting to the things that *appertaine* to the kingdome of God.

9 But when certaine were hardened, and diſobeied, ſpeaking euill of the way *of God* before the multitude, hee departed from them, and ſeparated the diſciples, and diſputed daily in the ſchole of one Tyrannus.

10 And this was done by the ſpace of two yeeres, ſo that all they which dwelt in Aſia, heard the word of the Lorde Ieſus, both Iewes and Grecians.

5 11 And

11 And God wrought no ſmal miracles by ỹ hands of Paul

12 So that from his body were brought vnto the ſicke, kercheſs or handkercheſs, and the diſeaſes departed from them, and the euill ſpirits went out of them.

13 Then certaine of the vagabond Iewes, exorciſts, tooke in hand to name ouer them, which had euill ſpirits, the Name of the Lord Ieſus, ſaying, We adiure you by Ieſus, whom Paul preacheth.

14 (And there were certaine ſonnes of Sceua a Iewe, the Prieſt, *about* ſeuen, which did this)

15 And the euill ſpirit anſwered, and ſaid, Ieſus I acknowledge, and Paul I know: but who are yee?

16 And the man in whome the euill ſpirite was, ranne on them, and ouercame them, and preuailed againſt them, ſo that they fled out of that houſe, naked, and wounded.

17 And this was knowen to al the Iewes and Grecians alſo, which dwelt at Epheſus, and feare came on them all, and the Name of the Lord Ieſus was magnified,

18 And many that beleeued, came and confeſſed, and ſhewed their workes.

19 Many alſo of them which vſed curious artes, brought their bookes, and burned them before al men, & they counted the price of them, and found it fiftie thouſand *pieces* of ſiluer.

20 So the word of God grewe mightily, and preuailed.

21 ¶ Nowe when theſe things were accompliſhed, Paul purpoſed by the Spirit to paſſe through Macedonia & Achaia, and to goe to Hieruſalem, ſaying, After I haue bene there, I muſt alſo ſee Rome.

22 So ſent he into Macedonia two of them ỹ miniſtred vnto him, Timotheus & Eraſtus, *but* he remained in Aſia for a ſeaſō.

23 And the ſame time there aroſe no ſmall trouble about that way.

24 For a certaine man named Demetrius a ſiluer ſmith, which made ſiluer temples of Diana, brought great gaines vnto the craftes men,

25 Whom he called together, with the workemen of like things, and ſaide, Syrs, yee knowe that by this craft we haue our goods:

26 Moreouer yee ſee and heare, that not alone at Epheſus, but almoſt throughout all Aſia this Paul hath perſwaded, and turned away much people, ſaying, That they bee not gods which are made with hands.

27 So

27 So that not only this thing is dangerous vnto vs, that this our portion shalbe reprooued, but also that the temple of the great goddesse Diana should be nothing esteemed, & that it woulde come to passe that her magnificence, which all Asia and the world worshippeth, should be destroied.

28 Nowe when they heard it, they were full of wrath, and cried out, saying, Great *is* Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the whole citie was ful of confusion, and they rushed into the common place with one assent, and caught *Gaius, and *Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, and Pauls companions of his iourney. *Rom.16.23. 1.cor.1.14.

30 And when Paul woulde haue entred in vnto the people, the disciples suffered him not. *Col.4.10.

31 Certaine also of the chiefe of Asia, which were his friends, sent vnto him, desiring him that he would not present himselfe in the common place.

32 Some therefore cried one thing, and some another: for the assemblie was out of order, and the more part knewe not wherefore they were come together.

33 And *some* of the company drewe forth Alexander, the Iewes thrusting him forwards. Alexander then beckened with the hand, and would haue excused the matter to the people.

34 But when they knewe that he was a Iewe, there arose a shoute almost for the space of two houres, of all men, crying, Great *is* Diana of the Ephesians.

35 Then ỹ towne clarke when he had staied ỹ people, said, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is it ỹ knoweth not howe that the citie of the Ephesians *is* a worshipper of ỹ great goddesse Diana, and of *the image* which came downe from Iupiter?

36 Seeing then that no man can speake against these things, yee ought to be appeased, and to doe nothing rashly.

37 For ye haue brought hither these men, which haue neither cõmitted sacriledge, neither do blaspheme your goddesse.

38 Wherefore, if Demetrius and the crafts men which are with him, haue a matter against any man, the law is open, and there are Deputies: let them accuse one another.

39 But if ye inquire any thing concerning other matters, it may be determined in a lawfull assemblie.

40 For we are euen in ieopardie to be accused of this daies sedition, forasmuch as there is no cause, whereby we may giue a reason of this concourse of people.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he let ỹ assembly depart.

*1 Paul appointeth to goe to Macedonia: 7 In Troas preaching vntill midnight, 9 Eutychus fell downe dead out of a window: 10 he raiseth him to life. 15 At Miletum, 17 hauing called the Elders of Ephesus together, 23 hee declareth what things shall come vpon himselfe, 28 and others.*

NOwe after the tumult was appeased, Paul called the disciples vnto him, and embraced them, and departed to goe into Macedonia.

2 And when he had gone through those parts, and had exhorted them with many words, he came into Grecia.

3 And hauing taried *there* three moneths, because ỹ Iewes laid waite for him, as he was about to saile into Syria, he purposed to returne through Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia Sopater of Berea, and of them of Thessalonica, Aristarchus, and Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus, and of them of Asia, Tychicus, and Trophimus.

5 These went before, and taried vs at Troas.

6 And we sailed forth from Philippi, after the daies of vnleauened bread, and came vnto them to Troas in fiue daies, where we abode seuen daies.

7 And the first day of the weeke, the disciples being come together to breake bread, Paul preached vnto them, readie to depart on the morowe, and continued the preaching vnto midnight.

8 And there were many lights in an vpper chamber, where they were gathered together.

9 And there sate in a windowe a certaine yong man, named Eutychus, fallen into a deepe sleepe: & as Paul was long preaching, hee ouercome with sleepe, fell downe from the thirde loft, and was taken vp dead.

10 But Paul went downe, and laide him selfe vpon him, and embraced him, saying, Trouble not your selues: for his life is in him.

11 Then when *Paul* was come vp againe, and had broken bread, and eaten, hauing spoken a long while till the dawning of the day, he so departed.

12 And they brought the boy aliue, and they were not a litle comforted.

13 ¶ Then we went before to ship, and sailed vnto *the citie* Assos, that we might receiue Paul thence: for so had he appoynted, and would himselfe goe a foote.

14 Now

14 Now when he was come vnto vs to Assos, and we had receiued him, we came to Mitylenes.

15 And we sailed thence, and came the next day ouer against Chios, and the next day we arriued at Samos, and taried at Trogyllium: the next day we came to Miletum.

16 For Paul had determined to saile by Ephesus, because he would not spend the time in Asia: for he hasted to be, if he could possible, at Hierusalem, at the day of Pentecoste.

17 ¶ Wherefore from Miletum, he sent to Ephesus, and called the Elders of the Church.

18 Who when they were come to him, he said vnto them, Ye knowe from the first day that I came into Asia, after what maner I haue bene with you at all seasons,

19 Seruing the Lorde with all modestie, and with many teares, & tentations, which came to me by the layings awaite of the Iewes,

20 And howe I kept backe nothing that was profitable, but haue shewed you, and taught you openly and throughout euery house,

21 Witnessing both to the Iewes, and to the Grecians the repentance towarde God, and faith towarde our Lorde Iesus Christ.

22 And now beholde, I goe bound in the spirit vnto Hierusalem, & know not what things shall come vnto me there,

23 Saue that the holy Ghost witnesseth in euery citie, saying, that bonds and afflictions abide me.

24 But I passe not at all, neither is my life deere vnto my selfe, so that I may fulfill my course with ioy, and the ministration which I haue receiued of the Lorde Iesus, to testifie the Gospel of the grace of God.

25 And nowe beholde, I knowe that henceforth ye all, through whom I haue gone preaching ỹ kingdome of God, shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men.

27 For I haue kept nothing backe, but haue shewed you all the counsell of God.

28 Take heede therefore vnto your selues, and to all the flocke, whereof the holy Ghost hath made you ouerseers, to feede the Church of God, which he hath purchased with that his owne blood.

29 For I know this, that after my departing shall grieuous

wolues

wolues enter in among you, not sparing the flocke.

30 Moreouer of your owne selues shall men arise, speaking peruerse things, to drawe disciples after them.

31 Therefore watch, and remember that by *the space* of three yeeres I ceased not to warne euery one, both night and day with teares.

32 And nowe brethren, I commende you to God, and to the worde of his grace, which is able to build further, and to giue you an inheritance, among all them which are sanctified.

33 I haue coueted no mans siluer, nor gold, nor apparell,

34 Yea, ye know, that these hands haue ministred vnto my
1.*Cor.*4.12. *necessities, and to them that were with me.
1.*thes.*2.9.
2.*thes.*3.8. 35 I haue shewed you all things, how that so labouring, ye ought to support the weake, and to remember the wordes of the Lord Iesus, howe that he said, It is a blessed thing to giue, rather then to receiue.

36 And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled downe, and prayed with them all.

37 Then they wept all aboundantly, and fell on Pauls necke, and kissed him,

38 Being chiefly sory for the wordes which he spake, That they shoulde see his face no more. And they accompanied him vnto the ship.

## CHAP. XXI.

1 *Paul goeth towarde Hierusalem:* 8 *At Cesarea he talketh with Philip the Euangelist:* 10 *Agabus foretelleth him of his bondes.* 17 *After he came to Hierusalem,* 26 *and into the Temple,* 27 *the Iewes laid hands on him:* 32 *Lysias the captaine taketh him from them.*

AND as we launched forth, and were departed from them, we came with a straight course vnto Coos, and the day following vnto the Rhodes, and from thence vnto Patara.

2 And we found a ship that went ouer vnto Phenice, and went aboard, and set forth.

3 And when we had discouered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed towarde Syria, and arriued at Tyrus: for there the ship vnladed the burden.

4 And when we had found disciples, we taried there seuen dayes. And they told Paul through the Spirit, that he shoulde not goe vp to Hierusalem.

5 But when the dayes were ended, we departed, and went our way: and they all accompanied vs with *their* wiues and children,

children, euen out of the citie: and we kneeling downe on the shore, prayed.

6 Then when we had embraced one another, we tooke ship, and they returned home.

7 And when we had ended the course from Tyrus, we arriued at Ptolemais, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

8 And the next day, Paul and we that were with him, departed, and came vnto Cesarea: and we entred into the house of* Philip the Euangelist, which was one of the seuen *Deacons*, and abode with him. *Chap. 6. 5.*

9 Nowe he had foure daughters virgines, which did prophecie.

10 And as we taried there many dayes, there came a certaine Prophet from Iudea, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come vnto vs, he tooke Pauls girdle, and bounde his owne handes and feete, and saide, Thus saieth the holy Ghost, So shall the Iewes at Hierusalem binde the man that oweth this girdle, and shall deliuer him into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when we had heard these things, both we & other of the same place besought him that he would not goe vp to Hierusalem.

13 Then Paul answered, and saide, What doe ye weeping, and breaking mine heart? For I am ready not to be bounde onely, but also to die at Hierusalem for the Name of the Lord Iesus.

14 So when he would not be perswaded, we ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

15 And after those dayes we trussed vp our fardels, and went vp to Hierusalem.

16 There went with vs also *certaine* of the disciples of Cesarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an olde disciple, with whom we should lodge.

17 And when we were come to Hierusalem, the brethren receiued vs gladly.

18 And the next day Paul went in with vs vnto Iames: and all the Elders were there assembled.

19 And when he had embraced them, he tolde by order all things, that God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministration.

20 So when they heard it, they glorified God, and saide

vnto

vnto him, Thou seest, brother, howe many thousande Iewes there are which beleeue, and they are all zealous of the Law:

21 Nowe they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Iewes which are among the Gentiles, to forsake Moses, and sayest, that they ought not to circumcise their sonnes, neither to line *after* the customes.

22 What is then *to be done*? the multitude must needes come together: for they shall heare that thou art come.

23 Doe therefore this that we say to thee. We haue some men, which haue made a vowe,

24 Them take, and purifie thy selfe with them, and contribute with them, that they may * shaue their heads: and all shall knowe, that those things, whereof they haue bene informed concerning thee, are nothing, but that thou thy selfe also walkest and keepest the Lawe.

*Chap. 18.18. nom. 6. 18.*

25 For as touching the Gentiles, which beleeue, we haue written, and determined that they obserue no such thing, but that they keepe themselues from things offered to idoles, and from blood, & from that that is strangled, & from fornicatiō.

26 Then Paul tooke the men, and the next day was purified with them, and entred into the Temple, declaring the accomplishment of the dayes of the purification, vntill that an offering should be offered for euery one of them.

27 And when the seuen dayes were almost ended, the Iewes which were of Asia (when they sawe him in the Temple) moued all the people, and laide hands on him,

28 Crying, Men of Israel, helpe: this is the man that teacheth all men euery where against the people, and the Lawe, and this place: moreouer, he hath brought Grecians into the Temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 For they had seene before Trophimus an Ephesian with him in the citie, whom they supposed that Paul had brought into the Temple.

30 Then all the citie was moued, and the people ranne together: and they tooke Paul and drewe him out of the Temple, and forthwith the doores were shut.

31 But as they went about to kill him, tidings came vnto the chiefe Captaine of the bande, that all Hierusalem was on an vproare.

32 Who immediatly tooke souldiers and Centurions, and ranne downe vnto them: and when they sawe the chiefe Captaine and the souldiers, they left beating of Paul.

33 Then

33 Then the chiefe Captaine came neere and tooke him, and commanded him to be bounde with two chaines, and demaunded who he was, and what he had done.

34 And one cryed this, another that, among the people. So when he coulde not knowe the certainetie for the tumult, he commaunded him to be led into the castell.

35 And when he came vnto the grieces, it was so that he was borne of the souldiers, for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him.

37 And as Paul shoulde haue beene led into the castell, he said vnto the chiefe captaine, May I speake vnto thee? Who said, Canst thou *speake* Greeke?

38 Art not thou the Egyptian who before these dayes raysed a sedition, and led out into the wildernesse foure thousand men that were murtherers?

39 Then Paul saide, Doubtlesse I am a man which am a Iewe, and citizen of Tarsus, a famous citie of Cilicia, and I beseeche thee, suffer me to speake vnto the people.

40 And when he had giuen him licence, Paul stood on the grieces, and beckened with the hand vnto the people: and when there was made great silence, he spake vnto them in the Hebrewe tongue, saying,

## CHAP. XXII.

1 *Paul yeeldeth a reason of his faith,* 22 *and the Iewes heare him a while:* 23 *But so soone as they cryed out,* 24 *hee is commaunded to be scourged and examined,* 27 *and so declareth that he is a citizen of Rome.*

YE men, brethren and Fathers, heare my defence nowe toward you.

2 (And when they heard that he spake in the Hebrewe tongue to them, they kept the more silence, and he said)

3 I am verely a man, *which am* a Iewe, borne in Tarsus in Cilicia, but brought vp in this citie at the feete of Gamaliel, and instructed according to the perfect maner of the Law of the fathers, & was zealous toward God, as ye all are this day,

4 And I persecuted this way vnto the death, binding and deliuering into prison both men and women.

5 As also the chiefe Priest doth beare me witnes, and all the company of the Elders: of whom also I receiued letters vnto the brethren, & went to Damascus to bring them which were there, bound vnto Hierusalem, ỹ they might be punished.

6 ¶And

6 ¶ And so it was, as I iourneyed and was come neere vnto Damascus about noone, that suddenly there shone from heauen a great light round about me.

7 So I fell vnto the earth, and heard a voyce, saying vnto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

8 Then I answered, Who art thou, Lord? And he said to me, I am Iesus of Nazareth, whom thou persecutest.

9 Moreouer they that were with me, sawe in deede a light, and were afraide: but they heard not the voyce of him that spake vnto me.

10 Then I said, What shall I doe, Lord? And the Lord said vnto me, Arise, and goe into Damascus: and there it shall be tolde thee of all things, which are appointed for thee to doe.

11 So when I coulde not see for the glory of that light, I was led by the hand of them that were with me, and came into Damascus.

12 And one Ananias a godly man, as pertaining to ȳ Law, hauing good report of all the Iewes which dwelt there,

13 Came vnto me, and stoode, and saide vnto me, Brother Saul, receiue thy sight: and that same houre I looked vpō him.

14 And he saide, The God of our fathers hath appointed thee, that thou shouldest knowe his will, and shouldest see that Iust one, and shouldest heare the voyce of his mouth.

15 For thou shalt be his witnes vnto all men of the things which thou hast seene and heard.

16 Now therefore why tariest thou? Arise, & be baptized, and wash away thy sinnes, in calling on the Name of ȳ Lord.

17 ¶ And it came to passe, that when I was come againe to Hierusalem, and prayed in the Temple, I was in a trance,

18 And sawe him saying vnto me, Make haste, and get thee quickly out of Hierusalem: for they will not receiue thy witnesse concerning me.

19 Then I said, Lord, they knowe that I prisoned, and beat in euery Synagogue them that beleeued in thee.

20 And when the blood of thy martyr Steuen was shed, I also stoode by and consented vnto his death, and kept the clothes of them that slewe him.

21 Then he said vnto me, Depart: for I will send thee farre hence vnto the Gentiles.

22 ¶ And they heard him vnto this worde, *but* then they lift vp their voyces, and said, Away with such a fellowe from the earth: for it is not meete that he should liue.

23 And

23 And as they cryed and cast off their clothes, and threwe dust into the aire,

24 The chiefe captaine commanded him to be led into the castle, and bade that he shoulde be scourged, and examined, that he might knowe wherefore they cryed so on him.

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul said vnto the Centurion that stood by, Is it lawfull for you to scourge one that is a Romane, and not condemned?

26 Nowe when the Centurion heard it, he went, and told the chiefe captaine, saying, Take heede what thou doest: for this man is a Romane.

27 Then the chiefe captaine came, and said to him, Tel me, art thou a Romane? And he said, Yea.

28 And the chiefe captaine answered, With a great summe obteined I this freedome. Then Paul saide, But I was so borne.

29 Then straightway they departed from him, which should haue examined him: and the chiefe captaine also was afraide, after he knewe that he was a Romane, and that he had bound him.

30 On the next day, because he woulde haue knowen the certaintie wherefore he was accused of the Iewes, he loosed him from *his* bondes, and commanded the hie Priestes and all their Councel to come *together*: and he brought Paul, and set him before them.

## CHAP. XXIII.

1 *As Paul pleadeth his cause,* 2 *Ananias commaundeth them to smite him:* 7 *Dissention among his accusers.* 11 *God encourageth him.* 14 *The Iewes laying waite for Paul,* 20 *is declared vnto the chiefe captaine:* 27 *He sendeth him to Felix the Gouernour.*

AND Paul beholde earnestly the Councill, and saide, Men *and* brethren, I haue in all good conscience serued God vntill this day.

2 Then the hie Priest Ananias commaunded them that stoode by, to smite him on the mouth.

3 Then said Paul to him, God will smite thee, thou whited wall: for thou sittest to iudge me according to the Law, and transgressing the Lawe, commaundest thou me to be smitten?

4 And they that stoode by, saide, Reuilest thou Gods hie Priest?

5 Then saide Paul, I knewe not, brethren, that he was the hie

Exod.22.27. hie Prieſt: for it is written, * Thou ſhalt not ſpeake euill of the Ruler of thy people.

6 But when Paul perceiued that the one part were of the Sadduces, and the other of the Phariſes, he cryed in the Coun-
Chap. 24.22. cill, Men *and* brethren, *I am a Phariſe, the ſonne of a Phariſe:
phil.3.5. I am accuſed of the hope and reſurrection of the dead.

7 And when he had ſaide this, there was a diſſention betweene the Phariſes and the Sadduces, ſo that the multitude was deuided.

Mat.22.23. 8 *For the Sadduces ſay that there is no reſurrection, neither Angel, nor ſpirit: but the Phariſes confeſſe both.

9 Then there was a great crie: and the Scribes of the Phariſes part roſe vp, and ſtroue, ſaying, We finde none euill in this man: but if a ſpirit or an Angel hath ſpoken to him, let vs not fight againſt God.

10 And when there was a great diſſention, the chiefe captaine, fearing leſt Paul ſhoulde haue bene pulled in pieces of them, commaunded the ſouldiers to goe downe, and to take him from among them, and to bring him into the caſtel.

11 ¶ Nowe the night following the Lorde ſtood by him, and ſaid, Be of good courage, Paul: for as thou haſt teſtified of me in Hieruſalem, ſo muſt thou beare witnes alſo at Rome.

12 And when the day was come, certaine of ℣ Iewes made an aſſemblie, and bound themſelues with a curſe, ſaying, that they woulde neither eate nor drinke, till they had killed Paul.

13 And they were more then fourtie, which had made this conſpiracie.

14 And they came to the chiefe Prieſtes and Elders, and ſaid, We haue bound our ſelues with a ſolemne curſe, that we will eate nothing, vntill we haue ſlaine Paul.

15 Nowe therefore, ye and the Councill ſignifie to the chiefe captaine, that he bring him forth vnto you to morowe, as though ye would knowe ſomething more perfectly of him, and we, or euer he come neere, will be redy to kill him.

16 But when Pauls ſiſters ſonne heard of their laying awaite, he went, and entred into the caſtell, and tolde Paul.

17 And Paul called one of the Centurions vnto him, and ſaid, Take this yong man hence vnto the chiefe captaine: for he hath a certaine thing to ſhewe him.

18 So he tooke him and brought him to the chiefe captaine, and ſaid, Paul the priſoner called me vnto him, and prayed me to bring this yong man vnto thee, which hath ſome thing

thing to say vnto thee.

19 Then the chiefe captaine tooke him by the hand, and went apart with him alone, and asked him, What hast thou to shewe me?

20 And he sayd, The Iewes haue conspired to desire thee, that thou wouldest bring foorth Paul to morowe into the Councill, as though they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly:

21 But let them not perswade thee: for there lie in waite for him of them, more then fourtie men, which haue bound themselues with a curse, that they wil neither eate nor drinke, till they haue killed him: and now are they ready, and waite for thy promes.

22 The chiefe captaine then let the yong man depart, after hee had charged him to vtter it to no man, that hee had ‖ shewed him these things.

‖ *Greeke, that thou hast shewed these things to me.*

23 And he called vnto him two certaine Centurions, saying, Make ready two hundreth souldiers, that they may go to Cesarea, and horsemen three score and ten, and two hundreth with dartes, at the third houre of the night.

24 And let them make ready an horse, that Paul being set on, may be brought safe vnto Felix the Gouernour.

25 And he wrote an Epistle in this maner:

26 Claudius Lysias vnto the most noble Gouernour Felix sendeth greeting.

27 As this man was taken of the Iewes, and should haue bene killed of them, I came vpon them with the garison, and rescued him, perceiuing that he was a Romane.

28 And when I would haue knowen the cause, wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their Councill.

29 *There* I perceiued that he was accused of questions of their Law, but had no crime worthy of death, or of bonds.

30 And when it was shewed me, how that the Iewes layde waite for the man, I sent *him* straightway to thee, and commaunded his accusers to speake before thee the things that they had against him. Farewell.

31 Then the souldiers, as it was commanded them, tooke Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris.

32 And the next day, they left the horsemen to goe with him, and returned vnto the castell.

33 Now when they came to Cesarea, they deliuered the Epistle to the Gouernour, and presented Paul also vnto him.

35 So when the Gouernour had read it, he asked of what prouince he was: and when he vnderstoode that hee was of Cilicia,

35 I will heare thee, sayd he, when thine accusers also are come, and commaunded him to bee kept in Herods iudgement hall.

## CHAP. XXIIII.

*2 Tertullus accuseth Paul: 10 He answereth for himselfe: 25 He preacheth Christ to the Gouernour and his wife. 27 Felix hopeth, but in vaine, to receiue a bribe, 28 who going from his office leaueth Paul in prison.*

NOwe after fiue dayes, Ananias the hie Priest came downe with the Elders, and *with* Tertullus a certaine oratour, which appeared before the Gouernour against Paul.

2 And when he was called foorth, Tertullus began to accuse *him*, saying, Seeing that we haue obtained great quietnes through thee, and that many worthy things are done vnto this nation through thy prouidence,

3 We acknowledge it wholy, and in all places, most noble Felix, with all thankes.

4 But that I be not tedious vnto thee, I pray thee that thou wouldest heare vs of thy courtesie a fewe wordes.

5 Certainly we haue found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mouer of sedition among all the Iewes throughout the world, and a chiefe mainteiner of the sect of the Nazarites:

6 And hath gone about to pollute the Temple: therefore we tooke him, and would haue iudged him according to our Lawe:

7 But the chiefe captaine Lysias came vpon vs, and with great violence tooke him out of our hands,

8 Commanding his accusers to come to thee: of whome thou mayest (if thou wilt inquire) knowe all these things whereof we accuse him.

9 And the Iewes likewise affirmed, saying, that it was so.

10 Then Paul, after that the Gouernour had beckened vnto him that he should speake, answered, I doe the more gladly answere for my selfe, forasmuch as I know that thou hast bene of many yeeres a iudge vnto this nation,

11 Seeing that thou maiest know, that there are but twelue dayes since I came vp to worship in Hierusalem.

12 And they neither found mee in the Temple disputing with any man, neither making vproare among the people, neither

ther in the Synagogues, nor in the citie.

13 Neither can they prooue the things, whereof they now accuse me.

14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that after the way (which they call heresie) so worship I the God of my fathers, beleeuing all things which are written in the Law & the Prophets,

15 And haue hope towards God, that the resurrection of the dead, which they themselues looke for also, shalbe both of iust and vniust.

16 And herein I endeuour my selfe to haue alway a cleare conscience toward God, and toward men.

17 Now after many yeeres, I came and brought almes to my nation and offrings.

18 At what time, certaine Iewes of Asia found me purified in the Temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult.

19 Who ought to haue bene present before thee, and accuse *me*, if they had ought against me.

20 Or let these themselues say, if they haue found any vniust thing in me, while I stoode in the Councill,

21 Except *it be* for this one voyce, that I cried standing among them, Of the resurrection of the dead am I accused of you this day.

22 Nowe when Felix heard these things, he deferred them, and sayd, When I shal more perfectly know the things which concerne this way, by the comming of Lysias the chiefe Captaine, I wil decise your matter.

23 Then he commanded a Centurion to keepe Paul, and that he should haue ease, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister vnto him, or to come vnto him.

24 ¶ And after certaine dayes, came Felix with his wife Drusilla, which was a Iewesse, *and* he called forth Paul, and heard him of the faith in Christ.

25 And as he disputed of righteousnesse and temperance, and of the iudgement to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Goe thy way for this time, and when I haue conuenient time, I will call for thee.

26 Hee hoped also that money should haue bene giuen him of Paul, that he might loose him: wherefore he sent for him the oftener, and communed with him.

27 When two yeeres were expired, Porcius Festus came into Felix roome: and *Felix* willing to get fauour of the Iewes, left Paul bound.

## CHAP. XXV.

*1 Festus succeeding Felix, 6 commandeth Paul to be brought forth. 11 Paul appealeth vnto Cesar. 14 Festus openeth Pauls matter to King Agrippa, 23 and bringeth him before him, 27 that he may vnderstand his cause.*

WHen Festus was then come into the prouince, after three dayes he went vp from Cesarea vnto Hierusalem.

2 Then the hie Priest, and the chiefe of the Iewes appeared before him against Paul: and they besought him,

3 And desired fauour against him, that he would send for him to Hierusalem: and they layde waite to kill him by the way.

4 But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Cesarea, and that he himselfe would shortly depart *thither*.

5 Let them therefore, sayd he, which among you are able, come downe with vs: and if there be any wickednes in the man, let them accuse him.

6 ¶ Nowe when he had taried among them no more then ten dayes, he went downe to Cesarea, and the next day sate in the iudgement seate, and commanded Paul to be brought.

7 And when hee was come, the Iewes which were come from Hierusalem, stoode about him, and layde many and grieuous complaints against Paul, whereof they could make no plaine proofe,

8 Forasmuch as he answered, that he had neither offended any thing against the Lawe of the Iewes, neither against the Temple, nor against Cesar.

9 Yet Festus willing to get fauour of the Iewes, answered Paul, and said, Wilt thou goe vp to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these things before me?

10 Then sayde Paul, I stande at Cesars iudgement seate, where I ought to be iudged: to the Iewes I haue done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.

11 For if I haue done wrong, or committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof they accuse me, no man, to pleasure them, can deliuer me to them: I appeale vnto Cesar.

12 Then when Festus had spoken with the Councill, hee answered, Hast thou appealed vnto Cesar? vnto Cesar shalt thou goe.

13 ¶ And after certaine dayes, King Agrippa and Bernice came downe to Cesarea to salute Festus.

14 And

14 And when they had remained there many dayes, Festus declared Pauls cause vnto the King, saying, There is a certaine man left in prison by Felix,

15 Of whome when I came to Hierusalem, the hie Priestes and Elders of the Iewes informed mee, and desired to haue iudgement against him.

16 To whome I answered, that it is not the maner of the Romanes for fauour to deliuer any man to the death, before that he which is accused, haue the accusers before him, and haue place to defend himselfe, concerning the crime.

17 Therefore when they were come hither, without delay the day following I sate on the iudgement seate, & commanded the man to be brought foorth.

18 Against whome when the accusers stoode vp, they brought no crime of such things as I supposed:

19 But had certaine questions against him of their owne superstition, and of one Iesus which was dead, whome Paul affirmed to be aliue.

20 And because I doubted of such maner of question, I asked him whether he would goe to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these things.

21 But because he appealed to be reserued to the examination of Augustus, I commaunded him to be kept, till I might send him to Cesar.

22 Then Agrippa sayd vnto Festus, I would also heare the man my selfe. To morowe, sayd he, thou shalt heare him.

23 And on the morowe when Agrippa was come and Bernice with great pompe, and were entred into the Common hall with the chiefe captaines and chiefe men of the citie, at Festus commandement Paul was brought forth.

24 And Festus sayd, King Agrippa, and all men which are present with vs, yee see this man, about whome all the multitude of the Iewes haue called vpon mee, both at Hierusalem, and here, crying, that hee ought not to liue any longer.

25 Yet haue I found nothing worthy of death, that hee hath committed: neuertheless, seeing that he hath appealed to Augustus, I haue determined to send him.

26 Of whome I haue no certaine thing to write vnto my Lord: wherefore I haue brought him forth vnto you, and specially vnto thee, King Agrippa, that after examination had, I might haue somewhat to write.

27 For me thinketh it vnreasonable to send a prisoner, and not to shewe the causes which are *layd* against him.

## CHAP. XXVI.

*2 Paul in the presence of Agrippa, 4 declareth his life from his childhood, 16 and his calling, 22 with such efficacie of words, 28 that almost he perswadeth him to Christianitie: 32 but he and his company depart doing nothing in Pauls matter.*

THen Agrippa sayde vnto Paul, Thou art permitted to speake for thy selfe. So Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himselfe.

2 I thinke my selfe happie, King Agrippa, because I shall answere this day before thee of all the things whereof I am accused of the Iewes.

3 Chiefly, because thou hast knowledge of all customes, and questions which are among the Iewes: wherefore I beseech thee, to heare me patiently.

4 As touching my life from *my* childehoode, and what it was from the beginning among mine owne nation at Hierusalem, know all the Iewes,

5 Which knew me heretofore, euen from mine elders (if they would testifie) that after the most straite sect of our religion I liued a Pharise.

6 And nowe I stand and am accused for the hope of the promes made of God vnto our fathers.

7 Whereunto our twelue tribes instantly seruing *God* day and night, hope to come: for the which hopes sake, O King Agrippa, I am accused of the Iewes.

8 Why should it be thought a thing vncredible vnto you, that God should raise againe the dead?

9 I also verely thought in my selfe, that I ought to doe many contrary things against the Name of IESVS of Nazareth.

*Chap.8.3.* 10 *Which thing I also did in Hierusalem: for many of the Saints I shut vp in prison, hauing receiued authoritie of the hie Priests, and when they were put to death, I gaue *my* sentence.

11 And I punished them throughout all the Synagogues, and compelled them to blaspheme, and being more mad against them, I persecuted them, euen vnto strange cities.

*Chap.9.2.* 12 At which time, euen as I went to *Damascus with authoritie, and commission from the hie Priests,

13 At midday, O King, I sawe in the way a light from heauen, passing the brightnesse of the sunne, shine round about mee,

mee, and them which went with me.

14 So when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voyce speaking vnto mee, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? It is hard for thee to kicke against pricks.

15 Then I sayd, Who art thou, Lord? And hee sayd, I am Iesus whome thou persecutest.

16 But rise and stand vp on thy feete: for I haue appeared vnto thee for this purpose, to appoint thee a minister and a witnes, both of the things which thou hast seene, and of the things in the which I will appeare vnto thee,

17 Deliuering thee from this people, and from the Gentiles, vnto whom now I send thee,

18 To open their eyes, that they may turne from darkenes to light, and from the power of Satan vnto God, that they may receiue forgiuenesse of sinnes, and inheritance among them, which are sanctified by faith in me.

19 Wherefore, King Agrippa, I was not disobedient vnto the heauenly vision,

20 * But shewed first vnto them of Damascus, and at Hierusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Iudea, and *then* to the Gentiles, that they should repent, and turne to God, and doe workes worthy amendement of life. *Chap.9.22, 26.& 13.4.*

21 For this cause the Iewes caught mee in the * Temple, and went about to kill me. *Chap.21.30.*

22 Neuertheless, I obteined helpe of God, and continue vnto this day, witnessing both to small and to great, saying none other things, then those which the Prophets and Moses did say should come,

23 *To wit*, that Christ should suffer, and that hee should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light vnto this people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as he thus answered for himselfe, Festus sayd with a loude voyce, Paul, thou art besides thy selfe: much learning doeth make thee mad.

25 But he sayd, I am not mad, O noble Festus, but I speake the wordes of trueth, and soberneſſe,

26 For the King knoweth of these things, before whom also I speake boldly: for I am perswaded ỹ none of these things are hid from him: for this thing was not done in a corner.

27 O King Agrippa, beleeuest thou the Prophets? I know that thou beleeuest.

28 Then Agrippa ſayd vnto Paul, Almoſt thou perſwadeſt me to become a Chriſtian.

29 Then Paul ſayd, I would to God that not onely thou, but alſo all that heare me to day, were both almoſt, and altogether ſuch as I am, except theſe bonds.

30 And when he had thus ſpoken, the King roſe vp, and the gouernour, and Bernice, and they that ſate with them.

31 And when they were gone apart, they talked betweene themſelues, ſaying, This man doeth nothing worthy of death, nor of bonds.

32 Then ſayd Agrippa vnto Feſtus, This man might haue bene looſed, if he had not appealed vnto Ceſar.

## CHAP. XXVII.

1 *Paul 7. 9 foretelleth the perill of the viage,* 11 *but he is not beleeued.* 14 *They are toſſed to and fro with the tempeſt,* 21. 41 *and ſuffer ſhipwracke:* 34 *Yet all ſafe and ſound* 44 *eſcape to land.*

NOwe when it was concluded, that we ſhould ſaile into Italie, they deliuered both Paul & certaine other priſoners vnto a Centurion named Iulius, of the band of Auguſtus.

2. *Cor.* 11. 25. 2 And * we entred into a ſhippe of Adramyttium, purpoſing to ſaile by the coaſts of Aſia, and lanched forth, and had Ariſtarchus of Macedonia, a Theſſalonian, with vs.

3 And the next day we arriued at Sidon: and Iulius curteouſly intreated Paul, and gaue him libertie to goe vnto his friends, that they might refreſh him.

4 And from thence we launched, and ſailed hard by Cyprus, becauſe the windes were contrary.

5 Then ſayled we ouer the ſea by Cilicia, and Pamphylia, and came to Myra, *a citie* in Lycia.

6 And there the Centurion found a ſhip of Alexandria, ſailing into Italie, and put vs therein.

7 And when we had ſailed ſlowly many dayes, and ſcarce were come againſt Gnidum, becauſe the winde ſuffred vs not, we ſailed hard by Candie, neere to Salmone:

8 And with much a doe ſailed beyond it, and came vnto a certaine place called the Faire hauens, neere vnto the which was the citie Laſea.

9 So when much time was ſpent, and ſailing was nowe ieopardous, becauſe alſo the Faſt was nowe paſt, Paul exhorted *them*,

10 And ſayde vnto them, Syrs, I ſee that this viage will be with

with hurt and much dammage, not of the lading and ſhippe onely, but alſo of our liues.

11 Neuertheleſſe the Centurion beleeued rather the Gouernour and the maſter of the ſhippe, then thoſe things which were ſpoken of Paul.

12 And becauſe the hauen was not commodious to winter in, many tooke counſell to depart thence, if by any meanes they might attaine to Phenice, *there* to winter, which is an hauen of Candie, and lieth toward the Southweſt & by Weſt, and Northweſt, and by Weſt.

13 And whē the Southerne wind blew ſoftly, they ſuppoſing to obteine their purpoſe, looſed neerer, & ſailed by Cādie.

14 But anon after, there aroſe by it a ſtormie winde called Euroclydon.

15 And when the ſhippe was caught, and coulde not reſiſt the winde, we let her goe, and were caried away.

16 And we ranne vnder a litle yle named Clauda, and had much a doe to get the boate.

17 Which they tooke vp and vſed all helpe, vndergirding the ſhippe, fearing leaſt they ſhoulde haue fallen into Syrtes, and they ſtrake ſaile, and ſo were caried.

18 The next day when we were toſſed with an exceeding tempeſt, they lightned the ſhippe.

19 And the thirde day wee caſt out with our owne handes the takling of the ſhippe.

20 And when neither ſunne nor ſtarres in many dayes appeared, and no ſmall tempeſt laye vpon vs, all hope that wee ſhould be ſaued, was then taken away.

21 But after long abſtinence, Paul ſtoode foorth in the middes of them, and ſaide, Sirs, ye ſhould haue hearkēned to me, and not haue looſed from Candie: ſo ſhoulde ye haue gained this hurt and loſſe.

22 But now I exhort you to be of good courage: for there ſhalbe no loſſe of any mans life amōg you, ſaue of ye ſhip only.

23 For there ſtoode by mee this night the Angel of God, whoſe I am, and whom I ſerue,

24 Saying, Feare not, Paul: for thou muſt be brought before Ceſar: and loe, God hath giuen vnto thee freely all that ſaile with thee.

25 Wherefore, ſyrs, bee of good courage: for I beleeue God, that it ſhalbe ſo as it hath bene tolde me.

26 Howbeit, we muſt be caſt into a certaine yland.

27 And

27 And when the fourteenth night was come, as we were caried to and fro in the Adriaticall *sea* about midnight, the shipmen deemed that some countrey approched vnto them,

28 And sounded, and found it twentie fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they sounded againe, and found fifteene fathoms.

29 Then fearing least they shoulde haue fallen into some rough places, they cast foure ancres out of the sterne, and wished that the day were come.

30 Nowe as the mariners were about to flee out of the ship, and had let downe the boate into the sea vnder a colour as though they would haue cast ancres out of the foreship,

31 Paul said vnto the Centurion and the souldiers, Except these abide in the shippe, ye cannot be safe.

32 Then the souldiers cut off the ropes of the boate, and let it fall away.

33 And when it began to be day, Paul exhorted them all to take meate, saying, This is the fourteenth day that ye haue taried, and continued fasting, receiuing nothing:

34 Wherefore I exhort you to take meate: for this is for your safegarde: for there shall not an heare fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when hee had thus spoken, hee tooke bread, and gaue thankes to God, in presence of them all, and brake it, and began to eate.

36 Then were they all of good courage, & they also tooke meate.

37 Nowe we were in the shippe in all two hundreth, three score and sixteene soules.

38 And when they had eaten ynough, they lightened the shippe, and cast out the wheate into the sea.

39 And when it was day, they knew not the countrey, but they spied a certaine creeke with a banke, into the which they were minded (if it were possible) to thrust in the shippe.

40 So when they had taken vp the ancres, they committed *the ship* vnto the sea, and loosed the rudder bondes, and hoised vp the maine saile to the winde, and drew to the shore.

41 And when they fell into a place, where two seas mette, they thrust in the ship: and the forepart stucke fast, and could not be moued, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the wanes.

42 Then the souldiers counsel was to kil the prisoners, least

any

any of them, when he had swomme out, should flee away.

43 But the Centurion willing to saue Paul, stayed them from *this* counsel, & commaded that they that could swimme, should cast themselues first into the sea, and go out to land:

44 And the other, some on boardes, and some on certaine *pieces* of the shippe: and so it came to passe that they came all safe to land.

## CHAP. XXVIII.

2 *The Barbarians courteous towardes Paul and his companie.* 3 *A viper on Pauls hand:* 6 *He shaketh it off without harme:* 8 *Publius* 9 *and others are by him healed.* 11 *They depart from Melita,* 16 *and come to Rome.* 17 *Paul openeth to the Iewes* 20 *the cause of his comming:* 23 *He preacheth Iesus* 30 *two yeeres.*

AND when they were come safe, then they knewe that the yle was called Melita.

2 And the Barbarians shewed vs no little kindenesse: for they kindled a fire, and receiued vs euery one, because of the present showre, and because of the colde.

3 And when Paul had gathered a nomber of stickes, and layd them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heate, and lept on his hand.

4 Now when the Barbarians sawe the worme hang on his hande, they saide among themselues, This man surely is a murtherer, whom, though he hath escaped the sea, yet Vengeance hath not suffered to line.

5 But hee shooke off the worme into the fire, and felt no harme.

6 Howbeit they waited when he should haue swolne, or fallen downe dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and sawe no inconuenience come to him, they changed their mindes and said, That he was a God.

7 In the same quarters, the chiefe man of the yle (whose name was Publius) had possessions: the same receiued vs, and lodged vs three dayes courteously.

8 And so it was, that the father of Publius lay sicke of the feuer, and of a bloodie flixe: to whom Paul entred in, & when he prayed, he layed *his* handes on him, and healed him.

9 When this then was done, other also in the yle, which had diseases, came to him and were healed,

10 Which also did vs great honour: and when we departed, they laded vs with things necessarie.

11 ¶ Now

11 ¶ Now after three moneths we departed in a shippe of Alexandria, which had wintered in the yle, whose badge was Castor and Pollux.

12 And when we arriued at Syracuse, we taried *there* three dayes.

13 And from thence we set a compasse, and came to Rhegium: and after one day, the Southwinde blewe, and we came the second day to Puteoli:

14 Where we founde brethren, and were desired to tarie with them seuen dayes, and so we went toward Rome.

15 ¶ And from thence, when the brethren heard of vs, they came to meete vs at the Market of Appius, and at the Three tauernes, whome when Paul sawe, hee thanked God, and waxed bolde.

16 So when wee came to Rome, the Centurion deliuered the prisoners to the generall captaine: but Paul was suffered to dwell by himselfe with a souldier that kept him.

17 And the thirde day after, Paul called the chiefe of the Iewes together: and whē they were come, he said vnto them, Men *and* brethren, though I haue committed nothing against the people, or lawes of the fathers, *yet* was I deliuered prisoner from Hierusalem into the handes of the Romanes.

18 Who when they had examined me, would haue let me goe, because there was no cause of death in me.

19 But when the Iewes spake contrary, I was constrained to appeale vnto Cesar, not because I had ought to accuse my nation of.

20 For this cause therefore haue I called for you, to see *you*, and to speake with *you*: for that hope of Israels sake, I am bound with this chaine.

21 Then they saide vnto him, We neither receiued letters out of Iudea concerning thee, neither came any of the brethren that shewed or spake any euill of thee.

22 But wee will heare of thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect, we knowe that euery where it is spoken against.

23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many vnto him into *his* lodging, to whom he expounded and testified the kingdome of God, and perswading them those things that concerne Iesus, both out of the lawe of Moses, and out of the Prophets, from morning to night.

24 And some were perswaded with the things which were spoken,

spoken, and some beleeued not.

25 Therfore when they agreed not amõg themselues, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one worde, *to wit*, Well spake the holy Ghost by Esaias the Prophet vnto our Fathers,

26 Saying, *Goe vnto this people, and say, By hearing yee shall heare, and shall not vnderstande, and seeing ye shall see, and not perceiue.* *Isa.6.9. matt.13.14. mar.4.12.*

27 For the heart of this people is waxed fatte, and their eares are dull of hearing, and with their eyes haue they winked, least they should see with *their* eyes, and heare with *their* eares, and vnderstande with *their* heartes, and shoulde returne that I might heale them. *luke 8.10. iohn 12.40. rom.11.8.*

28 Be it knowen therefore vnto you, that this saluation of God is sent to the Gentiles, and they shall heare it.

29 And when he had said these things, the Iewes departed, and had reasoning among themselues.

30 And Paul remained two yeres full in an house hired for himselfe, and receiued all that came in vnto him,

31 Preaching the Kingdome of God, and teaching those things, which concerne the Lord Iesus Christ, with all boldenesse of speach, without let.

# THE EPISTLE OF THE APOSTLE PAVL TO the Romanes.

## CHAP. I.

*He first sheweth on what authoritie his Apostleship standeth: 15 Then he commendeth the Gospel, 16 by which God setteth out his power to those that are saued 17 by faith, 21 but were guiltie of wicked vnthankefulnesse to God. 26 For which his wrath was worthily powred on them, 29 so that they ranne headlong into all kindes of sinne.*

PAVL a seruant of IESVS CHRIST, called *to bee* an Apostle, * put apart *to preach* the Gospel of God, *Actes.13.1.*

2 (Which he had promised afore by his Prophets in the holy Scriptures)

3 Concerning his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord (which was made of the seede of Dauid, according to the flesh,

4 And declared mightily *to be* the Sonne of God, touching the

the Spirit of ſanctification by the reſurrection of the dead)

5 By whom we haue receiued grace and Apoſtleſhip (that obedience might be giuen vnto the faith) for his name among all the Gentiles,

6 Among whome ye be alſo the called of Ieſus Chriſt:

7 To all *you* that be at Rome beloued of God, called *to be* Saintes: Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

8 Firſt I thanke my God through Ieſus Chriſt for you all, becauſe your faith is publiſhed throughout the whole world.

9 For God is my witnes, (whom I ſerue in my ſpirit in the Goſpel of his Soune) ẏ without ceaſing I make mẽtion of you

10 Alwayes in my praiers, beſeeching that by ſome meanes, one time or other I might haue a proſperous iourney, by the will of God, to come vnto you.

11 For I long to ſee you, that I might beſtowe among you ſome ſpirituall gift, that you might be ſtrengthened:

12 That is, that I might be comforted together with you, through *our* mutuall faith, both yours and mine.

13 Now my brethren, I would that ye ſhould not be ignorant, how that I haue oftentimes purpoſed to come vnto you, (but haue bene let hitherto) that I might haue ſome fruite alſo among you, as *I haue* among the other Gentiles.

14 I am detter both to the Grecians, and to the Barbarians, both to the wiſe men and vnto the vnwiſe.

15 Therefore, as muth as in me is, I am ready to preach the Goſpel to you alſo that are at Rome.

16 For I am not aſhamed of the Goſpel of Chriſt: for it is the power of God vnto ſaluation to euery one that beleeueth, to the Iewe firſt, and alſo to the Grecian.

17 For by it the righteouſnes of God is reueiled from faith
*Habak. 2. 4.* to faith: as it is written,* The iuſt ſhall liue by faith.

18 For the wrath of God is reuealed from heauen againſt all vngodlineſſe, and vnrighteouſnes of men, which withholde the trueth in vnrighteouſnes,

19 Foraſmuch as that, which may bee knowen of God, is manifeſt in them: for God hath ſhewed it vnto them.

20 For the inuiſible thinges of him, that is, his eternall power and Godhead, are ſeene by the creation of the worlde, being conſidered in *his* workes, to the intent that they ſhould *be* without excuſe:

21 Becauſe that when they knew God, they glorified him

not

not as God,neither were thankeful,but became vaine in their thoughtes,and their fooliſh heart was full of darkenes.

22 When they profeſſed themſelues to bee wiſe, they became fooles.

23 For they turned the glorie of the incorruptible God to the ſimilitude of the image of a corruptible man,and of birds, and foure footed beaſtes,and of creeping things.

24 Wherefore alſo God gaue them vp to their heartes luſtes,vnto vncleannes,to defile their owne bodies betweene themſelues:

25 Which turned the trueth of God vnto a lie, and worſhipped and ſerued the creature,forſaking the Creator, which is bleſſed for euer,Amen.

26 For this cauſe God gaue them vp vnto vile affections: for euen their women did change the naturall vſe into that which is againſt nature.

27 And likewiſe alſo the men left the naturall vſe of the woman, and burned in their luſt one towarde another, and man with man wrought filthines, and receiued in themſelues ſuch recompence of their errour,as was meete.

28 For as they regarded not to acknowledge God, *euen ſo* God deliuered them vp vnto a reprobate minde, to doe thoſe things which are not conuenient,

29 Being ful of all vnrighteouſnes,fornication,wickednes, couetouſnes,maliciouſnes,full of enuie,of murther,of debate, of deceite,taking all things in the euill part,whiſperers,

30 Backebiters, haters of God, doers of wrong, proude, boaſters, inuenters of euill thinges, diſobedient to parents, without vnderſtanding, couenant breakers, without naturall affection,ſuch as can neuer be appeaſed,mercileſſe.

31 Which men, though they knew the Lawe of God,how that they which commit ſuch things, are worthy of death, *yet* not onely doe the ſame, but alſo fauour them that do them.

## CHAP. II.

*1 He bringeth all before the iudgement ſeate of God. 12 The excuſe,that the Gentiles might pretend 14 of ignorance, he taketh quite away. 17 Hee vrgeth the Iewes with the written Lawe, 23 in which they boaſted: 27 And ſo maketh both Iewe and Gentile alike.*

THerfore thou art inexcuſable, O man,whoſoeuer thou art that condemneſt: for in that that thou condemneſt another, thou condemneſt thy ſelfe: for thou that condemneſt, doeſt

doest the same thinges.

2 But we knowe that the iudgement of God is according to trueth, against them which commit such things.

3 And thinkest thou this, O thou man, that condemnest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the iudgement of God?

4 Or despisest thou the riches of his bountifulnes, and patience, and long sufferance, not knowing that the bountifulnesse of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But thou, after thine hardnes, & heart that cannot repent,
*Iames* 5.3. * heapest vp as a treasure vnto thy selfe wrath against the day of wrath, & of the declaration of the iust iudgement of God,

*Psal.* 62.12. 6 *Who wil reward euery man according to his workes:
*mat.* 16.27. 7 *That is*, to them which through patience in well doing,
*reuel.* 22.12. seeke glorie, and honour, and immortalitie, euerlasting life:

8 But vnto them that are contentious and disobey the trueth, & obey vnrighteousnes, *shalbe* indignation and wrath.

9 Tribulation and anguish *shalbe* vpon the soule of euery man that doeth euil: of the Iewe first, and *also* of the Grecian.

10 But to euery man that doth good, *shalbe* glorie, and honour, and peace, to the Iewe first, and *also* to the Grecian.

11 For there is no respect of persons with God.

12 For as many as haue sinned without the Lawe, shall perish also without the Lawe: and as many as haue sinned in the Lawe, shalbe iudged by the Lawe,

13 (For the hearers of the Lawe *are* not righteous before God: but the doers of the Lawe shalbe iustified.

14 For when the Gentiles which haue not the Law, do by nature the things *contained* in the Lawe, they hauing not the Lawe, are a Lawe vnto themselues,

15 Which shewe the effect of the Lawe written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witnes, & their thoughts accusing one another, or excusing,)

16 At the day when God shall iudge the secrets of men by Iesus Christ, according to my Gospel.

17 ¶Behold, thou art called a Iew, and restest in the Lawe, and gloriest in God,

18 And knowest *his* will, and ‖triest the things that dissent from it, in that thou art instructed by the Lawe:

‖Or, allowest ye things that are excellent.

19 And perswadest thy selfe that thou art a guide of the blinde, a light of them which *are* in darkenes,

20 An instructer of them which lacke discretion, a teacher

of

of the vnlearned, which haſt the forme of knowledge, and of the trueth in the Lawe.

21 Thou therefore, which teacheſt another, teacheſt thou not thy ſelfe? thou that preacheſt, A man ſhoulde not ſteale, doeſt thou ſteale?

22 Thou that ſaieſt, A man ſhoulde not commit adulterie, doeſt thou commit adulterie? thou that abhorreſt idoles, committeſt thou ſacrilege?

23 Thou that glorieſt in the Lawe, through breaking the Lawe, diſhonoureſt thou God?

24 For the Name of God is blaſphemed among the Gentiles through you, * as it is written. *Iſa.52.5.*

25 For circumciſion verely is profitable, if thou doe the Lawe: but if thou be a tranſgreſſour of the Lawe, thy circumciſion is made vncircumciſion. *ezek.36.20.*

26 Therefore if the vncircumciſion keepe the ordinances of the Lawe, ſhall not his vncircumciſion be counted for circumciſion?

27 And ſhall not vncircumciſion which is by nature (if it keepe the Lawe) condemne thee which by the letter and circumciſion *art* a tranſgreſſour of the Lawe?

28 For he is not a Iewe, which is one outwarde: neither is that circumciſion, which is outward in the fleſh:

29 But hee is a Iewe which is one within, and the circumciſiō *is* of the heart, in the ſpirit, not in the letter, whoſe praiſe is not of men, but of God.

## CHAP. III.

1 *He giueth the Iewes ſome* 2 *preferment, for the couenants ſake,* 4 *but yet ſuch, as wholy dependeth on Gods mercie.* 9 *That both Iewes and Gentiles are ſinners,* 11 *he prooueth by Scripture:* 19 *and ſhewing the vſe of the Lawe,* 28 *hee concludeth that we are iuſtified by faith.*

WHat is then the preferment of the Iewe? or what is the profite of circumciſio,

2 Much euery maner of way: ſo reſpectiuely, becauſe vnto them were of credite committed the oracles of God.

3 For what, though ſome did not beleeue? ſhall their vnbeliefe make the faith of God without effect?

4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, and euery man a lyar, as it is written, That thou mighteſt be iuſtified in thy woordes, and ouercome, when thou art iudged.

5 Nowe if our vnrighteouſnes commend the righteouſnes

of God, what shall we say? Is God vnrighteous which punisheth? (I speake as a man.)

6 God forbid: els howe shall God iudge the world?

7 For if the veritie of God hath more abounded through my lie vnto his glorie, why am I yet condemned as a sinner?

8 And (as we are blamed, and as some affirme that we say) why doe we not euill, that good may come *thereof*? whose damnation is iust.

9 What then? are we more excellent? No, in no wise: for we haue already proued, that all, both Iewes and Gentiles are vnder sinne.

*Psal.14.1,3.* 10 As it is written, * There is none righteous, no not one.

*& 53.1,3.* 11 There is none that vnderstandeth: there is none that seeketh God.

12 They haue al gone out of the way: they haue bene made altogether vnprofitable: there is none that doeth good, no not one.

*Psal.5.10.* 13 *Their throte is an open sepulchre: they haue vsed their

*Psal.140.3.* tongues to deceit: * the poyson of aspes *is* vnder their lips.

*Psal.10.7.* 14 *Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitternes.

*Isa.59.7.* 15 *Their feete are swift to shed blood.

16 Destruction and calamitie *are* in their waies,

17 And the way of peace they haue not knowen.

*Psal.36.1.* 18 *The feare of God is not before their eyes.

19 Now we know that whatsoeuer the Law saith, it saith it to them which are vnder the Lawe, that euery mouth may be stopped, & all the world be subiect to the iudgement of God.

20 Therfore by the works of the Law shal no flesh be iustified in his sight: for by ỹ Law *cõmeth* the knowledge of sinne.

21 But now is the righteousnes of God made manifest wout the Law, hauing witnes of the Lawe and of the Prophets,

22 *To wit*, the righteousnesse of God by the faith of Iesus Christ, vnto all, and vpon all that beleeue.

23 For there is no difference: for all haue sinned, and are depriued of the glory of God,

24 And are iustified freely by his grace, through the redemption that *is* in Christ Iesus,

25 Whome God hath set foorth *to bee* a reconciliation through faith in his blood to declare his righteousnes, by the forgiuenes of the sinnes that are passed,

26 Through the patience of God, to shewe at this time his righteousnes, that he might be iust, & a iustifier of him which

is

is of the faith of Ieſus.

27 Where is then the reioycing? It is excluded. By what lawe? of workes? Nay: but by the Law of faith.

28 Therefore we conclude, that a man is iuſtified by faith without the workes of the Lawe.

29 *God*, is hee the God of the Iewes onely, and not of the Gentiles alſo? Yes, euen of the Gentiles alſo.

30 For it is one God who ſhall iuſtifie circumciſion of faith, and vncircumciſion through faith.

31 Do we then make the Law of none effect through faith? God forbid: yea, we eſtabliſh the Lawe.

## CHAP. IIII.

1 *He proueth that which he ſaid before of faith, by the example of Abraham, 3 6 and the teſtimonie of the Scripture, and ten times in the chapter he beateth vpō this word imputation.*

WHat ſhall we ſay then, that Abraham our father hath found concerning the fleſh?

2 For if Abraham were iuſtified by works, he hath wherein to reioyce, but not with God.

3 For what ſayeth the Scripture? Abraham beleeued God, and it was counted to him for righteouſnes.

4 Nowe to him that worketh, the wages is not counted by fauour, but by dette:

5 But to him that worketh not, but beleeueth in him that iuſtifieth the vngodly, his faith is counted for righteouſnes.

6 Euen as Dauid declareth the bleſſednes of the man, vnto whom God imputeth righteouſnes without works, *ſaying*,

7 Bleſſed *are* they, whoſe iniquities are forgiuen, & whoſe ſinnes are couered.

8 Bleſſed *is* the man, to whome ꝯ Lord imputeth not ſinne.

9 *Came* this bleſſednes then vpon the circumciſion *only*, or vpon the vncircumciſion alſo? For we ſay, that faith was imputed vnto Abraham for righteouſnes.

10 Howe was it then imputed? when he was circumciſed, or vncircumciſed? not when he was circumciſed, but when he was vncircumciſed.

11 After, he receiued the ſigne of circumciſion, *as* the ſeale of the righteouſneſſe of the faith which he had, when he was vncircumciſed, that hee ſhoulde be the father of all them that beleeue, not being circumciſed, that righteouſneſſe might be imputed to them alſo,

12 And the father of circumciſion, not vnto them onely

which are of the circumcision, but vnto them also that walke in the steppes of the faith of our father Abraham, *which he had* when he was vncircumcised.

13 For the promise that hee shoulde be the heire of the world, was not *giuen* to Abraham or to his seede, through the Lawe, but through the righteousnes of faith.

14 For if they which are of the Law, *be* heires, faith is made voide, and the promise is made of none effect.

15 For the Lawe causeth wrath: for where no Law is, there is no transgression.

16 Therefore *it is* by faith, that *it might come* by grace, and the promise might be sure to all the seede, not to that onely which is of the Lawe: but also to that which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of vs all,

17 (As it is written, I haue made thee a father of many nations) *euen* before God whom he beleeued, who quickeneth ỹ dead, & calleth those things which be not, as though they were.

18 Which *Abraham* aboue hope, beleeued vnder hope, that he shoulde be the father of many nations: according to that which was spoken *to him*, So shall thy seede be.

19 And he not weake in the faith, considered not his owne body, which was now dead, being almost an hundreth yeeres olde, neither the deadnes of Saras wombe.

20 Neither did he dout of ỹ promise of God through vnbeliefe, but was strengthened in the faith, & gaue glory to God,

21 Being fully assured that he which had promised, was also able to doe it.

22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousnes.

23 Now it is not written for him onely, that it was imputed to him for righteousnes,

24 But also for vs, to whom it shall be imputed *for righteousnesse*, which beleeue in him that raised vp Iesus our Lorde from the dead,

25 Who was deliuered *to death* for our sinnes, and is risen againe for our iustification.

## CHAP. V.

1 *He amplifieth* 2 *Christes righteousnes, which is laid holde on by faith,* 5 *who was giuen for the weake,* 8 *and sinfull.* 14 *He compareth Christ with Adam,* 17 *Death with Life,* 20 *and the Lawe with Grace.*

THen being iustified by faith, we haue peace towarde God through our Lord Iesus Christ.

2 *By

2 *By whom also through faith, we haue had this acceſſe into this grace, wherein we ſtand, and reioyce vnder the hope of the glory of God. *Ephe.2.18.*

3 Neither *that* onely, but also we *reioyce in tribulations, knowing that tribulation bringeth forth patience, *Iam.1.2.*

4 And patience experience, and experience hope,

5 And hope maketh not aſhamed, becauſe the loue of God is ſhed abroade in our hearts by the holy Ghoſt, which is giuen vnto vs.

6 For Chriſt, when we were yet of no ſtrength, at *his* time, died for the *vngodly. *Hel.9.15.*

7 Doutles, one will ſcarce die for a righteous man: but yet for a good man it may be that one dare die. *1.pet.3.18.*

8 But God ſetteth out his loue toward vs, ſeeing that while we were yet ſinners, Chriſt died for vs.

9 Much more then, being nowe iuſtified by his blood, we ſhalbe ſaued from wrath through him.

10 For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Sonne, much more being reconciled, we ſhalbe ſaued by his life,

11 And not onely *ſo*, but we alſo reioyce in God through our Lorde Ieſus Chriſt, by whome we haue now receiued the atonement.

12 Wherefore, as by one man ſinne entred into the world, and death by ſinne, and ſo death went ouer all men: in whome all men haue ſinned.

13 For vnto the time of the Lawe was ſinne in the world, but ſinne is not imputed, while there is no Lawe.

14 But death reigned from Adam to Moſes, euē ouer them alſo that ſinned not after the like maner of the tranſgreſſion of Adam, which was the figure of him that was to come.

15 But yet the gift is not ſo, as is the offence: for if through the offence of that one, many be dead, much more the grace of God, & the gift by grace, which is by one man Ieſus Chriſt, hath abounded vnto many.

16 Neither is the gift *ſo*, as *that which entred in* by one that ſinned: for the fault *came* of one *offince* vnto condemnation: but the gift *is* of many offences to iuſtification.

17 For if by ỹ offence of one, death reigned through one, much more ſhall they which receiue that abundance of grace, and of that gift of that righteouſneſſe, reigne in life through one, *that is*, Ieſus Chriſt.

18 Likewise then as by the offence of one, *the fault came* on all men to condemnation, so by the iustifying of one, *the benefite abounded* toward all men to the iustification of life.

19 For as by one mans disobedience many were made sinners, so by that obedience of that one shall many also be made righteous.

20 Moreouer the Lawe entred thereupon that the offence shoulde abounde: neuertheless, where sinne abounded, *there* grace abounded much more:

21 That as sinne had reigned vnto death, so might grace also reigne by righteousnesse vnto eternall life, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

## CHAP. VI.

1 *He cometh to sanctification, without which, that no man putteth on Christes righteousnes, he proueth 4 by an argument taken of Baptisme: 12 and thereupon exhorteth to holines of life, 16 briefly making mention of the Lawe transgressed.*

WHat shall we say then? Shall we continue still in sinne, that grace may abound? God forbid.

2 How shall we, that are dead to sinne, liue yet therein?

*Galat.3.27.* 3 Knowe yee not, that * all we which haue bene baptized into Iesus Christ, haue bene baptized into his death?

*Col.2.12.* 4 * We are buried then with him by baptisme into his death, that like as Christ was raised vp from the dead to the

*Ephe.4.23.* glory of ỹ Father, so we also should *walke in newnes of life.

*col.3.8.* 5 * For if we be planted with him to the similitude of his

*hebr.12.1.* death, euen so shall we be *to the similitude* of his resurrection,

*1.pet.2.1.* 6 Knowing this, that our olde man is crucified with him,

*1.Cor.6.14.* that the body of sinne might be destroied, that henceforth we

*2.sam.2.11.* should not serue sinne.

7 For he that is dead, is freed from sinne.

8 Wherefore, if we be dead with Christ, we beleeue that we shall liue also with him,

9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead, dieth no more: death hath no more dominion ouer him.

10 For in that he died, he died once to sinne: but in that he liueth, he liueth to God.

11 Likewise thinke yee also, that yee are dead to sinne, but are aliue to God in Iesus Christ our Lord.

12 Let not sinne reigne therefore in your mortall bodie, that ye should obey it in the lustes thereof.

13 Neither giue yee your members *as* weapons of vnrighteousnes

teousnes vnto sinne: but giue your selues vnto God, as they that are aliue from the dead, and *giue* your members *as* weapons of righteousnes vnto God.

14 For sinne shall not haue dominion ouer you: for ye are not vnder the Lawe, but vnder grace.

15 What then? shall we sinne, because we are not vnder the Lawe, but vnder Grace? God forbid.

16 *Knowe yee not, that to whomesoeuer yee giue your selues as seruaunts to obey, his seruaunts ye are to whome ye obey, whether it be of sinne vnto death, or of obedience vnto righteousnesse? *Iohn 8.34. 2.pet.2.19.

17 But God *be* thanked, that ye haue bene the seruaunts of sinne, but yee haue obeied from the heart vnto the forme of the doctrine, whereunto ye were deliuered.

18 Being then made free from sinne, yee are made the seruants of righteousnes.

19 I speake after the maner of man, because of the infirmitie of your flesh: for as ye haue giuen your members seruantes to vncleannesse, and to iniquitie, to *commit* iniquitie, so nowe giue your members seruants vnto righteousnes in holines.

20 For when ye were the seruants of sinne, yee were freed from righteousnes.

21 What fruit had ye then in those things, whereof ye are nowe ashamed? For the end of those things *is* death.

22 But now being freed from sinne, & made seruants vnto God, ye haue your fruit in holines, & the end, euerlasting life.

23 For the wages of sinne is death: but the gift of God *is* eternall life, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

## CHAP. VII.

*1 He declareth what it is, to be no more vnder the Law, 2 by an example taken of the Law of marriage: 7.12 And least the Lawe should seeme faultie, 14 he prooueth, that our sinne is the cause, 13 that the same is an occasion of death, 17 which was giuen vs, vnto life: 21 He setteth out the battaile betweene the flesh and the spirit.*

KNowe yee not, brethren, (for I speake to them that knowe the Law) that the Law hath dominion ouer a man as long as he liueth?

2 *For the woman which is in subiection to a man, is bound by the Law to the man, while he liueth: but if the man be dead, shee is deliuered from the Lawe of the man. *1.Cor.7.39.

3 So then, if while the man liueth, shee take another man,

Mat.5.32. she shalbe called an * adultéresse: but if the man be dead, she is free from the Lawe, so that she is not an adultéresse, though she take another man.

4 So ye, my brethren, are dead also to the Lawe by the body of Christ, that yee shoulde be vnto another, *euen* vnto him that is raised vp from the dead, that we shoulde bring forth fruit vnto God.

5 For when we were in the flesh, the affections of sinnes, which were by the Lawe, had force in our members, to bring forth fruit vnto death.

6 But now we are deliuered from the Law, he being dead in whom we were holden, that we should serue in newnes of Spirit, and not in the oldnes of the letter.

7 What shall we say then? *Is* the Lawe sinne? God forbid. Nay, I knew not sinne, but by the Law: for I had not knowen Exod.20.17. lust, except the Lawe had sayd, *Thou shalt not lust. deut.5.21.

8 But sinne tooke an occasion by the commaundement, and wrought in mee all maner of concupiscence: for without the Lawe sinne *is* dead.

9 For I once was aliue, without the Lawe: but when the commandement came, sinne reuiued,

10 But I died: and the same commaundement which was *ordeined* vnto life, was found *to be* vnto me vnto death.

11 For sinne tooke occasion by the commaundement, and deceiued me, and thereby slewe *me*.

1.Tim.1.8. 12 Wherefore the Law *is* *holy, and that commandement *is* holy, and iust, and good.

13 Was that then which is good, made death vnto mee? God forbid: but sinne, that it might appeare sinne, wrought death in me by that which is good, that sinne might be out of measure sinnefull by the commandement.

14 For we knowe that the Lawe is spirituall, but I am carnall, solde vnder sinne.

15 For I allowe not that which I doe: for what I woulde, that doe I not: but what I hate, that doe I.

16 If I doe then that which I would not, I consent to the Lawe, that *it is* good.

17 Nowe then, it is no more I, that doe it, but sinne that dwelleth in me.

18 For I know, that in me, that is, in my flesh, dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with mee; but I finde no meanes to perfourme that which is good.

19 For

19 For I doe not the good thing, which I woulde, but the euill which I would not, that doe I.

20 Nowe if I doe that I woulde not, it is no more I that doe it, but the sinne that dwelleth in me.

21 I finde then that when I woulde doe good, I am thus yoked, that euill is present with me.

22 For I delite in the Lawe of God, concerning the inner man:

23 But I see another lawe in my members, rebelling against the lawe of my mind, and leading me captiue vnto the lawe of sinne, which is in my members.

24 O wretched man that I am, who shall deliuer me from the body of this death?

25 I thanke God through Iesus Christ our Lorde. Then I my selfe in my mind serue the Lawe of God, but in my flesh the Lawe of sinne.

## CHAP. VIII.

*1 He concludeth that there is no condemnation to them, who are grafted in Christ through his spirit, 3 howsoeuer they be as yet burdened with sinnes: 9 for they liue through that spirit, 14 whose testimonie 15 driueth away all feare, 28 and relieueth our present miseries.*

NOw then there *is* no condemnation to them that are in Christ Iesus, which walke not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

2 For the Law of the Spirit of life, *which is* in Christ Iesus, hath freed me from the lawe of sinne and of death.

3 For (that that was impossible to the Lawe, inasmuch as it was weake, because of the flesh) God sending his owne Sonne, in the similitude of sinfull flesh, and for sinne, condemned sinne in the flesh,

4 That that righteousnesse of the Lawe might be fulfilled in vs, which walke not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

5 For they that are after the flesh, sauour the things of the flesh: but they that are after the Spirit, the things of ỹ Spirit.

6 For the wisdome of the flesh *is* death: but the wisdome of the Spirit *is* life and peace,

7 Because ỹ wisdome of the flesh *is* enimitie against God: for it is not subiect to ỹ Law of God, neither in deede can be.

8 So then they that are in the flesh, can not please God.

9 Nowe ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, because the Spirit of God dwelleth in you: but if any man hath not the

the Spirit of Christ, the same is not his.

10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead, because of sinne: but the Spirit *is* life for righteousnesse sake.

11 But if the Spirit of him that raised vp Iesus from the dead, dwell in you, he that raised vp Christ from the dead, shall also quicken your mortall bodies, by his spirit that dwelleth in you.

12 Therefore brethren, we are detters not to the flesh, to liue after the flesh:

13 For if ye liue after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye mortifie the deedes of the body by the Spirit, ye shall liue.

14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sonnes of God.

15 For ye haue not receiued the Spirit of bondage to feare againe: but ye haue receiued the Spirit of adoption, whereby we crie Abba, Father.

16 The same Spirit beareth witnesse with our Spirit, that we are the children of God.

17 If *we be* children, *we are* also heires, euen the heires of God, and heires annexed with Christ: if so be that we suffer with him, that we may also be glorified with him.

18 For I count that the afflictions of this present time *are* not worthie of the glorie, which shalbe shewed vnto vs.

19 For the feruent desire of the creature waiteth when the sonnes of God shalbe reueiled,

20 Because ỹ creature is subiect to vanitie, not of it owne will, but by reason of him, which hath subdued it vnder hope,

21 Because the creature also shall be deliuered from the bondage of corruption into ỹ glorious libertie of the sonnes of God.

22 For we know that euery creature groneth with vs also, and trauaileth in paine together vnto this present.

23 And not onely *the creature*, but we also which haue the first fruites of the Spirit, euen we doe sigh in our selues, waiting for the adoption, *euen* the * redemption of our body.

*Luk.21.28.*

24 For we are saued by hope: but hope that is seene, is not hope: for howe can a man hope for that which he seeth?

25 But if we hope for that we see not, we doe with patience abide for it.

26 Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities, for we know not what to pray as we ought: but ỹ Spirit it selfe maketh request for vs with sighes, which cannot be expressed.

27 But

27 But he that searcheth the heartes, knoweth what is the meaning of the Spirit: for he maketh requeſt for the Saintes, according to *the will of* God.

28 Alſo we knowe that all things worke together for the beſt vnto them that loue God, euen to them that are called of *his* purpoſe.

29 For thoſe which he knewe before, he alſo predeſtinate to be made like to the image of his Sonne, that he might be the firſt borne among many brethren.

30 Moreouer whom he predeſtinate, them alſo he called, and whom he called, them alſo he iuſtified, and whom he iuſtified, them he alſo glorified.

31 What ſhall we then ſay to theſe things? If God be on our ſide, who *can be* againſt vs?

32 Who ſpared not his owne Sonne, but gaue him for vs all *to death*, how ſhall he not with him, giue vs all things alſo?

33 Who ſhall lay any thing to the charge of Gods choſen? *It is* God that iuſtifieth,

34 Who ſhall condemne? *it is* Chriſt which is dead, yea or rather, which is riſen againe, who is alſo at the right hand of God, and maketh requeſt alſo for vs.

35 Who ſhall ſeparate vs from the loue of Chriſt? ſhall tribulation or anguiſh, or perſecution, or famine, or nakednes, or perill, or ſworde?

36 As it is written, * For thy ſake are we killed all day long: we are counted as ſheepe for the ſlaughter. *Pſal.* 44.22.

37 Neuertheleſſe, in all theſe things we are more then conquerours through him that loued vs.

38 For I am perſwaded that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things preſent, nor things to come,

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature ſhall be able to ſeparate vs from the loue of God, which is in Chriſt Ieſus our Lord.

## CHAP. IX.

1 *He anſwereth an obiection, that might be brought on the Iewes behalfe,* 7 *and telleth of two ſortes of Abrahams children,* 15 *and that God worketh all things in this matter according to his will,* 20 *euen as the potter doeth.* 24 30. *He proueth alſwell the calling of the Gentiles,* 31 *as alſo the reiecting of the Iewes,* 25. 27 *by the teſtimonies of the Prophets.*

I ſay

I Say the trueth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience bearing me witnesse in the holy Ghost,

2 That I haue great heauinesse, and continuall sorowe in mine heart.

3 For I would wish my selfe to be seperate from Christ, for my brethren that are my kinsemen according to the flesh,

4 Which are the Israelites, to whom *pertaineth* the adoption, and the glory, and the * conenants, and the giuing of the
*Chap.2.17.* *ephes.2.12.* Lawe, and the seruice *of God*, and the promises.

5 Of whom *are* the fathers, and of whom concerning the flesh Christ *came*, who is God ouer all, blessed for euer, Amen.

*Chap.2.28.* 6 * Notwithstanding it can not be that the worde of God should take none effect: for all they are not Israel, which are of Israel:

7 Neither *are they* all children, because they are the seede
*Gen.21.12.* of Abraham: but, * In Isaac shall thy seede be called:
*hebr.11.18.* 8 That is, they which are the children of the flesh, are not
*Galat.4.28.* the children of God: but the * children of the promes, are counted for the seede.

*Gen.18.10.* 9 For this is a worde of promes, * In this same time will I come, and Sara shall haue a sonne.

*Gen.25 21.* 10 Neither *he* onely *felt this*, but also * Rebecca when she had conceiued by one, *euen* by our father Isaac.

11 For yet *the children* were borne, and when they had neither done good nor euill (that the purpose of God might remaine according to election, not by workes, but by him that calleth)

*Gen.25.23.* 12 It was said vnto her, *The elder shal serue the yonger.
*Mala. 1.2.* 13 As it is writte, *I haue loued Iacob, & haue hated Esau.

14 What shall we say then? Is there vnrighteousnesse with God? God forbid.

*Exo.33.19.* 15 For he saith to Moses, * I will haue mercie on him, to whom I will shew mercie: and will haue compassion on him, on whom I will haue compassion.

16 So then *it is* not in him that willeth, nor in him that runneth, but in God that sheweth mercie.

17 For the Scripture saith vnto Pharao, *For this same pur-
*Exod.9.16.* pose haue I stirred thee vp, that I might shewe my power in thee, and that my Name might be declared throughout all the earth.

18 Therefore he hath mercie on whom he will, and whom he will, he hardeneth.

19 Then

19 Thou wilt say then vnto me, Why doeth he yet complaine? for who hath resisted his will?

20 But, O man, who art thou that pleadest against God? shall the * thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus? *Isa.45.9.*

21 * Hath not the potter power of ỹ clay to make of the same lumpe one vessel to honour, & another vnto dishonour? *Iere.18.6.*

22 *What* and if God would, to shew his wrath, & to make his power knowen, suffer with long patience the vessels of wrath, prepared to destruction?

23 And that he might declare the riches of his glorie vpon the vessels of mercie, which he hath prepared vnto glorie?

24 Euen vs, whom he hath called, not of the Iewes onely, but also of the Gentiles,

25 As he saith also in Osee, * I will call them, My people, which were not my people: and her, Beloued, which was not beloued. *Hose.2.23. 1.pet.2.10.*

26 And it shalbe in the place where it was said vnto them, *Ye are not my people, that there they shall be called, The children of the liuing God. *Hose.1.10.*

27 Also Esaias cryeth concerning Israel, * Though the number of the children of Israel were as the sand of the sea, *yet* shall *but* a remnant be saued. *Isa.10.22.*

28 For he will make his accompt, and gather it into a short summe with righteousnesse: for the Lorde will make a short count in the earth.

29 *And as Esaias saide before, Except the Lord of hostes had left vs a seede, we had bene made as Sodom, and had bene like to Gomortha. *Isa.1.9.*

30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles which followed not righteousnesse, haue attained vnto righteousnesse, euen the righteousnesse which is of faith.

31 But Israel which followed the Lawe of righteousnesse, could not attaine vnto the Lawe of righteousnesse.

32 Wherefore? Because *they sought it* not by faith, but as *it were* by the workes of the Lawe: for they haue stumbled at the stumbling stone,

33 As it is written, *Beholde, I lay in Sion a stumbling stone, and a rocke to make men fall: and euery one that beleeueth in him, shall not be ashamed. *Psal.118. 22.isa 8.14. and 28.16. 1 pet.2.6.*

## CHAP. X.

1 *He handleth the effects of election,* 3 *that some refuse, and some*

*some embrace 4 Christ, who is the ende of the Lawe. 15 He sheweth that Moses foretolde the calling of the Gentiles, 20 and Esaias the hardening of the Jewes.*

BRethren, mine hearts desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saued.

2 For I beare them recorde, that they haue the zeale of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they, being ignorant of the righteousnesse of God, and going about to stablish their owne righteousnesse, haue not submitted themselues to the righteousnesse of God.

*Gala.3.24.* 4 * For Christ *is* the ende of the Lawe for righteousnesse vnto euery one that beleeueth.

5 For Moses *thus* describeth the righteousnesse which is of *Leuit.18.5.* the Lawe, * That the man which doeth these things, shall liue *ezek.20.11.* thereby.

*gala.3.12.* 6 But the righteousnesse which is of faith, speaketh on this *Deut.30.12.* wise, *Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heauen? (that is to bring Christ from aboue)

7 Or, who shall descend into the deepe? (that is to bring Christ againe from the dead.)

*Deu.30.14.* 8 But what saith it? * The worde is neere thee, *euen* in thy mouth, and in thine heart. This is the word of faith which we preach.

9 For if thou shalt confesse with thy mouth the Lorde Iesus, and shalt beleeue in thine heart, that God raised him vp from the dead, thou shalt be saued:

10 For with the heart man beleeueth vnto righteousnesse, and with the mouth man confesseth to saluation.

*Isa.28.16.* 11 For the Scripture saith, *Whosoeuer beleeueth in him, shall not be ashamed.

12 For there is no difference betweene the Iewe and the Grecian: for he that is Lord ouer all, is riche vnto all, that call on him.

*Joel 1.38.* 13 *For whosoeuer shall call vpon the Name of the Lord, shall be saued.

14 But how shall they call on him, in whom they haue not beleeued? and howe shall they beleeue in him, of whom they haue not heard? and how shall they heare without a preacher?

15 And howe shall they preach, except they be sent? as it *Isa.52.7.* is written, *. Howe beautifull are the feete of them which *nahu.1.15.* bring glad tidings of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

16 But they haue not all obeyed the Gospel: for Esaias sayth,*Lord,who hath beleeued our report? *Isa.53.1.*

17 Then saith *is* by hearing, and hearing by the worde of God. *Iohn 12.38.*

18 But I demaund,Haue they not heard? *No doubt their sound went out through all the earth, and their wordes into the endes of the world. *Psal.19.3.*

19 But I demaund, Did not Israel knowe *God*? First Moses saith,*I will prouoke you to enuie by a nation that is not *my* nation,and by a foolish *nation* I will anger you. *Deut.32.21*

20 *And Esaias is bolde, and saith, I was founde of them that sought me not, and haue bene made manifest to them that asked not after me. *Isa.65.1.*

21 And vnto Israel he sayeth, *All the day long haue I stretched forth mine hand vnto a disobedient, and gainesaying people. *Isa.65.2.*

## CHAP. XI.

1 *Least the casting off of the Iewes should be limitted according to the outward appearance, 4 he sheweth that Elias was in times past deceiued, 16 and that, seeing they haue an holy roote, 23 many of them likewise shall be holy. 18. 24 He exhorteth the Gentiles to be humble, 33 and cryeth out,that Gods iudgements are vnsearchable.*

I Demaund then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid: for I also am an Israelite, of the seede of Abraham, of the tribe of Beniamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people which he knewe before. Knowe ye not what the Scripture saith of Elias, how he communeth with God against Israel,saying,

3 *Lorde, they haue killed thy Prophetes, and digged downe thine altars: and I am left alone, and they seeke my life? *1.King.19.10.*

4 But what saith the answere of God to him? *Ihaue reserued vnto my selfe seuen thousand men, which haue not bowed the knee to Baal. *1.King.19.18.*

5 Euen so then at this present time is there a remnant according to the election of grace.

6 And if *it be* of grace,it is no more of workes: or else were grace no more grace: but if it be of works,it is no more grace: or els were worke no more worke.

7 What then? Israel hath not obteined that he sought: but the election hath obteined it, & the rest haue bene hardened,

8 According

*Isa.6.9.and* 8 Accordingas it is written, * God hath giuen them the
29.10.*mat.* ſpirit of ſlumber: eyes that they ſhould not ſee,and eares that
13.14.*iohn* they ſhould not heare vnto this day.
12.40.*actes* 9 And Dauid ſaieth, * Let their table be made a ſnare,and
28.26. a net, and a ſtumbling blocke, euen for a recompence vnto
*Psal.* 69.23. them.

10 Let their eyes be darkened that they ſee not,and bowe downe their backe alwayes.

11 I demaund then, Haue they ſtumbled, that they ſhould fall? God forbid: but through their fall, ſaluation *commeth* vnto the Gentiles, to prouoke them to followe them.

12 Wherefore if the fall of them *be* the riches of ỹ world, and the diminiſhing of them the riches of the Gentiles,howe much more ſhall their abundance *be*?

13 For *in that* I ſpeake to you Gentiles,in as much as I am the Apoſtle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office,

14 *To trie* if by any meanes I might prouoke them of my fleſh to followe them, and might ſaue ſome of them.

15 For if the caſting away of them *be* the reconciling of the world,what *ſhall* the receiuing *be*, but life from the dead?

16 For if the firſt fruites *be* holy,ſo *is* the whole lumpe:and if the roote be holy,ſo *are* the branches.

*Iere.*11.6. 17 *And though ſome of the branches be broken off, and thou being a wilde Oliue tree, waſt graft in for them,& made partaker of the roote, and fatnes of the Oliue tree:

18 Boaſt not thy ſelfe againſt the branches: and if thou boaſt thy ſelfe, thou beareſt not the roote, but the roote thee.

19 Thou wilt ſay then, The branches are broken off, that I might be graft in.

20 Well: through vnbeliefe they are broken off, and thou ſtandeſt by faith: be not high minded,but feare.

21 For if God ſpared not the naturall branches, *take heede*, leſt he alſo ſpare not thee.

22 Beholde therefore the bountifulneſſe and ſeueritie of God: toward them which haue fallen, ſeueritie: but toward thee,bountifulneſſe, if thou continue in *his* bountifulneſſe: or elſe thou ſhalt alſo be cut off.

23 And they alſo, if they abide not ſtill in vnbeliefe, ſhall be graffed in: for God is able to graffe them in againe.

24 For if thou waſt cut out of the Oliue tree, which was wilde by nature,and waſt graffed contrary to nature in a right Oliue tree, howe much more ſhall they that are by nature,be graffed

graffed in their owne Oliue tree?

25 For I would not, brethren, that yee ſhould be ignorant of this ſecret (leaſt ye ſhould be arrogant in your ſelues) that partly obſtinacie is come to Iſrael, vntill the fulneſſe of the Gentiles be come in.

26 And ſo all Iſrael ſhall be ſaued, as it is written, * The deliuerer ſhall come out of Sion, and ſhall turne away the vngodlines from Iacob. *Iſa.59.20.*

27 And this is my couenant to them, * When I ſhall take away their ſinnes. *Iſa.27.9.*

28 As concerning the Goſpel, *they are* enemies for your ſakes: but as touching the election, they are beloued for the fathers ſakes.

29 For the gifts & calling of God are without repentance.

30 For euen as ye in time paſt haue not beleeued God, yet haue now obteined mercy through their vnbeliefe:

31 Euen ſo nowe haue they not beleeued by the mercie *ſhewed* vnto you, that they alſo may obteine mercie.

32 For God hath ſhut vp all in vnbeliefe, that hee might haue mercy on all.

33 O the deepenes of the riches, both of the wiſdome, and knowledge of God! howe vnſearchable are his iudgements, and his wayes paſt finding out!

34 *For who hath knowen the minde of the Lord? or who was his counſellour? *Iob 41.2.* *iſa.40.13.*

35 Or who hath giuen vnto him firſt, and hee ſhall be recompenſed? *1.cor.2.16.*

36 For of him, and through him, and for him are all things: to him *be* glory for euer. Amen.

## CHAP. XII.

1 *He exhorteth 2 to that worſhip which is acceptable to God:*
9 *To loue vnfained,* 14. 20 *euen towards our enemies.*

I Beſeech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye giue vp your bodies a liuing ſacrifice, holy, acceptable vnto God, *which is* your reaſonable ſeruing of God.

2 And faſhion not your ſelues like vnto this world, but be ye changed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may *proue what that good, and acceptable and perfect will of God is. *Epheſ.5.17.* *1.theſ.4.3.*

3 For I ſay through the grace that is giuen vnto mee, to euery one that is among you, that no man preſume to vnderſtand aboue that which is meete to vnderſtand, but that yee vnderſtand according to ſobrietie, as God hath dealt to euery

2.Cor.12.11. man the * measure of faith.

ephes.4.7. 4 For as we haue many members in one body, and all members haue not one office,

5 So we being many are one body in Christ, & euery one, one anothers members.

1.Pet.4.10. 6 *Seeing then that we haue gifts that are diuers, according to the grace that is giuen vnto vs, whether *we haue* prophecie, *let vs prophecie* according to the proportion of faith:

7 Or an office, *let vs waite* on the office: or he that teacheth, on teaching:

8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that distributeth, *let him doe it* * with simplicitie: he that ruleth, with diligence: he that sheweth mercy, with chearefulnes.

Mat.6 2. 2.cor.9.7. Amos 5.15. 9 *Let* loue *be* without dissimulation.*Abhorre that which is euill, and cleaue vnto that which is good.

Ephes.4.2. 1.pet.2.17. 10 * Be affectioned to loue one another with brotherly loue. In giuing honour, goe one before another,

11 Not slouthfull to doe seruice: feruent in spirit: seruing the Lorde,

1.Pet.5.8. 12 Reioycing in hope, patient in tribulation, * continuing in prayer:

Luke 18.1. 1.cor.16.1. Hebr.13.2. 1.pet.4.13. 13 *Distributing vnto the necessities of the Saints: * giuing your selues to hospitalitie.

Mat.5.44. 14 *Blesse them which persecute you: blesse, *I say*, and curse not.

Prou.3.7. isa.5.11. 15 Reioyce with them that reioyce, & weepe with them that weepe.

16 Be of like affection one towards another: * be not hie minded: but make your selues equall to them of the lowest sort: be not wise in your selues.

Pro.20.22. mat.5.39. 17 * Recompence to no man euil for euil: procure things honest in the sight of all men.

2.cor.8.11. 1.pet.3.9. Heb.12.14. Eccle.2.18. mat.5.39. 18 * If it be possible, as much as in you is, haue peace with all men.

19 Dearely beloued, * auenge not your selues, but giue place vnto wrath: for it is written, * Vengeance is mine: I will repay, saith the Lord.

Deut.32.35. Heb.10.30. Pro.25.22. 20 * Therefore, if thine enemie hunger, feede him: if hee thirst, giue him drinke: for in so doing, thou shalt heape coales of fire on his head.

21 Be not ouercome of euill, but ouercome euill with goodnesse.

CHAP.

1 *He willeth that we submit our selues to Magistrates:* 8 *To loue our neighbours:* 12 *To liue vprightly,* 14 *and to put on Christ.*

LEt * euery soule be subiect vnto the higher powers: for there is no power but of God: and the powers that be, are ordeined of God. *Titus* 3.1. 1.*pet.*2.13.

2 Whosoeuer therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist, shall receiue to themselues condemnation.

3 For Magistrates are not to be feared *for* good workes, but *for* euill. Wilt thou then be without feare of the power? doe well: so shalt thou haue prayse of the same.

4 For he is the minister of God for thy wealth, but if thou doe euill, feare: for he beareth not the sworde for nought: for hee is the minister of God to take vengeance on him that doeth euill.

5 Wherefore ye must be subiect, not because of wrath onely, but also for conscience sake.

6 For, for this cause ye pay also tribute, for they are Gods ministers, applying themselues for the same thing.

7 * Giue to all men therefore their duetie: tribute, to whom *ye owe* tribute: custome, to whom custome: feare, to whom feare: honour, to whom *ye owe* honour. *Mat.*22 11.

8 Owe nothing to any man, but to loue one another: for he that loueth another, hath fulfilled the Lawe.

9 For this, * Thou shalt not commit adulterie, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witnes, Thou shalt not couet: and if there be any other commandement, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, *euen* in this, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. *Exo.*20.14. *deut.*5.18. *Leu.*19.18.

10 Loue doeth not euill to his neighbour: therefore is loue the * fulfilling of the Lawe. *mat.*22.39. *mar.*12.31.

11 And that, considering the season, that *it is* nowe time that we should arise from sleepe: for nowe is our saluation neerer, then when we beleeued it. *gala.*5 14. *iames* 2.8. 1.*Tim.*1.1.

12 The night is past, and the day is at hand: let vs therefore cast away the workes of darkenes, and let vs put on the armour of light.

13 So that we walke honestly, as in the day: not in * glutonie, and drunkennes, neither in chambering and wantonnes, not in strife and enuying: *Luk.*21.34.

14 * But put ye on the Lord IESVS CHRIST, and take no thought for the flesh, *to fulfill* the lustes of it. *Gala.*5.16. 1.*pet.*2.11.

## CHAP. XIIII.

*1 He willeth that we so deale with the weake in faith, 15 that through our faults they be not offended. 20 And on the other side he commaundeth them not rashly to iudge of the stronger: 19 that within the bounds of edification 20 and charitie, 22 Christian libertie may consist.*

HIm that is weake in the faith, receiue vnto you, *but* not for controuersies of disputations.

2 One beleeueth that he may eate of all things: and another which is weake, eateth herbes.

3 Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not, condemne him that eateth: for God hath receiued him.

*Iames 4.12.* 4 * Who art thou that condemnest another mans seruant? he standeth or falleth to his owne master: yea, he shalbe established: for God is able to make him stand.

5 This man esteemeth one day aboue another day, and another man counteth euery day alike: let euery man be fully perswaded in his minde.

6 He that obserueth the day, obserueth it to the Lord: and he that obserueth not the day, obserueth it not to the Lorde. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord: for he giueth God thanks: and he that eateth not, eateth not to the Lorde, and giueth God thankes.

7 For none of vs liueth to him selfe, neither doeth any die to himselfe.

8 For whether we liue, we liue vnto the Lorde: or whether we die, we die vnto the Lorde: whether we liue therefore, or die, we are the Lords.

9 For Christ therefore died and rose againe, and reuiued, that he might be Lord both of the dead and the quicke.

10 But why doest thou condemne thy brother? or why
*2. Cor. 5.10.* doest thou despise thy brother? * for we shall all appeare before the iudgement seate of Christ.

*Isa. 45.23. phil. 2.10.* 11 For it is written, * I liue, saith the Lord, and euery knee shall bowe to me, and all tongues shall confesse vnto God.

12 So then euery one of vs shall giue accountes of himselfe to God.

13 Let vs not therefore iudge one another any more: but vse *your* iudgement rather in this, that no man put an occasion to fall, or a stumbling blocke before *his* brother.

14 I knowe, and am perswaded through the Lorde Iesus, that

that there is nothing vncleane of it selfe: but vnto him that iudgeth any thing to be vncleane, to him *it is* vncleane.

15 But if thy brother be grieued for the meate, nowe walkest thou not charitably: * destroy not him with thy meate, for whom Christ died. 1.Cor.8.11.

16 Cause not your commoditie to be euill spoken of.

17 For the kingdome of God, is not meate nor drinke, but righteousnes, and peace, and ioy in the holy Ghost.

18 For whosoeuer in these things serueth Christ, is acceptable vnto God, and is approued of men.

19 Let vs then follow those things which concerne peace, and wherewith one may edifie another.

20 Destroy not the worke of God for meates sake: * all things in deede are pure: but *it is* euill for the man which eateth with offence. Titus 1.15.

21 * *It is* good neither to eate flesh, nor to drinke wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or made weake: 2.Cor.8.13.

22 Hast thou faith? haue it with thy selfe before God: blessed *is* hee that condemneth not him selfe in that thing which he alloweth.

23 For he that doubteth, is condemned if he eate, because *he eateth* not of faith: and whatsoeuer is not of faith, is sinne.

## CHAP. XV.

1 *The stronger must imploy their strength to strengthen the weake,* 3 *by Christs example,* 7 *who receiued* 8 *not onely the Iewes,* 10 *but also the Gentiles.* 15 *The cause why hee wrote this Epistle.*

WE which are strong, ought to beare the infirmities of the weake, and not to please our selues.

2 *Therefore* let euery man please his neighbour in that that is good to edification.

3 For Christ also would not please himselfe, but as it is written, *The rebukes of them which rebuke thee, fell on me. Psal.69.10.

4 For whatsoeuer things are written afore time, are written for our learning, that we through patience, and comfort of the Scriptures might haue hope.

5 Nowe the God of patience and consolation giue you that ye be * like minded one towards another, according to Christ Iesus, 1.Cor.1.10.

6 That yee with one minde, *and* with one mouth may prayse God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ.



7 Wherefore

7 Wherefore receiue ye one another, as Christ also receiued vs to the glory of God.

8 Nowe I say, that Iesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision, for the trueth of God, to confirme the promises *made* vnto the fathers.

9 And let the Gentiles prayse God for *his* mercy, as it is
*Psal.18.50.* written, * For this cause I will confesse thee among the Gentiles, and sing vnto thy Name.
*Deu.32.43.* 10 And againe he saith, * Reioyce, ye Gentiles with his people.
*Psal.117.1.* 11 And againe, *Prayse the Lord, all ye Gentiles, and laude ye him, all people together.
*Isa.11.10.* 12 And againe Esaias saith, * There shalbe a roote of Iesse, and he that shall rise to reigne ouer the Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust.

13 Nowe the God of hope fill you with all ioy, and peace in beleeuing, that ye may abound in hope through the power of the holy Ghost.

14 And I my selfe also am perswaded of you, my brethren, that ye also are full of goodnesse, and filled with all knowledge, and are able to admonish one another.

15 Neuertheless, brethren, I haue somewhat boldly after a sort written vnto you, as one that putteth you in remembrance, through the grace that is giuen me of God,

16 That I should be the minister of Iesus Christ towarde the Gentiles, ministring the Gospel of God, that the offering vp of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost.

17 I haue therefore whereof I may reioyce in Christ Iesus in those things which *pertaine* to God.

18 For I dare not speake of any thing, which Christ hath not wrought by me, *to make* the Gentiles obedient in worde and deede,

19 With the power of signes & wonders by the power of the Spirit of God: so that from Hierusalem, & round about vnto Illyricum, I haue caused to abound the Gospel of Christ.

20 Yea, so I enforced my selfe to preach the Gospel, not where Christ was named, least I should haue built on another mans foundation.
*Isai.52.15.* 21 But as it is written, * To whome hee was not spoken of, they shall see *him*, and they that heard not, shall vnderstande *him*.

22 *Therefore

22 *Therefore also I haue bene oft let to come vnto you *Chap.1.13.*

23 But nowe seeing I haue no more place in these quarters, and also haue *bene desirous many yeeres agone to come vnto you, *1.Thes.2.17.*

24 When I shall take my iourney into Spaine, I wil come to you: for I trust to see you in my iourney, & to be brought on my way thitherwarde by you, after that I haue bene somewhat filled with your *companie.*

25 But now go I to Hierusalem, to minister vnto ỹ Saints.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia, to make a certaine distribution vnto the poore Saints which are at Hierusalem.

27 For it hath pleased them, & their detters are they: *for if the Gentiles bee made partakers of their spirituall things, their duetie is also to minister vnto them in carnall things. *1.Cor.9.11.*

28 When I haue therefore performed this, and haue sealed them this fruite, I wil passe by you into Spaine.

29 And I knowe when I come, that I shall come to you with abundance of the blessing of the Gospel of Christ.

30 Also brethren, I beseech you for our Lord Iesus Christes sake, and for the lone of the Spirit, that ye would striue with me by prayers to God for me,

31 That I may be deliuered from them which are disobedient in Iudea, and that my seruice which I haue to doe at Hierusalem, may be accepted of the Saints,

32 That I may come vnto you with ioy by the wil of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33 Thus the God of peace *be* with you all. Amen.

## CHAP. XVI.

1 *He commendeth Phebe.* 3 *He sendeth greeting to many,* 17 *and warneth to beware of them which are the causes of diuision.*

I Commend vnto you Phebe our sister, which is a seruant of the Church of Cenchrea:

2 That ye receiue her in the Lord, as it becōmeth Saints, & that ye assist her in whatsoeuer busines she needeth of your ayde: for she hath giuen hospitalitie vnto many, & to me also.

3 Greete *Priscilla, & Aquila my fellow helpers in Christ Iesus, *Act.18.3.*

4 (Which haue for my life laide downe their owne necke. Vnto whom not I onely giue thankes, but also all the Churches of the Gentiles)

5 Likewise *greete* the Church that is in their house. Salute

my beloued Epenetus, which is the first fruites of Achaia in Christ.

6 Greete Marie which bestowed much labour on vs.

7 Salute Andronicus and Iunia my cousins and fellow prisoners, which are notable among the Apostles, and were in Christ before me.

8 Greete Amplias my beloued in the Lord.

9 Salute Vrbanus our fellow helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloued.

10 Salute Apelles approued in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus *friends*.

11 Salute Herodian my kinsman. Greete them which are of the *friends* of Narcissus which are in the Lord.

12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, which *women* labour in the Lord. Salute the beloued Persis, which *woman* hath laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lorde, and his mother and mine.

14 Greete Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Mercurius, and the brethren which are with them.

15 Salute Philologus, and Iulias, Nereas, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the Saints which are with them.

1.Cor.16.20. 16 Salute one another with an * holy kisse. The Churches
2.cor.13.12. of Christ salute you.

1.pet.5.14. 17 ¶ Now I beseech you brethren, marke them diligently which cause diuision and offences, contrary to the doctrine
2.Iohn 10. which ye haue learned, and * auoide them.

18 For they that are such, serue not the Lorde Iesus Christ, but their owne bellies, and with faire speach and flattering deceiue the hearts of the simple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad among all: I am glad therefore of you: but yet I would haue you wise, vnto that which is good, and simple concerning euill.

20 The God of peace shall tread Satan vnder your feete shortly. The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you.

Act.16.1. 21 * Timotheus my helper, and Lucius, and Iason, and So-
Phil.2.19. sipater my kinsmen, salute you.

22 I Tertius, which wrote out this Epistle, salute you in the Lorde.

23 Gaius mine hoste, and of the whole Church saluteth you. Erastus the steward of the citie saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The

## CHAP. I.

24 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* w̄ you all. Amen.

25 * To him now ẏ is of power to establish you according to my Gospel,& preaching of Iesus Christ,*by the reuelation of the mysterie,which was kept secret since the world began: *Ephe.3.20. Ephe.3.9. col.1.26.*

26 (But nowe is opened,and published among all nations by the Scriptures of the Prophets,at the commaundement of the euerlasting God for the obedience of faith) *2.tim.1.10. titus 1.2.*

27 To God,*I say*,onely wise,be praise through Iesus Christ for euer.Amen.

¶ Written to the Romanes from Corinthus, *and sent* by Phebe, seruant of the Church,which is at Cenchrea.

# THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE Corinthians.

## CHAP. I.

1 *After the salutation,* 10 *which in effect is an exhortation,* 12 *hee reprehendeth the Corinthians sects and diuisions,* 17 *and calleth them from pride to humilitie:* 10 *For,ouerthrowing all worldly wisedome,* 23. 25 *hee aduanceth onely the preaching of the Crosse.*

PAVL called *to be* an Apostle of IESVS CHRIST, through the will of God, and *our* brother Sosthenes,

2 Vnto the Church of God which is at Corinthus, to them that are * sanctified in Christ Iesus,* Saintes by calling,* with all that call on the Name of our Lorde Iesus Christ, in euery place,both their *Lord*,and ours: *Acts.15.9. 1.thes 4.7. Rom.1.7. ephes.1.1. colos.1.22.*

3 Grace *be* with you,and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ. *1.tim.1.9. titus.2.3.*

4 I thanke my God alwayes on your behalfe for the grace of God,which is giuen you in Iesus Christ, *2.Tim.1.22.*

5 That in all thinges ye are made riche in him,in all kinde of speach,and in all knowledge:

6 As the testimonie of Iesus Christ hath bene confirmed in you:

7 So that ye are not destitute of any gift: *waiting for the appearing of our Lord Iesus Christ. *Philip.3 20. titus.2.11.*

8 * Who shall also confirme you vnto the ende, that yee may *1 Thes.* [illegible]

may be blameleſſe in the day of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

1.Theſ.5.24. 9 * God is faithfull, by whome ye are called vnto the fellowſhip of his Sonne Ieſus Chriſt our Lord.

10 Now I beſeech you, brethren, by the Name of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, that ye all ſpeake one thing, and that there be no diſſenſions among you: but be ye knit together in one minde, and in one iudgement.

11 For it hath bene declared vnto me, my brethren, of you by them that are of the houſe of Cloe, that there are contentions among you.

12 Now this I ſay, that euery one of you ſaith, I am Pauls,

Acts.18.24. and I am *Apollos, and I am Cephas, and I am Chriſtes.

13 Is Chriſt deuided? was Paul crucified for you? either were ye baptized into the Name of Paul?

Acts.18.8. 14 I thanke God, that I baptized none of you, but *Criſpus, and Gaius,

15 Leaſt any ſhoulde ſay, that I had baptized into mine owne name.

16 I baptized alſo the houſholde of Stephanas: furthermore know I not, whether I baptized any other.

17 For Chriſt ſent mee not to baptize, but to preache the

Chap.2.13. 2.pet.1.16. Goſpel, not with *wiſdome of wordes, leſt the croſſe of Chriſt ſhould be made of none effect.

18 For ỹ preaching of the croſſe is to them that periſh, fooliſhnes: but vnto vs, which are ſaued, it is the *power of God.

Rom.1.16. Iſai.29.14. 19 For it is written, *I will deſtroye the wiſedome of the wiſe, and will caſt away the vnderſtanding of the prudent.

20 Where is the wiſe? where is the Scribe? where is the diſputer of this worlde? hath not God made the wiſdome of this world fooliſhnes?

21 For ſeeing the worlde by wiſdome knewe not God in the wiſedome of God, it pleaſed God by the fooliſhneſſe of preaching to ſaue them that beleeue:

Matt.12.38. 22 * Seeing alſo that the Iewes require a ſigne, and the Grecians ſeeke after wiſdome.

23 But we preach Chriſt crucified: vnto the Iewes, euen a ſtumbling blocke, and vnto the Grecians, fooliſhnes:

24 But vnto them which are called, both of the Iewes and Grecians, *wee preach* Chriſt, the power of God, and the wiſedome of God.

25 For the fooliſhnes of God is wiſer then men, and the weakeneſſe of God is ſtronger then men.

26 For

26 For brethren, you see your calling, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mightie, not many noble *are called.*

27 But God hath chosen the fooliſh things of the worlde to confound the wiſe, and God hath choſen the weake things of the world, to confound the mightie things.

28 And vile things of the world and things which are deſpiſed, hath God choſen, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are,

29 That no fleſh ſhould reioyce in his preſence.

30 But yee are of him in Chriſt Ieſus, who of God is made vnto vs wiſdome and righteouſnes, and ſanctification, and redemption,

31 That, according as it is written,* He that reioyceth, let him reioyce in the Lord. *Iere.9.24. 2.cor.10.17.*

## CHAP. II.

*1 He ſetteth downe a platforme of his preaching, 4 which was baſe in reſpect of mans wiſdome, 7.13 but noble in reſpect of the ſpirituall power and efficacie, 14 and ſo concludeth that fleſh and blood cannot rightly iudge thereof.*

AND I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with* excellencie of wordes, or of wiſedome, ſhewing vnto you the teſtimonie of God. *Chap.1.17.*

2 For I eſteemed not to know any thing among you, ſaue Ieſus Chriſt, and him crucified.

3 *And I was among you in weakenes, and in feare, and in much trembling. *Acts.18.1.*

4 Neither *ſtoode* my worde and my preaching in the *inticing ſpeache of mans wiſedome, but in plaine euidence of the Spirit and of power, *Chap.1.17. 2.pet.1.16.*

5 That your faith ſhoulde not be in the wiſedome of men, but in the power of God.

6 And we ſpeake wiſedome among them that are perfect: not the wiſdome of this worlde, neither of the princes of this world, which come to nought.

7 But wee ſpeake the wiſedome of God in a myſterie, *euen* the hidde *wiſedome*, which God had determined before the world, vnto our glorie.

8 Which none of the princes of this world hath knowen: for had they knowen it, they woulde not haue crucified the Lord of glorie.

9 But as it is written,* The thinges which eye hath not *Iſa.64.4.*

ſeene,

seene, neither eare hath heard, neither came into mans heart, are, which God hath prepared for them that loue him.

10 But God hath reueiled *them* vnto vs by his Spirite: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deepe things of God.

11 For what man knoweth the thinges of a man, saue the spirite of man, which is in him? euen so the thinges of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

12 Nowe we haue receiued not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit, which is of God, that we might knowe the thinges that are giuen to vs of God.

*Chap.1.17.* 13 Which things also we speake, not in the *words which
*2.pet.1.16.* mans wisdome teacheth, but which the holy Ghost teacheth, comparing spirituall things with spirituall things.

14 But the naturall man perceiueth not the thinges of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishnesse vnto him: neither can he know *them*, because they are spiritually discerned.

15 But hee that is spirituall discerneth all thinges: yet hee himselfe is iudged of no man.

*Isa.40.13.* 16 *For who hath knowen the minde of the Lord, that he
*rom.11.34.* might instruct him? But we haue the minde of Christ.

## CHAP. III.

*1 He yeeldeth a reason why he preached smal matters vnto them: 4 He sheweth how they ought to esteeme of ministers: 6 The ministers office. 10 A true forme of edifying. 16 He warneth the Corinthians, that they bee not drawen away to prophane things, 18 through the proude wisdome of the flesh.*

AND I could not speake vnto you, brethrē, as vnto spiritual men, but as vnto carnall, *euen* as vnto babes in Christ.

2 I gaue you milke to drinke, and not meate: for ye were not yet able *to beare it*, neither yet now are ye able.

3 For yee are yet carnall: for whereas *there is* among you enuying, and strife, and diuisions, are ye not carnall, and walke as men?

4 For when one saith, I am Pauls, and another, I am Apollos, are ye not carnall?

5 Who is Paul then? and who is Apollos, but the ministers by whom ye beleeued, & as the Lord gaue to euery man?

6 I haue plāted, Apollos watred, but God gaue ỹ encrease.

7 So then, neither is he that planteth, any thing, neither he that watreth, but God that giueth the increase.

*Psal.62.12.* 8 And he that planteth, and he that watreth, are one, *and
*galat.6.5.* euery man shall receiue his wages, according to his labour.

9 For

9 For wee together are Gods labourers: ye are Gods husbandrie, *and* Gods building.

10 According to the grace of God giuen to mee, as a skilfull master builder, I haue layde the foundation, and an other buildeth thereon: but let euery man take heede how he buildeth vpon it.

11 For other foundation can no man lay, then that which is layed, which is Iesus Christ.

12 And if any man builde on this foundation, golde, siluer, precious stones, timber, hay, *or* stubble,

13 Euery mans worke shalbe manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shalbe reueiled by the fire: and the fire shall trie euery mans worke of what sort it is.

14 If any mans worke, that he hath built vpon, abide, hee shall receiue wages.

15 If any mans worke burne, hee shall lose, but he shall be saued himselfe: neuertheless yet as it were by the fire.

16 *Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? *Chap.6.19. 2.cor.6.16.*

17 If any man destroy the Temple of God, him shall God destroy: for the Temple of God is holy, which ye are.

18 Let no man deceiue himself: If any man amõg you seeme to be wise in this world, let him be a foole, ỹ he may be wise.

19 For the wisdome of this world is foolishnes with God: for it is written, *He catcheth the wise in their own craftines. *Iob 5.13.*

20 *And againe, The Lorde knoweth that the thoughts of the wise be vaine. *Psal.44.11.*

21 Therefore let no man reioyce in men: for all things are yours.

22 Whether it be Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or ỹ world, or life, or death: whether they be things present, or thinges to come, *euen* all are yours,

23 And ye Christes, and Christ Gods.

## CHAP. IIII.

1 *Bringing in the definition of a true Apostle, 7 he sheweth that humilitie ought rather to bee an honour then a shame vnto him. 9 Hee bringeth in proofe, whereby it may euidently appeare, 10 that hee neither had care of glorie, 11 nor of his bellie. 17 He commendeth Timothie.*

LEt a man so thinke of vs, as of the ministers of Christ, and disposers of the secrets of God:

2 And as for the rest, it is required of the disposers, that euery

euery man be found faithfull.

3 As touching me, I passe very litle to be iudged of you, or of mans iudgement: no, I iudge not mine owne selfe.

4 For I knowe nothing by my selfe, yet am I not thereby iustified: but he that iudgeth me, is the Lord.

*Matt.7.1.* 5 Therefore * iudge nothing before the time, vntill the Lord come, who will lighten things that are hid in darkenes, and make the counsels of the heartes manifest: and then shall euery man haue praise of God.

6 Nowe these things, brethren, I haue figuratiuely applied vnto mine owne selfe and Apollos, for your sakes, that yee might learne by vs, that no man presume aboue that which is writte, that one swell not against another for any mans cause.

7 For who separateth thee? and what hast thou, that thou hast not receiued? if thou hast receiued it, why reioycest thou, as though thou haddest not receiued it?

8 Nowe ye are full: nowe ye are made riche: ye reigne as Kings without vs, and would to God ye did reigne, that we also might reigne with you.

9 For I thinke that God hath set forth vs the last Apostles, as men appointed to death: for wee are made a gasing stocke vnto the world, and to the Angels, and to men.

10 We *are* fooles for Christes sake, & ye *are* wise in Christ: we *are* weake, and ye *are* strong: ye *are* honourable, and wee *are* despised.

11 Vnto this houre we both hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and haue no certaine dwelling place,

*Acts.20.34.* 12 *And labour, working with our owne handes: wee are
*1.thes.2.9.* reuiled, and *yet* we blesse: we are persecuted, *and* suffer it.
*2.thes.3.8.* 13 *We are euil spoken of, & we pray: we are made as the
*Matt.5.44.* filth of the world, the offskowring of al things, vnto this time.
*luke 23.34.* 14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloued
*acts.7.60.* children I admonish you.

15 For though ye haue tenne thousande instructours in Christ, yet *haue ye* not many fathers: for in Christ Iesus I haue begotten you through the Gospel.

16 Wherefore, I pray you, be ye followers of me.

17 For this cause haue I sent vnto you Timotheus, which is my beloued sonne, and faithfull in the Lord, which shall put you in remembrance of my wayes in Christ, as I teach euery where in euery Church.

18 Some are puffed vp, as though I would not come to you.

19 But

19 But I wil come to you shortly, *if the Lord wil, and wil know, not ỹ words of them which are puffed vp, but ỹ power. *Acts.19.21. iames 4.15.*

20 For the kingdome of God *is not* in word, but in power.

21 What will ye? shall I come vnto you with a rod, or in loue, and in the Spirit of meekenes?

## CHAP. V.

1 *That they haue winked at him, who committed incest with his mother in lawe,* 2. *& he sheweth should cause them rather to be ashamed, then to reioyce.* 10 *Such kinde of wickednesse is to be punished with excommunication,* 12 *least other be infected with it.*

IT is heard certainly *that there is* fornication among you, and such fornication as is not once named among the Gentiles, that one should haue his fathers wife.

2 And ye are puffed vp and haue not rather sorowed, that he which hath done this deede, might be put frō among you.

3 For I verely as absent in body, but present in spirit, haue determined already as though I were present, that hee that hath thus done this thing,

4 When yee are gathered together, and my spirite, in the Name of our Lorde Iesus Christ, that such one, *I say*, by the power of our Lord Iesus Christ,

5 Be deliuered vnto Satan, for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saued in the day of the Lord Iesus.

6 Your reioycing is not good: Know ye not that a litle leauen leaueneth the whole lumpe?

7 Purge out therefore the olde leauen, that ye may bee a newe lumpe, as ye are vnleauened: for Christ our Passeouer is sacrificed for vs.

8 Therefore let vs keepe the feast, not with olde leauen, neither in the leauen of maliciousnesse, and wickednesse: but with the vnleauened bread of syncerities and trueth.

9 I wrote vnto you in an Epistle, that ye should not companie together with fornicatours,

10 And not altogether with ỹ fornicatours of this world, or with the couetous, or with extortioners, or with idolaters: for then ye must goe out of the world.

11 But nowe I haue written vnto you, that ye companie not together: if any that is called a brother, be a fornicatour, or couetous, or an idolater, or a rayler, or a drunkard, or an extortioner, with such one eate not.

12 For what haue I to doe, to iudge them also which are without?

without? doe ye not iudge them that are within?

13 But God iudgeth them that are without. Put away therefore from among your selues that wicked man.

## CHAP. VI.

*1 He inueyeth against their contentions in law matters, 6 wherewith they vexed one another vnder iudges that were infidels, to the reproch of the Gospel, 9 and then sharpely threatneth fornicatours.*

DAre any of you, hauing busines against another, be iudged vnder the vniust, and not vnder the Saints?

2 Doe ye not know, that the Saints shall iudge the world? If the world then shalbe iudged by you, are ye vnworthie to iudge the smallest matters?

3 Know ye not that we shal iudge the Angels? how much more, things that pertaine to this life?

4 If then ye haue iudgements of things pertaining to this life, set vp them which are least esteemed in the Church.

5 I speake it to your shame. Is it so that there is not a wise man amõg you? no not one, ỹ can iudge betwene his brethrẽ?

6 But a brother goeth to lawe with a brother, and that vnder the infidels.

7 Nowe therefore there is altogether infirmitie in you, in that ye goe to lawe one with another: * why rather suffer ye not wrong? why rather sustaine ye not harme?

*Matt.5.39. Luke 6.29. Rom.12.19. 1.Thes.4.6.*

8 *Nay, ye your selues doe wrong, and doe harme, and that to your brethren.

9 Know ye not that the vnrighteous shall not inherite the kingdome of God? Be not deceiued: neither fornicatours, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor wantons, nor buggerers,

10 Nor theeues, nor couetous, nor drunkards, nor railers, nor extortioners shall inherite the kingdome of God.

*Titus 3.3.*

11 And such were * some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are iustified in the Name of the Lord Iesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

*Chap. 10.23.*

12 ¶ *All things are lawful vnto me: but all things are not profitable. I may do all things, but I wil not be brought vnder the power of any thing.

13 Meates *are ordeined* for the belly, and the belly for the meates: but God shal destroy both it, & them. Now the body *is* not for fornication, but for the Lord, & the Lord for the body.

*Rom.6.5.*

14 And God hath also rayſed vp the Lord, and * shall rayse vs vp by his power.

15 Knowe

15 Knowe yee not, that your bodies are the members of Christ? shal I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.

16 Doe yee not knowe, that hee which coupleth himselfe with an harlot, is one body? * for two, saith he, shalbe one flesh. *Gen.2.24.*

17 But he that is ioyned vnto the Lord, is one spirit. *mat.19.5.*

18 Flee fornication: euery sinne that a man doeth, is without the body: but hee that committeth fornication, sinneth against his owne body. *ephes.5.31.*

19 Knowe yee not, that * your body is the Temple of the holy Ghost, *which is* in you, whom ye haue of God? and ye are not your owne. *Chap.3.17. 2.cor.6.16.*

20 *For yee are bought for a price: therefore glorifie God in your body, and in your spirit: for they are Gods. *Chap.7.23. 1.pet.1.18.*

## CHAP. VII.

*1 Entreating here of mariage, 4 which is a remedie against fornication, 10 and may not be broken, 18. 20 he willeth euery man to liue contented with his lot. 25 He sheweth what the end of virginitie should be, 35 and who ought to marie.*

NOw concerning the things whereof ye wrote vnto mee, *It were* good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 Neuertheleſſe, to auoide fornication, let euery man haue his wife, and let euery woman haue her owne husband.

3 * Let the husband giue vnto the wife due beneuolence, and likewise also the wife vnto the husband. *1.Pet.3.7.*

4 The wife hath not the power of her owne body, but the husbande: and likewise also the husbande hath not the power of his owne body, but the wife.

5 Defraud not one another, except *it be* with consent for a time, that yee may giue your selues to fasting and praier, and againe come together that Satan tempt you not for your incontinencie.

6 But I speake this by permission, not by commandement.

7 For I would that al men were euen as I my selfe *am*: but euery man hath his proper gift of God, one after this maner, and another after that.

8 Therefore I say vnto the vnmaried, & vnto the widowes, It is good for them if they abide euen as I *doe*.

9 But if they can not abſteine, let them marrie: for it is better to marrie then to burne. *Mat.5.32. & 19.9.*

10 * And vnto the married I command, not I, but the Lord, let not the wife depart from her husband, *mar.10.11, 12.lu.16.18*

11 But and if shee depart, let her remaine vnmarried, or be reconciled vnto her husband, and let not the husbande put away *his* wife.

12 But to the remnant I speake, *and* not the Lorde, If any brother haue a wife, that beleeueth not, if shee be content to dwell with him, let him not forsake her.

13 And the woman which hath an husband that beleeueth not, if he be content to dwel with her, let her not forsake him.

14 For the vnbeleeuing husband is sanctified to the wife, and the vnbeleeuing wife is sanctified to the husbande, els were your children vncleane: but nowe are they holy.

15 But if the vnbeleeuing depart, let him depart: a brother or a sister is not in subiection in such things: but God hath called vs in peace.

16 For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt saue thine husbande? Or what knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt saue thy wife?

17 But as God hath distributed to euery man, as the Lorde hath called euery one, so let him walke: and so ordaine I, in all Churches.

18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not gather *his vncircumcision:* is any called vncircumcised? let him not be circumcised.

19 Circumcision is nothing, and vncircucision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandements of God.

1.Tim.6.1. 20 * Let euery man abide in the same vocation wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called *being* a seruant? care not for it: but if yet thou maiest be free, vse it rather.

22 For he that is called in the Lorde *being* a seruaunt, is the Lordes freeman: likewise also hee that is called *being* free, is Christs seruant.

*Chap.6.20.* 23 *Ye are bought with a price: be not the seruãts of men.

1.*pet.*1.18, 19. 24 Brethren, let euery man, wherein he was called, therein abide with God.

25 Nowe concerning virgins, I haue no commaundement of the Lord: but I giue mine aduice, as one that hath obtained mercie of the Lord to be faithfull.

26 I suppose then this to be good for the present necessity: *I meane* that it is good for a man so to be.

27 Art thou bounde vnto a wife? seeke not to be loosed: art thou loosed from a wife? seeke not a wife.

28 But

28 But if thou takeſt a wife, thou ſinneſt not: and if a virgin marie, ſhee ſinneth not: neuertheleſſe, ſuch ſhall haue trouble in the fleſh: but I ſpare you.

29 And this I ſay, brethren, becauſe the time is ſhort, hereafter that both they which haue wiues, bee as though they had none:

30 And they that weepe, as though they wept not: and they that reioyce, as though they reioyced not: and they that bye, as though they poſſeſſed not:

31 And they that vſe this world, as though they vſed it not: for the faſhion of this world goeth away.

32 And I would haue you without care. The vnmaried careth for the things of the Lord, how he may pleaſe the Lord.

33 But he ỹ is maried careth for the things of the worlde, howe he may pleaſe *his* wife.

34 There is difference alſo betweene a virgine and a wife: the vnmaried woman careth for the things of the Lorde, that ſhee may be holy both in bodie and ſpirite: but ſhee that is maried, careth for the things of the worlde, howe ſhee may pleaſe her husband.

35 And this I ſpeake for your owne commoditie, not to tangle you in a ſnare, but that *ye followe* that, which is honeſt, and that ye may cleaue faſt vnto the Lord without ſeparation.

36 But if any man thinke ỹ it is vncomely for his virgine, if ſhee paſſe the flowre of *her* age, & neede ſo require, let him doe what he will, he ſinneth not: let them be maried.

37 Neuertheleſſe, hee that ſtandeth ſtirme in his heart, that hee hath no neede, but hath power ouer his owne will, and hath ſo decreed in his heart, that he will keepe his virgine, he doeth well.

38 So then he that giueth her to mariage, doeth well, but he that giueth her not to mariage, doeth better.

39 The wife is bound by the Lawe, as long as her husband liueth: but if her husband be dead, ſhee is at libertie to marie with whom ſhee will, onely in the Lord. *Rom.7.2.*

40 But ſhee is more bleſſed, if ſhee ſo abide, in my iudgement: and I thinke that I haue alſo the Spirit of God. *1.Thes.4.8.*

## CHAP. VIII.

1 *From this place vnto the ende of the tenth Chapter, he willeth them not to be at the Gentiles prophane bankets.* 8 *Hee reſtraineth the abuſe of Chriſtian libertie,* 11 *and ſheweth that knowledge muſt be tempered with charitie.*

AND as touching things sacrificed vnto idoles, we knowe that we all haue knowledge: knowledge puffeth vp, but loue edifieth.

2 Nowe, if any man thinke that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to knowe.

3 But if any man loue God, the same is knowen of him.

4 Concerning therefore the eating of things sacrificed vnto idoles, we know that an idole *is* nothing in the world, and that there *is* none other God but one.

5 For though there be that are called gods, whether in heauen, or in earth, (as there be many gods, and many lordes)

6 Yet vnto vs there *is* but one God, *which is* that Father, of whom are all things, and we in him: and * one Lorde Iesus Christ, by whom *are* all things, and we by him.

*Chap.12.3.*
*Iohn 13.13.*

7 But euery man hath not that knowledge: for many hauing conscience of the idole, vntill this houre, eate as a thing sacrificed vnto the idole, and so their conscience being weake, is defiled.

8 But meate maketh not vs acceptable to God, for neither if we eate, haue we the more: neither if we eate not, haue we the lesse.

9 But take heede least by any meanes this power of yours be an occasion of falling, to them that are weake.

10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge, sit at table in the idoles Temple, shall not ỹ conscience of him which is weake, be boldened to eate those things which are sacrificed to idoles?

*Rom.14.15.*

11 And through thy knowledge shall the *weake brother perish, for whom Christ died.

12 Now when ye sinne so against the brethren, and wound their weake conscience, ye sinne against Christ.

*Rom.14.21.*

13 *Wherfore if meat offend my brother, I wil eat no flesh while the world standeth, that I may not offend my brother.

## CHAP. IX.

*1 Hee declareth, that from the libertie which the Lorde gaue him, 15 hee willingly absteined, 18. 22 least in things indifferent he should offend any. 24 Hee sheweth that our life is like vnto a race.*

AM I not an Apostle? am I not free? haue I not seene Iesus Christ our Lord? are ye not my worke in the Lord?

2 If I be not an Apostle vnto other, yet doutles I am vnto you: for ye are the seale of mine Apostleship in the Lord.

3 My

3 My defence to them that examine me, is this,
4 Haue we not power to eate and to drinke?
5 Or haue we not power to leade about a wife being a ſiſter, as well as the reſt of the Apoſtles, and as the brethren of the Lord and Cephas?
6 Or I onely & Barnabas, haue not we power not to worke?
7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his owne coſt? who planteth a vineyard, & eateth not of the fruit thereof? or who feedeth a flocke, and eateth not of the milke of the flocke?
8 Say I theſe things according to man? ſaith not the Lawe the ſame alſo?
9 For it is written in the Lawe of Moſes, *Thou ſhalt not muſſell the mouth of the oxe, that treadeth out the corne: doeth God take care for oxen? *Deut.25.4. 1.Tim.5.18.
10 Either ſaieth he it not altogether for our ſakes? For our ſakes no doubt it is written, that he which eareth, ſhould eare in hope, and that hee that threſheth in hope, ſhoulde be partaker of his hope.
11 *If we haue ſowen vnto you ſpirituall things, *is it* a great thing if we reape your carnall things? *Rom.15.27.
12 If others with you be partakers of *this* power, *are* not we rather? neuertheles, we haue not vſed this power: but ſuffer all things, that we ſhould not hinder the Goſpel of Chriſt.
13 Doe ye not knowe, that they which miniſter about the *holy things, eat of the things of the Temple? and they which waite at the altar, are partakers with the altar? *Deut.18.1.
14 So alſo hath the Lord ordeined, that they which preach the Goſpel, ſhould liue of the Goſpel.
15 But I haue vſed none of theſe things: neither wrote I theſe things, ỹ it ſhould be ſo done vnto mee: for it were better for me to die, then that any mā ſhould make my reioycing vaine.
16 For though I preach the Goſpel, I haue nothing to reioyce of: for neceſsitie is laid vpon me, and woe is vnto me, if I preach not the Goſpel.
17 For if I doe it willingly, I haue a reward, but if I doe it againſt my will, *notwithſtanding* the diſpenſation is committed vnto me.
18 What is my reward then? verely that when I preach the Goſpel, I make the Goſpel of Chriſt free, that I abuſe not mine authoritie in the Goſpel.
19 For though I be free from all men, yet haue I made my ſelfe ſeruant vnto all men, that I might winne the moe.

*Acts.16.3. Gala.2.3.* 20 * And vnto the Iewes, I become as a Iewe, ỹ I may win the Iewes: to them that are vnder the Lawe, as *though I were* vnder the Law, that I may win them that are vnder the Lawe:

21 To them that are without Lawe, as *though I were* without Lawe (when I am not without Law as pertaining to God, but *am* in the Lawe through Christ) that I may winne them that are without Lawe:

22 To the weake I become as weake, that I may win the weake: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all meanes saue some.

23 And this I doe for the Gospels sake, that I might bee partaker thereof with you.

24 Knowe yee not, that they which runne in a race, runne all, yet one receiueth the price? so runne that ye may obtaine.

25 And euery man that proueth masteries, abstaineth from all things: and they *doe it* to obtaine a corruptible crowne: but we for an vncorruptible.

26 I therefore so runne, not as vncertainely: so fight I, not as one that beateth the aire.

27 But I beate downe my body, and bring it into subiection, lest by any meanes after that I haue preached to other, I my selfe should be reproued.

## CHAP. X.

*1 If God spared not the Iewes, neither will hee spare those who are of like condition, 3.4 touching the outward signes of his grace. 14 That it is absurd that such should be partakers of the table of deuils, who are partakers of the Lords supper. 24 To haue consideration of our neighbour in things indifferent.*

*Exod.13.21. nom.9.18.* MOreouer, brethren, I would not that yee should be ignorant, that all our fathers were vnder * that cloude, and all passed through that * sea,

*Exod.14.22.* 2 And were all baptized vnto Moses, in that cloude, and in that sea,

*Exod.16.15.* 3 * And did all eate the same spirituall meate,

*Exod.17.6. nom.10.20. and 21.16.* 4 * And did all drinke the same spirituall drinke (for they dranke of the spirituall Rocke that followed them: and the Rocke was Christ.)

*Nom.26.65.* 5 But with many of them God was not pleased: for they were * ouerthrowen in the wildernes.

*Nom.11.4. and 26.64. psal.106.14.* 6 Nowe these things are our ensamples, to the intent that we should not lust after euil things * as they also lusted.

7 Neither bee yee idolaters as *were* some of them, as it is written,

written, * The people sate downe to eate and drinke, and rose vp to playe. *Exod.32.6.*

8 Neither let vs commit fornicatiō, as some of them committed fornication, and fell in one * day three and twentie thousande. *Nom.25.9.*

9 Neither let vs tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted *him*, and * were destroied of serpents. *Nomb.21.6.*

10 Neither murmure ye, as some of them also * murmured, and were destroied of the destroier. *psal.106.14. Nom.14.37.*

11 Now all these things came vnto them for ensamples, and were written to admonish vs, vpon whome the endes of the world are come. *iudg.8.24.*

12 Wherefore, let him that thinketh hee standeth, take heede lest he fall.

13 There hath no tentation taken you, but such as appertaineth to man: and God is faithfull, which will not suffer you to be tempted aboue that you be able, but will euen giue the issue with the tentation, that ye may be able to beare it.

14 Wherefore my beloued, flee from idolatrie.

15 I speake as vnto them which haue vnderstanding: iudge yee what I say.

16 The cuppe of blessing which we blesse, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The breade which we breake, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

17 For we that are many, are one bread and one body, because we all are partakers of one bread.

18 Behold Israel *which is* after the flesh: are not they which eate of the sacrifices, partakers of the altar?

19 What say I then? that the idole is any thing? or that that which is sacrificed to idoles, is any thing?

20 *Nay*, but that these things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to deuils, and not vnto God: and I woulde not that yee should haue fellowship with the deuils.

21 Ye can not drinke the cuppe of the Lord, and the cuppe of the deuils. Ye can not be partakers of the Lordes table and of the table of deuils.

22 Doe we prouoke the Lorde to anger? are we stronger then he?

23 * All things are lawfull for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but all things edifie not. *Chap.6.12.*

24 Let no mā seeke his own, but euery mā anothers wealth.

25 Whatsoeuer is solde in the shambles, eate yee, and aske

no question for conscience sake.

*Psal.24.1.* 26 *For the earth *is* the Lords, and all that therein is.

27 If any of them which beleeue not, call you *to a feast*, and if yee will goe, whatsoeuer is set before you, eate, asking no question for conscience sake.

28 But if any man say vnto you, This is sacrificed vnto idoles, eate it not, because of him that shewed it, and for the conscience (for the earth *is* the Lords, and all that therein is.)

29 And the conscience I say, not thine, but of that other: for why shoulde my libertie be condemned of another mans conscience?

30 For if I through *Gods* benefite be partaker, why am I euill spoken of, for that wherefore I giue thankes?

*Coloss.3.17.* 31 *Whether therefore yee eate, or drinke, or whatsoeuer ye doe, doe all to the glory of God.

32 Giue none offence, neither to the Iewes, nor to the Grecians, nor to the Church of God:

33 Euen as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine owne profit, but *the profite* of many, that they might be saued.

## CHAP. XI.

*1 He blameth the Corinthians for that in their holy assemblies, 4 men doe pray, hauing their heads couered, 6 and women bare headed, and because their meetings tended to euill: 21 who mingled prophane bankets with the holy supper of the Lorde, 23 which he requireth to be celebrated according to Christes institution.*

*1.Thes.3.9.* BE* ye folowers of me, euen as I am of Christ.

2 Now brethren, I commend you, that ye remember all my things, & keepe ȳ ordinances, as I deliuered them to you.

*Ephes.5.23.* 3 But I wil that ye know, that Christ is the *head of euery man: and the man is ȳ womans head: and God is Christs head.

4 Euery man praying or prophecying hauing *any thing* on *his* head, dishonoureth his head.

5 But euery woman that praieth or prophecieth bare headed, dishonoureth her head: for it is euen one very thing, as though shee were shauen.

6 Therefore if the woman be not couered, let her also be shorne: and if it be shame for a womā to be shorne or shauen, let her be couered.

*Gen.1.26. & 5.1. & 9. 6.Coloss.3.10.* 7 For a man ought not to couer *hi.* head: forasmuch as he is the *image and glorie of God: but the woman is the glorie of the man.

8 For

8 For the man is not of the woman, but the woman of the man.

9 * For the man was not created for the womans sake: but the woman for the mans sake. *Gen.2.22.*

10 Therefore ought the woman to haue power on *her* head, because of the Angels.

11 Neuertheleſſe, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man, ſo is the man alſo by the woman: but all things are of God.

13 Iudge in your ſelues, is it comely that a woman pray vnto God vncouered?

14 Doeth not nature it ſelfe teache you, that if a man haue long heare, it is a ſhame vnto him?

15 But if a woman haue long heare, it is a praiſe vnto her: for her heare is giuen her for a couering.

16 But if any man luſt to be contentious, wee haue no ſuch cuſtome, neither the Churches of God.

17 ¶ Nowe in this that I declare, I praiſe *you* not, that ye come together, not with profite, but with hurt.

18 For firſt of all, when ye come together in the Church, I heare that there are diſſentions among you: and I beleeue it *to be true* in ſome part.

19 For there muſt be hereſies euen among you, that they which are approued among you, might be knowen.

20 When yee come together therefore into one place, *this* is not to eate the Lords ſupper.

21 For euery man when they ſhould eate, taketh his owne ſupper afore, and one is hungry, and another is drunken.

22 Haue ye not houſes to eate and to drinke in? deſpiſe ye the Church of God, and ſhame them that haue not? what ſhal I ſay to you? ſhall I prayſe you in this? I prayſe you not.

23 For I haue receiued of the Lord that which I alſo haue deliuered vnto you, *to wit*, That the Lorde Ieſus in the night that he was betrayed, tooke bread:

24 * And when he had giuen thankes, he brake it, & ſaide, Take, eate: this is my body, which is broken for you: this doe ye in remembrance of me. *Mat.26.26. mar.14.22. luke.22.19.*

25 After the ſame maner alſo *he tooke* the cuppe, when he had ſupped, ſaying, This cuppe is the Newe teſtament in my blood: this doe as oft as ye drinke it, in remembrance of me.

26 For as often as ye ſhall eate this bread, and drinke this cuppe,

cuppe, ye shewe the Lords death till he come.

27 Wherefore, whosoeuer shal eate this bread, and drinke the cup of the Lorde vnworthily, shall be guiltie of the body and blood of the Lord.

2.Cor.13.5. 28 *Let euery man therefore examine himselfe, and so let him eate of this bread, and drinke of this cup.

29 For he that eateth and drinketh vnworthily, eateth and drinketh his owne damnation, *because* he discerneth not the Lordes body.

30 For this cause many *are* weake, and sicke among you, and many sleepe.

31 For if we woulde iudge our selues, we shoulde not be iudged.

32 But when we are iudged, we are chastened of the Lord, because we should not be condemned with the world.

33 Wherefore, my brethren, when ye come together to eate, tarie one for another.

34 And if any man be hungrie, let him eate at home, that ye come not together vnto condemnation. Other things will I set in order when I come.

## CHAP. XII.

*1 To drawe away the Corinthians from contention and pride, he sheweth that spirituall giftes are therefore diuersly bestowed, 7 that, the same being ioyntly to eche other imployed, 12 we may growe vp together into one body of Christ in such equall proportion and measure, 20 as the members of mans bodie doe.*

NOwe concerning spirituall *giftes*, brethren, I would not haue you ignorant.

2 Ye knowe that ye were Gentiles, and were caried away vnto the dumme idoles, as ye were ledde.

Mar.9.39. Chap.8.6. iohn 13.13. phil.2.11. 3 Wherefore, I declare vnto you, that no man *speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Iesus *execrable: also no man can say that Iesus is the Lord, but by the holy Ghost.

4 Nowe there are diuersities of giftes, but the same Spirit.

5 And there are diuersities of administratiõs, but the same Lord.

6 And there are diuersities of operations, but God is the same which worketh all in all.

7 But the manifestation of the Spirit is giuen to euery man, to profit withall.

8 For to one is giuen by the Spirit the word of wisedome: and

and to another the worde of knowledge, by the ſame Spirit:

9 And to another *is giuen* faith, by the ſame Spirit: and to another, the giftes of healing, by the ſame Spirit:

10 And to another, the operations of great workes: and to another, prophecie: and to another, the diſcerning of ſpirits: and to another, diuerſities of tongues: and to another the interpretation of tongues.

11 * And all theſe things worketh one, and the ſelfe ſame Spirit, diſtributing to euery man ſeuerally as he will. *Rom.12.3. Ephe.4.7.*

12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of the body, which is one, though they be many, *yet* are *but* one body: euen ſo *is* Chriſt.

13 For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether *we be* Iewes, or Grecians, whether *we be* bonde, or free, and haue bene all made to drinke into one Spirit.

14 For the body alſo is not one member, but many.

15 If the foote would ſay, becauſe I am not the hand, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body?

16 And if the eare woulde ſay, Becauſe I am not the eye, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body?

17 If the whole body *were* an eye, where *were* the hearing? if the whole *were* hearing, where *were* the ſmelling?

18 But now hath God diſpoſed the members euery one of them in the body at his owne pleaſure.

19 For if they were al one member, where *were* the body?

20 But now *are* there many members, yet but one body.

21 And the eye can not ſay vnto the hand, I haue no neede of thee: nor the head againe to the feete, I haue no neede of you.

22 Yea, much rather thoſe members of the body, which ſeeme to be more feeble, are neceſſarie.

23 And vpon thoſe *members* of the body, which we thinke moſt vnhoneſt, put we more honeſtie on: and our vncomely *partes* haue more comelineſſe on.

24 For our comely *partes* neede it not: but God hath tempered the body together, and hath giuen the more honour to that *part* which lacked,

25 Leſt there ſhould be any diuiſion in the body: but that the members ſhould haue the ſame care one for another.

26 Therefore if one member ſuffer, all ſuffer with it: if one member be had in honour, all the members reioyce with it.

27 Now ye are ỹ body of Chriſt, & members for *your* part.

28 * And

*Ephes.* 4.11. 28 * And God hath ordeined some in the Church: *as* first, Apostles, secondly Prophets, thirdly teachers, then them that doe miracles: after that, the giftes of healing, helpers, gouernours, diuersitie of tongues.

29 Are all Apostles? are all Prophets? are all teachers?

30 Are all doers of miracles? haue all the giftes of healing? doe all speake with tongues? doe all interprete?

31 But desire you the best giftes, and I will yet shewe you a more excellent way.

## CHAP. XIII.

1 *He sheweth that there are no giftes so excellent, which in Gods sight are not corrupt, if Charitie be away:* 4 *and therefore he digresseth vnto the commendation of it.*

THough I speake with the tongues of men and Angels, and haue not loue, I am *as* sounding brasse, or a tinkling cymball.

2 And though I had the *gift* of prophecie, and knewe all secrets and all knowledge, yea, if I had all faith, so that I could
*Mat.* 17.20. remoue * mountaines, and had not loue, I were nothing.

3 And though I feede the poore with all my goods, and though I giue my body, that I be burned, and haue not loue, it profiteth me nothing.

4 Loue suffereth long: it is bountifull: loue enuieth not: loue doeth not boast it selfe: it is not puffed vp:

5 It doeth no vncomely thing: it seeketh not her owne things: it is not prouoked to anger: it thinketh not euill:

6 It reioyceth not in iniquitie, but reioyceth in the trueth:

7 It suffereth all things: it beleeueth all things: it hopeth all things: it endureth all things.

8 Loue doeth neuer fall away, though that prophecyings be abolished, or the tongues cease, or knowledge vanish away.

9 For we knowe in part, and we prophecie in part.

10 But whē that which is perfect, is come, then that which is in part, shalbe abolished.

11 When I was a child, I spake as a childe, I vnderstood as a childe, I thought as a childe: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

12 For nowe we see through a glasse darkely: but then *shall we see* face to face. Now I know in part: but then shall I knowe euen as I am knowen.

13 And now abideth faith, hope *and* loue, *euen* these three: but the chiefest of these *is* loue.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XIIII.

1 *He commendeth the gift of prophecying:* 7 *and by a ſimilitude taken of muſicall inſtruments,* 12 *he teacheth the true vſe of interpreting the Scriptures:* 17 *he taketh away the abuſe:* 34 *and forbiddeth women to ſpeake in the Congregatiõ.*

FOllowe after loue, and couet ſpirituall *giftes*, and rather that ye may prophecie.

2 For he that ſpeaketh a *ſtrange* tongue, ſpeaketh not vnto men, but vnto God: for no man heareth *him:* howbeit in the ſpirit he ſpeaketh ſecret things.

3 But he that prophecieth, ſpeaketh vnto men to edifying, and to exhortation, and to comfort.

4 He that ſpeaketh *ſtrange* language, edifieth himſelfe: but he that prophecieth, edifieth the Church.

5 I woulde that ye all ſpake *ſtrange* languages, but rather that ye prophecied: for greater is he that prophecieth, then he that ſpeaketh *diuers* tongues, except he expounde it, that the Church may receiue edification.

6 And nowe, brethren, if I come vnto you ſpeaking *diuers* tongues, what ſhall I profite you, except I ſpeake to you, either by reuelation, or by knowledge, or by prophecying, or by doctrine?

7 Moreouer things without life which giue a ſounde, whether *it be* a pipe or an harpe, except they make a diſtinction in the ſounds, how ſhall it be knowen what is piped or harped?

8 And alſo, if the trumpet giue an vncertaine ſounde, who ſhall prepare himſelfe to battell?

9 So likewiſe you, by the tongue, except ye vtter wordes that haue ſignification, howe ſhall it be vnderſtand what is ſpoken? for ye ſhall ſpeake in the ayre.

10 There are ſo many kindes of voyces (as it commeth to paſſe) in the world, and none of them is dumme.

11 Except I knowe then the power of the voyce, I ſhall be vnto him that ſpeaketh a barbarian, and he that ſpeaketh, ſhalbe a barbarian vnto me.

12 Euen ſo, foraſmuch as ye couet ſpirituall *giftes*, ſeeke that ye may excell vnto the edifying of the Church.

13 Wherfore, let him that ſpeaketh a *ſtrange* tongue, pray, that he may interprete.

14 For if I pray in a *ſtrange* tongue, my ſpirit prayeth: but mine vnderſtanding is without fruite.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the ſpirit, but I will pray with the vnderſtanding alſo: I will ſing with the ſpirit,

but

but I will sing with the vnderstanding also.

16 Els, when thou blessest with the spirit, howe shall he that occupieth the roome of the vnlearned, say, Amen, at thy giuing of thankes, seeing he knoweth not what thou sayest?

17 For thou verely giuest thankes well, but the other is not edified.

18 I thanke my God, I speake languages more then ye all.

19 Yet had I rather in the Church to speake fiue wordes with mine vnderstanding, that I might also instruct others, then tenne thousand wordes in a *strange* tongue.

*Mat.*18.3. 20 Brethren, be not * children in vnderstanding, but as concerning maliciousnesse be children, but in vnderstanding be of a ripe age.

*Isa.*28.11. 21 In the Lawe it is written, * By men of other tongues, and by other languages will I speake vnto this people: yet so shall they not heare me, saith the Lord.

22 Wherefore *strange* tongues are for a signe, not to them that beleeue, but to them that beleeue not: but prophecying *serueth* not for them that beleeue not, but for them which beleeue.

23 If therefore when the whole Church is come together in one, and all speake *strange* tongues, there come in they that are vnlearned, or they which beleeue not, will they not say, that ye are out of your wittes?

24 But if all prophecie, and there come in one that beleeueth not, or one vnlearned, he is rebuked of all men, and is iudged of all.

25 And so are the secrets of his heart made manifest, and so he will fall downe on his face & worship God, and say plainely that God is in you in deede.

26 What is to be *done* then, brethren? when ye come together, *according as* euery one of you hath a Psalme, *or* hath doctrine, *or* hath a tongue, *or* hath reuelation, *or* hath interpretation, let all things be done vnto edifying.

27 If any man speake a *strange* tongue, *let it be* by two, or at the most, by three, and that by course, and let one interprete.

28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keepe silence in the Church, *which speaketh languages*, and let him speake to himselfe, and to God.

29 Let the Prophets speake two, or three, and let the other iudge.

30 And if any thing be reuealed to another that sitteth by,

let

let the first hold his peace.

31 For ye may al prophecie one by one, that al may learne, and all may haue comfort.

32 And the spirites of the Prophetes are subiect to the Prophetes.

33 For God is not *the authour* of confusion, but of peace, as *we see* in all the Churches of the Saintes.

34 *Let your women keepe silence in the Churches: for it is not permitted vnto them to speake: but *they ought* to be subiect, as also * the Lawe saith. 1.*Tim.*2.12. *Gen.*3.16.

35 And if they will learne any thing, let them aske their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speake in the Church.

36 Came the worde of God out from you? either came it vnto you onely?

37 If any thinke himselfe to be a Prophet, or spirituall, let him acknowledge, that the things, that I write vnto you, are the commandements of the Lord.

38 And if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.

39 Wherefore brethren, couet to prophecie, and forbid not to speake languages.

40 Let all things be done honestly, and by order.

## CHAP. XV.

*1 The Gospel that Paul preached: 3 The death and resurrection of Christ. 8 Paul sawe Christ. 9 He had persecuted that Church, whereof afterwarde he was made a minister. 12 Christ first rose againe, and we all shall rise by him. 26 The last enemie, death. 29 To be baptized for dead. 32 At Ephesus Paul fought with beastes. 35 Howe the dead are raysed. 45 The first Adam. The last Adam. 47 The first and second man. 51 We shall all be changed, we shall not all sleepe. 55 Deaths sting. 57 Victorie. 58 Constancie and stedfastnesse.*

MOreouer, * brethren, I declare vnto you the Gospel, which I preached vnto you, which ye haue also receiued, and wherein ye continue, *Gala.*1.11.

2 And whereby ye are saued, if ye keepe in memorie, after what maner I preached it vnto you, except ye haue beleeued in vaine.

3 For first of all, I deliuered vnto you that which I receiued, howe that Christ died for our sinnes, according to the * Scriptures, *Isa.*53.5. 1.*Pet.*2.24.

4 And

4 And that he was buried, and that he rose the third day,
*Ionas 2.1.* according to the * Scriptures,
*Iohn 20.19.* 5 *And that he was seene of Cephas, then of the twelue.
6 After that, he was seene of moe then fiue hundreth brethren at once: whereof many remaine vnto this present, and some also are a sleepe.
7 After that, he was seene of Iames: then of all ỹ Apostles.
*Act.9.4.* 8 *And last of all he was seene also of me, as of one borne out of due time.
*Ephes.3.8.* 9 *For I am the least of the Apostles, which am not meete to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted ỹ Church of God.
*Ephes.3.7.* 10 *But by the grace of God, I am that I am: and his grace which is in me, was not in vaine: but I laboured more abundantly then they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which is with me.
11 Wherefore, whether it were I, or they, so we preach, and so haue ye beleeued.
12 ¶Nowe if it be preached, that Christ is risen from the dead, howe say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?
13 For if there be no resurrection of ỹ dead, then is Christ not risen:
14 And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vaine, and your faith is also vaine.
15 And we are founde also false witnesses of God: for we haue testified of God, that he hath raised vp Christ: whom he hath not raised vp, if so be the dead be not raised.
16 For if the dead be not raised, then is Christ not raised.
17 And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vaine: ye are yet in your sinnes,
18 And so they which are asleepe in Christ, are perished.
19 If in this life onely we haue hope in Christ, we are of all men the most miserable.
20 But nowe is Christ risen from the dead, *and* was made
*Col.1.18.* the * first fruites of them that slept.
*reuel.1.5.* 21 For since by man *came* death, by man *came* also the resurrection of the dead.
22 For as in Adam all die, euen so in Christ shall all be made aliue,
1. *Thes.4.13.* 23 But euery man in his * owne order: the first fruites *is* Christ, afterward, they that are of Christ, at his comming *shall rise againe.*

24 Then

24 Then *shall be* the ende, when he hath deliuered vp the kingdome to God, euen the Father, when he hath put downe all rule, and all authoritie and power.

25 For he must reigne * till he hath put all his enemies vnder his feete. *Psal.110.1. acts.2.34. hebr.1.13.*

26 The last enemie that shalbe destroyed, *is* death.

27 For he hath put downe all things vnder his feete. (And when he saith that all things are subdued *to him*, it is manifest that he is excepted, which did put downe all things vnder him.) *& 1.Cor.15. Psal.8.6. hebr.2.8.*

28 And when all things shalbe subdued vnto him, then shal the Sonne also himselfe be subiect vnto him, that did subdue all things vnder him, that God may be all in all.

29 Else what shal they doe which are baptized for dead? if the dead rise not at all, why are they then baptized for dead?

30 Why are we also in ieopardie euery houre?

31 By our reioycing which I haue in Christ Iesus our Lord, I die dayly.

32 If I haue fought with beasts at Ephesus after the maner of men, what aduantageth it me, if the dead be not raised vp? * Iet vs eate and drinke: for to morow we shall die. *Isa.22.13.*

33 Be not deceiued: euil speakings corrupt good maners.

34 Awake to *iust* righteously, and sinne not: for some haue not the knowledge of God, I speake this to your shame.

35 But some man wil say, Howe are the dead raised vp? and with what body come they foorth?

36 O foole, that which thou soweest, is not quickened, except it die:

37 And that which thou soweest, thou soweest not that body that shalbe, but bare corne as it falleth, of wheate, or of some other.

38 But God giueth it a body at his pleasure, euen to euery seede his owne body.

39 All flesh *is* not the same flesh, but there is one flesh of men, and another flesh of beastes, and another of fishes, and another of birds.

40 There *are* also heauenly bodies, and earthly bodies: but the glory of the heauenly *is* one, and *the glory* of the earthly *is* another.

41 There is another glory of the Sunne, and another glory of the moone, and another glory of the starres: for one starre differeth from *another* starre in glory.

42 So also *is* the resurrection of the dead. *The body* is sowen in corruption, *and* is raised in incorruption.

43 It is sowen in dishonour, *and* is raised in glory: it is sowen in weakenes, *and* is raised in power.

44 It is sowen a naturall body, *and* is raised a spirituall body: there is a naturall body, *and* there is a spirituall body.

*Gene.2.7.* 45 As it is also written, The first man *Adam was made a lining soule: and the last Adam *was made* a quickning Spirit.

46 Howbeit that *was* not first which is spirituall: but that *which is* naturall, and afterward that *which is* spirituall.

47 The first man *is* of the earth, earthly: the second man *is* the Lord from heauen.

48 As *is* the earthly, such *are* they that are earthly: and as *is* the heauenly, such *are* they also that are heauenly.

49 And as we haue borne the image of the earthly, so shall we beare the image of the heauenly.

50 This say I, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherite the kingdome of God, neither doeth corruption inherite incorruption.

51 Beholde, I shewe you a secret thing, we shall not all sleepe, but we shall all be changed,

52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye at the last *Mat.24.31.* * trumpet: for the trumpet shall blow, and the dead shall be *1.Thes.4.16.* raised vp incorruptible, and we shalbe changed.

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption: and this mortall *must* put on immortalitie.

54 So when this corruptible hath put on incorruption, and this mortall hath put on immortalitie, then shall be brought *Ose.13.14.* to passe the saying that is written, * Death is swallowed vp *hebr.2.14.* into victorie.

55 O death where *is* thy sting? O graue where *is* thy victory?

56 The sting of death *is* sinne: and the strength of sinne *is* the Lawe.

*1.John 5.5.* 57 *But thankes *be* vnto God which hath giuen vs victorie through our Lord Iesus Christ.

58 Therefore my beloued brethren, be ye stedfast, vnmoueable, abundant alwayes in the worke of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know, that your labour is not in vaine in the Lord.

## CHAP. XVI.

*1 He exhorteth them to helpe the poore brethren of Hierusalem: 10 Then, he commendeth Timothie: 13 and so with a friendly exhortation, 19 and commendations, endeth the epistle.*

Concerning

CONcerning the gathering for the Saints, as I haue ordeined in the Churches of Galatia, so doe ye also.

2 Euery first *day* of the weeke, let euery one of you put aside by him selfe, and lay vp as *God* hath prospered him, that then there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I am come, whomsoeuer ye shall allowe by letters, them will I send to bring your liberalitie vnto Hierusalem.

4 And if it be meete that I goe also, they shall goe with mee.

5 Now I will come vnto you, after I haue gone thorowe Macedonia (for I will passe through Macedonia.)

6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, or winter with you, that ye may bring me on my way whithersoeuer I goe.

7 For I will not see you now in my passage, but I trust to abide a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 And I will tary at Ephesus vntill Pentecost.

9 For a great doore and effectuall is opened vnto me: and there are many aduersaries.

10 ¶ Now if Timotheus come, see that he be without feare with you: for hee worketh the worke of the Lord, euen as I *doe*.

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conuey him forth in peace, that he may come vnto me: for I looke for him with the brethren.

12 As touching *our* brother Apollos, I greatly desired him, to come vnto you with the brethren: but his minde was not at all to come at this time: howbeit he will come when he shall haue conuenient time.

13 ¶ Watch ye: stand fast in the faith: quite you like men, *and* be strong.

14 Let all your things be done in loue.

15 Nowe brethren, I beseech you (ye knowe the house of Stephanas, that it is the first fruites of Achaia, and that they haue giuen themselues to minister vnto the Saints)

16 That ye be obedient euen vnto such, & to all that helpe with vs and labour.

17 I am glad of the comming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for they haue supplied the want of you.

18 For they haue comforted my spirit and yours: acknowledge therefore such men.

19 The Churches of Asia salute you: Aquila and Priscilla,

with the Church that is in their house, salute you greatly in the Lorde.

20 All the brethren greete you. Greete yee one another
*Rom.16.16.* with an * holy kisse.
*2.cor.13.12.* 21 The salutation of *me* Paul with mine owne hand.
*1.pet.5.14.* 22 If any man loue not the Lorde Iesus Christ, let him be had in execration maran-atha.

23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you.
24 My loue *be* with you all in Christ Iesus, Amen.

¶ The first *Epistle* to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, *and sent* by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, and Timotheus.

# THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE Corinthians.

## CHAP. I.

*1 He beginneth with the prayse of afflictions, 8 declaring what he hath suffered in Asia, 10 and howe happily God assisted him. 17 He saith it was not vpon any lightnesse, that he came not according to his promise.*

PAul an Apostle of IESVS CHRIST, by the will of God, and *our* brother Timotheus, to the Church of God, which is at Corinthus with all the Saints, which are in all Achaia:

2 Grace *be* with you, & peace from God our Father, & *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.
*Ephes.1.3.* 3 *Blessed *be* God, euen ✠ Father of our Lord Iesus Christ,
*1.pet.1.3.* the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort,

4 Which comforteth vs in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any affliction by the comfort wherewith we our selues are comforted of God.

5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in vs, so our consolation aboundeth through Christ.

6 And whether we be afflicted, *it is* for your consolation and saluation, which is wrought in the induring of the same sufferings, which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, *it is* for your consolation and saluation.

7 And our hope is stedfast concerning you, in as much as

we

we know that as ye are partakers of the sufferings, so *shall ye be* also of the consolation.

8 For brethren, we would not haue you ignorant of our affliction, which came vnto vs in Asia, howe we were pressed out of measure passing strength, so that we altogether doubted, euen of life.

9 Yea, we receiued the sentence of death in our selues, because we should not trust in our selues, but in God, which raiseth the dead.

10 Who deliuered vs from so great a death, & doeth deliuer *vs:* in whom we trust, that yet hereafter he wil deliuer *vs*,

11 *So that ye labour together in prayer for vs, that for the gift *bestowed* vpon vs for many, thankes may be giuen by many persons for vs. *Rom.15.3.

12 For our reioycing is this, the testimonie of our conscience, that in simplicitie and godly purenes, *and* not in fleshly wisdome, but by the grace of God we haue had our conuersation in the world, and most of all to youwards.

13 For we write none other things vnto you, then that ye reade, or else that ye acknowledge, and I trust ye shall acknowledge vnto the ende.

14 Euen as ye haue acknowledged vs partly, that we are your reioycing, euen as ye are ours, in ỹ day of *our* Lord Iesus.

15 And in this confidence was I minded first to come vnto you, that ye might haue had a double grace,

16 And to passe by you into Macedonia, and to come againe out of Macedonia vnto you, and to be led forth toward Iudea of you.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I vse lightnes? or minde I those things which I minde, according to the flesh, that with me should be, Yea, yea, and Nay, nay?

18 Yea, God is faithfull, that our worde toward you was not Yea, and nay.

19 For the Sonne of God Iesus Christ, who was preached among you by vs, *that is* by me, and Syluanus, and Timotheus, was not Yea, and Nay: but in him it was yea.

20 For all the promises of God in him *are* Yea, and are in him Amen, vnto the glory of God through vs.

21 And it is God which stablisheth vs with you in Christ, and hath anoynted vs.

22 Who hath also sealed vs, and hath giuen the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

with the Church that is in their house, salute you greatly in the Lorde.

20 All the brethren greete you. Greete yee one another
*Rom.16.16.* with an * holy kisse.
*2.cor.13.12.* 21 The salutation of *me* Paul with mine owne hand.
*1.pet.5.14.* 22 If any man loue not the Lorde Iesus Christ, let him be had in execration maran-atha.

23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you.

24 My loue *be* with you all in Christ Iesus, Amen.

¶ The first *Epistle* to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, *and sent* by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, and Timotheus.

# THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE Corinthians.

## CHAP. I.

1 *He begin*neth *with the prayse of afflictions*, 8 *declaring what he hath suffered in Asia*, 10 *and howe happily God assisted him*. 17 *He saith it was not vpon any lightnesse, that he came not according to his promise.*

PAul an Apostle of IESVS CHRIST, by the will of God, and *our* brother Timotheus, to the Church of God, which is at Corinthus with all the Saints, which are in all Achaia:

2 Grace *be* with you, & peace from God our Father, & *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

*Ephes.1.3.* 3 *Blessed *be* God, euen ȳ Father of our Lord Iesus Christ,
*1.pet.1.3.* the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort,

4 Which comforteth vs in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any affliction by the comfort wherewith we our selues are comforted of God.

5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in vs, so our consolation aboundeth through Christ.

6 And whether we be afflicted, *it is* for your consolation and saluation, which is wrought in the induring of the same sufferings, which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, *it is* for your consolation and saluation.

7 And our hope is stedfast concerning you, in as much as we

we know that as ye are partakers of the ſufferings, ſo *ſhall ye be* alſo of the conſolation.

8 For brethren, we would not haue you ignorant of our affliction, which came vnto vs in Aſia, howe we were preſſed out of meaſure paſsing ſtrength, ſo that we altogether doubted, euen of life.

9 Yea, we receiued the ſentence of death in our ſelues, becauſe we ſhould not truſt in our ſelues, but in God, which raiſeth the dead.

10 Who deliuered vs from ſo great a death, & doeth deliuer *vs:* in whom we truſt, that yet hereafter he will deliuer *vs*,

11 So that ye labour together in prayer for vs, that for the gift *beſtowed* vpon vs for many, thankes may be giuen by many perſons for vs. *Rom.15.3.*

12 For our reioycing is this, the teſtimonie of our conſcience, that in ſimplicitie and godly purenes, *and* not in fleſhly wiſdome, but by the grace of God we haue had our converſation in the world, and moſt of all to youwards.

13 For we write none other things vnto you, then that ye reade, or elſe that ye acknowledge, and I truſt ye ſhall acknowledge vnto the ende,

14 Euen as ye haue acknowledged vs partly, that we are your reioycing, euen as ye are ours, in ỹ day of *our* Lord Ieſus.

15 And in this confidence was I minded firſt to come vnto you, that ye might haue had a double grace,

16 And to paſſe by you into Macedonia, and to come againe out of Macedonia vnto you, and to be led forth toward Iudea of you.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I vſe lightnes? or minde I thoſe things which I minde, according to the fleſh, that with me ſhould be, Yea, yea, and Nay, nay?

18 Yea, God is faithfull, that our worde toward you was not Yea, and nay.

19 For the Sonne of God Ieſus Chriſt, who was preached among you by vs, *that is* by me, and Syluanus, and Timotheus, was not Yea, and Nay: but in him it was yea.

20 For all the promiſes of God in him *are* Yea, and are in him Amen, vnto the glory of God through vs.

21 And it is God which ſtabliſheth vs with you in Chriſt, and hath anoynted vs.

22 Who hath alſo ſealed vs, and hath giuen the earneſt of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 Nowe, I call God for a recorde vnto my ſoule, that to ſpare you, I came not as yet vnto Corinthus.

24 Not that we haue dominion ouer your faith, but we are helpers of your ioy: for by faith ye ſtand.

## CHAP. II.

1 *He excuſeth his not comming vnto them,* 2 *and priuily reprehendeth them:* 4 *he ſheweth that ſuch is his affection towards them,* 5 *that he neuer reioyceth but when they are merie.* 6 *Perceiuing the adulterer (whome he commanded to be deliuered vp to Satan) to repent,* 7 *hee requeſteth that they forgiue him.* 12 *He mentioneth his going into Macedonia.*

BVt I determined thus in my ſelfe, that I would not come againe to you in heauines.

2 For if I make you ſory, who is he then that ſhould make me glad, but the ſame which is made ſory by me?

3 And I wrote this ſame thing vnto you, leſt when I came, I ſhould take heauineſſe of them, of whom I ought to reioyce: this confidence haue I in you al, *that* my ioy is the *ioy* of you all.

4 For in great affliction, and anguiſh of heart I wrote vnto you with many teares: not that ye ſhould be made ſory, but that ye might perceiue the loue which I haue, ſpecially vnto you.

5 And if any hath cauſed ſorowe, the ſame hath not made me ſory, but partly (leſt I ſhould more charge *him*) you all.

6 It is ſufficient vnto the ſame man, that hee was rebuked of many.

7 So that nowe contrariwiſe yee ought rather to forgiue *him*, and comfort *him*, leaſt the ſame ſhould be ſwalowed vp with ouermuch heauines.

8 Wherefore, I pray you, that you would confirme your loue towards him.

9 For this cauſe alſo did I write, that I might knowe the proofe of you, whether you would be obedient in all things.

10 To whom ye forgiue any thing, I *forgiue* alſo: for verely if I forgaue any thing, to whom I forgaue it, for your ſakes *forgaue I it* in the ſight of Chriſt,

11 Leaſt Satan ſhould circumuent vs: for we are not ignorant of his enterpriſes.

12 ¶ Furthermore, when I came to Troas *to preach* Chriſts Goſpel, and a doore was opened vnto me of the Lord,

13 I had no reſt in my ſpirite, becauſe I found not Titus my brother, but tooke my leaue of them, and went away into

into Macedonia.

14 Nowe thankes *be* vnto God which alwayes maketh vs to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifeſt the ſauour of his knowledge by vs in euery place.

15 For we are vnto God the ſweete ſauour of Christ, in them that are ſaued, and in them which periſh:

16 To the one *we are* the ſauour of death, vnto death, and to the other the ſauour of life, vnto life: and who is ſufficient for theſe things?

17 * For we are not as many, which make marchandiſe of the worde of God: but as of ſyncerities, but as of God in the ſight of God, ſpeake we in Chriſt. *Chap.4.2*

## CHAP. III.

1 *He deſireth no other commendation,* 3 *then their continuing in the faith.* 6 *Hee is a miniſter not of the letter, but of the Spirit.* 8 *He ſheweth the difference of the Law & the Goſpel,* 13 *that the brightneſſe of the Lawe doeth rather diſmme the ſight then lighten it:* 18 *But the Goſpel doeth make manifeſt Gods countenance vnto vs.*

DOe we begin to prayſe our ſelues againe? or neede we as ſome other, Epiſtles of recommendation vnto you, or *letters* of recommendation from you?

2 Ye are our epiſtle, written in our hearts, which is vnderſtand, and read of all men,

3 In that ye are made manifeſt, to be the epiſtle of Chriſt, miniſtred by vs, and written, not with yncke, but with the Spirit of the liuing God, not in tables of ſtone, but in fleſhly tables of the heart.

4 And ſuch truſt haue we through Chriſt to God:

5 Not that we are ſufficient of our ſelues, to thinke any thing as of our ſelues: but our ſufficiencie *is* of God,

6 Who alſo hath made vs able miniſters of the Newe Teſtament, not of the letter, but of the Spirit: for the letter killeth, but the Spirit giueth life.

7 If then the miniſtration of death *written* with letters and ingrauen in ſtones, was glorious, ſo that the children of Iſrael could not beholde the face of Moſes, for the glory of his countenance (which *glory* is done away)

8 Howe ſhall not the miniſtration of the Spirite be more glorious?

9 For if § miniſterie of condemnation *was* glorious, much more doeth the miniſtration of righteouſnes exceede in glory.

4 For in deede we that are in this tabernacle, ſigh and are burdened, becauſe we woulde not be vnclothed, but would be clothed vpon, that mortalitie might be ſwallowed vp of life.

5 And hee that hath created vs for this thing, *is* God, who alſo hath giuen vnto vs the earneſt of the Spirit.

6 Therefore we are alway bolde, though wee knowe that whiles we are at home in ỹ body, we are abſent frō the Lord.

7 (For we walke by faith, and not by ſight.)

8 Nenertheleſſe, we are bolde, and loue rather to remoue out of the body, and to dwell with the Lord.

9 Wherefore alſo we couet, that both dwelling at home, and remouing from home, we may be acceptable to him.

Rom.14.10. 10 * For wee muſt all appeare before the iudgement ſeate of Chriſt, that euery man may receiue the thinges which are *done* in his body, according to that he hath done, whether *it be* good or euill.

11 Knowing therefore that terrour of the Lorde, wee perſwade men, and we are made manifeſt vnto God, and I truſt alſo that we are made manifeſt in your conſciences.

12 For wee praiſe not our ſelues againe vnto you, but giue you an occaſion to reioyce of vs, that ye may haue *to anſwere* againſt them, which reioyce in the face, and not in the heart.

13 For whether we be out of our wit, *we are it* to God: or whether we be in our right minde, *we are it* vnto you.

14 For that loue of Chriſt conſtraineth vs,

15 Becauſe we thus iudge, that if one be dead for all, then were all dead, and he died for all, that they which liue, ſhould not henceforth liue vnto themſelues, but vnto him which died for them, and roſe againe.

16 Wherefore, henceforth know we no man after the fleſh, yea though wee had knowen Chriſt after the fleſh, ye nowe henceforth know we *him* no more.

17 Therefore if any man *be* in Chriſt, *let him bee* a newe
Iſa.43.19. Reuel.21.5. creature. *Olde things are paſſed away: beholde, all things are become newe.

18 And all thinges *are* of God, which hath reconciled vs vnto himſelfe by Ieſus Chriſt, and hath giuen vnto vs the miniſterie of reconciliation.

19 For God was in Chriſt, and reconciled the worlde to himſelfe, not imputing their ſinnes vnto them, and hath committed to vs the word of reconciliation.

20 Nowe then are we ambaſſadours for Chriſt: as though God

God did beseech *you* through vs, we pray you in Christs stead, that ye be reconciled to God.

21 For he hath made him *to be* sinne for vs, which knew no sinne, that we should be made ỹ righteousnes of God in him.

## CHAP. VI.

*1 He exhorteth them to leade their liues as it becommeth Christians, 3 neither to be dismaide in tribulations, 9 nor puffed vp with glorie. 14 to anoyde all vncleannesse, 16 considering that they are the temples of the liuing God.*

SO we therefore as workers together beseeche *you*, that ye receiue not the grace of God in vaine.

2 For he saith, * I haue heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of saluation haue I succoured thee: beholde nowe the accepted time, beholde now the day of saluation. *Isa.49.8.*

3 We giue no occasion of offence in any thing, that *our* ministerie should not be reprehended.

4 But in all things we approue our selues as *the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses, *1.Cor.4.1.*

5 In stripes, in prisons, in tumults, in labours,

6 By watchings, by fastings, by puritie, by knowledge, by long suffring, by kindnes, by the holy Ghost, by loue vnfained,

7 By the worde of trueth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousnes on the right hand, and on the left,

8 By honour, and dishonour, by euill report, and good report, as deceiuers, and *yet* true:

9 As vnknowen and *yet* knowen: as dying, and behold, we liue: as chastened, and *yet* not killed:

10 As sorowing, and *yet* alwayes reioycing: as poore, and *yet* make many rich: as hauing nothing, & *yet* possessing al things.

11 O Corinthians, our mouth is open vnto you: our heart is made large.

12 Ye are not kept straite in vs, but yee are kept straite in your owne bowels.

13 Nowe for the same recompence, I speake as to *my* children, Be you also enlarged.

14 Bee not vnequally yoked with the infidels: for * what fellowship hath righteousnes with vnrighteousnes? and what communion hath light with darkenes? *Eccl.13.18.*

15 And what concorde hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath the beleeuer with the infidel?

16 And what agreement hath the Temple of God with idoles?

1.Cor.3.16. and 6.19. idoles? * for ye are the temple of the liuing God: as God hath said, * I will dwell among them, and walke there: and I wil be
Leui.26.11. their God, and they shalbe my people.
Isa.52.11. 17 *Wherefore come out from among them, and separate your selues, saith the Lord: and touche none vncleane thing, and I will receiue you.
Iere.31.1. 18 * And I will be a Father vnto you, and ye shall bee my sonnes and daughters, saith the Lord Almightie.

## CHAP. VII.

*1 Least by ouermuch vrging them he should dismay their tender mindes, 2 he proueth that all that he said, 4 proceeded of the great good will hee bare vnto them: 8 And therefore they shoulde not bee offended, that hee made them sorie, 10 and brought them to repentance not to be repented of.*

SEeing then we haue these promises, dearely beloued, let vs cleanse our selues from all filthinesse of the flesh and spirit, and finish *our* sanctification in the feare of God.

2 Receiue vs: wee haue done wrong to no man: we haue corrupted no man: we haue defrauded no man.

3 I speake it not to *your* condemnation: for I haue said before, that ye are in our hearts, to die and liue together.

4 I vse great boldnesse of speache towarde you: I reioyce greatly in you: I am filled with comfort, and am exceeding ioyous in all our tribulation.

5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but wee were troubled on euery side, fightings without, and terrours within.

6 But God, that comforteth the abiect, comforted vs at the comming of Titus:

7 And not by his comming onely, but also by the consolation wherewith hee was comforted of you, when he tolde vs your great desire, your mourning, your feruent minde to mee ward, so that I reioyced much more.

8 For though I made you sorie with a letter, I repent not, though I did repent: for I perceiue that the same Epistle made you sorie, though *it were* but for a season.

9 I nowe reioyce, not that ye were sorie, but that ye sorowed to repentance: for yee sorowed godly, so that in nothing ye were hurt by vs.

10 For godly sorowe causeth repentance vnto saluation, not to be repented of: but the worldly sorow causeth death.

11 For beholde, this thing that ye haue bene godly sorie, what

what great care it hath wrought in you? yea, what clearing of your selues? yea, *what* indignation? yea, *what* feare? yea, *howe* great desire? yea, *what* zeale? yea, *what* reuenge? in all things ye haue shewed your selues, that ye are pure in this matter.

12 Wherefore, though I wrote vnto you, I did it not for his cause that had done the wrong, neither for his cause that had the iniurie, but that our care towarde you in the sight of God might appeare vnto you.

13 Therfore we were comforted, because ye were comforted: but rather we reioyced much more for the ioye of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

14 For if that I haue boasted any thing to him of you, I haue not bene ashamed: but as I haue spoken vnto you all things in trueth, euen so our boasting vnto Titus was true,

15 And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, when he remembreth the obedience of you all, *and* how with feare and trembling ye receiued him.

16 I reioyce *therfore* that I may put my confidence in you in all things.

## CHAP. VIII.

*1 He exhorteth them, by the example of the Macedonians, 9 and also euen of Christ himselfe, 14 to bee liberall towardes the Saints: 16 For which purpose, he sheweth that Titus, 18 and another brother came vnto them.*

WE doe you also to wit, brethren, of the grace of God bestowed vpon the Churches of Macedonia,

2 Because in great triall of affliction their ioye abounded, and their most extreme pouertie abounded vnto their riche liberalitie.

3 For to *their* power, (I beare record) yea, and beyond their power, they were willing,

4 And prayed vs with great instance that wee would receiue the grace and fellowship of the ministring which is toward the Saints.

5 And *this they did*, not as wee looked for: but gaue their owne selues, first to the Lord, & *after* vnto vs by ỹ wil of God,

6 That we should exhort Titus, that as he had begunne, so he would also accomplish the same grace among you also.

7 Therefore, as ye abound in euery thing, in faith & word, and knowledge, and in al diligence, and in your loue towards vs, *euen so see* that ye abound in this grace also.

8 This say I not by commaundement, but because of the diligence

diligence of others: therefore proue I the naturalnesse of your loue.

9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, that he being riche, for your sakes became poore, that ye through his pouertie might be made rich.

10 And I shewe *my* minde herein: for this is expedient for you, which haue begunne not to doe onely, but also to will, a yeere agoe.

11 Now therefore performe to do it also, that as *there was* a readines to will, euen so *ye may* performe it of that which ye haue.

12 For if there be first a willing minde, it is accepted according to that a man hath, & not according to that he hath not.

13 Neither *is it* that other men shoulde bee eased and you grieued: but vpon like condition, at this time your aboundance *supplieth* their lacke:

14 That also their aboundance may be for your lacke, that
*Exod. 16.18.* there may be equalitie:

15 As it is written,* Hee that *gathered* much, had nothing ouer, and he that *gathered* litle, had not the lesse.

16 And thankes *be* vnto God, which hath put in the heart of Titus the same care for you,

17 Because he accepted the exhortation, yea, he was so carefull that of his owne accord he went vnto you.

18 And wee haue sent also with him the brother, whose praise *is* in the Gospel throughout all the Churches,

19 (And not so onely, but is also chosen of the Churches to be a fellowe in our iourney, concerning this grace that is ministred by vs vnto the glorie of the same Lord, and *declaration* of your prompt minde)

20 Auoyding this, that no man shoulde blame vs in this
*Rom. 12.17.* aboundance that is ministred by vs,

21 *Prouiding for honest things, not only before the Lord, but also before men.

22 And we haue sent vnto them our brother, whom we haue oft times proued to be diligēt in many things, but now much more diligent, for the great confidence, which *I haue* in you.

23 Whether *any do enquire* of Titus, *he is* my fellowe and helper to youward: or of our brethren, they are messengers of the Churches, *and* the glorie of Christ.

24 Wherefore shew toward them, & before the Churches ¶ proue of your loue, & of the reioycing that we haue of you.

CHAP.

*1 Why, albeit he thinke wel of their ready wils, 3 yet earnestly exhorteth them, 4 he yeeldeth a reason: 6 He compareth almes to seede sowing, 10 which God doeth repay with great gaines.*

FOr as touching the ministring to the Saintes, it is superfluous for me to write vnto you.

2 For I know your readines of minde, whereof I boast my selfe of you vnto them of Macedonia, *and say*, that Achaia was prepared a yeere agoe, and your zeale hath prouoked many.

3 Nowe haue I sent the brethren, least our reioycing ouer you should be in vaine in this behalfe, that ye (as I haue saide) be readie:

4 Least if they of Macedonia come with me, and finde you vnprepared, we (that we may not say, you) should be ashamed in this my constant boasting.

5 Wherefore, I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren to come before vnto you, and to finish your beneuolence appointed afore, that it might be readie, *and come* as of beneuolence, and not as of niggardlinesse.

6 This yet *remember*, that he which soweth sparingly, shall reape also sparingly, and hee that soweth liberally, shall reape also liberally.

7 As euery mã wisheth in his heart, *so let him giue*, not *grudgingly, or of necessitie: *for God loueth a cheerefull giuer. *Rom.12.8.* *Eccl.35.10.*

8 And God is able to make all grace to abounde towarde you, that ye alwayes hauing all sufficiencie in all thinges, may abound in euery good worke,

9 (*As it is written, He hath sparsed abroad and hath giuen to the poore: his beneuolence remaineth for euer. *Psal.112.9.*

10 Also hee that findeth seede to the sower, will minister likewise bread for foode, and multiplie your seede, and increase the fruites of your beneuolence.)

11 That on all parts ye may be made riche vnto all liberalitie, which causeth through vs thankes giuing vnto God.

12 For the ministration of this seruice not onely supplieth the necessities of the Saints, but also aboundantly causeth many to giue thankes to God,

13 (Which by the experiment of this ministration praise God for your voluntarie submission to the Gospel of Christ, and for your liberall distribution to them, and to all men)

14 And in their prayer for you, to long after you greatly, for the abundant grace of God in you.

15 Thankes therfore *be* vnto God for his vnspeakeable gift.

CHAP.

## CHAP. X.

*2 Hee sheweth with what confidence, 4 with what weapons, 6 and with what reuenge he is armed against the cauillations of the wicked, 7 and that, when hee is present, his deedes haue no lesse power, 11 then his wordes haue force, when he is absent.*

NOwe I Paul my selfe beseech you by the meekenes, and gentleneſſe of Chriſt, which when I am present among you, *am* base, but am bolde toward you being absent:

2 And *this* I require you, that I neede not to be bold when I am present, with that same confidence, wherewith I thinke to be bold against some, which esteeme vs as though we walked according to the flesh.

3 Neuertheleſſe, though we walke in the flesh, yet we doe not warre after the flesh,

4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnall, but mightie through God, to caſt downe holdes)

5 Casting downe the imaginations, and euery high thing that is exalted against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captiuitie euery thought to the obedience of Christ,

6 And hauing readie the vengeance against all diſobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Looke ye on thinges after the appearance? If any man truſt in himselfe that hee is Chriſtes, let him conſider this againe of himself, that as he *is* Chriſts, euen so *are* we Chriſtes.

8 For though I ſhould boaſt ſomewhat more of our authoritie, which the Lord hath giuen vs for edification, and not for your deſtruction, I ſhould haue no ſhame.

9 *This I ſay* that I may not ſeeme as *it were* to feare you with letters.

10 For the letters, ſaith he, are ſore and ſtrong, but his bodily preſence is weake, and his ſpeach is of no value.

11 Let ſuch one thinke this, that ſuch as we are in worde by letters, when wee are abſent, ſuch *will we be* alſo in deede, when we are preſent.

12 For we dare not make our ſelues of the number, or to compare our ſelues to them, which prayſe themſelues: but they vnderſtand not that they meaſure themſelues with themſelues, and compare themſelues with themſelues.

13 But we will not reioyce of things, which are not within *our* meaſure, * but according to the meaſure of the line, whereof God hath diſtributed vnto vs a meaſure to attaine euen vnto you. *Epheſ.* 4.7.

14 For

14 For wee ſtretch not our ſelues beyonde *our* meaſure, as though we had not attained vnto you: for euen to you alſo haue we come *in preaching* the Goſpel of Chriſt,

15 Not boaſting of things which are without *our* meaſure: *that is*, of other mens labours: and we hope, when your faith ſhall increaſe, to be magnified by you according to our line abundantly,

16 And to preach the Goſpell in thoſe *regions* which *are* beyond you: not to reioyce in another mans line, *that is*, in the things that are prepared already.

17 * But let him that reioyceth, reioyce in the Lord. *Iere.9.24.*

18 For hee that praiſeth himſelfe, is not allowed, but hee whome the Lord praiſeth. *1.Cor.1.31.*

## CHAP. XI.

*2 He teſtifieth, that for the great loues ſake he beareth to the Corinthians, hee is compelled 5 to vtter his owne praiſes: 9 And that hee beſtowed his labour on them without any reward, 13 that the falſe apoſtles ſhoulde not ſurpaſſe him in any thing; 22 whom he farre excelled in thoſe things which are praiſe worthy in deede.*

WOuld to God, yee coulde ſuffer a litle my fooliſhnes, and in deede, ye ſuffer me.

2 For I am ielous ouer you, with godly ielouſie: for I haue prepared you for one husbande, to preſent you *as* a pure virgine to Chriſt:

3 But I feare leaſt as the * ſerpent begniled Eue through his ſubtilelie, ſo your mindes ſhoulde be corrupt from the ſimplicitie that is in Chriſt. *Gen.3.4.*

4 For if he that commeth, preacheth another Ieſus whome we haue not preached: or if ye receiue another ſpirit whom ye haue not receiued: either another Goſpel which yee haue not receiued, ye might well haue ſuffered *him*.

5 Verely I ſuppoſe that I was not inferiour to the very chiefe Apoſtles.

6 And though *I be* rude in ſpeaking, yet *I am* not *ſo* in knowledge, but among you we haue bene made manifeſt to the vtmoſt, in all things.

7 Haue I committed an offence, becauſe I abaſed my ſelfe, that yee might be exalted, and becauſe I preached to you the Goſpel of God freely?

8 I robbed other Churches, and tooke wages *of them* to doe you ſeruice.

Chap.12.13. 9 And when I was present with you, and had neede, * I was not slouthfull to the hindetance of any man: for that which was lacking vnto me, the brethren which came from Macedonia, supplied, and in all things I kept and will keepe my selfe, that I should not be grieuous to you.

10 The trueth of Christ is in me, that this reioycing shall not be shut vp against me in the regions of Achaia:

11 Wherefore because I loue you not? God knoweth.

12 But what I doe, that will I doe, that I may cut away occasion from them which desire occasion, that they might be found like vnto vs in that wherein they reioyce.

13 For such false apostles are deceitfull workers, and transforme themselues into the Apostles of Christ.

14 And no marueile: for Satan himselfe is transformed into an Angell of light.

15 Therefore it is no great thing, though his ministers transforme themselues, as though *they were* the ministers of righteousnes, whose end shalbe according to their workes.

16 I say againe, let no man thinke, that I am fooliſh, or els take me euen as a foole, that I also may boast my selfe a litle.

17 That I speake, I speake it not after the Lorde: but as *it were* fooliſhly, in this *my* great boasting.

18 Seeing that many reioyce after the flesh, I will reioyce also.

19 For ye suffer fooles gladly, because that yee are wise.

20 For ye suffer, euen if a man bring you into bondage, if a man deuoure *you*, if a man take *your goods*, if a man exalt himselfe, if a man smite you on the face.

21 I speake as concerning the reproche: as though that we had bene weake: but wherein any man is bold (I speake fooliſhly) I am bolde also.

Phil.3.5. 22 They are Hebrewes, * so am I: they are Israelites, so am I: they are the seede of Abraham, so am I:

23 They are the ministers of Christ (I speake as a foole) I am more: in labours more aboundant: in stripes aboue measure: in prison more plenteously: in death oft.

24 Of ỹ Iewes fiue times receiued I fourty *stripes* sane one.

Act.16.23. 25 I was thrise *beaten with rodded: I was * once stoned:

Act.14.19. I suffered thrise *shipwracke, night and day haue I bene in the

Act.27.14. deepe sea.

26 In iourneying ỹ *was* often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils of mine owne nation, in perils among the Gentiles,

Gentiles, in perils in the citie, in perils in wildernes, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren,

27 In wearines and painfulnes, in watching often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakednes.

28 Beside the things which are outwarde, I am combred daily, *and haue* the care of all the Churches.

29 Who is weake, and I am not weake? who is offended, and I burne not?

30 If I must needs reioyce, I wil reioyce of mine infirmities.

31 The God, euen the Father of our Lorde Iesus Christ, which is blessed for euermore, knoweth that I lie not.

32 In* Damascus the gouernour of the people vnder King Aretas, laide watch in the citie of the Damascenes, and would haue caught me. *Act. 9, 24.

33 But at a windowe was I let downe in a basket through the wall, and escaped his hands.

## CHAP. XII.

1 *He doth euen vnwillingly make rehearsall* 3 *of the heauenly visions,* 4 *that were reuealed vnto him:* 6 *for which though he might in deede glorie, yet he will not,* 10 *being priuie of his owne infirmities:* 11 *but they driue him to this kinde of follie,* 20 *in that they giue eare to certaine vaineglorious persons, who drawe them from Christ.*

IT is not expedient for me no doubt to reioyce; for I will come to visions and reuelations of the Lord.

2 I knowe a man in Christ aboue fourteene yeeres agone, (whether *he were* in the body, I can not tell, or out of the body, I can not tell: God knoweth) which was taken vp into the thirde heauen.

3 And I knowe such a man (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth)

4 Howe that hee was taken vp into paradise, and heard woordes which cannot be spoken, which are not possible for man to vtter.

5 Of such a man will I reioyce: of my selfe will I not reioyce, except it be of mine infirmities.

6 For though I would reioyce, I should not be a foole: for I wil say the trueth, but I refraine, least any man should thinke of me aboue that he seeth in me, or that he heareth of me.

7 And lest I should be exalted out of measure through the abundance of reuelatiõs, there was giuen vnto me a pricke in the flesh, the messenger of Satã to buffet me, because I should

not be exalted out of measure.

8 For this thing I besought the Lorde thrise, that it might depart from me.

9 And he saide vnto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my power is made perfect through weakenesse. Very gladly therefore will I reioyce rather in mine infirmities, that the power of Christ may dwell in me.

10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproches, in necessities, in persecutions, in anguish for Christes sake: for when I am weake, then am I strong.

11 I was a foole to boast my selfe: ye haue compelled me: for I ought to haue beene commended of you: for in nothing was I inferiour vnto the very chiefe Apostles, though I bee nothing.

12 The signes of an Apostle were wrought among you with all patience, with signes, and wondets, and great workes.

13 For what is it, wherein yee were inferiours vnto other churches, * except that I haue not beene slouthfull to your hinderance? forgiue me this wrong. *Chap. 11. 9.*

14 Beholde, the third time I am ready to come vnto you, and yet will I not be slouthfull to your hinderance: for I seeke not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay vp for the fathers, but the fathers for the children.

15 And I wil most gladly bestow, and will be bestowed for your soules: though the more I loue you, the lesse I am loued.

16 But be it that I charged you not: yet forasmuch as I was craftie, I tooke you with guile.

17 Did I pill you by any of them whome I sent vnto you?

18 I haue desired Titus, and with him I haue sent a brother: did Titus pill you of any thing? walked we not in the selfe same spirit? *walked we* not in the same steppes?

19 Againe, thinke yee that we excuse our selues vnto you? we speake before God in Christ. But *we doe* all things, dearely beloued, for your edifying.

20 For I feare least when I come, I shall not finde you such as I would: and that I shalbe found vnto you such as ye would not, and lest *there be* strife, enuying, wrath, contentions, backbitings, whisperings, swellings, *and* discord.

21 *I feare* least when I come againe, my God abase me among you, and I shall bewaile many of them which haue sinned already, and haue not repented of the vncleanesse, and fornication, and wantonnes, which they haue committed.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XIII.

1 *Comming the third time,* 2 *he denounceth the ſharper vengeance towards them,* 5 *who haue a perfect trial of the power of Chriſt in his Apoſtleſhip:* 10 *At length he praieth for their repentance,* 11 *and wiſheth them proſperitie.*

LOe this *is* the thirde time that I come vnto you. *In the mouth of two or three witneſſes ſhall euery word ſtand. *Deut.*19.15. *mat.*18.16.

2 I tolde you before, and tell you before: as though I had beene preſent the ſecond time, ſo write I nowe being abſent to them which heretofore haue ſinned, and to all others, that if I come againe, I will not ſpare, *iohn* 8.17. *hebr.*10.28.

3 Seeing that yee ſeeke experience of Chriſt, that ſpeaketh in mee, which towarde you is not weake, but is mightie in you.

4 For though hee was crucified concerning *his* infirmitie, yet lineth he through the power of God. And we no doubt are weake in him, but we ſhall line with him, through the power of God toward you.

5 *Proone your ſelues whether yee are in the faith: examine your ſelues: know yee not your owne ſelues, howe that Ieſus Chriſt is in you, except ye be reprobates? *1.Cor.*11.28.

6 But I truſt that ye ſhal know that we are not reprobates.

7 Now I pray vnto God that yee doe none euill, not that we ſhoulde ſeeme approoued, but that yee ſhoulde doe that which is honeſt: though we be as reprobates.

8 For we can not *doe* any thing againſt the trueth, but for the trueth.

9 For we are glad when we are weake, and that yee are ſtrong: this alſo we wiſh for, *euen* your perfection.

10 Therefore write I theſe things being abſent, leaſt when I am preſent, I ſhould vſe ſharpeneſſe, according to the power which the Lorde hath giuen me, to edification, and not to deſtruction.

11 Finally brethren, fare yee well: be perfect: be of good comfort: be of one minde: liue in peace, and the God of loue and peace ſhalbe with you.

12 Greete one another with an *holy kiſſe. All the Saintes ſalute you. *1.Cor.*16.20.

13 The grace of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, & the loue of God, and the communion of the holy Ghoſt be with you al, Amen.

¶ The ſeconde *Epiſtle* to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, a citie in Macedonia, *and ſent* by Titus and Lucas.

# THE EPISTLE OF THE APOSTLE PAVL TO the Galatians.

## CHAP. I.

1 *Straight after the ſalutation,* 6 *he reprehendeth the Galatians for reuolting* 9 *from his Goſpel,* 15 *which he receiued from God,* 17 *before he had communicated with any of the Apoſtles.*

PAVL an Apoſtle (not of men, neither by man, * but by Ieſus Chriſt, and God the Father which hath raiſed him from the dead)

*Titus* 1.3.

2 And all the brethren which are with me, vnto the Churches of Galatia:

3 Grace *be* vnto you, and peace from God the Father, and *from* our Lorde Ieſus Chriſt,

4 Which gaue himſelfe for our ſinnes, that hee might deliuer vs * from this preſent euill worlde, according to the will of God euen our Father,

*Luke* 1.74.

5 To whom *be* glory for euer and euer, Amen.

6 I marueile that yee are ſo ſoone remooued away vnto another Goſpel, from him that had called you in the grace of Chriſt,

7 Which is not another *Goſpel*, ſaue that there bee ſome which trouble you, and intēd to peruert the Goſpel of Chriſt.

8 But though that we, or an Angell from heauen preache vnto you otherwiſe, then that which we haue preached vnto you, let him be accurſed.

9 As we ſaide before, ſo ſay I nowe againe, If any man preach vnto you otherwiſe, then that yee haue receiued, let him be accurſed.

10 For nowe preach I mans *doctrine*, or Gods? or goe I about to pleaſe men? for if I ſhould yet pleaſe men, I were not the ſeruant of Chriſt.

1.*Cor.*15.1.

11 * Nowe I certifie you, brethren, that the Goſpel which was preached of me, was not after man.

12 For neither receiued I it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the reuelation of Ieſus Chriſt.

*Actes* 9.1.

13 For yee haue heard of my conuerſation in time paſt, in the Iewiſh religion, howe that * I perſecuted the Church of God extremely, and waſted it,

14 And profited in the Iewiſh religion aboue many of my

companions of mine owne nation, and was much more zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

15 But when it pleased God (which had separated me from my mothers wombe, and called *me* by his grace)

16 To reueile his sonne in mee, that I should preache him *among the Gentiles, immediately I communicated not with flesh and blood: *Ephes. 3. 8.

17 Neither came I againe to Hierusalem to them which were Apostles before mee, but I went into Arabia, and turned againe into Damascus.

18 Then after three yeres I came againe to Hierusalem to visite Peter, and abode with him fifteene daies.

19 And none other of the Apostles sawe I, saue Iames the Lords brother.

20 Now the things which I write vnto you, behold, *I* witnes before God, that I lie not.

21 After that, I went into the coastes of Syria and Cilicia:

22 For I was vnknowē by face vnto the churches of Iudea, which were in Christ.

But they had heard onely *some say*, Hee which persecuted vs in time past, now preacheth the faith which before hee destroied.

23 And they glorified God for me.

## CHAP. II.

1 *That the Apostles did nothing disagree from his Gospel,* 3 *hee declareth by the example of Titus being vncircumcised,* 11 *and also by his auouching the same against Peters dissimulation:* 17 *And so he passeth to the handling of our free iustification by Christ, &c.*

THen fourteene yeeres after, I went vp againe to Hierusalem with Barnabas, and tooke with me Titus also.

2 And I went vp by reuelation, and declared vnto them that Gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but particularly to them that were the chief, least by any meanes I should runne, or had runne in vaine:

3 But neither yet Titus which was with mee, though hee were a Grecian, was compelled to be circumcised,

4 To wit, for the false brethren which were craftily sent in, & crept in priuily to spie out our libertie, which we haue in Christ Iesus, that they might bring vs into bondage.

5 To whom we gaue not place by subiection for an houre, that the trueth of the Gospel might continue with you.

6 But by them which seemed to be great, *I was not taught* (whatsoeuer they were in time passed, I am nothing the better: *God accepteth no mans person) for they ẏ are the chiefe, did adde nothing to me *aboue that I had.*

*Deut.10.17. 2.chro.19.7. iob 34.19. act.10.34. rom.2.11. ephe.6 9. col.3.25. 1.pet.1.17.*

7 But contrariwise, when they sawe that the Gospel ouer the vncircumcision was committed vnto mee, as *the Gospel* ouer the Circumcision, was vnto Peter:

8 (For he that was mightie by Peter in the Apostleshippe ouer the circumcision, was also mightie by mee towarde the Gentiles)

9 And when Iames, and Cephas, and Iohn, knewe of the grace that was giuen vnto me, which are coûted to be pillars, they gaue to mee and to Barnabas the right handes of felowshippe, that we *shoulde preach* vnto the Gentiles, and they vnto the Circumcision,

10 *Warning* onely that we shoulde remember the poore: which thing also I was diligent to doe.

11 ¶ And when Peter was come to Antiochia, I withstoode him to his face: for he was to be condemned.

12 For before ẏ certaine came from Iames, he ate with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrewe & separated himselfe, fearing them which were of the Circumcision.

13 And the other Iewes plaied the hypocrites likewise with him, insomuch that Barnabas was led away with them by that their hypocrisie.

14 But when I sawe, that they went not the right way to the trueth of the Gospel, I saide vnto Peter before all men, If thou being a Iew, liuest as the Gentiles, & not like the Iewes, why constrainest thou the Gentiles to doe like the Iewes?

15 We *which are* Iewes by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Know that a man is not iustified by the woorkes of the Lawe, but by the faith of Iesus Christ, euen we *I say*, haue beleeued in Iesus Christ, that we might be iustified by the faith of Christ, and not by the workes of the Lawe, because that by the workes of the Lawe no flesh shall be iustified.

*Rom.3.19.*

17 *If then while we seeke to be made righteous by Christ, we our selues are found sinners, is Christ therefore the minister of sinne? God forbid.

18 For if I builde againe the things that I haue destroied, I make my selfe a trespasser.

19 For I through the Law am dead to the Lawe, ẏ I might

liue

liue vnto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ, but I liue, yet not I any more, but Christ liueth in me: and in that that I nowe liue in the flesh, I liue by the faith in the Sonne of God, who hath loued me, and giuen himselfe for me.

21 I doe not abrogate the grace of God: for if righteousnesse be by the Lawe, then Christ died without a cause.

## CHAP. III.

*1 He rebuketh them, for suffering themselues to be drawen from the grace of free iustification in Christ, most liuely set out vnto them. 6 He bringeth in Abrahams example, 10 declaring the effect, 21 and cause of the giuing of the Lawe.*

O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the trueth, to whom Iesus Christ before was described in your sight, *and* among you crucified?

2 This onely woulde I learne of you, Receiued ye the Spirit by the workes of the Lawe, or by the hearing of faith *preached*?

3 Are ye so foolish, that after ye haue begun in the Spirit, ye would nowe be made perfect by the flesh?

4 Haue ye suffered so many things in vaine? if so be it be euen in vaine.

5 He therefore that ministreth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, *doeth he it* through the workes of the Lawe, or by the hearing of faith *preached*?

6 *Yea rather* as Abraham beleeued God, and it was * imputed to him for righteousnesse. *Gen.15.6. rom.4.3.*

7 Knowe ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. *iam.2.23.*

8 For the Scripture foreseeing, that God woulde iustifie the Gentiles through faith, preached before the Gospel vnto Abraham, *saying*, * In thee shall all the Gentiles be blessed. *Gen.12.3.*

9 So then they which be of faith, are blessed with faithfull Abraham. *actes 3.25.*

10 For as many as are of the workes of the Lawe, are vnder the curse: for it is written, * Cursed is euery man that continueth not in all things, which are written in the booke of the Lawe, to doe them. *Deu.27.26.*

11 And that no man is iustified by the Lawe in the sight of God, it is euident: * for the iust shall liue by faith. *Habak.2.4. rom.1.17.*

12 And the Lawe is not of faith: but * the man that shall doe those things, shall liue in them. *helbr.10.38. Leuit.18.5.*

13 Christ

13 Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the Lawe,
*Deut.21.23.* made a curse for vs(for it is written,*Cursed is euery one that
hangeth on tree)
14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Christ Iesus, that we might receiue the promise
of the Spirit through faith
*Hebr.9.17.* 15 Brethren, I speake as men doe: * Though it be but a
mans couenant,when it is confirmed,*yet* no man doeth abrogate it,or addeth any thing thereto.
16 Nowe to Abraham and his seede were the promises made.He saith not,And to ỹ seedes,as *speaking* of many: but,
And to thy seede, as of one,which is Christ.
17 And this I say,that the couenant that was confirmed afore of God in respect of Christ, the Lawe which was foure
hundreth & thirtie yeeres after, cannot disanull,that it should
make the promise of none effect.
18 For if the inheritance *be* of the Lawe, *it is* no more by
ỹ promise, but God gaue it freely vnto Abraham by promise.
19 Wherefore then *serueth* the Lawe? It was added because of the transgressions,till the seede came vnto the which
the promise was made: and it was ordeined by Angels,in the
hand of a Mediatour.
20 Nowe a Mediatour is not *a Mediatour* of one: but God
is one.
21 *Is* the Law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had bene a Lawe giuen which could haue giuen life, surely righteousnesse should haue bene by the Lawe.
*Rom.3.9.* 22 But the Scripture hath * concluded all vnder sinne,that
the promise by the faith of Iesus Christ shoulde be giuen to
them that beleeue.
23 But before faith came,we were kept vnder the Lawe,*as
vnder* a garison, and shut vp vnto that faith, which should afterward be reueiled.
24 Wherefore the Lawe was our scholemaster *to bring vs*
to Christ,that we might be made righteous by faith.
25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer vnder a
scholemaster.
26 For yee are all the sonnes of God by faith in Christ
Iesus.
27 For all ye that are baptized into Christ, haue put on
Christ.
28 There is neither Iewe nor Grecian: there is neither
bond

bond nor free: there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Iesus.

29 And if *ye be* Christes, then are ye Abrahams seede, and heires by promise.

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 Being deliuered from the bondage of the Lawe, 4 by Christes comming, who is the ende thereof, 9 it is very absurd to slide backe to beggerly ceremonies: 13 He calleth them againe therefore to the puritie of the doctrine of the Gospel, 21 confirming his discourse with a fine allegorie.*

THen I say, that the heire as long as he is a childe, differeth nothing from a seruant, though he be Lord of all,

2 But is vnder tutours and gouernours, vntill the time appointed of the father.

3 Euen so, we when we were children, were in bondage vnder the rudiments of the world.

4 But when the fulnesse of time was come, God sent forth his Sonne made of a woman, *and* made vnder the Lawe,

5 That he might redeeme them which were vnder the Lawe, that we * might receiue the adoption of the sonnes. *Rom.8.15.*

6 And because ye are sonnes, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Sonne into your hearts, which cryeth, Abba, Father.

7 Wherefore, thou art no more a seruant, but a sonne: now if *thou be* a sonne, *thou art* also the heire of GOD through Christ.

8 But euen then, when ye knewe not God, ye did seruice vnto them, which by nature are not gods:

9 But nowe seeing ye knowe God, yea, rather are knowen of God, howe turne ye againe vnto impotent and beggerly rudiments, whereunto *as* from the beginning, ye will be in bondage againe?

10 Ye obserue dayes, and moneths, and times, and yeeres.

11 I am in feare of you, lest I haue bestowed on you labour in vaine.

12 Be ye as I: for I am euen as you: brethren, I beseech you: ye haue not hurt me at all.

13 And ye knowe, howe through infirmitie of the flesh I preached the Gospel vnto you at the first.

14 And the triall of me which was in my flesh, ye despised not, neither abhorred: but ye receiued me as an Angel of God, *yea*, as Christ IESVS.

15 What was then your felicitie? for I beare you recorde, that

that if it had bene possible, ye would haue plucked out your owne eyes, and haue giuen them vnto me.

16 Am I therefore become your enemie, because I tell you the trueth?

17 They are ielous ouer you amisse: yea, they would exclude you, that ye should altogether loue them.

18 But it is a good thing to loue earnestly alwayes in a good thing, and not onely when I am present with you,

19 My litle children, of whom I trauaile in birth againe, vntill Christ be formed in you.

20 And I would I were with you now, that I might change my voyce: for I am in doute of you.

21 Tell me, ye that will be vnder the Lawe, doe ye not heare the Lawe?

*Gen.16.15.* *Gen.21.1.* 22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sonnes, * one by a seruant, and * one by a free woman.

23 But he which was of the seruant, was borne after the flesh: & he which was of ỹ free woman, *was borne* by promes.

24 By the which things another thing is meant: for these *mothers* are the two Testaments, the one which is Agar of mount Sina, which gendreth vnto bondage.

25 (For Agar *or* Sina is a mountaine in Arabia, and it answereth to Hierusalem which nowe is) and she is in bondage with her children.

26 But Ierusalem, which is aboue, is free: which is the mother of vs all.

*Isa.54.1.* 27 For it is written, *Reioyce thou barren that beareſt no children: breake foorth, and cry, thou that trauaileſt not: for the desolate hath many moe children, then she which hath an husband.

*Rom.8.9.* 28 *Therefore, brethren, we are after the maner of Isaac, children of the promes.

29 But as then he that was borne after the flesh, persecuted him that *was borne* after the spirit, euen so *it is* nowe.

*Gen.21.10.* 30 But what saith the Scripture? *Put out the seruant and her sonne: for the sonne of the seruant shall not be heire with the sonne of the free woman.

31 Then brethren, we are not children of the seruant, but of the free woman.

## CHAP. V.

1 *Hauing declared that we came of the free woman, he sheweth the price of that freedome, 13 and howe we shoulde vse the*

*the same, 16 that wee may obey the spirit, 19 and resist the flesh.*

STand fast therefore in the libertie wherewith Christ hath made vs free, and be not intangled againe with the yoke of bondage.

2 *Beholde, I Paul say vnto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profite you nothing. *Act.15.1.*

3 For I testifie againe to euery man, which is circumcised, that he is bound to keepe the whole Lawe.

4 Ye are * abolished from Christ: whosoeuer are iustified by the Lawe, ye are fallen from grace. *1.Cor.1.17.*

5 For we through the Spirit waite for the hope of righteousnesse through faith.

6 For in Iesus Christ neither circumcision auaileth any thing, neither vncircumcision, but faith which worketh by loue.

7 Ye did runne well: who did let you, that ye did not obey the trueth?

8 *It is* not the perswasion of him that calleth you.

9 *A litle leauen doeth leauen the whole lumpe. *1.Cor.5.6.*

10 I haue trust in you through the Lord, that ye wilbe none otherwise minded: but he that troubleth you, shall beare *his* condemnation, whosoeuer he be.

11 And brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why doe I yet suffer persecution? Then is the slander of the crosse abolished.

12 Would to God they were euen cut off, which doe disquiet you.

13 For brethren, ye haue bene called vnto libertie: onely vse not *your* libertie as an occasion vnto the flesh, but by loue serue one another.

14 For all the Lawe is fulfilled in one word, which is this, *Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. *Leui.19.18. mat.22.39. mar.12.31.*

15 If ye bite and deuoure one another, take heede lest ye be consumed one of another.

16 Then I say, * Walke in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfill the lustes of the flesh. *rom.13.9. iames 2.8.*

17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary one to the other, so that ye cannot doe the same things that ye would. *Rom.13.14. 1.pet.2.11.*

18 And if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not vnder ỹ Law.

19 Moreouer the workes of the flesh are manifest, which are

worlde, that we shoulde be holy, and without blame before him in loue:

5 Who hath predestinate vs, to be adopted through Iesus Christ in himselfe, according to the good pleasure of his will,

6 To the prayse of the glorie of his grace, wherewith he hath made vs freely accepted in *his* beloued.

7 By whom we haue redemption through his blood, *euen* the forgiuenesse of sinnes, according to his rich grace:

8 Whereby he hath bene abundant toward vs in all wisdome and vnderstanding.

9 And hath opened vnto vs the mysterie of his will according to his good pleasure, which he had purposed in him,

10 That in the dispensation of the fulnesse of the times, he might gather together in one all things, both which are in heauen, and which are in earth, *euen* in Christ:

11 In whom also we are chosen when we were predestinate according to the purpose of him which worketh all things after the counsell of his owne will,

12 That we, which first trusted in Christ, shoulde be vnto the praise of his glory:

13 In whom also ye *haue trusted*, after that ye heard the worde of trueth, *euen* the Gospel of your saluation, wherein also after that ye beleeued, ye were sealed with the holy Spirit of promies,

14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, for the redemption of that libertie purchased vnto the praise of his glorie.

15 Therefore also after that I heard of the faith, which ye haue in the Lord Iesus, and loue toward all the Saints,

16 I cease not to giue thankes for you, making mention of you in my prayers,

17 That the God of our Lorde Iesus Christ, that father of glorie, might giue vnto you the Spirit of wisdome, and reuelation through the acknowledging of him,

18 That the eyes of your vnderstanding may be lightened, that ye may knowe what the hope is of his calling, and what the riches of his glorious inheritance *is* in the Saintes,

19 And what is the exceeding greatnesse of his power toward vs, which beleeue, * according to the working of his mightie power,

*Chap.3.7. coloss.2.12.*

20 Which he wrought in Christ, when he raysed him from the dead, and set him at his right hand in the heauenly *places*,

21 Farre

21 Farre aboue all principalitie, and power, and might, and domination, & euery Name, that is named, not in this world onely, but also in that that is to come,

22 And hath made all things subiect vnder his feete, and hath giuen him ouer all things *to be* the head to the Church,

23 Which is his body, *euen* the fulnes of him that filleth all in all things.

## CHAP. II.

1 *The better to set out the grace of Christ, he vseth a comparison, calling them to minde,* 5 *that they were altogether castawayes and aliants:* 8 *That they are saued by grace,* 15 *and brought neere,* 16 *by reconciliation through Christ,* 17 *published by the Gospel.*

AND * you *hath he quickened*, that were dead in trespasses *Col.2.13.*
and sinnes,

2 Wherein in time past ye walked, according to ỹ course of this world, *and* after the prince that ruleth in the aire, *euen* the spirit, that now worketh in the children of disobedience,

3 Among whome we also had our conuersation in time past, in the lustes of our flesh, in fulfilling the wil of the flesh, and of the minde, and were by nature the children of wrath, as well as others,

4 But God which is rich in mercie, through his great loue wherewith he loued vs,

5 Euen when we were dead by sinnes, hath quickned vs together in Christ, *by whose* grace ye are saued,

6 And hath raised vs vp together, and made vs sit together in the heauenly *places* in Christ Iesus,

7 That he might shewe in the ages to come the exceeding riches of his grace, through his kindnes towards vs in Christ Iesus.

8 For by grace are ye saued through faith, and that not of your selues, *it is* the gift of God,

9 Not of workes, least any man should boast himselfe.

10 For we are his workemanship created in Christ Iesus vnto good workes, which God hath ordeined, that we should walke in them.

11 Wherefore remember, that ye being in time past Gentiles in the flesh, *and* called vncircumcision of them, which are called circumcision in the flesh, made with hands,

12 That ye were, *I say*, at that time without Christ, and were aliants from the common wealth of Israel, and were

Rom.9.4. *strangers from the couenants of promise, and had no hope, and *were* without God in the world.

13 But now in Christ Iesus, yee which once were farre off, are made neere by the blood of Christ.

14 For he is our peace, which hath made of both one, and hath broken the stop of the partition wall,

Col.2.14. 15 * In abrogating through his flesh the hatred, *that is*, the Lawe of commandements *which standeth* in ordinances, for to make of twaine one newe man in himselfe, *so* making peace,

16 And that he might reconcile both vnto God in one body by *his* crosse, and slay hatred thereby,

17 And came, & preached peace to you which were afarre off, and to them that were neere.

18 For through him wee both haue an entrance vnto the Father by one Spirit.

19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and forreiners: but citizens with the Saints, and of the housholde of God,

20 And are built vpon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Iesus Christ himselfe being the chiefe corner stone,

21 In whome all the building coupled together, groweth vnto an holy Temple in the Lord,

22 In whom ye also are built together, to be the habitation of God by the Spirit.

## CHAP. III.

*1 He declareth that therefore hee suffered many things of the Iewes, 3 because he preached the mysterie touching the saluation of the Gentiles, 8 at Gods commandement. 13 After, he desireth the Ephesians not to faint for his afflictions: 14 And for this cause hee prayeth vnto God, 18 that they may vnderstand the great loue of Christ.*

FOr this cause, I Paul *am* the prisoner of Iesus Christ for you Gentiles,

2 If yee haue heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is giuen me to youwarde,

3 *That is*, that *God* by reuelation hath shewed this mysterie vnto me (as I wrote aboue in fewe wordes,

4 Whereby when ye reade, ye may knowe mine vnderstanding in the mysterie of Christ)

5 Which in other ages was not opened vnto the sonnes of men, as it *is* now reueiled vnto his holy Apostles and Prophets by the Spirit,

6 That the Gentiles should be inheriters also, and of the

the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the Gospel,

7 Whereof I am made a minister by the gift of the grace of God giuen vnto me through the effectuall working of his power.

8 Euen vnto me the least of all Saints is this grace giuen, that I should preach among the Gentiles the vnsearchable riches of Christ,

9 And to make cleare vnto all men what the fellowship of the mysterie is, which from the beginning of the worlde hath bene hid in God, who hath created all things by Iesus Christ,

10 To the intent, that now vnto principalities and powers in heauenly *places*, might be knowen by the Church the manifolde wisdome of God,

11 According to the eternall purpose, which he wrought in Christ Iesus our Lord:

12 By whome we haue boldnes and entrance with confidence by faith in him.

13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for your sakes, which is your glory.

14 For this cause I bowe my knees vnto the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ,

15 (Of whome is named the whole familie in heauen and in earth)

16 That he might graunt you according to the riches of his glory, that ye may be strengthened by his Spirit in the inner man,

17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith:

18 That ye, being rooted and grounded in loue, may be able to comprehend with all Saints, what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height:

19 And to know the loue of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye may be filled with all fulnesse of God.

20 Vnto him therefore that is able to doe exceeding abundantly aboue all that we aske or thinke, according to the power that worketh in vs,

21 *Be* prayse in the Church by Christ Iesus, throughout all generations for euer, Amen.

## CHAP. IIII.

*These three last chapters conteine precepts of maners. 1 He exhorteth them to mutuall loue. 7 Sundry giftes are therefore bestowed of God, 16 that the Church may be built vp, 18 He*

*calleth them from the vanitie of the infidels,* 25 *from lying,* 29 *and from filthie talke.*

I Therefore, being prisoner in the Lorde, pray you that yee walke worthy of the vocation whereunto ye are called,

2 With all humblenes of minde, and meekenes, with long suffering, supporting one another through loue,

3 Endeuouring to keepe the vnitie of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

4 There *is* one body, and one Spirit, euen as ye are called in one hope of your vocation.

5 *There is* one Lord, one Faith, one Baptisme,

6 One God & Father of all, which is aboue all, & through all, and in you all.

7 But vnto euery one of vs is giuen grace, according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

8 Wherefore he saith, When he ascended vp on high, he led captiuitie captiue, and gaue giftes vnto men.

9 (Now, in that he ascended, what is it but that he had also descended first into the lowest partes of the earth?

10 He that descended, is euen the same that ascended, farre aboue all heauens, that he might fill all things)

11 He therefore gaue some *to be* Apostles, and some Prophets, and some Euangelists, & some Pastours, and Teachers,

12 For the repairing of the Saints, for the worke of the ministerie, *and* for the edification of the body of Christ,

13 Till we all meete together (in the vnitie of faith & that acknowledging of the Sonne of God) vnto a perfite man, *and* vnto the measure of the age of the fulnes of Christ,

14 That we henceforth be no more children, wauering and caried about with euery winde of doctrine, by the deceite of men, and with craftines, whereby they lay in waite to deceiue.

15 But let vs followe the trueth in loue, and in all things growe vp into him, which is the head, *that is*, Christ.

16 By whom all the body being coupled and knit together by euery ioynt, for the furniture *thereof* (according to the effectuall power, *which is* in the measure of euery part) receiueth increase of the body, vnto the edifying of it selfe in loue.

17 This I say therefore and testifie in the Lord, that yee henceforth walke not as * other Gentiles walke, in vanitie of their minde, Rom. 1. 21.

18 Hauing their vnderstanding darkened, and being strangers

gers from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the hardnesse of their heart:

19 Which being past feeling, haue giuen themselues vnto wantonnes, to worke all vncleannes, *euen* with greedines.

20 But ye haue not so learned Christ,

21 If so be yee haue heard him, and haue bene taught by him, as the trueth is in Iesus,

22 * *That is*, that ye cast off, concerning the conuersation in time past, that olde man which is corrupt through the deceiueable lustes, *Col.3.8.*

23 And be renewed in the spirit of your minde,

24 And put on the newe man, which after God is created vnto righteousnesse, and true holinesse.

25 Wherefore cast off lying, and speake euery man trueth vnto his neighbour: for we are members one of another.

26 Be angry, but sinne not: let not the sunne goe downe vpon your wrath,

27 Neither giue place to the deuill.

28 Let him that stole, steale no more: but let him rather labour, and worke with his hands the thing which is good, that he may haue to giue vnto him that needeth.

29 Let no corrupt communication proceede out of your mouthes: but that which is good, to the vse of edifying, that it may minister grace vnto the hearers.

30 And grieue not the holy Spirit of God, by whome yee are sealed vnto the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitternes, and anger, and wrath, crying, and euill speaking be put away from you, with all maliciousnes.

32 Be ye courteous one to another, & tender hearted, freely forgiuing one another, euen as God for Christs sake freely forgaue you.

## CHAP. V.

*3 Least, in those vices which he reprehended, they should set light by his admonitions, 5 hee terrifieth them by denouncing seuere iudgement, 8 and stirreth them forward: 15 then he descendeth from generall lessons of maners, 21 to the particular dueties of wiues 25 and husbands.*

BE ye therefore followers of God as deare children, *Iohn 13.34.*

2 * And walke in loue, euen as Christ hath loued vs, *and* and hath giuen himselfe for vs, *to be* an offering and a sacrifice of a sweete smelling sauour to God. *15.12. 1.Iohn 3.23. Chap.4.29.*

3 * But fornication, & all vncleannes, or couetousnes, let *Colos.3.5.*

 *1.Thes.2.17.*

it not be once named among you, as it becommeth Saints.

4 Neither filthines, neither fooliſh talking, neither ieſting, which are things not comely, but rather giuing of thankes.

5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, neither vncleane perſon, nor couetous perſon, which is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdome of Chriſt, and of God.

*Mat.24.4. mar 3.5. luk.21.8.* 6 *Let no man deceiue you with vaine wordes: for, for ſuch things commeth the wrath of God vpon the children of diſobedience.

*2.theſſ.2.3.* 7 Be not therefore companions with them.

8 For ye were once darkneſſe, but are nowe light in the Lord: walke as children of light,

9 (For the fruite of the Spirit *is* in all goodneſſe, and righteouſnes, and trueth)

10 Approuing that which is pleaſing to the Lord.

11 And haue no fellowſhip with the vnfruitfull workes of darkenes, but euen reproue them rather.

12 For it is ſhame euen to ſpeake of the things, which are done of them in ſecret.

13 But all things when they are reproued of the light, are manifeſt: for it is light that maketh all things manifeſt.

14 Wherefore he ſayth, Awake thou that ſleepeſt, & ſtand vp from the dead, and Chriſt ſhall giue thee light.

15 Take heede therefore that ye walke circumſpectly, not

*Col.4.5.* as fooles, but as *wiſe,

16 Redeeming the ſeaſon: for the dayes are euill.

*Rom.12.2.* 17 *Wherefore, be ye not vnwiſe, but vnderſtand what

*1.theſſ.4.3.* the will of the Lord is.

18 And be not drunken with wine, wherein is exceſſe: but be fulfilled with the Spirit,

19 Speaking vnto your ſelues in Pſalmes, and hymnes, and ſpirituall ſongs, ſinging, and making melodie to the Lorde in your hearts,

20 Giuing thankes alwayes for all things vnto God, euen the Father, in the Name of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt,

21 Submitting your ſelues one to another in the feare of God.

*Col.3.18. tit.2.5. 1.pet.3.1.* 22 ¶ *Wiues, ſubmit your ſelues vnto your husbands, as vnto the Lord.

23 *For the husband is the wiues head, euen as Chriſt is the

*1.cor.11.3.* head of the Church, and the ſame is the ſauiour of *his* body.

24 Therefore, as the Church is in ſubiection to Chriſt, euen

euen so *let* the wiues *be* to their husbands in euery thing.

25 ¶ *Husbands, loue your wiues, euen as Christ loued the Church, and gaue himselfe for it, *Col 3.19.*

26 That he might sanctifie it, and clense it by the washing of water through the worde,

27 That he might make it vnto himselfe a glorious Church, not hauing spot or wrinkle or any such thing: but that it should be holy and without blame.

28 So ought men to loue their wiues, as their owne bodies: he that loueth his wife, loueth himselfe.

29 For no man euer yet hated his owne flesh, but nourisheth and cherisheth it, euen as the Lord *doeth* the Church.

30 For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

31 *For this cause shall a man leaue father and mother, and shall cleaue to his wife, and they twaine shalbe one flesh. *Gen.2.24. mat.19.5.*

32 This is a great secret, but I speake concerning Christ, and concerning the Church. *mar.10.7. 1.cor.6.16.*

33 Therefore euery one of you, *doe ye so:* let euery one loue his wife, euen as himselfe, and *let* the wife *see* that she feare her husband.



*1 He sheweth the dueties of children, 5 seruants, 9 and masters: 10 Then he speaketh of the fierce battell that the faithfull haue, 12 and what weapons we must vse in the same: 21 In the end he commendeth Tychicus.*

CHildren, *obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. *Col.3.20.*

2 *Honour thy father and mother (which is the first commandement with promes) *Exo.20.12. deu.5.16.*

3 That it may be wel with thee, and that thou mayest liue long on earth. *ecclc.3.9. mat.15.4.*

4 And ye, fathers, prouoke not your children to wrath: but bring them vp in instruction and information of the Lord. *mar.7.10*

5 *Seruants, be obedient vnto them that are *your* masters, according to the flesh, with feare and trembling in singlenes of your hearts as vnto Christ, *Col.3.22. titus 2.9. 1.pet.2.18.*

6 Not with seruice to the eye, as men pleasers, but as the seruants of Christ, doing the wil of God from the heart,

7 With good will, seruing the Lord, and not men.

8 And knowe ye that whatsoeuer good thing any man doeth, that same shall he receiue of the Lorde, whether *he be* bond or free.

9 And ye masters, doe the same things vnto them, putting away threatning: and know that euen your master also is in heauen, neither is there * respect of person with him.

*Deu.10.17. 2.chro.19.7. iob 34.19. act.10.34. rom.2.11. gala.2.6. col.3.25. 1.pet.1.17. Chap.2.2.*

10 ¶ Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the assaults of the deuill.

12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against * principalities, against powers, *and* against the worldly gouernours, *the princes* of the darkenes of this world, against spirituall wickednesses, *which are* in the hie places.

13 For this cause take vnto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to resist in the euill day, and hauing finished all things, stand fast.

14 Stand therefore, and your loynes girded about with veritie, and hauing on the brest plate of righteousnes,

15 And your feete shod with the preparation of the Gospel of peace.

16 Aboue all, take the shield of faith, wherewith yee may quench all the fierie dartes of the wicked,

17 And take the helmet of saluation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the worde of God.

18 And pray alwayes with all maner prayer and supplication in the Spirit: and watch thereunto with all perseuerance and supplication for all Saints,

19 And for me, that vtterance may be giuen vnto me, that I may open my mouth boldly to publish the secret of the Gospel,

20 Whereof I am the ambassadour in bonds, that therein I may speake boldly, as I ought to speake.

21 ¶ But that ye may also know mine affaires, *and* what I doe, Tychicus *my* deare brother and faithfull minister in the Lord, shall shewe you of all things,

22 Whome I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose, that ye might know mine affaires, and that he might comfort your hearts.

23 Peace *be* with the brethren, and loue with faith from God the Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

24 Grace *be* with all them which loue our Lorde Iesus Christ, to *their* immortalitie, Amen.

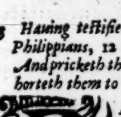
¶ Written from Rome vnto the Ephesians, *and sent* by Tychicus.

THE

# THE EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

## CHAP. I.

*Having testified his godly and tender affection towardes the Philippians, 12 he entreateth of himselfe, and his bondes: 22 And pricketh them forward by his owne example, 27 and exhorteth them to vnitie 28 and patience.*



AVL and Timotheus the seruants of IESVS CHRIST, to all the Saintes in Christ Iesus which are at Philippi, with the Bishops, and Deacons:

2 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 I thanke my God *hauing* you in perfect memorie,

4 (Alwayes in all my prayers for all you, praying with gladnesse)

5 Because of the fellowship which ye haue in the Gospel, from the first day vnto now.

6 And I am perswaded of this same thing, that he that hath begunne *this* good worke in you, will performe it vntill the day of Iesus Christ,

7 As it becommeth mee so to iudge of you all, because I haue you in remembrance, that both in my bandes, and in *my* defence, and confirmation of the Gospell you all were partakers of my grace.

8 For God is my record, how I long after you all from the very heart roote in Iesus Christ,

9 And this I pray, that your loue may abounde, yet more and more in knowledge, and in all iudgement,

10 That ye may allow those things which are best, that ye may be pure, and without offence vnto the day of Christ,

11 Filled with the fruits of righteousnes, which are by Iesus Christ vnto the glorie and praise of God.

12 ¶ I woulde ye vnderstoode, brethren, that the thinges which *haue come* vnto me, are turned rather to the furthering of the Gospel,

13 So that my bandes in Christ are famous throughout all the iudgement hall, and in all other *places*,

14 In somuch ỹ many of the brethren in the Lord are boldned through my bands, & dare more frankly speake the word.

15 Some preach Christ euen through enuie and strife, and some also of good will.

16 The

15 The one part preacheth Christ of contention *and* not purely, suppoſing to adde more affliction to my bandes,

17 But the others of loue, knowing that I am ſet for the defence of the Goſpel.

18 What then? yet Christ is preached all maner wayes, whether *it be* vnder a pretence, or ſyncerely: and I therein ioy: yea, and will ioy.

19 For I know ỹ this ſhall turne to my ſaluation through your prayer, and by the helpe of the Spirit of Ieſus Chriſt,

20 As I feruẽtly looke for, & hope, that in nothing I ſhalbe aſhamed, but that with al cõfidence, as alwayes, ſo now Chriſt ſhalbe magnified in my body, whether *it be* by life, or by death.

21 For Chriſt *is* to me both in life, and in death aduantage.

22 And whether to liue in the fleſh *were* profitable for me, and what to chuſe I know not.

23 For I am diſtreſſed betweene both, deſiring to be looſed and to be with Chriſt, which is beſt of all.

24 Neuertheles, to abide in ỹ fleſh, is more needful for you.

25 And this am I ſure of, that I ſhal abide, and with you all continue, for your furtherance and ioy of *your* faith,

26 That ye may more aboundantly reioyce in Ieſus Chriſt for me, by my comming to you againe.

27 Only let your conuerſation be, as it becõmeth the Goſpel of Chriſt, that whether I come & ſee you, or els be abſent, I may heare of your matters that ye continue in one Spirit, *and* in one minde fighting together through ỹ faith of the Goſpel.

28 And in nothing feare your aduerſaries, which is to them a token of perdition, & to you of ſaluation, and that of God.

29 For vnto you it is giuen for Chriſt, that not onely ye ſhould beleeue in him, but alſo ſuffer for his ſake,

30 Hauing the ſame fight, which ye ſawe in me, and nowe heare *to be* in me.

## CHAP. II.

1 *Hee exhorteth them aboue all things 3 to humilitie, 6 and that by the example of Chriſt. 19 Hee promiſeth to ſende Timotheus ſhortly vnto them, 26 and excuſeth the long tarying of Epaphroditus.*

IF *there bee* therefore any conſolation in Chriſt, if any comfort of loue, if any felowſhip of the Spirit, if any compaſſion and mercie,

2 Fulfill my ioye, that ye be like minded, hauing the ſame loue, being of one accord, and of one iudgement,

3 That

3 That nothing *bee done* through contention, or vaine glorie, but that in meekenesse of minde euery man esteeme other better then himselfe.

4 Looke not euery man on his owne thinges, but euery man also on the things of other men.

5 Let the same minde be in you ỹ was euen in Christ Iesus,

6 Who being in the forme of God, thought it no robberie to be equall with God:

7 But he made himselfe of no reputation, & tooke on him the forme of a seruant, and was made like vnto men, and was found in shape as a man.

8 Hee humbled himselfe, and became obedient vnto the death, euen the death of the Crosse.

9 Wherefore God hath also highly exalted him, and giuen him a Name aboue euery name,

10 That at ỹ name of Iesus should euery knee bow, *both* of things in heauen, & things in earth, & things vnder the earth,

11 And that euery tongue should confesse, that Iesus Christ *is* the Lord, vnto the glorie of God the Father.

12 Wherefore my beloued, as yee haue alwayes obeyed me, not as in my presence onely, but now much more in mine absence, *so* make an ende of your owne saluation with feare and trembling.

13 For it is God which worketh in you, both the will and the deede, *euen* of *his* good pleasure.

14 Do all things without *murmuring and reasonings, 1.Pet.4.9.

15 That ye may be blamelesse, and pure, *and* the sonnes of God without rebuke in the mids of a naughtie and crooked nation, among whom ye shine as *lights in the world, Matt.5.14.

16 Holding foorth the worde of life, that I may reioyce in the day of Christ, that I haue not runne in vaine, neither haue laboured in vaine.

17 Yea, and though I be offered vp vpon the sacrifice, and seruice of your faith, I am glad, and reioyce with you all.

18 For the same cause also be ye glad, & reioyce with me.

19 And I trust in the Lord Iesus, to send *Timotheus shortly vnto you, that I also may be of good comfort, when I know your state. Acts 16.1.

20 For I haue no man like minded, who wil faithfully care for your matters.

21 * For all seeke their owne, *and* not that which is Iesus Christes. 1.Cor.10.24.

22 But

22 But ye know the proofe of him, that as a sonne with the father, he hath serued with me in the Gospel.

23 Him therefore I hope to sende assoone as I know howe it will goe with me,

24 And trust in the Lord, ỹ I also my self shal come shortly.

25 But I supposed it necessarie to sende *my* brother Epaphroditus vnto you, my companion in labour, and sellowe souldier, euen your messenger, and he that ministred vnto mee such things as I wanted.

26 For he longed after all you, and was full of heauinesse, because ye had heard, that he had bene sicke.

27 And no doute he was sicke, very neere vnto death: but God had mercie on him, and not on him only, but on me also, lest I should haue sorow vpon sorow.

28 I sent him therefore the more diligently, that when ye shoulde see him againe, ye might reioyce, and I might bee the lesse sorowfull.

29 Receiue him therefore in the Lord with all gladnesse, and make much of such:

30 Because that for the worke of Christ he was neere vnto death, and regarded not his life, to fulfill that service which was lacking on your part toward me.

## CHAP. III.

*2 He refuteth the vaine boastings of the false apostles, 7 and setteth Christ against them. 10 He setteth out the force & nature of faith, 15 that laying all things aside, they may be partakers of the crosse of Christ, 18 the enemies whereof he noteth out.*

MOreouer, my brethren, reioyce in the Lorde. It grieueth me not to write the same things to you, and for you it is a sure thing.

2 Beware of dogges: beware of euill workers: beware of the concision.

3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, & reioyce in Christ Iesus, & haue no cõfidence in ỹ flesh:

4 Though I might also haue confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof hee might trust in the flesh, much more I,

5 Circumcised the eight day, of the kinred of Israel, of the tribe of Beniamin, *an Ebrewe of the Ebrewes, *by the Lawe a Pharise.

2. Cor. 11. 22. Acts. 23. 6.

6 Concerning zeale, I persecuted the Church: touching the righteousnes which is in the Lawe, I was vnrebukeable.

7 But

7 But the thinges that were vantage vnto mee, the same I counted losse for Christes sake.

8 Yea, doutlesse I thinke all things but losse for the excellent knowledge sake of Christ Iesus my Lorde, for whome I haue counted all things losse, & do iudge *them* to be dongue, that I might winne Christ,

9 And might bee founde in him, *that is*, not hauing mine owne righteousnesse, which is of the Lawe, but that which is through the faith of Christ, *euen* the righteousnesse which is of God through faith,

10 That I may know him, and the vertue of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his afflictions, and bee made conformable vnto his death,

11 If by any meanes I might attaine vnto the resurrection of the dead:

12 Not as though I had already attained *to it*, either were already perfect: but I follow, if that I may comprehende *that* for whose sake also I am comprehended of Christ Iesus.

13 Brethren, I count not my selfe, that I haue attained *to it*, but one thing *I doe:* I forget that which is behinde, and endeuour my selfe vnto that which is before,

14 And follow hard toward the marke, for the price of the hie calling of God in Christ Iesus.

15 Let vs therefore as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if ye be otherwise minded, God shal reueile euen the same vnto you.

16 Neuertheless, *in that* whereunto wee are come, let vs proceede by one rule, that we may minde one thing.

17 Brethren, be folowers of me, and looke on them, which walke so, as ye haue vs for an ensample.

18 *For many walke, of whom I haue tolde you often, and now tel you weeping, *that they are* the enemies of the Crosse of Christ. *Rom.* 16.17

19 Whose ende *is* damnation, whose God *is their* belly, and *whose* glorie *is* to their shame, which minde earthly things.

20 But our conuersation is in heauen, from whence also we looke for the *Sauiour, *euen* the Lord Iesus Christ. 1.*Cor.*1.7.

21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like vnto his glorious body, according to the working, whereby he is able euen to subdue all things vnto himselfe. *tit.*2.13.

## CHAP. IIII.

1 *From particular exhortations,* 4 *he commeth to generall.*

10 He

*20 He saith that he tooke such ioy in their readinesse to liberalitie, 12 that he will patiently beare the want.*

THerefore, my brethren, beloued and longed for, *my* ioy and my crowne, so continue in the Lord, ye beloued.

2 I pray Euodias, and beseeche Syntyche, that they be of one accord in the Lord.

3 Yea, and I beseech thee, faithfull yokefellow, helpe those *women*, which laboured with me in the Gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellow labourers, whose names *are* in the * booke of life.

*Reuel.3.5. and 10.8. and 21,27.*

4 Reioyce in the Lord alway, againe I say, reioyce.

5 Let your pacient minde be knowen vnto all men. The Lord *is* at hand.

6 Be nothing carefull, but in all things let your requests be shewed vnto God in prayer, and supplication with giuing of thankes.

7 And the peace of God which passeth all vnderstanding, shall preserue your hearts and mindes in Christ Iesus.

8 Furthermore, brethren, whatsoeuer things are true, whatsoeuer thinges *are* honest, whatsoeuer thinges *are* iust, whatsoeuer thinges *are* pure, whatsoeuer thinges *are* worthy loue, whatsoeuer thinges *are* of good report, if there *be* any vertue, or if there *be* any praise, thinke on these things,

9 Which yee haue both learned and receiued, and heard, and seene in me: those things doe, and the God of peace shall be with you.

10 Nowe I reioyce also in the Lorde greatly, that nowe at the last your care for mee springeth a fresh, wherein notwithstanding ye were carefull, but ye lacked opportunitie.

11 I speake not because of want: for I haue learned in whatsoeuer state I am, therewith to be content.

12 And I can be abased, and I can abound: euery where in all thinges I am instructed, both to be full, and to be hungrie, and to abound, and to haue want.

13 I am able to *doe* all things through the helpe of Christ, which strengtheneth me.

14 Notwithstanding ye haue well done, that ye did communicate to mine affliction.

15 And ye Philippians knowe also that in the beginning of the Gospell, when I departed from Macedonia, no Church communicated with me, concerning the matter of giuing and receiuing, but ye onely.

16 For

16 For euen *when I was* in Theſſalonica, ye ſent once, and afterward againe for my neceſsitie,

17 Not that I deſire a gifte: but I deſire the fruite which may further your reckoning.

18 Nowe I haue receiued all, and haue plentie: I was euen filled, after that I had receiued of Epaphroditus that which *came* from you, an odour that ſmelleth ſweete, a ſacrifice acceptable and pleaſant to God.

19 And my God ſhall fulfill all your neceſsities through his riches with glorie in Ieſus Chriſt.

20 Vnto God euē our Father, *be* praiſe for euermore, Amen.

21 Salute al the Saints in Chriſt Ieſus. The brethren, which are with me, greete you.

22 All the Saintes ſalute you, and moſt of all they which are of Ceſars houſhold.

23 The grace of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, *be* w̄ you all, Amen.

¶ Written to the Philippians from Rome, *and ſent* by Epaphroditus.

# THE EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE COLOSSIANS.

## CHAP. I.

1 *After the ſalutation,* 4 *hee praiſeth them the more to make them attentiue vnto him.* 7 *Hee reporteth the teſtimonie of the doctrine which they heard of Epaphras.* 13 *He magnifieth Gods grace towards them,* 20 *and ſheweth that all the parts of our ſalnation conſiſt in Chriſt alone.*

PAul an Apoſtle of Ieſus Chriſt, by the will of God, and Timothens *our* brother,

2 To them, which are at Coloſſe, Saints and faithfull brethren in Chriſt: Grace *bee* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

3 Wee giue thankes to God euen the Father of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, alwayes praying for you:

4 Since we heard of your faith in Chriſt Ieſus, and of *your* loue toward all Saintes,

5 For the hopes ſake, which is layde vp for you in heauen, whereof ye haue heard before by the word of trueth, *which is* the Goſpel,

6 Which is come vnto you, euen as *it is* vnto al the world, and

and is fruitefull, as *it is* also among you, from the day that ye heard and truely knewe the graee of God,

7 As ye also learned of Epaphras our deare fellow seruant, which is for you a faithfull minister of Christ:

8 Who hath also declared vnto vs your loue in the Spirit.

9 For this cause we also, since the day we heard *of it*, cease not to pray for you, and to desire that ye might bee fulfilled with knowledge of his will, in all wisdome, and spirituall vnderstanding,

10 That ye might walke worthy of the Lorde, and please *him* in all thinges, being fruitfull in all good workes, and increasing in the knowledge of God,

11 Strengthened with all might through his glorious power, vnto all patience, and long suffering with ioyfulnesse,

12 Giuing thankes vnto the Father, which hath made vs meete to be partakers of the inheritãce of the Saints in light,

13 Who hath deliuered vs from the power of darkenes, and hath trãslated vs into the kingdome *of his deare Sonne,

*Matt.3.17.* *and 17.5.* *2.pet.1.17.* *Hebr.1.3.*

14 In whom we haue redemption through his blood, *that is*, the forgiuenes of sinnes,

15 Who is the *image of the inuisible God, the first begotten of euery creature.

*Iohn 1.3.*

16 *For by him were all things created, which are in heauen, and which are in earth, things visible and inuisible: whether *they bee* Thrones, or Dominions, or Principalities, or Powers, all things were created by him, and for him,

17 And he is before all things, and in him all things consist.

18 And he is the head of the body of the Church: he is the beginning, *& the first begotten of the dead, that in al things he might haue the preeminence.

*Reuel.1.5.* *1.cor.15.20.*

*Chap.2.9.* *Iohn 1.14.*

19 *For it pleased *the Father*, that in him shoulde all fulnesse dwell,

20 And through peace made by that blood of that his crosse, to reconcile to himselfe through him, through him, *I say*, all things, both which *are* in earth, & which *are* in heauen.

21 And you which were in times past strangers and enemies, because *your* mindes *were set* in euill workes, hath hee now also reconciled,

22 In that body of his flesh through death, to make you holy, and vnblameable and without fault in his sight,

23 If ye continue grounded and stablished in the faith, and be not mooued away from the hope of the Gospel, whereof

ye

ye haue heard, and which hath beene preached to euery creature which is vnder heauen, whereof I Paul am a minister.

24 Nowe reioyce I in my sufferings for you, and fulfill the rest of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the Church,

25 Whereof I am a minister, according to ỹ dispensation of God, which is giuē me vnto youward, to fulfil ỹ word of God,

26 *Which is* the mysterie hid since the worlde began, and from *all* ages, but now is made manifest to his Saints, *Rom.16.25. ephes.3.9.*

27 To whome God would make knowen what is the riches of his glorious mysterie among the Gentiles, which *riches* is Christ in you, the hope of glory, *2.tim.1.10. titus 1.2. 1.pet 1.20.*

28 Whom we preach, admonishing euery man, & teaching euery man in all wisedome, that we may present euery man perfect in Christ Iesus,

29 Whereunto I also labour and striue, according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

## CHAP. II.

*4 Hee condemneth, as vaine whatsoeuer is without Christ, 11 intreating specially of circumcision, 16 of abstinence from meates, 18 and of worshipping of Angels. 20 That we are deliuered from the traditions of the Law through Christ.*

FOr I would ye knewe what great fighting I haue for your sakes, and for them of Laodicea, and for as many as haue not seene my person in the flesh,

2 That their hearts might be comforted, & they knit together in loue, & in all riches of ỹ ful assurance of vnderstanding, to knowe the mysterie of God, euen the Father, and of Christ:

3 In whom are hid al ỹ treasures of wisedom & knowledge.

4 And this I say, least any man should beguile you with enticing woordes:

5 * For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, reioycing, & beholding your order, and your stedfast faith in Christ. *1.Cor.5.1.*

6 As ye haue therefore receiued Christ Iesus the Lorde, *so* walke in him,

7 Rooted and built in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye haue beene taught, abounding therein with thankesgiuing.

8 Beware lest there be any man ỹ spoile you through philosophie, and vaine deceit, through the traditions of men, according to the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.

9 For in him dwelleth al the fulnes of ỹ Godhead bodily.

10 And yee are complete in him, which is the head of all principalitie and power.

Rom.2.29. 11 In whome also ye are circumcised with * circumcision made without handes, by putting off the sinfull body of the flesh, through the circumcision of Christ,

Rom.6.4. Ephes.1.19. 12 In that yee are * buried with him through Baptisme, in whome ye are also raised vp together through the faith of the operation of God, which raised him from the dead.

Ephe.2.1. 13 *And you which were dead in sinnes, and in the vncircumcisiō of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, forgiuing you all *your* trespasses,

Ephe.2.15. 14 And putting out the * hand writing of ordinances that was against vs, which was contrary to vs, hee euen tooke it out of the way, and fastened it vpon the crosse,

15 And hath spoyled the Principalities, and powers, and hath made a shewe of them openly, and hath triumphed ouer them in the same *crosse*.

16 Let no man therefore condemne you in meate and drinke, or in respect of an holy day, or of the newe moone, or of the Sabbath *daies*,

17 Which are *but* a shadowe of thinges to come: but the body is in Christ.

18 Let no man at his pleasure beare rule ouer you by humblenesse of minde, and worshipping of Angels, aduancing him selfe in those things which he neuer sawe, rashly puft vp with his fleshly minde,

19 And holdeth not the head, whereof all the body furnished and knit together by ioynts and bandes, increaseth with the increasing of God.

20 Wherefore if yee *be* deade with Christ from the ordinances of the world, why, as though ye lined in the world, are ye burdened with traditions?

21 *As*, Touch not, Taste not, Handle not.

22 Which all perish with the vsing, *and are* after the commandements and doctrines of men.

23 Which things haue in deede a shewe of wisedome, in voluntarie religion and humblenes of minde, and in not sparing the body, which are things of no value, *saith they pertaine* to the filling of the flesh.

## CHAP. III.

1 *Against earthly exercises, which the false apostles vrged,* 3 *hee setteth heauenly:* 5 *And beginneth with the mortifying*

of

*of the flesh, & whence hee draweth particular exhortations,*
*18 and particular dueties which depend on eche mans calling.*

IF ye then be risen with Christ, seeke those things which are aboue, where Christ sitteth at the right hande of God.

2 Set your affections on things which are aboue, *and* not on things which are on the earth.

3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

4 When Christ which is our life, shall appeare, then shall yee also appeare with him in glory.

5 *Mortifie therefore your members which are on the earth, fornication, vncleanesse, the inordinate affection, euill concupiscence, and couetousnesse which is idolatrie. *Ephes.5.3.*

6 For the which things sake the wrath of God commeth on the children of disobedience.

7 Wherein yee also walked once, when yee liued in them.

8 But nowe put yee away euen all these things, wrath, anger, maliciousnes, cursed speaking, filthie speaking, out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that yee haue put off the olde man with his woorkes,

10 And haue put on the newe, which is renued in knowledge after the image of him that created him,

11 Where is neither Grecian nor Iewe, circumcision nor vncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond, free: but Christ is all, and in all things.

12 Nowe therefore as the elect of God holy and beloued, put on the bowels of mercies, kindnes, humblenes of minde, meekenesse, long suffring:

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiuing one another, if any man haue a quarell to another: euē as Christ forgaue, euen so doe yee.

14 And aboue all these things, *put on* loue, which is the bond of perfectnesse.

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which yee are called in one body, and be ye thankfull.

16 Let the worde of Christ dwell in you plenteously in all wisedome, teaching and admonishing your owne selues, in Psalmes, and hymnes, and spiritual songs, singing with a grace in your hearts to the Lord.

17 *And whatsoeuer yee shall doe, in woorde or deede, *doe* all in the Name of the Lord Iesus, giuing thankes to God euen the Father by him. *1. Cor.10.31.*

*Ephe.*5.22. 18 ¶ *Wiues, submit your selues vnto your husbands, as it is comely in the Lord.

*1.Pet.*3.1. 19 *Husbãds, loue your wiues, & be not bitter vnto them.

*Ephe.*6.1. 20 ¶ *Children, obey your parents in all things: for that is well pleasing vnto the Lord.

21 Fathers, prouoke not your children to anger, least they be discouraged.

*Ephes.*6.5. *Titus* 2.9. *1.pet.*2.18. 22 ¶ *Seruaunts, be obedient vnto them that are *your* masters according to the flesh in all things, not with eye seruice as men pleasers, but in singlenes of heart, fearing God.

23 And whatsoeuer ye doe, doe it heartily, as to the Lord, and not to men,

24 Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receiue the reward of the inheritance: for ye serue the Lord Christ.

25 But hee that doeth wrong, shall receiue for the wrong that he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

## CHAP. IIII.

*2 He returneth to general exhortatiõs, 3 touching praier, & gracious speach, 7 & so endeth with greetings & commendations.*

YE masters, doe vnto your seruaunts, that which is iust, and equall, knowing that ye also haue a master in heauen.

*Luke* 18.1. 2 *Continue in praier, and watch in the same with thanks
*1.thes.*5.17. giuing,

*Ephes.*6.18. 3 *Praying also for vs, that God may open vnto vs the
*2.thes.*3.1. doore of vtterance, to speake the mysterie of Christ: wherefore I am also in bondes,

4 That I may vttet it, as it becommeth me to speake.

*Ephe.*5.15. 5 ¶ *Walke wisely toward them that are without, and redeeme the season.

6 *Let* your speach *be* gracious alwaies, and powdred with salt, that ye may know howe to answere euery man.

7 ¶ Tychicus *our* beloued brother & faithful minister, & fellow seruãt in the Lord, shal declare vnto you my whole state,

8 Whome I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose that he might know your state, and might comfort your hearts,

9 With Onesimus a faithfull and a beloued brother, who is one of you. They shal shew you of all things here.

10 Aristarchus my prison fellowe saluteth you, and Marcus, Barnabas cousin (touching whome ye receiued commandements. If he come vnto you, receiue him)

11 And Iesus which is called Iustus, which are of the circumcision. These only are my worke fellowes vnto the kingdom

dom of God, which haue bene vnto my consolation.

12 Epaphras the seruant of Christ, which is one of you, saluteth you, & alwaies striueth for you in praiers, that ye may stand perfect, and full in all the will of God.

13 For I beare him recorde, that he hath a great zeale for you, and for them of Laodicea, and them of Hierapolis.

14 *Luke the beloued Physicion greeteth you, and Demas. 2. Tim. 4. 11.

15 Salute the brethren which are of Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the Church which is in his house.

16 And when this Epistle is read of you, cause that it bee read in the Church of the Laodiceans also, and that yee likewise reade the Epistle *written* from Laodicea.

17 And say to Archippus, Take heede to the ministerie, that thou hast receiued in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.

18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bands. Grace *be* with you, Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to the Colosians, *and sent* by Tychicus and Onesimus.

# THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE THESSALONIANS.

## CHAP. I.

1 *He therefore beginneth with thankesgiuing, & to put them in minde that whatsoeuer was praise worthy in them, it came of Gods goodnes: & and that they are ensamples vnto others.*

PAVL and Siluanus, & Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, *which is* in God ℣ Father, & in the Lorde Iesus Christ: Grace *be* with you, & peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

2 We giue God thanks alwaies for you all, making mention of you in our praiers

3 Without ceasing, remembring your effectuall faith, and diligent loue, and the patience of *your* hope in our Lorde Iesus Christ, in the sight of God, euen our Father,

4 Knowing, beloued brethren, that ye are elect of God.

5 For our Gospel was not vnto you in word onely, but also in power, and in the holy Ghost, & in much assurance, as ye know after what maner we were among you for your sakes.

6 And ye became followers of vs, & of the Lord, and receiued the worde in much affliction, with ioy of the holy Ghost,

7 So that yee were as ensamples to all that beleeue in Ma-

cedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the word of the Lorde, not in Macedonia and in Achaia only: but your faith also which is toward God, spred abroade in all quarters, that we neede not to speake any thing.

9 For they themselues shewe of vs what maner of entring in we had vnto you, and howe ye turned to God from idoles, to serue the liuing and true God,

10 And to looke for his Sonne from heauen, whome hee raised from the dead, *euen* Iesus which deliuereth vs from that wrath to come.

## CHAP. II.

1 *Hee declareth how faithfully hee preached the Gospell vnto them,* 5 *seeking neither gaine,* 6 *nor praise of men:* 10 *& he prooueth the same by their owne testimonie:* 14 *that they did courageously beare persecutions of their countrey men:* 17 *that he desireth very much to see them.*

FOr yee your selues knowe, brethren, that our entrance in vnto you was not in vaine,

2 But euen after that we had suffred before, & were shamefully entreated at *Philippi (as ye know) we were bold in our *Act.16.12.*
God, to speake vnto you the Gospel of God w much striuing.

3 For our exhortation was not by deceit, nor by vncleanes, nor by guile.

4 But as we were allowed of God, that the Gospel should be committed *vnto vs*, so we speake, not as they that please men, but God, which approueth our hearts.

5 Neither yet did we euer vse flattering woordes, as yee knowe, nor coloured couetousnesse, God *is* record.

6 Neither sought we praise of men, neither of you, nor of others, when we might haue bene chargeable, as the Apostles of Christ.

7 But we were gentle among you, euen as a nource cherisheth her children.

8 Thus being affectioned towards you, our good will was to haue dealt vnto you, not the Gospel of God onely, but also our owne soules, because ye were deare vnto vs.

*Act.20.34.* 9 For ye remẽber, brethren, *our labour & trauaile: for we
*1.cor.4.12.* laboured day and night, because we would not be chargeable
*2.thes.3.8.* vnto any of you, and preached vnto you the Gospel of God.

10 Ye *are* witnesses, and God *also*, how holily, & iustly, and vnblameably we behaued our selues amõg you that beleeue

11 As ye know howe that we exhorted you, and comforted, and besought every one of you (as a father his children)

12 That yee *would walke worthy of God, who hath called you vnto his kingdome and glory. *Ephe.4.1. phil.1.27.

13 For this cause also thanke we God without ceasing, that when ye receiued the woorde of God, which ye heard of vs, ye receiued it not as the worde of men, but as it is in deede the word of God, which also worketh in you that beleeue. col.1.10.

14 For brethren, yee are become followers of the Churches of God, which in Iudea are in Christ Iesus, because yee haue also suffred the same things of your owne countrey men, euen as they *haue* of the Iewes,

15 Who both killed the Lorde Iesus and their owne Prophets, and haue persecuted vs away, and God they please not, and are contrary to all men,

16 And forbid vs to preach vnto the Gentiles, that they might be saued, to fulfill their sinnes alwayes: for the wrath *of God* is come on them, to the vtmost.

17 Forasmuch brethren, as we were kept from you for a season, concerning sight, but not in the heart, we enforced the more to see your face with great desire.

18 Therefore we woulde haue come vnto you (I Paul at least once or twise) but Satan hindred vs.

19 For what is our hope or ioy, or crowne of reioycing? are not euen you it in the presence of our Lorde Iesus Christ at his comming?

20 Yes, ye are our glorie and ioy.

## CHAP. III.

1 *To shew his affection towards them, he sendeth Timothie vnto them:* 6 *He is so mooued by the report of their prosperous state,* 9 *that hee can not giue sufficient thankes,* 11 *and therefore he breaketh out into praier.*

WHerefore since we could no lōger forbeare, we thought it good to remaine at Athens alone,

2 *And haue sent Timotheus our brother and minister of God, and our labour fellowe in the Gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you touching your faith. *Acts 16.1.

3 That no man should be moued with these afflictions: for ye your selues know, that we are appoynted thereunto.

4 For verely when we were with you, we told you before that we should suffer tribulations, euen as it came to passe, and yee knowe it.

5 Euen for this cause, when I couldo no longer forbeare, I sent *him* that I might knowe of your faith, lest ỹ tempter had tempted you in any sort, & that our labour had bene in vaine.

6 But nowe lately when Timotheus came from you vnto vs, and brought vs good tidings of your faith and loue, & that yee haue good remembrance of vs alwaies, desiring to see vs, as we also *doe* you,

7 Therefore, brethren, we had consolation in you, in all our affliction and necessitie through your faith.

8 For now are we aliue, if ye stand fast in the Lord.

9 For what thanks can we recompense to God againe for you, for all the ioy wherewith we reioyce for your sakes before our God,

10 Night & day, *praying exceedingly ỹ we might see your face, & might accomplish that which is lacking in your faith.

*Rom.1.10. and 15.23.*

11 Nowe God himselfe, euen our Father, and our Lord Iesus Christ, guide our iourney vnto you,

12 And the Lorde increase you, and make you abounde in loue one toward another, and toward all men, euen as we *doe* towarde you:

13 *To make your hearts stable and vnblameable in holinesse before God euen our Father, at the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ with all his Saintes.

*Chap.5.23. 1.cor.1.8.*

## CHAP. IIII.

1 *He exhorteth them 3 to holines, 9 and brotherly loue.* 13 *He forbiddeth them to sorowe after the maner of infidels.* 15 *He setteth out the historie of our resurrection.*

AND furthermore we beseech you, brethren, & exhort you in the Lorde Iesus, that ye increase more and more, as yee haue receiued of vs, how ye ought to walke, & to please God.

2 For ye knowe what commaundements we gaue you by the Lord Iesus.

3 *For this is the will of God, *euen* your sanctification, *and* that ye should abstaine from fornication,

*Rom.12.2. 1phe.5.17.*

4 That euery one of you should knowe, howe to possesse his vessell in holinesse and honour,

5 *And* not in the lust of concupiscence, euen as the Gentiles which knowe not God:

1.cor.6.8.

6 * That no man oppresse or defraude his brother in any matter: for the Lord *is* auenger of all such things, as we also haue told you before time, and testified.

1.cor.1.2.

7 *For God hath not called vs vnto vncleannesse, but vnto holines.

8 He

8 He therefore that despiseth *these things*, despiseth not man, but God who hath euen giuen you his holy Spirit.

9 But as touching brotherly loue, ye neede not ỹ I write vnto you: * for ye are taught of God to loue one another. *Ioh.* 13.34.

10 Yea, and that thing verely ye do vnto all the brethren, which are throughout all Macedonia: but we beseeche you, brethren, that ye encrease more and more, *and* 15.12. 1.*Ioh.* 2.8. *and* 4.21.

11 And that ye studie to be quiet, & to meddle with your owne businesse, and to worke with your owne hands, as we commaunded you,

12 That ye may behaue your selues honestly toward them that are without, and that nothing be lacking vnto you.

13 ¶ I would not, brethren, haue you ignorant concerning them which are a sleepe, that ye sorowe not euen as other which haue no hope.

14 For if we beleeue that Iesus is dead, and is risen, euen so them which sleepe in Iesus, will God bring with him.

15 For this say we vnto you by the word of the Lord, that we which liue, and are remaining in the comming of ỹ Lord, shall not preuent them which sleepe.

16 For the Lord himselfe shall descend from heauen with a shoute, *and* with the voyce of the Archangel, and * with the trumpet of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: 1.*Cor.* 15.52.

17 Then shall we which liue and remaine, be caught vp with them also in the cloudes, to meete the Lord in the ayre: and so shall we euer be with the Lord.

18 Wherfore, cõfort your selues one another ẅ these words.

## CHAP. V.

1 *Condemning the curious searching for the seasons of Christes comming, 6 he warneth them to be ready dayly to receiue him: 11 and so giueth them sundry good lessons.*

BVt of the times and seasons, brethren, ye haue no neede that I write vnto you.

2 For ye your selues knowe perfectly, that the day of the Lord shall come, euen as a thiefe in the night.

3 For when they shal say, Peace, and safetie, then shal come vpon them suddaine destruction, as the trauaile vpon a woman with childe, and they shall not escape.

4 But ye, brethrẽ, are not in darkenes, that that day should come on you, as *it were* a thiefe.

5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, neither of darkenesse.

6 Therefore

6 Therefore let vs not sleepe as do other, but let vs watch and be sober.

7 For they that sleepe, sleepe in the night, and they that be drunken, are drunken in the night.

*Isa.59.17. ephes.6.17.* 8 But let vs which are of the day, be sober, *putting on the brest plate of faith, and loue, and of the hope of saluation for an helmet.

9 For God hath not appointed vs vnto wrath, but to obtaine saluation by the meanes of our Lord Iesus Christ,

10 Which died for vs, that whether we wake or sleepe, we should liue together with him.

11 Wherefore exhort one another, and edifie one another, euen as ye doe.

12 Nowe we beseeche you, brethren, that ye acknowledge them, which labour among you, and are ouer you in the Lord, and admonish you,

13 That ye haue them in singular loue for their workes sake. Be at peace among your selues.

14 We desire you, brethren, admonish them that are out of order: comfort the feeble minded: beare with the weake: be patient toward all men.

*Pro.17.13. and 20.22. mat.5.39. rom.12.17. 1 pet.3.9.* 15 *See that none recompense euill for euill vnto any man: but euer followe that which is good, both toward your selues, and toward all men.

16 Reioyce euermore.

17 *Pray continually.

*Luke 18.1.* 18 In all things giue thankes: for this *is* the will of God in Christ Iesus toward you.

19 Quench not the Spirit.

20 Despise not prophecying.

21 Trie all things, *and* keepe that which is good.

22 Abstaine from all appearance of euill.

23 Now the very God of peace sanctifie you throughout: and *I pray God* that your whole spirit & soule and body, may be kept blameless vnto ỹ comming of our Lord Iesus Christ.

*1.Cor.1.9.* 24 *Faithfull *is he* which calleth you, which wil also do it.

25 Brethren, pray for vs.

26 Greete all the brethren with an holy kisse.

27 I charge you in the Lord, that this Epistle be read vnto all the brethren the Saintes.

28 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you, Amen

¶ The first *Epistle* vnto the Thessalonians written frõ Athens.

THE

# THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE THESSALONIANS.

## CHAP. I.

3 *He commendeth the increase of faith and charitie,* 4 *and the patience of the Thessalonians:* 6 *And describing Gods vengeance against such as oppresse the godly,* 10 *he teacheth the godly to waite for the last iudgement.*

Aul and Siluanus, and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, *which is* in God our Father, & in ỹ Lord Iesus Christ:

2 Grace *be* with you, and peace frō God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 * We ought to thanke God alwayes for you, brethrē, as it is meete, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the loue of euery one of you toward another, aboundeth, 1.*Thes.*1.2

4 So that we our selues reioyce of you in the Churches of God, because of your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye suffer,

5 **Which is* a manifest token of the righteous iudgement of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdome of God, for the which ye also suffer. *Iude* 6.

6 For it is a righteous thing with God, to recompence tribulation to them that trouble you,

7 And to you which are troubled, rest with vs, *when the Lorde Iesus shall shewe himselfe from heauen with his mightie Angels, 1.*Thes.* 4.16

8 In flaming fire, rendring vengeance vnto them, that doe not knowe God, and which obey not vnto the Gospel of our Lord Iesus Christ,

9 Which shalbe punished with euerlasting perdition, from the presence of the Lord, and from the glorie of his power,

10 When he shall come to be glorified in his Saintes, and to be made marueilous in all them that beleeue (because our testimonie toward you was beleeued) in that day.

11 Wherefore, we also pray alwayes for you, that our God may make you worthy of this calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of *his* goodnesse, and the worke of faith with power,

12 That the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and of the Lord Iesus Christ.

CHAP.

## CHAP. II.

*2 He sheweth that the day of the Lord shall not come, till there be a departure from the faith, 3 and that Antichrist be reueiled, 8 whose destruction he setteth out, 15 and thereupon exhorteth to constancie.*

NOwe we beseech you, brethren, by the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, and by our assembling vnto him,

2 That ye be not suddenly moued from *your* minde, nor troubled neither by spirit, nor by worde, nor by letter, as *it were* from vs, as though the day of Christ were at hand.

3 Let no man deceiue you by any meanes: for *that day shall not come*, except there come a departing first, and that that man of sinne be disclosed, *euen* the sonne of perdition,

4 Which is an aduersarie, and exalteth himselfe against all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he doeth sit as God in the Temple of God, shewing himselfe that he is God.

5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I told you these things?

6 And nowe ye knowe what withholdeth that he might be reueiled in his time.

7 For the mysterie of iniquitie doeth already worke: only he which now withholdeth, *shall let* tilhe be take out of ỹ way.

*Isa.11.4.*

8 And then shall that wicked man be reueiled, * whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall abolish with the brightnesse of his comming,

9 *Euen him* whose comming is by the effectuall working of Satan, with all power, and signes, and lying wonders,

10 And in all deceiuablenes of vnrighteousnesse, among them that perish, because they receiued not the loue of the trueth, that they might be saued.

11 And therefore God shal send them strong delusion, that they should beleeue lyes,

12 That all they might be damned which beleeued not the trueth, but had pleasure in vnrighteousnesse.

13 But we ought to giue thankes alway to God for you, brethren beloued of the Lorde, because that God hath from the beginning chosen you to saluation, through sanctification of the Spirit, and the faith of trueth,

14 Whereunto he called you by our Gospel, to obtaine the glorie of our Lord Iesus Christ.

15 Therefore, brethren, stand fast, & keepe the instructions, which ye haue bene taught, either by word, or by our Epistle.

16 Nowe

16 Nowe the ſame Ieſus Chriſt our Lorde, and our God euen the Father which hath loued vs, and hath giuen vs euerlaſting conſolation and good hope through grace,

17 Comfort your heartes, and ſtabliſh you in euery worde and good worke.

## CHAP. III.

*1 He deſireth them to further the preaching of the Goſpel, with their prayers, 6 and to withdrawe themſelues from thoſe, who through idlenes, 11 and curioſitie peruert good order: 14 Whom he excludeth from the companie of the faithfull.*

FVrthermore, brethren, * pray for vs, that the worde of the Lord may haue free paſſage, & be glorified, euē as it is with you, *Ephe .6.19. coloſ.4.3.*

2 And that we may be deliuered from vnreaſonable and euill men: for all men haue not faith.

3 But the Lorde is faithfull, which will ſtabliſh you, and keepe you from euill.

4 And we are perſwaded of you through the Lord, that ye both doe, and will doe the things which we warne you of.

5 And the Lord guide your hearts to the loue of God, and the wayting for of Chriſt.

6 We warne you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, that ye withdraw your ſelues from euery brother that walketh inordinatly, and not after the inſtruction, which he receiued of vs.

7 For ye your ſelues knowe, * how ye ought to follow vs: *for we behaued not our ſelues inordinately among you, *1.Cor.11.1. 1.Theſ.4.1.*

8 Neither tooke we bread of any man for nought: but we wrought with labour and trauaile night and day, becauſe we would not be chargeable to any of you,

9 Not becauſe we haue not authoritie, but that we might make our ſelues an enſample vnto you to folowe vs.

10 For euen when we were with you, this we warned you of, that if there were any, which woulde not worke, that he ſhould not eate.

11 For we heare, that there are ſome which walke among you inordinately, and worke not at all, but are buſie bodies,

12 Therefore them that are ſuch, we warne and exhort by our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, that they worke with quietneſſe, and eate their owne bread.

13 And ye, brethren, be not weatie in well doing.

14 If any man obey not this our ſaying in this letter, note him, and haue no company with him, that he may be aſhamed.

15 Yet

15 Yet count him not as an enemie, but admonish him as a brother.

16 Nowe the Lorde himselfe of peace giue you peace alwayes by all meanes. The Lord *be* with you all.

17 The salutation of me Paul, w mine owne hand, which is the token in euery Epistle: so I write.

18 The grace of our Lorde Iesus Christ *be* with you all, AMEN.

¶ The second *Epistle* to ỹ Thessalonians, written frō Athens.

# THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL TO TIMOTHEVS.

## CHAP. I.

*Setting forth a perfect paterne of a true Pastour, whose office especially consisteth in teaching, 6 he warneth him, that vaine questions set apart, he teach those things, 5 which further charitie & faith: 12 and that his authoritie be not contemned, 14 he sheweth what an one he is made through the grace of God.*

PAVL an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the ‖ commaundement of God our Sauiour, and of *our* Lord Iesus Christ our hope,

‖ *Or, ordinance.*

2 Vnto Timotheus *my* naturall sonne in the faith: Grace, mercie, *and* peace frō God our Father, and *from* Christ Iesus our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still in Ephesus, when I departed into Macedonia, *so doe*, that thou mayest warne some, that they teach none other doctrine,

4 Neither that they giue heede to fables and genealogies *which are* endlesse, which breede questions rather then godly edifying which is by faith.

*Rom. 13. 10.* 5 For * the ende of the commaundement is loue out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith vnfained.

6 From the which things some haue erred, and haue turned vnto vaine iangling.

7 They would be doctours of the Law, and yet vnderstand not what they speake, neither whereof they affirme.

8 And we knowe, that the Lawe is good, if a man vse it lawfully,

9 Knowing this, that the Lawe is not giuen vnto a righteous man, but vnto the lawlesse and disobedient, to the vngodly, and to sinners, to the vnholy, and to the prophane, to murtherers of fathers and mothers, to manslayers,

10 To

10 To whoremongers, to buggerers, to men ſtealers, to liers, to the perinred, & if there be any other thing, that is contrary to wholeſome doctrine,

11 *Which is* according to the glorious Goſpel of the bleſſed God, which is committed vnto me.

12 Therefore I thanke him, which hath made me ſtrong, *that is*, Chriſt Ieſus our Lord: for he counted me faithfull, and put me in *his* ſeruice:

13 When before I was a blaſphemer, and a perſecuter, and an oppreſſer: but I was receiued to mercie: for I did it ignorantly through vnbeliefe.

14 But the grace of our Lorde was exceeding abundant with faith and loue, which is in Chriſt Ieſus.

15 This *is* a true ſaying, and by al meanes worthie to be receiued, that *Chriſt Ieſus came into the world to ſaue ſinners, of whom I am chiefe. *Mat.9.13. mar.2.17.*

16 Notwithſtanding, for this cauſe was I receiued to mercie, that Ieſus Chriſt ſhould firſt ſhew on me all long ſuffering vnto the enſample of them, which ſhall in time to come beleeue in him vnto eternall life.

17 Now vnto the King euerlaſting, immortal, inuiſible, vnto God only wiſe, *be* honour *and* glory, for euer, & euer, Amen.

18 This commandement commit I vnto thee, ſonne Timotheus, according to the prophecies, which went before vpon thee, that thou by them ſhouldeſt fight a good fight,

19 Hauing faith and a good conſcience, which ſome haue put away, and as concerning faith, haue made ſhipwracke.

20 Of whom is Hymeneus, & Alexander, *whom I haue deliuered vnto Satan, that they might learne not to blaſpheme. *1.Cor.5.5.*

## CHAP. II.

*1 He exhorteth them to make publike prayers for al men, 4.5 & that for two cauſes: 8 & therfore he willeth al men in al places to pray: 9 & declareth in what apparel 11 and with what modeſtie women ought to behaue themſelues in holy aſſemblies.*

I Exhort therefore, that firſt of all ſupplications, prayers, interceſſions *and* giuing of thankes be made for all men,

2 For kings, and for all that are in authoritie, that we may leade a quiet and a peaceable life, in all godlines, and honeſtie.

3 For this is good and acceptable in the ſight of God our our Sauiour,

4 Who will that all men ſhalbe ſaued, and come vnto the acknowledging of the trueth.

5 For

5 For there is one God, and one Mediatour betweene God and man, *which is* the man Christ Iesus,

6 Who gaue himselfe a ransome for all men, *to be* that testimonie in due time,

2.*Tim.*1.11. 7 * Whereunto I am ordeined a preacher and an Apostle (I speake the trueth in Christ, and lie not) *euen* a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and veritie.

8 I will therefore that the men pray, euery where lifting vp pure hands without wrath, or doubting.

1.*Peter* 3.3. 9 *Likewise also the women, that they aray themselues in comely apparell, with shamefastnesse and modestie, not with broided heare, or gold, or pearles, or costly apparell,

10 But (as becommeth women that professe the feare of God) with good workes.

11 Let the woman learne in silence with all subiection.

1.*Cor.*14.34. 12 *I permit not a woman to teach, neither to vsurpe authoritie ouer the man, but to be in silence.

*Gen.*1.27. 13 For * Adam was first formed, then Eue.

*and* 2.7,21. 14 *And Adam was not deceiued, but the woman was de-

*Gen.*3.6. ceiued, and was in the transgression.

15 Notwithstanding, through bearing of children, she shall be saued if they continue in faith, and loue, and holinesse with modestie.

## CHAP. III.

2 *He setteth out Bishops,* 8 *and christian Deacons, with their wiues,* 12 *children and familie:* 15 *He calleth the Church the house of God.*

THis *is* a true saying, If any man desire ℣ office of a Bishop, he desireth a worthie worke.

*Titus* 2.6. 2 *A Bishop therefore must be vnreproueable, ℣ husband of one wife, watching, temperate, modest, harborous, apt to teache,

3 Not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthie lucre, but gentle, no fighter, not couetous,

4 One that can rule his owne house honestly, hauing children vnder obedience with all honestie.

5 For if any cannot rule his owne house, howe shall he care for the Church of God?

6 He may not be a yong scholer, least he being puffed vp fall into the condemnation of the deuil.

7 He must also be well reported of, euen of them which are without, least he fall into rebuke, and the snare of the deuil.

8 Likewise

8 Likewise *must* Deacons *be* grane, not double tongued, not giuen vnto much wine, neither to filthie lucre,

9 Hauing the mysterie of the faith in pure conscience. *Chap.1.19.*

10 And let them first be proued: then let them minister, if they be found blameleese.

11 Likewise their wiues *must be* honest, not euill speakers, *but* sober, *and* faithfull in all things.

12 Let the Deacons be the husbands of one wife, and such as can rule their children well, and their owne households:

13 For they that haue ministred wel, get themselues a good degree, and great libertie in the faith, which is in Christ Iesus.

14 These things write I vnto thee, trusting to come very shortly vnto thee.

15 But if I tary long, that thou mayest yet know, how thou oughtest to behaue thy selfe in the house of God, which is the Church of the liuing God, the pillar and ground of trueth.

16 And without controuersie, great is the mysterie of godlines, *which is*, God is manifested in the flesh, iustified in the Spirit, seene of Angels, preached vnto the Gentiles, beleeued on in the world, *and* receiued vp in glory.

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 He condemneth the wilfull doctrines 3 of mariage & the choice of meates, 7 & also prophane fables: 8 And commendeth the godly exercise, 13 and the dayly reading of the Scripture.*

NOwe the Spirit speaketh euidently, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, and shall giue heede vnto spirits of errour, and doctrines of deuils,

2 Which speake lyes through hypocrisie, and haue their consciences burned with an hote yron,

3 Forbidding to marrie, *and commanding* to abstaine from meates which God hath created to be receiued with giuing thankes of them which beleeue and know the trueth.

4 For euery creature of God *is* good, and nothing *ought* to be refused, if it be receiued with thankesgiuing.

5 For it is sanctified by the worde of God, and prayer.

6 If thou put the brethrē in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Iesus Christ, which hast bene nourished vp in the wordes of faith, and of good doctrine, which thou hast continually followed.

7 But cast away prophane, and olde wiues fables, and exercise thy selfe vnto godlines.

8 For bodily exercise profiteth litle: but godlines is profi-

table vnto all things, which hath the promes of the life present, and of that that is to come.

9 This *is* a true saying, and by all meanes worthy to be receiued.

10 For therefore we labour and are rebuked, because we trust in the liuing God, which is the Sauiour of all men, specially of those that beleeue.

11 These things warne and teach.

12 Let no man despise thy youth, but be vnto them that beleeue, an ensample, in worde, in conuersation, in loue, in spirit, in faith, *and* in pureneſſe.

13 Till I come, giue attendance to reading, to exhortation, *and* to doctrine.

14 Despise not the gift that *is* in thee, which was giuen thee by prophecie with the laying on of the handes of the companie of the Eldership.

15 These things exercise, *and* giue thy selfe vnto them, that it may be seene how thou profitest among all men.

16 Take heede vnto thy selfe, and vnto learning, continue therein: for in doing this thou shalt both saue thy selfe, and them that heare thee.

## CHAP. V.

1 *Hauing set downe a maner how to rebuke all degrees,* 5 *hee entreateth of widowes, who then were chosen for the seruice of the Church:* 17 *Then he commeth to Elders,* 23 *and speaketh somewhat touching the health of the body.*

REbuke not an Elder, but exhort him as a father, *and* the yonger men as brethren,

2 The elder women as mothers, the yonger as sisters, with all pureneſſe.

3 Honour widowes, which are widowes in deede.

4 But if any widowe haue children or nephewes, let them learne first to shewe godlines toward their owne house, and to recompense their kinred: for that is an honest thing, and acceptable before God.

5 And she that is a widow in deede, & left alone, trusteth in God, & continueth in supplications & prayers night & day.

6 But she that liueth in pleasure, is dead, while she liueth.

7 These things therefore warne *them* of, that they may be blameleſſe.

8 If there be any that prouideth not for his owne, and namely for them of his houshold, he denieth the faith, and

is

is worse then an infidel.

9 Let not a widow be taken into the number vnder three-score yeere olde, that hath bene the wife of one husband,

10 And well reported of for good workes: if she haue nourished her children, if she haue lodged the strangers, if she haue washed the Saints feete, if she haue ministred vnto them which were in aduersitie, if she were continually giuen vnto euery good worke.

11 But refuse the yonger widowes: for when they haue begun to waxe wanton against Christ, they wil marry,

12 Hauing damnation, because they haue broken the first faith.

13 And likewise also being idle they learne to goe about from house to house: yea, *they are* not onely idle, but also pratlers, & busibodies, speaking things which are not comely.

14 I will therefore that the yonger women marry, & beare children, and gouerne the house, *and* giue none occasion to the aduersarie to speake euill.

15 For certaine are already turned backe after Satan.

16 If any faithfull man, or faithfull woman haue widowes, let them minister vnto them, and let not the Church bee charged, that there may be sufficient for them that are widowes in deede.

17 ¶ The elders that rule well, let them be had in double honour, specially they which labour in the worde and doctrine.

18 For the Scripture sayth, * Thou shalt not mouzell the mouth of the oxe that treadeth out the corne: and, * The labourer is worthy of his wages. *Deut.25.4. 1.cor.9.9. Mat.10 10.*

19 Against an Elder receiue none accusation, but vnder two or three witnesses. *Luke 10.7.*

20 Them that sinne, rebuke openly, that the rest also may feare.

21 ¶ * I charge *thee* before God and the Lord Iesus Christ, and the elect Angels, that thou obserue these things without preferring one to another, and doe nothing partially. *Chap.6.13.*

22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other mens sinnes: keepe thy selfe pure.

23 Drinke no longer water, but vse a litle wine for thy stomackes sake, and thine often infirmities.

24 Some mens sinnes are open before hand, and go before vnto iudgement; but some men follow after.

25 Likewise also the good workes are manifest before-hand, and they that are otherwise, can not be hid.

## CHAP. VI.

1 *He sheweth the ductie of seruants:* 10 *and what a mischieuous euill couetousnes is:* 13 *and hauing spoken somewhat of rich men, he once againe forbiddeth Timothe* 20 *to comber himselfe with vaine babblings.*

LEt as many seruants as are vnder the yoke, count their masters worthy of all honour, that the Name of God, and *his* doctrine be not euill spoken of.

2 And they which haue beleeuing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren, but rather doe seruice, because they are faithfull, and beloued, and partakers of the benefite. These things teach and exhort.

3 If any man teach otherwise, and consenteth not to the wholesome words of our Lord Iesus Christ, & to the doctrine, which is according to godlinesse,

4 He is puft vp and knoweth nothing, but doteth about questions and strife of wordes, whereof commeth enuie, strife, railings, euill surmisings,

5 Froward disputations of men of corrupt mindes and destitute of the trueth, which thinke that gaine is godlines: from such separate thy selfe.

6 But godlines is great gaine, if a man be content with that he hath.

7 For we brought nothing into the world, *and* it is certaine, that we can carie nothing out.

8 Therefore when we haue foode & raiment, let vs therewith be content.

9 For they that will be rich, fall into tentation & snares, and into many foolish & noysome lustes, which drowne men in perdition and destruction.

10 For the desire of money is the roote of all euill, which while some lusted after, they erred from the faith, and pearced themselues through with many sorowes.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things, & follow after righteousnes, godlines, faith, loue, patience, *and* meekenesse,

12 Fight the good fight of faith: lay holde of eternall life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

Chap. 5. 21. 13 * I charge thee in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Iesus Christ, which vnder Pontius Pilate

* witnessed

* witnessed a good confession, *Mat.27.11.*

14 That thou keepe *this* commandement without spot, and *iohn 18.37.*
vnrebukeable, vntill the appearing of our Lord Iesus Christ,

15 Which in due time he shall shewe, that is * blessed and *Chap.1.11.*
Prince onely, the King of kings, and Lord of lords, *reu.17.14.*

16 Who onely hath immortalitie, & dwelleth in the light *and 19.16.*
that none can attaine vnto, * whome neuer man sawe, neither *Iohn 1.18.*
can see, vnto whome *be* honour and power euerlasting, Amen.

17 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not
hie minded, & that they * trust not in vncertaine riches, but in *Mar.4.19.*
y liuing God, (which giueth vs abundantly al things to enioy) *luke 12.15.*

18 That they doe good, *and* be rich in good workes, *and*
ready to distribute, and communicate,

19 * Laying vp in store for themselues a good foundation *Mat.6.2.*
against the time to come, that they may obteine eternall life.

20 O Timotheus, keepe that which is committed vnto
thee, and auoyde prophane *and* vaine babblings, and oppositi-
ons of science sally so called,

21 Which while some professe, they haue erred concer-
ning the faith. Grace *be* with thee, Amen.

¶ The first *Epistle* to Timotheus written from Laodicea,
which is the chiefest citie of Phrygia Pacaciana.

# THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAVL TO TIMOTHEVS.

## CHAP. I.

*5 He commendeth Timothies faith, 6 and exhorteth him to go on faithfully in the charge cõmitted vnto him: 8 and that neither for his bonds, 15 nor the reuolting of others, he faint. 11 He triumpheth of his Apostleship. 14 He willeth him to haue care of the thing committed vnto him: 16 and prayseth Onesiphorus.*

PAVL an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promes of life which is in Christ Iesus,

2 To Timotheus *my* beloued sonne: Grace, mercie *and* peace from God the Father, and *from* Iesus Christ our Lord,

3 I thanke God, * whome I serue from *Actes 22.3.*
*mine* elders with pure conscience, that without ceasing I haue remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day,

4 Desiring to see thee, mindfull of thy teares, that I may be filled with ioy:

5 When I call to remembrance the vnfained faith that is
in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and in thy
mother Eunice, and am assured that *it dwelleth* in thee also.
6 Wherefore, I put thee in remembrance ỹ thou stirre vp
ỹ gift of God which is in thee, by ỹ putting on of mine hãds.
7 For God hath not giuen to vs the Spirit of feare, but of
power, and of loue, and of a sound minde.
8 Be not therefore ashamed of the testimonie of our Lord,
neither of me his prisoner: but be partaker of the afflictions
of the Gospel, according to the power of God,
1.Cor.1.2. 9 Who hath saued vs, and called vs with an *holy calling,
Titus 3.5. not according to our *workes, but according to his owne pur-
pose and grace, which was giuen to vs through Christ Iesus
Rom.16.25. before the *world was,
ephe.1.4. 10 But is now made manifest by that appearing of our Sa-
Coloss.1.26. uiour Iesus Christ, who hath abolished death, & hath brought
titus 1.2. life and immortalitie vnto light through the Gospel.
1.Tim.2.7. 11 *Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and Apostle,
and a teacher of the Gentiles.
12 For the which cause I also suffer these things, but I am
not ashamed: for I know whom I haue beleeued, and I am per-
swaded that he is able to keepe that which I haue committed
to him against that day.
13 Keepe the true patterne of ỹ wholesome words, which
thou hast heard of me in faith & loue which is in Christ Iesus.
14 That worthy thing, which was committed to thee,
keepe through the holy Ghost, which dwelleth in vs.
15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia, be
turned from me: of which sort are Phygellus & Hermogenes.
16 The Lorde giue mercy vnto the house of Onesiphorus:
for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chaine.
17 But when he was at Rome, he sought me out very dili-
gently, and found *me*.
18 The Lord grant vnto him, that he may finde mercy with
the Lord at that day, and in howe many things hee hath mini-
stred vnto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

## CHAP. II.

2 *The better to set out perseuerãce in the Christian warfare, 3 he
taketh similitudes 4 from souldiers, 6 & from husbandmen. 10
He sheweth that his bonds are for the profit of the Saints: 14 Thẽ
he warneth Timothie to deuide the worde of trueth aright, 17
to beware of the examples of the wicked, 22 and to do all things
modestly.*

Thou

THou therefore, my ſonne, be ſtrong in the grace that is in Chriſt Ieſus.

2 And what things thou haſt heard of me, by many witneſſes, the ſame deliuer to faithfull men, which ſhalbe able to teach other alſo.

3 Thou therefore ſuffer affliction as a good ſouldier of Ieſus Chriſt.

4 No man that warreth, entangleth himſelfe with the affaires of *this* life, becauſe he would pleaſe him that hath choſen him to be a ſouldier.

5 And if any man alſo ſtriue for a maſterie, he is not crowned, except he ſtriue as he ought to doe.

6 The husbandmā muſt labour before he receiue ỹ fruites.

7 Conſider what I ſay: and the Lord giue thee vnderſtanding in all things.

8 Remember that Ieſus Chriſt *made* of the ſeede of Dauid, was raiſed againe from the dead according to my Goſpel.

9 Wherein I ſuffer trouble as an euill doer, euen vnto bonds: but the worde of God is not bound.

10 Therefore I ſuffer all things, for the elects ſake, that they might alſo obtaine the ſaluation which is in Chriſt Ieſus, with eternall glory.

11 *It is* a true ſaying. For if we be* dead together *with him*, we alſo ſhall liue together *with him*. *Rom.6.5.*

12 If we ſuffer, we ſhall alſo reigne together *with him:* * If we denie *him*, he alſo will denie vs. *Mat.10.33. mar.8.38.*

13 If * we beleeue not, *yet* abideth he faithfull: he can not denie himſelfe. *Rom.3.3. and 9.6.*

14 Of theſe things put them in remembrance, and proteſt before the Lord, that they ſtriue not about wordes, which is to no profit, *but* to the peruerting of the hearers.

15 Studie to ſhew thy ſelfe approoued vnto God, a workeman that needeth not to be aſhamed, deuiding the worde of trueth aright.

16 Stay prophane and vaine babblings: for they ſhall encreaſe vnto more vngodlines.

17 And their worde ſhall fret as a canker: of which ſort is Hymeneus and Philetus.

18 Which as concerning the trueth haue erred from the marke, ſaying that the reſurrection is paſt already, and doe deſtroy the faith of certaine.

19 But the foundation of God remaineth ſure, & hath this

scale, The Lord knoweth who are his: and, Let euery one that calleth on the Name of Christ, depart from iniquitie.

20 Not withstanding in a great house are not onely vessels
*Rom.9.21.* of gold and of siluer, but also of wood and of earth, *and some for honour, and some vnto dishonour.

21 If any man therefore purge himselfe from these, he shall be a vessell vnto honour, sanctified, and meete for the Lorde, and prepared vnto euery good worke.

22 Flee also fom the lustes of youth, & follow after righte-
*1.Cor.1.2.* ousnes, faith, loue, *and* peace, with them that *call on the Lord with pure heart,

*1.Tim.1.4.* 23 *And put away foolish and vnlearned questions, know-
*and 4.7.* ing that they ingender strife.
*titus 3.9.* 24 But the seruant of the Lord must not striue, but *must* be gentle toward all men, apt to teach, suffering the euill,

25 Instructing them with meekenesse that are contrarie minded, *prouing* if God at any time will giue them repentance, that they may acknowledge the trueth,

26 And come to amendement out of that snare of the deuill, of whome they are taken prisoners, to *doe* his will.

## CHAP. III.

*1 He foretelleth the dangerous times that are to ensue: 9 but with the certaine hope of victorie 12 hee encourageth him to the combat: 14 Setting out especially the triall of sound doctrine.*

*1.Tim.4.1.* THis know also, that in the *last dayes shall come peri-
*2.pet.3.3.* lous times,
*iude 18.* 2 For men shall be louers of their owne selues, couetous, boasters, proude, cursed speakers, disobedient to parents, vnthankfull, vnholy,

3 Without naturall affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, intemperate, fierce, no louers at all of them which are good,

4 Traitors, headie, hie minded, louers of pleasures more then louers of God,

5 Hauing a shew of godlines, but haue denied the power thereof: turne away therefore from such.

6 For of this sort are they which creepe into houses, & lead captiue simple women laden w sinnes, & led with diuers lusts,

7 *Which women are* euer learning, and are neuer able to come to the acknowledging of the trueth.

*Exod.7.11.* 8 * And as Iannes and Iambres withstoode Moses, so doe these also resist the trueth, men of corrupt mindes, reprobate concerning the faith.

9 But

9 But they shall preuaile no longer: for their madnes shal be euident vnto all men, as theirs also was.

10 ¶ But thou hast fully knowen my doctrine, maner of liuing, purpose, faith, long suffering, loue, patience,

11 Persecutions, *and* afflictions which came vnto me at Antiochia, at Iconium, and at Lystri, which persecutions I suffred: but from them all the Lord deliuered me.

12 Yea, and all that will liue godly in Christ Iesus, shal suffer persecution.

13 But the euill men and deceiuers, shall waxe worse and worse, deceiuing, and being deceiued.

14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned, and which are committed vnto thee, knowing of whom thou hast learned *them:*

15 And that thou hast knowen the holy Scriptures of a childe, which are able to make thee wise vnto saluation through the faith which is in Christ Iesus.

16 *For the whole Scripture *is* giuen by inspiration of God, and *is* profitable to teache, to conuince, to correct, *and* to instruct in righteousnesse, 2. *Pet.* 1. 20.

17 That the man of God may be absolute, being made perfect vnto all good workes.

## CHAP. IIII.

1 *He chargeth him to preach the Gospel with all diligence,* 3 *in that so miserable time:* 6 *That his death is hard at hand,* 8 *yet so, that as a conqueror, he maketh haste to a glorious triumph:* 10 *He sheweth the cause why he sendeth for Timothie,* 11 *euen by reason of his present state.*

I Charge *thee* therefore before God, and *before* the Lord Iesus Christ, which shall iudge the quicke and dead at that his appearing, and in his kingdome,

2 Preach the word: be instant, in season and out of season: improue, rebuke, exhort with all long suffring and doctrine.

3 For the time wil come, when they wil not suffer wholesome doctrine: but hauing their eares itching, shall after their owne lustes get them an heape of teachers,

4 And shal turne their eares from the truth, and shalbe giuen vnto fables.

5 But watch thou in al things: suffer aduersitie: do ỹ worke of an euangelist: cause thy ministery to be throughly liked of.

6 For I am nowe readie to be offered, and the time of my departing is at hand.

7 I haue

7 I haue fought a good fight, and haue finished *my* course: I haue kept the faith.

8 *For* henceforth is layde vp for me the crowne of righteousnes, which the Lord the righteous iudge shall giue mee at that day: and not to mee onely, but vnto all them also that loue that his appearing.

9 Make speede to come vnto me at once:

10 For Demas hath forsaken mee, and hath embraced this present worlde, and is departed vnto Thessalonica. Crescens *is gone* to Galatia, Titus vnto Dalmatia.

*Coloss.4.10, 14.* 11 *Onely Luke is with mee. Take Marke and bring him with thee: for he is profitable vnto me to minister.

12 And Tychicus haue I sent to Ephesus.

13 The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring with thee, and the bookes, but specially the parchments.

14 Alexander the copper smith hath done me much euill: the Lord reward him according to his workes.

15 Of whome be thou ware also: for hee withstoode our preaching sore.

16 At my first answering no man assisted mee, but all forsooke me: *I pray God*, that it may not be layd to their charge.

17 Notwithstading the Lord assisted me, and strengthened mee, that by me the preaching might be fully beleeued, and that all the Gentiles should heare: and I was delinered out of the mouth of the Lion.

18 And the Lord will deliuer me from euery euill worke, and will preserue me vnto his heauenly kingdome: to whom *be* praise for euer and euer, Amen.

*Chap.1.16.* 19 Salute Prisca, and Aquila, and the *housholde of Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinthus: Trophimus I left at Miletum sicke.

21 Make speede to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Iesus Christ *be* with thy spirit. Grace *be* with you, AMEN.

¶ The seconde *Epistle* written from Rome vnto Timotheus, the first Bishop elected of the Church of Ephesus, when Paul was presented the second time before the Emperour Nero.

THE

# THE EPISTLE OF PAVL TO TITVS.

## CHAP. I.

*3 Hee sheweth what kinde of men ought to bee chosen ministers: 10 howe vaine babblers mouthes shoulde be stopped: 12 and through this occasion he toucheth the nature of the Cretians, 14 and the Iewes who put holines in outward things.*

PAVL a seruaht of God, and an Apostle of IESVS CHRIST, according to the faith of Gods elect, & the acknowledging of ỹ trueth, which is according to godlines,

2 Vnto the hope of eternall life, which God that cannot lie, hath promised before the * world began: *Rom.16.25.*

3 But hath made his worde manifest in due time through the preaching which is *committed vnto me, according to the commandement of God our Sauiour: *ephes.3.9. coloss.1.23. 2.tim.1.9.*

4 To Titus *my* naturall sonne according to the common faith, Grace, mercie *and* peace from God the Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ our Sauiour. *1.pet.1.20. Galat.1.1.*

5 For this cause left I thee in Creta, that thou shouldest continue to redresse the thinges that remaine, and shouldest ordeine Elders in euery citie, as I appointed thee,

6 *If any be vnreproueable, the husband of one wife, hauing faithfull children, which are not slandered of riot, neither are disobedient. *1.Tim.3.2.*

7 For a Bishop must be vnreproueable, as Gods stewarde, not frowarde, not angrie, not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthie lucre,

8 But harberous, one that loueth goodnes, wise, righteous, holy, temperate,

9 Holding fast that faithfull worde according to doctrine, that he also may be able to exhort with wholesome doctrine, and conuince them that say against it.

10 For there are many disobedient and vaine talkers and deceiuers of mindes, chiefly they of the circumcision,

11 Whose mouthes must be stopped, which subuert whole houses, teaching thinges, which they ought not, for filthie lucres sake.

12 One of themselues, *euen* one of their owne prophetes said, The Cretians *are* alwayes lyars, euil beastes, slow bellies.

13 This witnes is true: wherefore conuince them sharpely, that

that they may be found in the faith,

1.Tim.1.4. 14 And not taking heede to * Iewish fables and commandements of men, that turne away from the trueth.

Rom.14.20. 15 Vnto the pure *are* all thinges pure, but vnto them that are defiled, and vnbeleeuing, *is* nothing pure, but euen their mindes and consciences are defiled.

16 They professe that they know God, but by workes they denie *him*, and are abominable and disobedient, and vnto euery good worke reprobate.

## CHAP. II.

*2 Hee setteth out the dueties of sundrie persons and states, & and willeth him to instruct the Church in maners. 11 He draweth an argument from the ende of our redemption, 12 which is, that we liue godly and vprightly.*

BVt speake thou ỹ things which become wholsom doctrine,

2 That the elder men bee watchfull, graue, temperate, found in the faith, in loue, *and* in patience:

3 The elder women likewise, that they be in such behauiour as becommeth holinesse, not false accusers, not subiect to much wine, *but* teachers of honest things,

4 That they may instruct the yong womē to be sober minded, that they loue their husbāds, that they loue their childrē,

5 *That they bee* temperate, chaste, keeping at home, good

Ephes.5.23. and * subiect vnto their husbandes, that the worde of God be not euill spoken of.

6 Exhort yong men likewise, that they be sober minded.

7 In al things shew thy selfe an ensample of good workes, with vncorrupt doctrine, with grauitie, integritie,

8 *And* with the wholesome worde, which cannot be condemned, that he which withstandeth, may be ashamed, hauing nothing concerning you to speake euill of.

Ephes.6.5. 9 *Let seruants be subiect to their masters, and please *them*

coloss 3.22. in all things, not answering againe,

1.pet.2.18. 10 Neither pykers, but ỹ they shew al good faithfulnes, that they may adorne the doctrine of God our Sauiour in al things.

1.Cor.1.2. 11 *For that grace of God, that bringeth saluation vnto all

coloss.1.22. men, hath appeared,

12 And teacheth vs that we should denie vngodlines and worldly lustes, and that we should liue soberly & righteously, and godly in this present world,

13 Looking for that blessed hope, and appearing of that glorie of that mightie God, and our Sauiour Iesus Christ,

14 Who

14 Who gaue himselfe for vs, that hee might redeeme vs from all iniquitie, and purge vs *to bee* a peculiar people vnto himselfe, zealous of good workes.

15 These things speake, and exhort, and conuince with all authoritie. See that no man despise thee.

## CHAP. III.

*1 He willeth that all generally be put in minde to reuerence such as be in authoritie: 3 That they remember their former life, and attribute all iustification vnto grace: 9 And if any brabler withstand these things, 10 he willeth that he be reiected.*

PVt them in remembrance that they *be subiect to the Principalities, and powers, *and* that they be obedient, *and* readie to euery good worke, *Rom.13.1. 1.pet.2.13.*

2 That they speake euill of no man, that they bee no fighters, *but* soft, shewing all meekenes vnto all men.

3 *For we our selues also were in times past vnwise, disobedient, deceiued, seruing the lustes and diuers pleasures, liuing in maliciousnes, and enuie, hatefull, *and* hating one another. *1.Cor.6.11*

4 But when that bountifulnesse and that loue of God our Sauiour toward man appeared,

5 *Not by the works of righteousnes, which we had done, but according to his mercie hee saued vs, by the washing of the new birth, and the renuing of the holy Ghost, *2.Tim.1.9.*

6 Which hee shed on vs abundantly, through Iesus Christ our Sauiour,

7 That wee, being iustified by his grace, shoulde be made heires according to the hope of eternall life.

8 This *is* a true saying. and these things I will thou shouldest affirme, that they which haue beleeued God, might bee carefull to shewe foorth good workes. These things *are* good and profitable vnto men.

9 *But stay foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and braulings about the Lawe: for they are vnprofitable and vaine. *1.Tim.1.4. and 4.7. 2.tim.2.23.*

10 Reiect him that is an heretike, after once or twise admonition,

11 Knowing that hee that is such, is peruerted, and sinneth, being damned of his owne selfe.

12 When I shall send Artemas vnto thee, or Tychicus, bee diligent to come to me vnto Nicopolis: for I haue determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the expounder of the Lawe, and Apollos

on their iourney diligently, that they lacke nothing.

14 And let ours also learne to shewe foorth good workes for necessarie vses, that they be not vnfruitfull.

15 All that are with me, salute thee. Greete them that loue vs in the faith. Grace *be* with you all. Amen.

¶ To Titus, elect the first Bishop of the Church of the Cretians, written from Nicopolis in Macedonia.

## THE EPISTLE OF PAVL TO PHILEMON.

1 *Paul handling a base and smal matter, yet according to his maner mounteth aloft vnto God.* 8 *Sending againe to Philemon his vagabond and thieuish seruant, hee entreateth pardon for him, and very gravely preacheth of Christian equitie.*

PAVL a prisoner of Iesus Christ, and *our* brother Timotheus, vnto Philemon our deare friend, and fellow helper,

2 And to *our* deare *sister* Apphia, and to Archippus our fellowe souldier, and to the Church that is in thine house:

3 Grace *bee* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

1. *Thess.* 1. 2. 2. *Thess.* 1. 3. 4 I giue thankes to my God, making mention alwayes of thee in my prayers,

5 (When I heare of thy loue and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Iesus, and toward all Saintes)

6 That the fellowship of thy faith may be made effectuall, and that whatsoeuer good thing is in you through Christ Iesus, may be knowen.

7 For wee haue great ioy and consolation in thy loue, because by thee, brother, the Saints bowels are comforted.

8 Wherefore, though I be very bolde in Christ to commaunde thee that which is conuenient,

9 *Yet* for loues sake I rather beseeche thee, though I be as I am, euen Paul aged, and euen now a prisoner for Iesus Christ.

*Coloss.* 4. 9. 10 I beseech thee for my sonne *Onesimus, whome I haue begotten in my bondes,

11 Which in time past was to thee vnprofitable, but nowe profitable both to thee and to me,

12 Whom I haue sent againe: thou therefore receiue him, that is mine owne bowels,

13 Whom I would haue reteined with me, that in thy stead he

he might haue miniſtred vnto me in the bonds of the Goſpel.
14 But without thy minde wouldе I doe nothing, that thy benefite ſhould not be as it were of neceſsitie, but willingly.
15 It may be that hee therefore departed for a ſeaſon, that thou ſhouldeſt receiue him for euer,
16 Not now as a ſeruant, but aboue a ſeruant, *euen as* a brother beloued, ſpecially to mee: howe much more then vnto thee, both in the fleſh, and in the Lord?
17 If therefore thou count our thinges common, receiue him as my ſelfe.
18 If hee hath hurt thee, or oweth thee ought, that put on mine accountes.
19 I Paul haue written *this* with mine owne hande: I will recompenſe it, albeit I doe not ſay to thee, that thou oweſt moreouer vnto me euen thine owne ſelfe.
20 Yea, brother, let me obteine this pleaſure of thee in the Lord: comfort my bowels in the Lord.
21 Truſting in thine obedience, I wrote vnto thee, knowing that thou wilt doe euen more then I ſay.
22 Moreouer alſo prepare me lodging: for I truſt through your prayers I ſhalbe freely giuen vnto you.
23 There ſalute thee Epaphras my fellowe priſoner in Chriſt Ieſus,
24 Marcus, Ariſtarchus, Demas & Luke, my felow helpers.
25 The grace of our Lorde Ieſus Chriſt *be* with your ſpirit, AMEN.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, *and ſent* by Oneſimus a ſeruant.

# THE EPISTLE TO THE HEBREWES.

The drift and ende of this Epiſtle, is to ſhew that Ieſus Chriſt the Sonne of God both God and man, is that true eternall and onely Prophet, King, & high Prieſt, that was ſhadowed by the figures of the olde Lawe, and is now in deede exhibited: of whom the whole Church ought to be taught, gouerned, and ſanctified.

## CHAP. I.

1 *To ſhewe that the doctrine which Chriſt brought, is moſt excellent, in that it is the knitting vp of all prophecies,* 4 *hee aduaunceth him aboue the Angels:* 10 *And proueth by diuers teſtimonies of the Scripture, that he farre paſſeth all other.*

At

AT sundrie times and in diuers maners God spake in the old time to *our* fathers by the Prophets: in these last dayes hee hath spoken vnto vs by his Sonne,

2 Whome hee hath made heire of all things, by whom also he made the worlds,

*Colos.1.15.* 3 *Who being y brightnes of the glory, and the ingraued forme of his person, and bearing vp all things by his mightie word, hath by himselfe purged our sinnes, and sitteth at the right hand of the Maiestie in the highest places,

4 And is made so much more excellent then the Angels, in as much as he hath obteined a more excellēt Name then they.

*Chap.5.5.* 5 For vnto which of the Angels said he at any time, *Thou
*Psal.2.7.* art my Sonne, this day begate I thee? and againe, *I will be
*2.Sam.7.14.* his Father, and he shalbe my Sonne?

*1.chr.22,10.* 6 And againe, whē he bringeth in *his* first begottē Sonne in-
*Psal.97.7.* to y world, he saith, *And let all y Angels of God worship him.
*Psal.104.4.* 7 And of the Angels he saith, * Hee maketh the Spirits his messengers, and his ministers a flame of fire.

*Psal.45.7.* 8 But vnto y Sonne *he saith*, *O God, thy throne *is* for euer & euer: the scepter of thy kingdom *is* a scepter of righteousnes.

9 Thou hast loued righteousnesse and hated iniquitie. Wherefore God, *euen* thy God, hath anoynted thee with the oyle of gladnesse aboue thy fellowes.

*Psal.102.25.* 10 And, *Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast stablished the earth, and the heauens are the workes of thine handes.

11 They shall perish, but thou doest remaine: and they all shall waxe olde as doeth a garment,

12 And as a vesture shalt thou fold them vp, and they shall be changed: but thou art the same, & thy yeres shall not faile.

*Psal.110.1.* 13 Vnto which also of the Angels said he at any time, *Sit
*1.cor.15.25.* at my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footestoole?
*chap.10,12,* 14 Are they not all ministring spirites, sent foorth to min-
*13.* ister for their sakes, which shalbe heires of saluation?

## CHAP. II.

1 *Therfore he inferreth, that good heede must be giuen to Christs doctrine: 9 And he setteth him out vnto vs euen as our brother in our flesh, that we may with a good will yeelde vp our selues wholy vnto him.*

WHerfore we ought diligently to giue heed to the things which we haue heard, least at any time we runne out.

2 For if the word spoken by Angels was stedfast, & euery

trāsgression & disobediēce receiued a iust recōpēce of reward,

3 Howe shall we escape, if we neglect so great saluation? which at the first began to be preached by the Lord, and *afterward* was confirmed vnto vs by them that heard him,

4 * God bearing witnesse thereto, both with signes and wonders, and with diuers miracles, & gifts of the holy Ghost, according to his owne will? *Mar.16.20.*

5 For hee hath not put in subiection vnto the Angels the world to come, whereof we speake.

6 But * one in a certaine place witnessed, saying, What is man, that thou shouldest be mindfull of him? or the sonne of man, that thou wouldest consider him? *Psal.8.6.*

7 Thou madest him a litle inferiour to the Angels: thou crownedst him with glory and honor, and hast set him aboue the woorkes of thine hands.

8 * Thou hast put all things in subiection vnder his feete. And in that he hath put all things in subiection vnder him, he left nothing that should not be subiect vnto him. But we yet see not all things subdued vnto him, *1.Co.15.27.*

9 But we see Iesus crowned w glory and honour, * which was made a litle inferiour to the Angels, through the suffering of death, that by Gods grace he might taste death for all men. *Phil.2.8.*

10 For it became him, for whome *are* all these things, and by whome *are* all these things, seeing that he brought many children vnto glory, that he should consecrate the Prince of their saluation through afflictions.

11 For he that sanctifieth, and they which are sanctified, *are* all of one: wherefore he is not ashamed to cal them brethren,

12 Saying, *I will declare thy Name vnto my brethren: in the middes of the Church will I sing praises to thee. *Psal.22.25.*

13 And againe, *I wil put my trust in him. And againe, *Behold, here am I, and the children which God hath giuen me. *Psal 18.2. Esa.8.18.*

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, hee also himselfe likewise tooke part with them, that he might destroy * through death, him that had the power of death, that is the deuill, *Hos.13.14. 1.cor.15.55*

15 And that hee might deliuer all them, which for feare of death were all their life time subiect to bondage.

16 For he in no sort tooke on *him* the Angels *nature*, but he tooke on *him* the seede of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behoued him to be made like vnto his brethren, that he might be mercifull, and a faith-

full hie Priest in things concerning God, that he might make reconciliation for the sinnes of the people.

18 For in that hee suffered, and was tempted, hee is able to succour them that are tempted.

## CHAP. III.

*Now he sheweth how farre inferiour Moses is to Christ, 5.6 euen so much as the seruant to the master: and so hee bringeth in certaine exhortations and threatnings taken out of Dauid, 8 against such as either stubbornely resist, 12 or els are very slowe to obey.*

THerefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heauenly vocation, consider the Apostle and hie Priest of our profession Christ Iesus:

2 Who was faithful to him that hath appoynted him, euen
Num.12.7. as * Moses *was* in all his house.

3 For this man is counted worthy of more glory then Moses, in as much as he which hath builded the house, hath more honour then the house.

4 For euery house is builded of some man, and he that hath built all things, *is* God.

5 Nowe Moses verely was faithful in all his house, as a seruant, for a witnes of the things which should be spoken after.

6 But Christ *is* as the Sonne, ouer his owne house, whose house we are, if we holde fast that confidence and that reioycing of that hope vnto the ende.

Chap.4.7. 7 Wherefore, as the holy Ghost saith, *To day if yee shall
psal.95.8. heare his voyce,

8 Harden not your hearts, as in the prouocation, according to the day of the tentation in the wildernes,

9 Where your fathers tempted me, prooued me, and sawe my woorkes fourtie yeeres long.

10 Wherfore I was grieued w that generation, & said, They erre euer in *their* heart, neither haue they knowen my waies.

11 Therfore I sware in my wrath, If they shal eter into my rest.

12 Take heede, brethren, lest at any time there be in any of you an euill heart, and vnfaithfull, to depart away from the liuing God.

13 But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulnes of sinne.

14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we keepe sure vnto the ende that beginning, wherewith we are vpholden,

15 So long as it is said, To day if ye heare his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the prouocation.

16 For

15 For some when they heard, prouoked him to anger: howbeit, not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.

17 But with whom was he displeased fourtie yeeres? Was he not displeased with them that sinned, *whose carkeises fell in the wilderneſſe? *Num.14.37*

18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but vnto them, that obeied not?

19 So we see ỹ they could not enter in, because of vnbelief.

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 Hee joyneth exhortation with threatning, least they, euen as their fathers were, be deprived of the rest offered vnto them, 11 but that they endeuour to enter into it: 14 And so hee begimneth to intreate of Christs Priesthood.*

LEt vs feare therfore, least at any time by forsaking the promise of entring into his rest, any of you shoulde seeme to be depriued.

2 For vnto vs was the Gospel preached as also vnto them: but the woorde that they heard, profited not them, because it was not mixed with faith in those that heard it.

3 For wee which haue beleeued, doe enter into rest, as hee said *to the other*, *As I haue sworne in my wrath, If they shall enter into my rest: although the woorkes were finished from the foundation of the world. *Psal.95.12.*

4 For he spake in a certaine place of ỹ seuenth day on this wise, *And God did rest the seuenth day from all his workes. *Gen.2.2.*

5 And in this place againe, If they shall enter into my rest. *deut.5.14.*

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth ỹ some must enter therein to, and they to whome it was first preached, entred not therein for vnbeliefes sake:

7 Againe he appointed in Dauid a certaine day, by To day, after so long a time, saying, as it is saide, *This day, if yee heare his voyce, harden not your hearts. *Chap.3.7.*

8 For if ‖ Iesus had giuen them rest, then would he not after this haue spoken of another day. ‖ *Meaning Iosuua.*

9 There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God.

10 For he that is entred into his rest, hath also ceased from his owne workes, as God *did* from his.

11 Let vs studie therefore to enter into that rest, least any man fall after the same ensample of disobedience.

12 For the worde of God *is* liuely, and mightie in operation, & sharper then any two edged sword, & entreth through, euen vnto the deuiding a sunder of the soule & the spirit, and

of the ioynts, and ỹ marow, and is a discerner of the thoughts, and the intents of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature, which is not manifest in his sight: but al things *are* naked and open vnto his eyes, with whome we haue to doe.

14 Seeing then that we haue a great high Priest, which is entred into heauen, *euen* Iesus the Sonne of God, let vs holde fast our profession.

15 For we haue not an high Priest, which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities, but was in all things tempted in like sort, *yet* without sinne.

16 Let vs therefore go boldly vnto ỹ throne of grace, that we may receiue mercy, & finde grace to help in time of need.

## CHAP. V.

1 *First he sheweth the duetie of the hie Priest:* 5 *Secondly, that Christ is appointed of God to be our high Priest,* 7 *and that he hath fulfilled all things belonging thereunto.*

FOr euery high Priest is taken from among men, and is ordeined for men, in things pertaining to God, that hee may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sinnes,

2 Which is able sufficiently to haue compassion on them that are ignorant, and that are out of the way, because that he also is compassed with infirmitie,

3 And for the same sake he is bound to offer for sinnes, as well for his owne part, as for the peoples.

1. *Chro.* 13. 10. & 23. 13. 4 *And no man taketh this honour vnto himselfe, but he that is called of God, as *was* Aaron.

5 So likewise Christ tooke not to himselfe this honour, to be made the hie Priest, but he that saide vnto him, * Thou art my Sonne, this day begate I thee, *gaue it him.*

*Chap.* 1. 5. *psal.* 2. 7.

*Chap.* 7. 17. *psal.* 110. 4. 6 As he also in another place speaketh, * Thou art a Priest for euer, after the order of Melchi-sedec.

7 Who in ỹ daies of his flesh did offer vp praiers & supplications, w strong crying and teares vnto him, that was able to saue him from death, and was also heard in ỹ which he feared.

8 And though he were the Sonne, yet learned hee obedience, by the things which he suffered,

9 And being consecrate, was made the authour of eternall saluation vnto all them that obey him:

10 And is called of God an hie Priest after the order of Melchi-sedec.

11 Of whome we haue many things to say, which are hard

to be vttered, because ye are dull of hearing.

12 For when as concerning the time yee ought to be teachers, yet haue yee neede againe that we teach you what *are* the first principles of the worde of God: and are become such as haue neede of milke, and not of strong meate.

13 For euery one that vseth milke, is inexpert in the word of righteousnesse: for he is a babe.

14 But strong meate belongeth to them that are of age, which through long custome haue their wits exercised to discerne both good and euill.

## CHAP. VI.

*1 He briefly toucheth the childish slouthfulnes of the Hebrewes, 4 & terrifieth them wt seuere threatnings: 7 he stirreth them vp to endeuoure in time to go forward: 9 he hopeth well of them. 13 He alleadgeth Abrahams example: 17 & compareth faith that taketh hold on the word, 19 vnto an ancre.*

THerfore, leauing ye doctrine of the beginning of Christ, let vs be led forward vnto perfectiō, not laying againe ye foūdation of repentance frō dead works, & of faith toward God,

2 Of the doctrine of baptismes, and laying on of hands, and of the resurrection from the dead, and of eternall iudgement.

3 And this will we doe, if God permit.

4 *For it is impossible, that they which were once lightened, and haue tasted of the heauenly gift, and were made partakers of the holy Ghost, *Chap.10.26. mat.12.45. 2.pet.2.20.*

5 And haue tasted of the good woorde of God, and of the powers of the world to come,

6 If they fal away, should be renued againe by repentance: seeing they crucifie againe to them selues the Sonne of God, and make a mocke of him.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the raine that commeth oft vpon it, and bringeth foorth herbes meete for them by whome it is dressed, receiueth blessing of God.

8 But that which beareth thornes and briars, *is* reprooued, and is neere vnto cursing, whose ende *is* to be burned.

9 But beloued, we haue perswaded our selues better things of you, & such as accōpany saluation, though we thus speake.

10 For God *is* not vnrighteous, that he should forget your worke, & labour of loue, which ye shewed toward his Name, in that ye haue ministred vnto the Saints, and *yet* minister.

11 And we desire that euery one of you shewe the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope vnto the end,

12 That ye be not slouthfull, but followers of them, which through faith and patience, inherite the promises.

13 For when God made the promise to Abraham, because he had no greatet to sweare by, he sware by himselfe,

Gen.12.2. & 17.4 & 22.17. 14 Saying, *Surely I will abundantly blesse thee & multiply thee marueilously.

15 And so after that he had taried patiently, he enioyed the promise.

16 For men verely sweare by him ỹ is greater *then themselues*, & an oth for cõfirmation is amõg thẽ an end of al strife.

17 So God willing more aboundantly to shewe vnto the heires of promise the stablenesse of his counsell, bounde himselfe by an othe;

18 That by two immutable things, wherein it is vnpossible that God should lye, we might haue strong cõsolation, which haue our refuge to lay holde vpon ỹ hope that is set before vs,

19 Which *hope* we haue, as an ancre of the soule, both sure and stedfast, and it entreth into that which is within the vaile,

20 Whither ỹ forerunner is for vs entred in, *euen* Iesus that is made an hie Priest for euer after the order of Melchi-sedec.

## CHAP. VII.

*1 He hath hitherto stirred thẽ vp, to marke diligẽtly what things are to be considered in Melchi-sedec, 15 wherein he is like vnto Christ. 20 Wherefore the Law should giue place to the Gospel.*

Gen.14.18. FOr this Melchi-sedec *was* king of Salem, the Priest of the most hie God, who met Abraham, as he returned from the slaughter of the Kings, and blessed him:

2 To whom also Abraham gaue the tithe of al things: who first is by interpretation King of righteousnes: after that, *he is* also King of Salem, that is, King of peace,

3 Without father, wout mother, without kinred, and hath neither *beginning of his* daies, neither end of life: but is likened vnto the Sonne of God, and continueth a Priest for euer.

4 Now consider howe great this man *was*, vnto whom euen the Patriarke Abraham gaue the tithe of the spoiles.

Nom.18.21. 5 For verely they which are ỹ children of Leui, which receiue the office of the Priesthood, haue a*commandement to take, according to ỹ Law, tithes of the people (that is, of their brethren) though they came out of the loynes of Abraham.

6 But he whose kinred is not counted among them, receiued tithes of Abraham, & blessed him that had the promises.

7 And wout al contradiction ỹ lesse is blessed of ỹ greater.

8 And

8 And here men that die, receiue tithes: but there he *receiueth them*, of whom it is witnessed, that he liueth.

9 And to say as ỹ thing is, Leui also which receiueth tithes, paied tithes in Abraham.

10 For he was yet in the loynes of his father *Abraham*, when Melchi-sedec met him.

11 If therefore perfectiō had bin by ỹ Priesthood of ỹ Leuites (for vnder it the Law was established to ỹ people) what needed it furthermore, ỹ another Priest should rise after ỹ order of Melchi-sedec, & not to be called after the order of Aaron?

12 For if the Priesthoode be changed, then of necessitie must there be a change of the Lawe.

13 For he of whom these things are spoken, pertaineth vnto another tribe, whereof no man serued at the altar.

14 For it is euident, ỹ our Lord sprung out of Iuda, cōcerning the which tribe Moses spake nothing, touching ỹ Priesthood.

15 And it is yet a more euident thing, because that after the similitude of Melchi-sedec, there is risen vp another Priest,

16 Which is not made *Priest* after the Lawe of the carnall commandement, but after the power of the endlesse life.

17 For he testifieth *thus*, * Thou art a Priest for euer, after the order of Melchi sedec. *Chap. 5. 6. Psal. 110. 4.*

18 For the commandement that went afore, is disanulled, because of the weakenesse thereof, and vnprofitablenesse.

19 For ỹ Law made nothing perfite, but ỹ bringing in of a better hope *made perfite*, whereby we draw neere vnto God.

20 And for as much as it is not without an othe (for these are made Priests without an othe:

21 But this *is made* with an othe by him that sayde vnto him, *The Lorde hath sworne, and will not repent, Thou art a Priest for euer, after the order of Melchi-sedec) *Psal. 110. 4.*

22 By so much is Iesus made a surety of a better Testament.

23 And among them many were made Priestes, because they were not suffered to endure, by the reason of death.

24 But this man, because hee endureth euer, hath a Priesthoode which can not passe from one to another.

25 Wherefore, hee is able also perfectly to saue them that come vnto God by him, seeing hee euer liueth, to make intercession for them.

26 For such an hie Priest it became vs to haue, *which is* holy, harmelesse, vndefiled, separate from sinners, & made higher then the heauens:

27 Which needeth not daily as those hie Priestes to offer
*Leui.16.11.* vp sacrifice, *first for his owne sinnes,& then for the peoples:
for that did he once,when he offered vp himselfe.

28 For the Law maketh men hie Priests, which haue infirmitie:but the worde of the othe that was since the Lawe, *maketh* the Sonne,who is consecrated for euermore.

## CHAP. VIII.

*1 To proue more certainely that the ceremonies of the Lawe are abrogated, 5 hee sheweth that they were appoynted to serue the heauenly paterne. 8 He bringeth in the place of Jeremie, 15 to proue the amendement of the olde couenant.*

NOwe of the thinges which we haue spoken, *this is* the summe,that we haue such an hie Priest,that sitteth at the right hand of the throne of the Maiestie in heauens,

2 And *is* a minister of the Sanctuarie, and of that true Tabernacle which the Lord pight,and not man.

3 For euery hie Priest is ordeined to offer both giftes and sacrifices: wherefore it was of necessitie,that this man should haue somewhat also to offer.

4 For he were not a Priest, if he were on the earth, seeing there are Priests that according to the Law offer gifts,

5 Who serue vnto the paterne and shadowe of heauenly things, as Moses was warned by God, when hee was about to
*Exod.25.40. actis.7.44.* finish the Tabernacle. * See,said he,that thou make all things according to the paterne,shewed to thee in the mount.

6 But nowe *our hie Priest* hath obteined a more excellent office,inasmuch as he is the Mediatour of a better Testament, which is established vpon better promises.

7 For if that first *Testament* had beene vnblameable, no place should haue bene sought for the second,

*Chap.10.16. Jere.31.31, 32,33,34. Rom.11.27.* 8 For in rebuking them he saieth,*Beholde,the daies will come,saieth the Lord,when I shall make with the house of Israel,and with the house of Iuda a newe Testament:

9 Not like the Testament that I made with their fathers, in the day that I tooke them by the hande, to leade them out of the lande of Egypt: for they continued not in my Testament,and I regarded them not,sayth the Lord.

10 For this is the Testament that I will make with the house of Israel, After those daies,saith the Lorde,I wil put my Lawes in their minde,and in their heart I wil write them,and I will be their God,and they shalbe my people,

11 And they shall not teach euery man his neighbour and euery

euery man his brother, saying, Knowe the Lord: for all shall knowe me, from the least of them to the greatest of them.

12 For I will be mercifull to their vnrighteousnesse, and I will remember their sinnes and their iniquities no more.

13 In that he saith a new *Testament*, he hath abrogate the olde: nowe that which is disanulled and waxed olde, is ready to vanish away.

## CHAP. IX.

1 *Comparing the forme of the Tabernacle,* 10 *and the ceremonies of the Law,* 11 *vnto the truth set out in Christ,* 15 *he concludeth ỹ now there is no more neede of another Priest,* 24 *because Christ himselfe hath fulfilled the se duties vnder ỹ new couenat.*

THen the first *Testament* had also ordinances of religion, and a worldly Sanctuarie.

2 For the first tabernacle was made, wherein was the candlesticke, and the table, and the shewbread, which *Tabernacle* is called the holy places.

3 And after the seconde vaile *was* the tabernacle, which is called the Holiest of all,

4 Which had the golden censer, and the Arke of the Testament ouerlayde rounde about with gold, wherein the golden pot which had Manna, *was*, and * Aarons rod that had budded, and the * tables of the Testament. *Num.17.10* *1.King.8.9.*

5 *And ouer the Arke were the glorious Cherubims, shadowing the mercie seate: of which things we will not nowe speake particularly. *2.chro.5.10.* *Exo.25.22.*

6 Now when these things were thus ordeined, the Priests went alwayes into ỹ first tabernacle, & accõplished ỹ seruice.

7 But into the seconde went the * hie Priest alone, once euery yeere, not without blood which he offered for himselfe, and for the ignorances of the people. *Exo 30.10.* *leuit.16.2.*

8 Whereby the holy Ghost this signified, that the way into the Holiest of all was not yet opened, while as yet the first Tabernacle was standing,

9 Which was a figure for that present time, wherein were offered giftes and sacrifices that could not make holy, concerning the conscience, him that did the seruice,

10 Which onely stoode in meates and drinkes, and diuers washings, & carnall rites, which were inioyned, vntill the time of reformation.

11 But Christ being come an hie Priest of good things to come, by a greater and a more perfect Tabernacle, not made with

with hands, that is, not of this building,

12 Neither by the blood of goates and calues: but by his owne blood entred he in once vnto the Holy place, and obtained eternall redemption *for vs*.

*Leuit.16.14.* *nom.19.4.* 13 * For if the blood of bulles & of goates, and the ashes of an heifer, sprinkling them that are vncleane, sanctifieth as touching the purifying of the flesh,

*1.Pet.1.19.* *1.iohn 1.17.* *reuel.1.5.* 14 How much more shal ỹ * blood of Christ, which through ỹ eternall Spirit offred himselfe without fault to God, * purge your conscience from dead workes, to serue the liuing God?

*Luke 1.74.* *Rom.5.6.* *1.pet.3.18.* 15 And for this cause is he the Mediatour of the new Testament, that through * death which was for the redemption of the transgressions *that were* in ỹ former testament, they which were called, might receiue ỹ promise of eternall inheritance.

16 For where a Testament *is*, there must be the death of him that made the Testament.

*Galat.3.15.* 17 * For the Testament is confirmed when men are dead: for it is yet of no force as long as he that made it, is aliue.

18 Wherefore neither was ỹ first ordeined without blood.

19 For when Moses had spoken euery precept to the people, according to the Lawe, he tooke the blood of calues and of goates, with water and purple wooll, and hyssope, and sprinkled both the booke, and all the people,

*Exod.24.8.* 20 * Saying, This is the blood of the Testament, which God hath appointed vnto you.

21 Moreouer, he sprinkled likewise the Tabernacle with blood also, and all the ministring vessels.

22 And almost all things are by the Lawe purged with blood, and without shedding of blood is no remission.

23 It was then necessary, that the similitudes of heauenly things should be purified w̃ such things: but ỹ heauẽly things themselues *are purified* with better sacrifices then are these.

24 For Christ is not entred into the holy places ỹ are made with hands, which are similitudes of ỹ true *Sanctuarie*: but *is entred* into very heauẽ, to appeare now in ỹ sight of God for vs.

25 Not that he should offer himselfe often, as the hie Priest entred into the Holy place euery yeere with other blood,

26 (For then must he haue often suffred since ỹ foundation of the world) but nowe in the end of the world hath he bene made manifest, once to put away sinne by ỹ sacrifice of himself.

27 And as it is appointed vnto men that they shall once die, and after that *commeth* the iudgement:

28 So

28 So *Christ was once offered to take away the sinnes of many, and vnto them that looke for him, shall he appeare the second time without sinne vnto saluation. *Rom.5.8. 1.pet.3.18.*

## CHAP. X.

*1 He proueth that the sacrifices of the Lawe were vnperfite, 2 because they were yeerely renued: 5 But that the sacrifice of Christ is one, and perpetuall, 6 he proueth by Dauids testimonie: 19 Then he addeth an exhortation, 29 and seuerely threatneth them that reiect the grace of Christ. 36 In the end he prayseth patience, 38 that commeth of faith.*

FOr the Lawe hauing the shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can neuer with those sacrifices, which they offer yeere by yeere continually, sanctifie the commers thereunto.

2 For would they not then haue ceased to haue bene offered, because that the offerers once purged, should haue had no more conscience of sinnes?

3 But in those *sacrifices* there *is* a remembrance againe of sinnes euery yeere.

4 For it is vnpossible that the blood of bulles and goates should take away sinnes.

5 Wherefore when he commeth into the worlde, he sayth, *Sacrifice & offering thou wouldest not: but a body hast thou ordeined me. *Psal.40.7.*

6 In burnt offerings, and sinne offerings thou hast had no pleasure.

7 Then I said, Loe, I come (in the beginning of the booke it is written of me) that I should doe thy will, O God.

8 Aboue, when he said, Sacrifice and offering, and burnt offerings, and sinne offerings thou wouldest not haue, neither hadst pleasure *therein* (which are offered by the Lawe)

9 Then said he, Loe, I come to doe thy will, O God, he taketh away the first, that he may stablish the second.

10 By the which will we are sanctified, *euen* by the offring of the body of Iesus Christ once *made*.

11 And euery Priest standeth dayly ministring, & oftimes offreth one maner of offring, which can neuer take away sinnes:

12 But this man after he had offred one sacrifice for sinnes, *sitteth for euer at the right hand of God,

13 And from henceforth tarieth, *till his enemies be made his footestoole. *Chap.1.13. psal.110.2.*

14 For with one offring hath he consecrated for euer them that *Chap.1.13. 1.cor.15.25.*

that are sanctified.

15 For the holy Ghost also beareth vs record: for after hee had said before,

Chap.8.8. iere.31.33. rom.11.27. 16 *This is the Testament that I will make vnto them after those dayes, saith the Lorde, I will put my lawes in their heart, and in their mindes I will write them,

17 And their sinnes and iniquities will I remēber no more.

18 Nowe where remission of these things is, there is no more offring for sinne.

19 Seeing therefore, brethren, that by the blood of Iesus we may be bolde to enter into the Holy place,

20 By the newe and liuing way, which he hath prepared for vs, through the vaile, that is, his flesh:

21 *And seeing we haue* an hie Priest, *which is* ouer ye house of God,

22 Let vs drawe neere with a true heart in assurance of faith, our hearts being pure from an euill conscience,

23 And washed in our bodies wt pure water, let vs keepe the profession of our hope, without wauering, (for *he is* faithfull that promised)

24 And let vs cōsider one another, to prouoke vnto loue, and to good workes,

25 Not forsaking ye felowship yt we haue amōg our selues, as the maner of some *is*: but let vs exhort *one another*, and that so much the more, because ye see that the day draweth neere.

Chap.6.4. 26 *For if we sinne willingly after that we haue receiued and acknowledged that trueth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sinnes,

27 But a fearefull looking for of iudgement, and violent fire, which shall deuoure the aduersaries.

28 He that despiseth Moses lawe, dieth without mercie

Deut.19.15. *vnder two, or three witnesses:

mat.18.16. iohn 8.17. 2.cor 13.1. 29 Of how much sorer punishment suppose ye, shall he be worthie, which treadeth vnder foote the Sonne of God, and counteth ye blood of ye Testament as an vnholy thing, wherewith he was sanctified, and doeth despite the Spirit of grace?

Deu.32.35. rom.12.19. 30 For we know him that hath said, *Vengeance *belongeth* vnto me: I will recompence, saith the Lorde. And againe, The Lord shall iudge his people.

31 It is a feareful thing to fal into ye hands of ye liuing God.

32 Now cal to remēbrance ye daies yt are passed, in ye which, after ye had receiued light, ye endured a great fight in afflictiōs,

33 Partly

33 Partly while ye were made a gazing stocke both by reproches and afflictions, and partly while ye became companions of them which were so tossed to and fro.

34 For both ye sorowed with me for my bonds, and suffered with joy the spoyling of your goods, knowing in your selues how that ye haue in heauen a better, & an enduring substãce.

35 Cast not away therefore your confidence which hath great recompence of reward.

36 For ye haue neede of patience, that after ye haue done the will of God, ye might receiue the promes.

37 For yet a very litle while, and he that shall come, will come, and will not tarie.

38 *Now the iust shall liue by faith: but if *any* withdrawe himselfe, my soule shall haue no pleasure in him. *Habak.2.4. rom.1.17.*

39 But we are not they which withdrawe our selues vnto perdition, but *followe* faith vnto the conseruation of the soule. *galat.3.11.*

## CHAP. XI.

*1 He declareth in the whole chapter, that the Fathers, which frõ the beginning of the world, were approued of God, attained saluation no other way then by faith: & the Iewes may knowe that by the same only, they are knit vnto & Fathers in an holy vnion.*

NOwe faith is the ground of things, which are hoped for, and the euidence of things which are not seene.

2 For by it *our* elders were well reported of.

3 *Through faith we vnderstand that the worlde was ordeined by the worde of God, so that the things which we see, are not made of things, which did appeare. *Gene.1.1. iohn 1.10.*

4 By faith Abel * offered vnto God a greater sacrifice then Cain, by * the which he obteined witnesse that he was righteous, God testifying of his giftes: by the which *faith* also he being dead, yet speaketh. *Gene.4.4. Mat.23.35.*

5 By faith was *Enoch trãslated, & he should not see death: neither was he found: for God had translated him: for before he was trãslated, he was reported of, that he had pleased God. *Gen.5.24.*

6 But without faith it is vnpossible to please *him*: for he that commeth to God, must beleeue that *God* is, and that he is a rewarder of them that seeke him.

7 By faith *Noe being warned of God of the things which were as yet not seene, mooued with reuerence, prepared the Arke to the sauing of his housholde, through the which *Arke* he condemned the worlde, and was made heire of the righteousnesse, which is by faith. *Gene.6.13.*

Gen.12.4. 8 By faith * Abraham when he was called, obeyed *God*, to goe out into a place, which he shoulde afterward receiue for inheritance, and he went out, not knowing whither he went.

9 By faith he abode in the land of promes, as in a strange countrey, as one that dwelt in tentes with Isaac and Iacob, heires with him of the same promes.

10 For he looked for a citie hauing a foundation, whose builder and maker *is* God.

Gen.7.19. and 21.2. 11 Through faith * Sara also receiued strength to conceiue seede, and was deliuered of a childe when she was past age, because she iudged him faithfull which had promised.

12 And therefore sprang there of one, euen of one which was dead, *so many* as the starres of the skie in multitude, and as the sand of the sea shore which is innumerable.

13 All these died in faith, & receiued not the promises, but sawe them a farre off & beleeued *them*, & receiued *them* thankfully, & confessed ỹ they were strangers & pilgrims on ỹ earth.

14 For they that say such things, declare plainely that they seeke a countrey.

15 And if they had bene mindfull of that *countrey*, from whence they came out, they had leisure to haue returned.

16 But now they desire a better, that is an heauenly: wherefore God is not ashamed of them to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a citie.

Gen.22.10. 17 By faith * Abrahā offred vp Isaac, whē he was tryed, and he ỹ had receiued the promises, offred his only begotte Sonne,

Gen.21.12. 18 (To whō it was said, * In Isaac shal thy seede be called,)

rom.9.7. 19 For he considered ỹ God was able to raise *him* vp euen from the dead: from whence he receiued him also after a sort.

Gen.27.28, 39. 20 By faith * Isaac blessed Iacob and Esau, concerning things to come.

Gen.48.15. 21 By faith * Iacob when he was a dying, blessed both the

Gen.47.31. sonnes of Ioseph, and * *leaning* on the ende of his staffe, worshipped *God*.

Gen.50.25. 22 By faith * Ioseph whē he died, made mētion of ỹ departing of ỹ children of Israel, & gaue cōmandemēt of his bones.

Exod.2 2. 23 * By faith Moses when he was borne, was hid three mo-

actes 7.20. neths of his parents, because they sawe he was a proper child,

Exod.1.16. neither feared they the Kings * commandement.

Exod.2.11. 24 By faith * Moses when he was come to age, refused to be called the sonne of Pharaos daughter,

25 And chose rather to suffer aduersitie with the people of

God, then to enioy the pleasures of sinnes for a season,
26 Esteeming ỹ rebuke of Christ greater riches then ỹ treasures of Egypt: for he had respect vnto ỹ recõpense of ỹ reward.
27 By faith he forsooke Egypt, & feared not ỹ fiercenes of the king: for he endured, as he that saw him which is inuisible.
28 Through faith he ordeined ỹ * Passeouer, & the effusion of blood, least he ỹ destroyed ỹ first borne, should touch them. *Exo.12.22.*
29 By faith they * passed through the redde sea as by drye land, which when the Egyptians had assayed to do, they were swallowed vp. *Exo.14.22.*
30 By faith the * walles of Iericho fell downe after they were compassed about seuen dayes. *Iosh.6.20.*
31 By faith the harlot *Rahab perished not w̃ them which obeyed not, when * she had receiued the spies peaceably. *Iosh.6.23.* *Iosh.2.1.*
32 And what shall I more say? for the time would be too short for me to tell of *Gedeon, of *Barac, and of *Sampson, and of *Iephte, also of Dauid, and Samuel, & of the Prophets: *Iudg.6.11.* *Iudg.4.6.*
33 Which through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousnes, obteined the promises, stopped ỹ mouthes of lyons, *Iudg.13.24.* *Iudg.11.1.*
34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, of weake were made strong, waxed valiant in battell, turned to flight the armies of the aliants. *and 12.7.*
35 The women receiued their dead raysed to life: other also were racked, and would not be delinered; that they might receiue a better resurrection.
36 And others haue bene tryed by mockings & scourgings, yea, moreouer by bonds and prisonment.
37 They were stoned, they were hewen asunder, they were tempted, they were slaine with the sworde, they wandred vp and downe in sheepes skinnes, and in goates skinnes, being destitute, afflicted, *and* tormented:
38 Whom ỹ world was not worthy of: they wandred in wildernesses & mountaines, and dennes, & caues of the earth.
39 And these all through faith obtained good report, and receiued not the promes,
40 God prouiding a better thing for vs, that they without vs should not be made perfite.

## CHAP. XII.

1 *He doth not onely by the examples of the fathers before recited, exhort them to patience and constancie, 3 but also by the example of Christ.* 11 *That the chastenings of God cannot be rightly iudged by the outward sense of our flesh,*

Where-

Rom.6.4. col.3.8. ephes.4.24. 1.pet.2.1. WHerefore, * let vs alſo, ſeeing that wee are compaſſed with ſo great a cloud of witneſſes, caſt away euery thing that preſſeth downe, and the ſinne that hangeth ſo faſt on: let vs runne with patience the race that is ſet before vs,

2 Looking vnto Ieſus the authour and finither of our faith, who for the ioy ỹ was ſet before him, endured the croſſe, and deſpiſed the ſhame, & is ſet at ỹ right hand of ỹ throne of God.

3 Conſider therefore him ỹ endured ſuch ſpeaking againſt of ſinners, leaſt ye ſhould be wearied and faint in your mindes.

4 Ye haue not yet reſiſted vnto blood, ſtriuing againſt ſinne.

5 And ye haue forgotten the conſolation, which ſpeaketh vnto you as vnto children, * My ſonne, deſpiſe not the chaſtening of the Lord, neither faint when thou art rebuked of him.

Prou.3.11.

6 For whom the Lord loueth, he chaſteneth: and he ſcourgeth euery ſonne that he receiueth.

7 If ye endure chaſtening, God offreth himſelf vnto you as vnto ſones: for what ſone is it whō the father chaſteneth not?

8 If therfore ye be without correction, whereof al are partakers, then are ye baſtards, and not ſonnes.

9 Moreouer we haue had the fathers of our bodies which corrected vs, & we gaue thē reuerēce: ſhould we not much rather be in ſubiection vnto ỹ Father of ſpirits, ỹ we might liue?

10 For they verely for a few dayes chaſtened vs after their owne pleaſure: but he *chaſteneth vs* for our profite, that we might be partakers of his holineſſe.

11 Nowe no chaſtiſing for the preſent ſeemeth to be ioyous, but grieuous: but afterwarde it bringeth the quiet fruite of righteouſneſſe, vnto them which are thereby exercized.

12 Wherefore liſt vp *your* hands which hang downe, and *your* weake knees,

13 And make ſtraight ſteppes vnto your feete, leſt ỹ which is halting, be turned out of the way, but let it rather be healed.

Rom.12.18. 14 *Followe peace with all men, and holineſſe, without the which no man ſhall ſee the Lord.

15 Take heede, that no man fall away from the grace of God: let no roote of bitterneſſe ſpring vp and trouble *you*, leaſt thereby many be defiled.

Gen.25.33. 16 Let there be no fornicatour, or prophane perſon as * Eſau, which for one portion of meate ſold his birthright.

Gen.27.38. 17 * For ye know how ỹ afterward alſo when he would haue inherited the bleſſing, he was reiected: for he found no place to repentance, though he ſought ỹ *bleſſing* with teares.

18 For

18 For yee are not come vnto the *mount that might be touched, nor vnto burning fire, nor to blacknes, and darkenes, and tempest, *Exo.19.16.*

19 Neither vnto the sounde of a trumpet, and the voyce of wordes, which they that heard it, excused themselues, *that the worde should not be spoken to them any more, *Exo.20.19.*

20 (For they were not able to abide that which was commanded, *Yea, though a beast touch the mountaine, it shalbe stoned, or thrust through with a dart: *Exo.19.12.*

21 And so terrible was the sight which appeared, that Moses sayd, I feare and quake.)

22 But ye are come vnto the mount Sion, and to the citie of the liuing God, the celestiall Hierusalem, and to the companie of innumerable Angels,

23 And to the assembly & congregation of the first borne, which are written in heauen, and to God the iudge of all, and to the spirits of iust and perfite men,

24 And to Iesus the Mediatour of the new Testament, & to ye blood of sprinkling yt speaketh better things then yt of Abel.

25 See yt ye despise not him that speaketh: for if they escaped not which refused him, yt spake on earth: much more shall we *not escape*, if we turne away frō him, yt *speaketh* from heauē.

26 Whose voyce then shooke the earth, and now hath declared, saying, * Yet once more wil I shake, not the earth onely, but also heauen. *Agge.2.7.*

27 And this *worde*, Yet once more, signifieth ye remouing of those things, which are shakē, as of those things, which are made *with hands*, that ye things which are not shaken, may remaine.

28 Wherefore seeing we receiue a kingdome, which can not be shaken, let vs haue grace whereby wee may so serue God, that we may please him with reuerence and feare.

29 For *euen our God *is* a consuming fire. *Deut.4.24.*

## CHAP. XIII.

*1 He giueth good lessōs not only for maners, 7 but also for doctrine.*

LEt *brotherly loue continue. *Rom.12.10.*

2 *Be not forgetfull to enterteine strangers: for thereby some haue *receiued Angels into their houses vnwares. *1.Pet.4.9. Gen.18.3. and 19.3.*

3 Remember them that are in bonds, as though yee were bound with them: and them that are in affliction, as if ye were also *afflicted* in the body.

4 Marriage *is* honourable among all, and the bed vndefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God wil iudge.

5 Let your conuersation be without couetousnes, and be content with those things that ye haue, for he hath sayd,

*Iosh.*1.5. 6 *I wil not faile thee, neither forsake thee:

*Psal.*118.6. 7 So that we may boldly say,* The Lord *is* my helper, neither wil I feare what man can doe vnto me.

8 Remember them which haue the ouersight of you, which haue declared vnto you the word of God: whose faith follow, considering what hath bene the ende of their conuersation. Iesus Christ yesterday, and to day, the same also *is* for euer.

9 Be not caried about with diuers *and* strange doctrines: for it is a good thing that the heart be stablished with grace, *and* not with meates, which haue not profited them that haue bene occupied therein.

10 We haue an altar whereof they haue no authoritie to eate which serue in the Tabernacle.

*Leui.*4.11. *and* 6.30. *and* 16.27. 11 * For the bodies of those beasts whose blood is brought into the Holy place by the hie Priest for sinne, are burnt without the campe.

12 Therefore euen Iesus, that he might sanctifie the people with his owne blood, suffered without the gate.

13 Let vs go forth to him therefore out of the campe, bearing his reproche.

*Mich.*2.10. 14 *For here haue we no continuing citie: but we seeke one to come.

15 Let vs therefore by him offer ȳ sacrifice of praise alwaies

*Hose.*14.3. to God, that is, the *fruit of the lips, which confesse his Name.

16 To doe good, and to distribute forget not: for with such sacrifices God is pleased.

17 Obey them that haue the ouersight of you, and submit your selues: for they watch for your soules, as they that must giue accounts, that they may doe it with ioy, and not with griefe: for that is vnprofitable for you.

18 Pray for vs: for we are assured that we haue a good conscience in all things, desiring to liue honestly.

19 And I desire you somewhat the more earnestly, that ye so doe, that I may be restored to you more quickly.

20 The God of peace that brought againe from the dead our Lord Iesus, the great shepheard of the sheepe, through the blood of the euerlasting Couenant,

21 Make you perfect in all good workes, to doe his will, working in you that which is pleasant in his sight through Iesus Christ, to whome *be* prayse for euer and euer, Amen.

22 I be-

22 I beseech you also brethren, suffer the wordes of exhortation: for I haue written vnto you in fewe wordes.

23 Knowe that *our* brother Timotheus is deliuered, with whome (if he come shortly) I will see you.

24 Salute all them that haue the ouersight of you, and all the Saints. They of Italie salute you.

25 Grace *be* with you all, Amen.

¶ Written to ỹ Hebrewes from Italie, *&* *sent* by Timotheus.

# THE GENERAL EPISTLE OF IAMES.

## CHAP. I.

*4 He entreateth of patience, 6 of faith, 10 and of lowlinesse of minde in rich men. 13 That tentations come not of God for our euill, 17 because he is the authour of all goodnesse. 21 In what maner the worde of life must be receiued.*

IAmes a seruant of God and of the Lorde Iesus Christ, to the twelue Tribes, which are scattered abroad, salutation.

2 My brethren, count it exceeding ioy, when ye fall into diuers tentations,

3 *Knowing that the tryng of your faith bringeth forth patience, *Rom.3.5.*

4 And let patience haue *her* perfect worke, that ye may be perfect and entier, lacking nothing.

5 If any of you lacke wisdome, let him aske of God, which giueth to all men liberally, and reprocheth no man, and it shal be giuen him.

6 *But let him aske in faith, & wauer not: for he that wauereth, is like a waue of the sea, tost of the winde, & caried away. *Mat.7.7. mar.11.24. luke 11.9. iohn 14.13. and 16.25.*

7 Neither let that man thinke that hee shall receiue any thing of the Lord.

8 A double minded man *is* vnstable in all his wayes.

9 Let the brother of low degree reioyce in ỹ he is exalted:

10 Againe he that is rich, in that he is made lowe: for as the flower of the grasse, shall he *vanish away. *Isai.40.6. 1.pet.1.24.*

11 For *as when* the sunne riseth with heate, then the grasse withereth, and his flowre falleth away, and the goodly shape of it perisheth: euen so shall the rich man wither away in *all* his wayes.

12 *Blessed *is* the man, that endureth tentation: for when he is tried, he shall receiue the crowne of life, which the Lord *Iob 5.17.*

hath promised to them that loue him.

13 Let no man say whē he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cānot be tempted w̄ euil, neither tēpteth he any man.

14 But euery man is tempted, when he is drawen away by his owne concupiscence, and is entised.

15 Then when lust hath conceiued, it bringeth forth sinne, and sinne when it is finished, bringeth forth death.

16 Erre not, my deare brethren.

17 Euery good giuing, & euery perfect gift is from aboue, and commeth downe from the Father of lightes, with whome is no variablenes, neither shadowe of turning.

18 Of his owne will begat he vs with the worde of trueth, that we should be as the first fruites of his creatures.

*Pro.17.27.* 19 Wherefore my deare brethren,* let euery man be swift to heare, slowe to speake, *and* slowe to wrath.

20 For the wrath of man doeth not accomplish the righteousnes of God.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthines, and superfluitie of maliciousnes, *and* receiue with meekenes the worde that is graffed in you, which is able to saue your soules.

*Mat.7.21. rom.2.13.* 22 * And be ye doers of the worde, and not hearers onely, deceiuing your owne selues.

23 For if any heare the worde, and doe it not, he is like vnto a man that beholdeth his naturall face in a glasse.

24 For when hee hath considered himselfe, hee goeth his way, and forgetteth immediatly what maner of one he was.

25 But who so looketh in the perfect Law of libertie, and continueth *therein*, hee not being a forgetfull hearer, but a doer of the worke, shalbe blessed in his deede.

26 If any man among you seemeth religious, and refraineth not his tongue, but deceiueth his owne heart, this mans religion *is* vaine.

27 Pure religion and vndefiled before God, euen the Father, is this, to visite the fatherles, and widowes in their aduersitie, *and* to keepe himselfe vnspotted of the world.

## CHAP. II.

1 *He saith, that to haue respect of persons is not agreeable to Christian faith,* 14 *which to professe in wordes is not ynough, vnlesse* 15 *we shewe it also in deedes of mercie and charitie,* 21 *after the example of Abraham.*

*Leui.19.15. deut.1.17. and 16.19. prou.24.23.* MY brethren, haue not the faith of our glorious Lord Iesus Christ * in respect of persons.

2 For

2 For if there come into your company a man with a gold ring, and in goodly apparell, and there come in also a poore man in vile raiment,

3 And ye haue respect to him that weareth ỹ gay clothing, and say vnto him, Sit thou here in a goodly place, and say vnto the poore, Stand thou there, or sit here vnder my footestoole,

4 Are ye not partiall in your selues, and are become iudges of euill thoughtes?

5 Hearken my beloued brethren, hath not God chosen the poore of this world, *that they should be* rich in faith, & heires of the kingdome which he promised to them that loue him?

6 But ye haue despised ỹ poore. Do not ỹ rich oppresse you by tyranny, & do not they draw you before ỹ iudgment seats?

7 Doe not they blaspheme the worthy Name after which ye be named?

8 But if ye fulfill the royall Lawe, according to the Scripture, *which saith*, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe, ye doe well.

9 But if ye regarde the persons, ye commit sinne, and are rebuked of the Lawe, as transgressours.

10 For whosoeuer shall keepe the whole Lawe, *and* yet faileth in one *point*, he is guiltie of all.

11 For he that said, Thou shalt not commit adulterie, sayd also, Thou shalt not kill. Nowe though thou doest none adulterie, yet if thou killest, thou art a transgressour of the Lawe.

12 So speake ye, and so doe, as they that shalbe iudged by the Lawe of libertie.

13 For there shall be condemnation merciles to him that sheweth not mercy, & mercy reioiceth against condemnation.

14 What auaileth it, my brethren, though a man saith hee hath faith, when he hath no workes? can that faith saue him?

15 For if a brother or a sister be naked, & destitute of dayly foode,

16 And one of you say vnto them, Depart in peace: warme your selues, & fil your bellies: notwithstanding ye giue them not those things which are needeful to the body, what helpeth it?

17 Euen so the faith, if it haue no workes, is dead in it selfe.

18 But some man might say, Thou hast the faith, & I haue workes: shewe me thy faith out of thy workes, and I will shewe thee my faith by my workes.

19 Thou beleeuest that there is one God: thou doest well: the deuils also beleeue it, and tremble.

20 But wilt thou vnderstand, O thou vaine man, that the faith *which is* without workes, is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our father iustified through workes, *when he offered Isaac his sonne vpon the altar?

Gen.22.10.

22 Seest thou not that the faith wrought with his workes? and through the workes was the faith made perfect.

23 And the Scripture was fulfilled which sayth, *Abraham beleeued God, and it was imputed vnto him for righteousnes: and he was called the friend of God.

Gen.15.6. rom.4.3. gala.3.6.

24 Ye see then howe that of workes a man is iustified, and not of faith onely.

25 Likewise also was not *Rahab the harlot iustified through workes, when she had receiued the messengers, and sent them out another way?

Iosh.2.1.

26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, euen so the faith without workes is dead.

## CHAP. III.

*3 To shew that a Christian man must gouerne his tongue with the bridle of faith and charitie, 9 he declareth the commodities and mischifes that insue thereof: 15 and how much mans wisdome 17 differeth from heauenly.*

MY brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receiue the greater condemnation.

2 For in many things we ‖ sinne all: If any man sinne not in worde, he is a perfect man, and able to bridle all the body.

‖ Or, stumble.

3 Beholde, we put bits into the horses mouthes that they should obey vs, and we turne about all their body.

4 Behold also the shippes, which though they be so great, and are driuen of fierce windes, yet are they turned about with a very smal rudder, whithersoeuer the gouernour listeth.

5 Euen so the tongue is a litle member, and boasteth of great things: beholde how great a thing a litle fire kindleth.

6 And ye tongue is fire, *yea*, a world of wickednes: so is the tongue set among our members, ye it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature, & it is set on fire of hel.

7 For the whole nature of beasts, and of birds, and of creeping things, and things of the sea is tamed, and hath bene tamed of the nature of man.

8 But the tongue can no man tame. *It is* an vnruly euil, full of deadly poyson.

9 Therewith blesse we God euen the Father, & therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God.

10 Out

10 Out of one mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing: my brethren, these things ought not so to be.

11 Doeth a fountaine send forth at one place sweete *water* and bitter?

12 Can the fig tree, my brethren, bring forth olives, either a vine figs? so can no fountaine make both salt water & sweete.

13 Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you? let him shew by good conuersation his works in meekenesse of wisdome.

14 But if ye haue bitter enuying and strife in your hearts, reioyce not, neither be lyars against the trueth.

15 This wisdome descendeth not from aboue, but *is* earthly, sensuall, and deuilish.

16 For where enuying and strife *is*, there *is* sedition, and all maner of euill workes.

17 But the wisdome that *is* from aboue, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, easie to be entreated, full of mercy & good fruites, without iudging, and without hypocrisie,

18 And the fruite of righteousnes is sowen in peace, of them that make peace.

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 He reckoneth vp the mischiefes that proceede of the workes of the flesh. 7 He exhorteth to humilitie, 8 and to purge the heart 9 from pride, 10 backbiting, 14 and the forgetfulnesse of our owne infirmitie.*

FRō whence *are* warres & contentions among you? are they not hence, *euen* of your pleasures, y fight in your members?

2 Ye lust, & haue not: ye enuie, & desire immoderatly, & can not obtaine: ye fight & war, & get nothing, because ye aske not,

3 Ye aske, and receiue not, because ye aske amisse, that ye might lay the same out on your pleasures.

4 Ye adulterers & adultresses, know ye not that the amitie of the world is the enimitie of God? Whosoeuer therefore wil be a friend of the world, maketh himselfe the enemie of God.

5 Doe ye thinke that the Scripture saith in vaine, The spirit that dwelleth in vs, lusteth after enuie?

6 But *the Scripture* offereth more grace, & therefore saith, *God resisteth the proude, and giueth grace to the humble.

7 *Submit your selues to God: resist the deuill, & he will flee from you. *Pro.3.34. 1.pet.5.5.

8 Draw neere to God, & he will draw neere to you. Clense your hands, ye sinners, & purge your hearts, ye double minded. *Ephes.4.27.

9 Suffer afflictions, and sorow ye, & weepe: let your laughter be turned into mourning, and *your* ioy into heauines.

1.Pet.5.6. 10 *Cast downe your selues before the Lord, and he wil lift you vp.

11 Speake not euil one of another, brethren. He ỹ speaketh euil of his brother, or he ỹ condemneth his brother, speaketh euil of the Law, & condemneth the Law: and if thou condemnest the Law, thou art not an obseruer of the Law, but a iudge.

12 There is one lawgiuer, which is able to saue, and to destroy. * Who art thou that iudgest another man?

Rom.14.4.

13 Go to now ye ỹ say, To day or to morow we wil go into such a citie, & continue there a yeere, & buy & sel, & get gaine,

14 (And yet yee can not tell what *shall be* to morowe. For what is your life? It is euen a vapour that appeareth a little time, and afterward vanisheth away)

15 For that ye ought to say, * If the Lord will, and, if we

1.Cor.4.19. liue, we will doe this or that.

16 But ye reioice in your boastings: al such reioicing is euil.

17 Therefore, to him that knoweth howe to doe well, and doeth it not, to him it is sinne.

## CHAP. V.

*1 He threatneth the rich ẅ Gods seuere iudgmẽt, for their pride, 7 that the poore hearing the miserable end of the rich, 8 may patiently beare afflictiõs, 11 as Iob did, 14 eue in their distresses.*

GOe to nowe, ye riche men: weepe, and howle for your miseries that shall come vpon you.

2 Your riches are corrupt, & your garments are motheaten.

3 Your golde and siluer is cankred, and the rust of them shall be a witnes against you, and shall eate your flesh, as *it were* fire. Ye haue heaped vp treasure for the last dayes.

4 Beholde, the hire of the labourers, which haue reaped your fieldes (which is of you kept backe by fraude) cryeth, and the cryes of them which haue reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of hostes.

5 Ye haue lined in pleasure on the earth, and in wantonnes. Yee haue nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter.

6 Ye haue condemned *and* haue killed the iust, and he hath not resisted you.

7 Be patient therefore, brethren, vnto the comming of the Lorde. Beholde, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruite of the earth, and hath long patience for it, vntill hee receiue the former, and the latter raine.

8 Be

8 Be ye also pacient therefore and settle your heartes: for the comming of the Lord draweth neere.

9 Grudge not one against another, brethren, least ye bee condemned: beholde, the iudge standeth before the doore.

10 Take, my brethren, the Prophets for an ensample of suffering aduersitie, and of long patience, which haue spoken in the Name of the Lord.

11 Beholde, we count them blessed which endure. Ye haue heard of the pacience of Iob, and haue knowen what ende the Lord *made*. For the Lord is very pitifull and mercifull.

12 But before all things, my brethren, *sweare not, neither *Matt.5.34.*
by heauen, nor by earth, nor by any other othe: but let your yea, be yea, and *your* nay, nay, lest ye fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? Let him pray. Is any merie? Let him sing.

14 Is any sicke among you? Let him call for the Elders of the Church, and let them pray for him, and anoint him with *oyle in the Name of the Lord. *Mar.6.13.*

15 And the prayer of faith shall saue the sicke, & the Lord shall raise him vp: and if he haue committed sinnes, they shall be forgiuen him.

16 Acknowledge your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed: for the prayer of a righteous man availeth much, if it be feruent.

17 *Helias was a man subiect to like passions as wee are, *1.King.17.1.*
and hee prayed earnestly that it might not raine, and it rained *and 18.45.*
not on the earth for three yeeres and sixe moneths. *luke 4.25.*

18 And hee prayed againe, and the heauen gaue raine, and the earth brought foorth her fruite.

19 Brethren, *if any of you hath erred from the trueth, and *Mat.18.15.*
some man hath conuerted him,

20 Let him knowe that he which hath conuerted the sinner from going astray out of his way, shall saue a soule from death, and shall hide a multitude of sinnes.

# THE FIRST EPISTLE GENERAL OF PETER.

## CHAP. I.

*1 He extolleth Gods mercie shewed in Christ, 7 which we lay hold on by faith, and possesse through hope: 10 wherof the Prophets foretold. 13 He exhorteth 15 to renounce the world, 23 and their former life, and so wholly yeelde themselues to God.*

PETER

PEter an Apoſtle of Ieſus Chriſt, to the ſtrangers ỹ dwel here & there throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Aſia and Bithinia,

2 Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father vnto ſanctification of the Spirite, through obedience and ſprinkling of the blood of Ieſus Chiiſt: Grace and peace be multiplied vnto you.

3 Bleſſed *be* God, euen the Father of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, which according to his aboundant mercie hath begotten vs againe vnto a liuely hope by the reſurrection of Ieſus Chriſt from the dead,

4 To an inheritance immortall and vndefiled, and that withereth not, reſerued in heauen for vs,

5 Which are kept by the power of God through faith vnto ſaluation, which is prepared to be ſhewed in the laſt time.

6 Wherein ye reioyce, though nowe for a ſeaſon (if neede require) ye are in heauineſſe, through manifolde tentations,

7 That the triall of your faith, being much more precious then golde that periſheth (though it be tried with fire) might be found vnto *your* praiſe, and honour and glory at the appearing of Ieſus Chriſt:

8 Whome ye haue not ſeene, and yet loue *him*, in whome now, though ye ſee him not, yet doe you beleeue, and reioyce with ioy vnſpeakeable and glorious,

9 Receiuing the ‖ ende of your faith, *euen* the ſaluation of *your* ſoules. ‖ Or, reward.

10 Of the which ſaluation the Prophets haue inquired and ſearched, which prophecied of the grace that ſhould come vnto you,

11 Searching when or what time the Spirit which teſtified before of Chriſt which was in them, ſhould declare ỹ ſuffrings *that ſhould come* vnto Chriſt, & the glorie that ſhould follow.

12 Vnto whom it was reuealed, that not vnto themſelues, but vnto vs they ſhould miniſter the thinges which are nowe ſhewed vnto you by them which haue preached vnto you the Goſpel by the holy Ghoſt ſent downe from heauen, the which things the Angels deſire to beholde.

13 Wherefore, gird vp the loynes of your minde: be ſober, and truſt perfectly on that grace that is brought vnto you, in the reuelation of Ieſus Chriſt,

14 As obedient children, not faſhioning your ſelues vnto

the former lustes of your ignorance:

15 But as he which hath called you, is holy, so be ye holy in * all maner of conuersation, *Luke 1.75.*

16 Because it is written, *Be ye holy, for I am holy. *Leui.11.44.*

17 And if yee call him Father, which without * respect of persons iudgeth according to euery mans worke, passe the time of your dwelling here in feare, *and 19. 2. and 20.7. Deut. 10.17.*

18 Knowing that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as siluer and golde, from your vaine conuersation, receiued by the traditions of the fathers, *rom. 2.11. galat.2.6. 1.Cor.6.20.*

19 * But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lambe vndefiled, and without spot. *and 7.23. hebr.9.14.*

20 Which was * ordeined before the foundation of the world, but was declared in the last times for your sakes, *1.iohn 1.7. reuel.1.5.*

21 Which by his meanes doe beleeue in God that raised him from the dead, and gaue him glorie, that your faith and hope might be in God. *Rom.16 25. ephes.3.9. colos.1.26.*

22 Hauing purified your soules in obeying the trueth through the Spirit, to * loue brotherly without fayning, loue one another with a pure heart feruently, *2 tim.1.10. titus 1.2. Chap.2.17.*

23 Being borne a newe, not of mortall seede, but of immortall, by the word of God, who liueth and endureth for euer. *rom.2.10. ephes.4.2.*

24 For all * flesh *is* as grasse, and all the glorie of man *is* as the flower of grasse. The grasse withereth, and the flower falleth away. *Isa.40.6. iames 1.10.*

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for euer: and this is the word which is preached among you.

## CHAP. II.

*1 He exhorteth the new borne in faith, to leade their lines answerable to the same: 6 and left their faith shoulde stagger, he bringeth in that which was foretolde touching Christ. 11 Then hee willeth them to bee obedient to Magistrates, 21 and that they patiently beare aduersitie after Christes example.*

WHerefore, * laying aside al maliciousnes and all guile, and dissimulation, and ennie, and all euill speaking, *Rom.6.4. ephes.4.23.*

2 As newe borne babes desire that sincere milke of the word, that ye may growe thereby, *colos.3 8. hebr.12.1.*

3 Because ye haue tasted that the Lord *is* bountifull.

4 To whom comming as vnto a liuing stone disalowed of men, but chosen of God, *and* precious,

5 Ye also as liuely stones, be made a spirituall house, an holy * Priesthoode to offer vp spiritual sacrifices acceptable to *Reuel.1.6.*

God

God by Ieſus Chriſt.

*Iſa.28.16.* 6 Wherefore alſo it is cõteined in the Scripture,* Behold,
*rom.9.33.* I put in Sion a chiefe corner ſtone, elect and precious: and he
that beleeueth therein,ſhall not be aſhamed.

7 Vnto you therefore which beleeue, it is precious: but
*Pſa.118.22.* vnto them which be diſobedient, the* ſtone which the buil-
*matt.21.42.* ders diſalowed,the ſame is made the head of the corner,
*actes.4.11.* 8 And a* ſtone to ſtumble at, and a rocke of offence, euen
*Iſa.8.14.* *to them* which ſtumble at the worde, being diſobedient, vnto
*rom.9.33.* the which thing they were euen ordeined.
*Exod.19.6.* 9 But ye are a choſen generation, a royall* Prieſthoode,an
holy nation,a people ſet at libertie,that ye ſhould ſhew forth
the vertues of him that hath called you out of darkenes into
his marueilous light,

*Hoſe.2.23.* 10 *Which in time paſt were not a people, yet *are* nowe
*rom.9.25.* the people of God: which in time paſt were not vnder mer-
cie,but now haue obteined mercie.

11 Dearely beloued,I beſeech you,as ſtrangers & pilgrims,
*Rom.13.14.* *abſtaine from fleſhly luſtes,which fight againſt the ſoule,
*galat.5.16.* 12 *And haue your converſation honeſt among the Gen-
*Chap.3.16.* tiles,that they which ſpeake euill of you as of euil doers, may
*Mat.5.16.* by *your* *good workes which they ſhal ſee,glorifie God in the
day of viſitation.

*Rom.13.1.* 13 *Therefore ſubmit your ſelues vnto all maner ordinance
of man for the Lords ſake, whether it be vnto the King,as vn-
to the ſuperiour,

14 Or vnto gouernours, as vnto them that are ſent of him,
for the puniſhment of euill doers, and for the praiſe of them
that doe well.

15 For ſo is the wil of God,that by well doing ye may put
to ſilence the ignorance of the fooliſh men,

16 As free,and not as hauing the libertie for a cloke of ma-
liciouſnes, but as the ſeruants of God.

*Chap.1.22.* 17 Honour all men:*loue brotherly felowſhip:feare God:
*rom.12.10.* honour the King.
*Epheſ.5.6.* 18 *Seruants,be ſubiect to your maſters with all feare,not
*coloſ.3.22.* onely to the good and courteous,but alſo to the froward.
*2.Cor.7.10.* 19 * For this is thanke worthy,if a man for conſcience to-
ward God endure griefe ſuffering wrongfully.

20 For what praiſe is it,if when ye bee buffeted for your
faults,ye take it paciently? but and if when ye do well,ye ſuf-
fer *wrong* and take it paciently,this is acceptable to God.

21 For

21 For hereunto ye are called: for Christ also suffred for you, leaving you an ensample that ye should folow his steppes.

22 *Who did no sinne, neither was there guile founde in his mouth. *Isa.53.9. 1.Iohn 3.5.

23 Who when hee was reuiled, reuiled not againe: when hee suffered, hee threatned not, but committed it to him that iudgeth righteously.

24 *Who his owne selfe bare our sinnes in his body on the tree, that we being dead to sinne, should line in righteousnes: by whose stripes ye were healed. *Isa.53.5. matth.8.17.

25 For ye were as sheepe going astray: but are now returned vnto the shepheard and Bishop of your soules.

## CHAP. III.

*1 That Christian women shoulde not contemne their husbandes though they be infidels, 5 he bringeth in examples of godly wome. 8 Generall exhortations, 14 patiently to beare persecutions, 15 and boldly to yeeld a reason of their faith. 18 Christs example.*

LIkewise * let the wiues be subiect to their husbandes, that euen they which obey not the worde, may without the word be wonne by the conuersation of the wiues, Coloss 3.18. ephes.5.22.

2 While they beholde your pure conuersation, which is with feare.

3 *Whose apparelling, let it not be that outward, w broyded heare, and golde put about, or in putting on of apparell: 2.Tim.2.9.

4 But let it be the hid man of the heart, *which consisteth* in the incorruption of a meeke and quiet spirit, which is before God a thing much set by.

5 For euen after this maner in time past did the holy women, which trusted in God, tire themselues, and were subiect to their husbands.

6 As Sara obeyed Abraham, and * called him Syr: whose daughters ye are, whiles ye do well, not being afraide of any terror. Gen. 18.12.

7 *Likewise yee husbandes, dwell with them as men of knowledge, giuing honour vnto the woman, as vnto the weaker vessel, euen as they which are heires together of the grace of life, that your prayers be not interrupted. 1.Cor.7.3.

8 Finally, be ye all of one minde: one suffer with another: loue as brethren: *be* pitifull: *be* courteous,

9 *Not rendring euil for euill, neither rebuke for rebuke: but contrarywise blesse, knowing that yee are thereunto called, that ye should be heires of blessing. Prou.17.13. and 20 22. matth.5 39. rom.12.17.

10 *For 1.Pet.5.15.

*Psal.*34.13. 10 * For if any man long after life, and to see good dayes, let him refraine his tongue from euill, and his lippes that they speake not guile,

*Isa.*1.16. 11 *Let him eschew euil, and do good: let him seeke peace, and follow after it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord *are* ouer the righteous, and his eares *are open* vnto their prayers: and the face of the Lorde *is* against them that doe euill.

13 And who is it that will harme you, if yee followe that which is good?

*Matt.*5.10. 14 *Notwithstanding blessed *are ye*, if ye suffer for righte-
*Isa.*8.12,13. ousnes sake. Yea, *feare not their feare, neither be troubled.

15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts: and be ready alwayes to giue an answere to euery man ỹ asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekenes and reuerence,

16 Hauing a good conscience, that when they speake euill of you as of euill doers, they may be ashamed, which slander your good conuersation in Christ.

17 For *it is* better (if the will of God be so) that ye suffer for well doing, then for euill doing.

*Rom.*5.6. 18 *For Christ also hath once suffred for sinnes, the iust for
*hebr.*9.15. the vniust, that he might bring vs to God, & was put to death concerning the flesh, but was quickened by the spirit.

19 By the which hee also went, and preached vnto the spirits that *are* in prison.

20 Which were in time passed disobedient, when once the
*Gene.*6.14. long suffering of God abode in the dayes of * Noe, while the
*matt.*24.38. Arke was preparing, wherein few, that is, eight soules were
*luke* 17.26. saued in the water.

21 Whereof the baptisme *that* nowe *is*, answering that figure, (*which is* not a putting away of the filth of the flesh, but a confident demaunding which a good conscience maketh to God) saueth vs also by the resurrection of Iesus Christ,

22 Which is at the right hande of God, gone into heauen, to whome the Angels, and powers, and might are subiect.

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 He bringeth in Christes example, and applieth it, 6 to the mortifying of the flesh, 8 especially commending Charitie: 12 And so entreateth of patience. 17 That it is necessarie that correction beginne at the Church.*

FOrasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for vs in the flesh, arme your selues likewise with the same minde, *which is*, that

that he which hath ſuffred in the fleſh, hath ceaſſed from ſinne,
2 That he henceforwarde ſhould liue (as much time as remaineth in the fleſh) not after the luſtes of men, but after the will of God.
3 * For it is ſufficient for vs that wee haue ſpent the time paſt of the life, after the luſt of the Gentiles, walking in wantonneſſe, luſts, drunkennes, in gluttonie, drinkings, and in abominable idolatries. *Epheſ.4.22.*
4 Wherein it ſeemeth to them ſtrange, ỹ ye run not ẅ them vnto the ſame exceſſe of riot: *therfore* ſpeake they euil *of you*,
5 Which ſhal giue accounts to him, that is ready to iudge quicke and dead.
6 For vnto this purpoſe was the Goſpel preached alſo vnto the dead, that they might be condemned, according to men in the fleſh, but might liue according to God in the ſpirit.
7 Nowe the ende of all things is at hand. Be ye therefore ſober, and watching in prayer.
8 But aboue all things haue feruent loue among you: * for loue ſhall couer the multitude of ſinnes. *Prou.10.12.*
9 Be ye * harberous one to another without grudging. *Rom.12.13.*
10 * Let euery man as hee hath receiued the gift, miniſter the ſame one to another, as good diſpoſers of the manifolde grace of God. *hebr.13.2. Rom.12.6. phil.2.14.*
11 If any man ſpeake, *let him ſpeake* as the words of God. If any man miniſter, *let him do it* as of the abilitie which God miniſtreth, that God in al things may be glorified through Ieſus Chriſt, to whom is praiſe & dominion for euer, & euer, Amen.
12 Dearely beloued, thinke it not ſtrange concerning the firie triall, which is among you to proue you, as though ſome ſtrange thing were come vnto you:
13 But reioyce, inaſmuch as ye are partakers of Chriſts ſuffrings, that when his glorie ſhall appeare, ye may be glad and reioyce.
14 * If ye be railed vpon for the Name of Chriſt, bleſſed *are ye:* for the ſpirit of glory, and of God reſteth vpon you: *which* on their part is euil ſpoken of: but on your part is glorified. *Matt.5.10.*
15 But let none of you ſuffer as a murtherer, or *as* a thiefe, or an euil doer, or as a buſie bodie in other mens matters.
16 But if *any man ſuffer* as a Chriſtian, let him not be aſhamed: but let him glorifie God in this behalfe.
17 For the time *is come*, that iudgement muſt begin at the houſe of God. If it firſt *beginne* at vs, what ſhall the ende be of them

them which obey not the Gospel of God?

*Prou.2.31.* 18 *And if the righteous scarcely be saued, where shall the vngodly and the sinner appeare?

19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the wil of God, cõmit their soules *to him* in wel doing, as vnto a faithful Creator.

## CHAP. V.

*1 He warneth the elders not to vsurpe authority ouer the Church, 5 willing the yoger sort to be willing to be taught, & to be modest, 8 to be sober and watchfull to resist the cruel aduersarie.*

THe Elders which are among you, I beseech which am also an Elder, and a witnes of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glorie that shalbe reuealed,

2 Feede the flocke of God, which dependeth vpon you, caring for it not by constraint, but willingly: not for filthie lucre, but of a readie minde:

3 Not as though yee were lordes ouer *Gods* heritage, but that ye may be ensamples to the flocke.

4 And when that chiefe Shepheard shall appeare, ye shall receiue an incorruptible crowne of glorie.

5 Likewise ye yonger, submit your selues vnto the Elders,

*Rom.12.10.* and submit your selues euery man one to another: * decke

*Iames 4.6.* your selues inwardly in lowlines of minde: for *God resisteth the proude, and giueth grace to the humble.

*Iames 4.10.* 6 Humble * your selues therefore vnder the mightie hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time.

*Psal.55.23.* 7 *Cast all your care on him: for he careth for you.

*matth.6.25.* 8 Be sober and watch: for * your aduersarie the deuill as a

*Iuke 12.22.* roaring lyon walketh about, seeking whom he may deuoure:

*Luke 22.31.* 9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren which are in the worlde.

10 And the God of all grace, which hath called vs vnto his eternal glory by Christ Iesus, after that ye haue suffered a litle, make you perfect, confirme, strengthen, and stablish *you*.

11 To him *be* glorie & dominion for euer and euer, Amen.

12 By Siluanus a faithfull brother vnto you, as I suppose, haue I written briefly, exhorting and testifying how that this is the true grace of God, wherein ye stand.

13 *The Church* that is at Babylon elected together with

*Rom.16.16.* you, saluteth you, and Marcus my sonne.

*1.cor.16.20.* 14 Greete ye one another with the * kisse of loue. Peace *be*

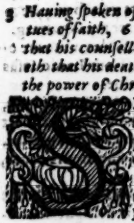
*2.cor.13.12.* with you all which are in Christ Iesus, AMEN.

THE

# THE SECOND EPISTLE GENERAL OF PETER.

## CHAP. I.

*3 Hauing spoken of the bountifulnes of God, 5 and of the vertues of faith, 6 he exhorteth them to holines of life, 12 and that his counsell may bee the more effectuall, 14 hee sheweth that his death is at hande, 16 and that himselfe did see the power of Christ which he opened vnto them.*



SImon Peter a seruant and an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to you which haue obteined like precious faith with vs by the righteousnes of our God and Sauiour Iesus Christ:

2 Grace & peace be multiplied to you, through the knowledging of God and of IESVS our Lord,

3 According as his diuine power hath giuen vnto vs all things that *perteine* vnto life & godlines, through ỹ acknowledging of him that hath called vs vnto glory and vertue.

4 Whereby most great, & precious promises are giuẽ vnto vs, that by them yee should be partakers of ỹ diuine nature, in ỹ ye flee the corruption, which is in the world through lust.

5 Therefore giue euen all diligence thereunto: ioyne moreouer vertue with your faith: and w̃ vertue, knowledge:

6 And with knowledge, temperance: and with temperance, patience: and with patience, godlines:

7 And with godlinesse, brotherly kindnesse: and with brotherly kindnes, loue.

8 For if these things be among you, and abound, they will make you that yee neither shall be idle, nor vnfruitfull in the knowledging of our Lord Iesus Christ:

9 For he that hath not these things, is blind, & cannot see far off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sinnes.

10 Wherfore, brethrẽ, giue rather diligẽce to make your calling & election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shal neuer fal.

11 For by this meanes an entring shall be ministred vnto you abundantly into the euerlasting kingdome of our Lorde and Sauiour Iesus Christ.

12 Wherefore, I will not be negligent to put you alwaies in remembrance of these things, though that yee haue knowledge, and be stablished in the present trueth.

13 For I thinke it meete as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stirre you vp by putting you in remembrance:

14 Seeing I know that the time is at hand that I must lay
*John* 21.18. downe this my tabernacle, euen as our Lord Iesus Christ hath *shewed me.

15 I wil endeuour therefore alwaies, that ye also may be able to haue remembrance of these things after my departing.

1. *Cor.* 1.17. and 2.1. 16 *For we followed not deceiueable fables when we opened vnto you the power, and comming of our Lorde Iesus Christ, but with our eyes we sawe his maiestie:

17 For he receiued of God the Father honour and glorie, when there came such a voyce to him from that excellent
*Mat.* 17.5. glory, *This is my beloued Sõne, in whom I am wel pleased.

18 And this voyce we heard when it came from heauen, being with him in the holy mount.

19 We haue also a most sure word of the Prophets, to the which ye doe wel that ye take heede, as vnto a light that shineth in a darke place, vntill the day dawne, and the day starre arise in your hearts.

2. *Tim.* 3.16. 20 *So that yee first knowe this, that no prophecie of the Scripture is of any priuate interpretation.

21 For the prophecie came not in olde time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were mooued by the holy Ghost.

## CHAP. II.

*1 He foretelleth them of false teachers, 3 whose wicked sleights and destruction he declareth. 12 He cõpareth them to brute beastes, 17 and to welles without water, 20 because they seeke to withdrawe men from God to their old filthines.*

BVt there were false prophets also among ỹ people, euen as there shalbe false teachers among you: which priuily shall bring in damnable heresies, euen denying the Lord, that hath bought them, and bring vpon themselues swift damnation.

2 And many shall follow their destructions, by whom the way of trueth shall be euill spoken of,

3 And through couetousnesse shal they with fained words make marchandise of you, whose condemnation long since resteth not, and their destruction slumbreth not.

*Iob.* 4.18. and 15.6. 4 For if God spared not the *Angels that had sinned, but cast them downe into hell, and deliuered them into chaines of darkenes, to be kept vnto damnation:

*Gen.* 7.1. 5 Neither hath spared the olde world, but saued *Noe the eight *person*, a preacher of righteousnesse, and brought in the flood vpon the world of the vngodly,

6 And

6 And * turned the cities of Sodome and Gomorrhe into ashes, condemned them and ouerthrew them, and made them an ensample vnto them that after should liue vngodly, *Gen.19.15, 24.*

7 And deliuered iust Lot vexed with the vncleanely conuersation of the wicked:

8 (For hee being righteous, and dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day to day with their vnlawfull deedes)

9 The Lord knoweth to deliuer the godly out of tentation, and to reserue the vniust vnto the day of iudgement vnder punishment.

10 And chiefly them that walke after the flesh, in the lust of vncleannesse, and despise gouernement, *which are* bolde, and stand in their owne conceit, and feare not to speake euill of them that are in dignitie.

11 Whereas the Angels which are greater both in power & might, giue not railing iudgemēt against them before ỹ Lord.

12 But these, as naturall bruite beasts, led with sensualitie, and made to bee taken and destroied, speake euill of those things which they knowe not, and shall perish through their owne corruption,

13 And shall receiue the wages of vnrighteousnesse, as they which count it pleasure daily to liue deliciously: ‖Spots *they are* and blottes, deliting them selues in their deceiuings, in feasting with you, ‖Or, little rockes.

14 Hauing eyes full of adulterie, and that cannot cease to sinne, beguiling vnstable soules: they haue hearts exercised with couetousnesse, *they are* the children of curse:

15 Which forsaking the right way, haue gone astray, following the way of * Balaam, *the sonne* of Bosor, which loued *Nom.22.23,* the wages of vnrighteousnesse,

16 But he was rebuked for his iniquity: *for* ỹ dumme beast speaking w̄ mans voice, forbade ỹ foolishnes of the Prophet.

17 * These are welles wout water, & clouds caried about *Iude 12,* w̄ a tempest, to whom the blacke darknes is reserued for euer.

18 For in speaking swelling words of vanitie, they beguile with wantonnes through the lusts of the flesh them that were cleane escaped from them which are wrapped in errour,

19 Promising vnto them libertie, and are themselues the * seruaunts of corruption: for of whomsoeuer a man is ouercome, euen vnto the same is he in bondage. *John 8.34, rom.6.20,*

20 *For if they, after they haue escaped frō the filthines of *Mat 12 45.* the *lob.6.4.*

the world, through the acknowledging of the Lord, and of the
saiuour Iesus Christ, are yet tangled againe therein, and ouer-
come, the latter ende is worse with them then the beginning.
21 For it had bene better for them, not to haue acknowled-
ged ỹ way of righteousnes, then after they haue acknowled-
ged it, to turne from the holy cõmaudemẽt giuen vnto them.
22 But it is come vnto them according to the true pro-
*Pro.26.11.* uerbe, *The dogge is returned to his owne vomite: and, The
sowe that was washed, to the wallowing in the myre.

## CHAP. III.

*1 He sheweth that he writeth the same things againe, 2 be-
cause they must often be stirred vp, 4 because dangers hang
ouer their heads through certaine mockers: 8 therefore hee
warneth the godly that they doe not after the iudgement of the
flesh 12 appoynt the day of the Lorde, 14 but that they
thinke it alwaies at hande, 15 in which doctrine he sheweth
that Paul agreeth with him.*

THis secõd Epistle I now write vnto you, beloued, where-
with I stirre vp, and warne your pure mindes,
2 To call to remembrance the wordes, which were tolde
before of the holy Prophets, and also the commandement of
vs the Apostles of the Lord and Sauiour.
*1.Tim.4.1.* 3 * This first vnderstande, that there shall come in the last
*2.tim.3.1.* daies, mockers, which will walke after their lustes,
*iude 18.* 4 And say, Where is the promise of his comming? For since
the fathers died, all things continue alike from the beginning
of the creation.
5 For this they willingly know not, that the heauens were
of olde, and the earth that was of the water and by the water,
by the worde of God.
6 Wherefore the worlde that then was, perished, ouer-
flowed with the water.
7 But the heauens and earth, which are nowe, are kept by
the same worde in store, and reserued vnto fire against the day
*Psal.90.4.* of condemnation, and of the destruction of vngodly men.
*Ezek.18.32.* 8 Dearely beloued, be not ignorant of this one thing, that
*and 33.11.* one day is with the Lord, *as a thousand yeres, and a thousand
*2.tim.2.4.* yeres as one day.
*Mat.24.44.* 9 The Lorde of that promise is not slacke (as some men
*1.thes.5.2.* count slackenes) but is patient towardes vs, and *would haue
*reuel 3.3.* no man to perish, but would all men to come to repentance.
*and 6.15.* 10 But the * day of the Lorde will come as a thiefe in the
night,

night,in the which the heauens shall passe away with a noise, and the elements shall melt with heate,and the earth with the workes that are therein,shall be burnt vp.

11 Seeing therefore that all these things must be dissolued, what maner persons ought ye to be in holy conuersation and godlinesse,

12 Looking for,and hasting vnto the comming of that day of God.by the which the heauens being on fire, shalbe dissolued,and the elements shall melt with heate?

13 But we looke for * newe heauens,and a newe earth,according to his promise,wherein dwelleth righteousnesse. *Isai.65.17. and 66.22.*

14 Wherefore,beloued,seeing ỹ ye looke for such things, be diligent that yee may be founde of him in peace, without spot,and blamelesse. *reuc.21.1.*

15 *And suppose that the long suffering of our Lord is saluation, euen as our beloued brother Paul according to the wisedome giuen vnto him wrote to you, *Rom.2.4.*

16 As one,that in all his Epistles speaketh of these things: among the which some things are harde to be vnderstande, which they that are vnlearned and vnstable, wrest, as they *doe* also other Scriptures vnto their owne destruction.

17 Ye therefore beloued,seeing yee knowe these things before,beware,least ye be also plucked away with the errour of the wicked,and fall from your owne stedfastnesse.

18 But growe in grace,and in the knowledge of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ: to him *bee* glory both nowe and for euermore, Amen.

# THE FIRST EPISTLE GENERALL OF IOHN.

## CHAP. I.

1 *He testifieth that he bringeth the eternall woorde wherein is life, 5 and light. 9 God will be mercifull vnto the faithfull,if groning vnder the burden of their sinnes, they learne to flee vnto his mercie.*

THat which was from the beginning, which we haue heard, which we haue seene with these our eyes, which we haue looked vpon, and these hands of ours haue handled of that Word of life,

2 (For that life was made manifest, and we haue seene it, and beare witnesse, and

shewe vnto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was made manifest vnto vs)

3 That, *I say*, which we haue seene and heard, declare we vnto you, that yee may also haue fellowship with vs, and that our fellowship also may be with the Father, & with his Sonne Iesus Christ.

4 And these things write we vnto you, that that your ioy may be full.

5 This then is the message, which we haue heard of him, & *Iohn* 8.12. declare vnto you, that God *is light, & in him is no darkenes.

6 If we say that we haue fellowship with him, and walke in darkenesse, we lie, and doe not truely:

7 But if we walke in ỹ light, as he is in the light, we haue *Hebr.* 9.18. fellowship one with another, and the * blood of Iesus Christ 1. *pet.* 1.19. his sonne cleanseth vs from all sinne.

*reuel* 1.5. 8 *If we say that we haue no sinne, we deceiue ourselues, 1 *Kin.* 8.46. and trueth is not in vs.

2. *chro.* 6.36. 9 If we acknowledge our sinnes, he is faithfull and iust, to *pro.* 20.9. forgiue vs our sinnes, and to cleanse vs from al vnrighteousnes.

10 If we say we haue not sinned, we make him a lyar, and his woorde is not in vs.

## CHAP. II.

*1 He declareth that Christ is our Mediatour and aduocate, 5 and sheweth that the knowledge of God consisteth in holynesse of life, 12 which appertaineth to all sorts, 14 that depende on Christ alone: 15 Then hauing exhorted them to cõtemne the world, 18 he giueth warning that Antichrists be auoided, 24 and that the knowen trueth be stood vnto.*

MY litle children, these things write I vnto you, that yee sinne not: and if any man sinne, we haue an aduocate with the Father, Iesus Christ, the Iust.

2 And he is the reconciliation for our sinnes: and not for ours onely, but also for *the sinnes* of the whole world.

3 And hereby we are sure that we knowe him, if we keepe his commandements.

4 He that saith, I know him, & keepeth not his commaundements, is a lyar, and the trueth is not in him.

5 But he that keepeth his word, in him is the loue of God perfect in deede: hereby we knowe that ye are in him.

6 He that saieth, he remaineth in him, ought euen so to walke, as he hath walked.

7 Brethren, I write no newe commandement vnto you: but an

an olde commaundement, which yee haue had from the beginning: this olde commandement is that worde, which ye haue heard from the beginning.

8 Againe, a newe commaundement I write vnto you, that which is true in him, and also in you: for the darkenesse is past, and that true light nowe shineth.

9 He that saith that he is in that light, and hateth his brother, is in darkenesse vntill this time.

10 * He that loueth his brother, abideth in that light, and there is none occasion of euill in him. *Chap. 4. 14.*

11 But he that hateth his brother, is in darkenes, and walketh in darkenes, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that darkenes hath blinded his eyes.

12 Litle children, I write vnto you, because your sinnes are forgiuen you for his Names sake.

13 I write vnto you, fathers, because ye haue knowen him that is from the beginning. I write vnto you, yong men, because ye haue ouercome that wicked one. I write vnto you, litle children, because ye haue knowen the Father.

14 I haue writtē vnto you, fathers, because ye haue knowen him, that is from the beginning. I haue writtē vnto you, yong men, because yee are strong, and the worde of God abideth in you, and ye haue ouercome that wicked one.

15 Loue not this world, neither the things that are in this world. If any man loue this world, the loue of the Father is not in him.

16 For all that is in this worlde (*as* the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life) is not of the Father, but is of this world.

17 And this worlde passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that fulfilleth the will of God, abideth euer.

18 Litle children, it is the last time, and as yee haue heard that Antichrist shall come, euen nowe are there many Antichrists: whereby we knowe that it is the last time.

19 They went out frō vs, but they were not of vs: for if they had ben of vs, they should haue continued w̄ vs. But this *commeth to passe*, that it might appeare, that they are not all of vs.

20 But yee haue an oyntment from that Holy one, and knowe all things.

21 I haue not written vnto you, because ye know not the trueth: but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the trueth.

22 Who is a liar, but hee that denieth that Iesus is that

Christ? the same is that Antichrist that denieth the Father and the Sonne.

23 Whosoeuer denieth the Sonne, the same hath not the Father.

24 Let therefore abide in you that same which yee haue heard from the beginning. If that which ye haue heard from the beginning, shall remaine in you, yee also shall continue in the Sonne, and in the Father.

25 And this is the promise that he hath promised vs, *euen* that eternall life.

26 These things haue I written vnto you, cõcerning them that deceiue you.

27 But that anoynting which ye receiued of him, dwelleth in you: and yee needе not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and it is true, and is not lying, and as it taught you, ye shall abide in him.

28 And now, litle children, abide in him, that when he shal appeare, we may be bolde, and not be ashamed before him at his comming.

29 If ye know that he is righteous, know ye that he which doeth righteously, is borne of him.

## CHAP. III.

*1 Setting downe the inestimable glorie of this, that we are Gods sonnes, 7 hee sheweth that newnesse of life must be testified by good woorkes, whereof charitie is a manifest token. 19 Of faith, 22 and praying vnto God.*

BEhold, what loue the Father hath giuen to vs, that we should be called the sonnes of God: for this cause this world knoweth you not, because it knoweth not him.

2 Dearely beloued, now are we the sonnes of God, but yet it is not made manifest what we shall be: and we knowe that when he shalbe made manifest, we shalbe like him: for we shal see him as he is.

3 And euery man that hath this hope in him, purgeth him selfe, euen as he is pure.

4 Whosoeuer committeth sinne, transgresseth also the Lawe: for sinne is the transgression of the Lawe.

5 And ye knowe that he was made manifest, that he might *take away our sinnes, and in him is no sinne.

*Esa.53.6,9, 11.1.pet.2. 22,24.

6 Whosoeuer abideth in him, sinneth not: whosoeuer sinneth, hath not seene him, neither hath knowen him.

7 Litle children, let no man deceiue you: hee that doeth righteousnes,

righteousnesse, is righteous, as he is righteous.

8 He that * committeth sinne, is of the deuil: for the deuill sinneth from the beginning: for this purpose was made manifest that Sonne of God, that he might loose the workes of the deuill. *John* 8.44.

9 Whosoeuer is borne of God, sinneth not: for his seede remaineth in him, neither can he sinne, because he is borne of God.

10 In this are the children of God knowen, and the children of the deuil: whosoeuer doeth not righteousnesse, is not of God, neither he that loueth not his brother.

11 For this is the message, that ye heard from the beginning, that * we should loue one another, *Iohn* 13.34.

12 Not as * Cain *which* was of that wicked one, and slewe his brother: and wherefore slewe he him? because his owne workes were euill, and his brothers good. *and* 15.12. *Gene.*4.8.

13 Marueile not, my brethren, though this world hate you.

14 We knowe that we are translated from death vnto life, because we loue the brethren: * he that loueth not *his* brother, abideth in death. *Chap.*2.10. *Ieuit.*19.17.

15 Whosoeuer hateth his brother, is a manslayer: and ye know that no manslayer hath eternall life abiding in him.

16 * Hereby haue we perceiued loue, that he layd downe his life for vs: therefore we ought also to lay downe *our* liues for the brethren. *Iohn* 15.13. *epheſ.*5.2.

17 *And whosoeuer hath this worldes good, and seeth his brother haue neede, & shutteth vp his compassion from him, howe dwelleth the loue of God in him? *Luke* 3.11.

18 My litle children, let vs not loue in worde, neither in tongue *onely*, but in deede and in trueth.

19 For thereby we knowe that we are of the trueth, and shall before him assure our hearts.

20 For if our heart condemne vs, God is greater then our heart, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloued, if our heart condemne vs not, then haue we bo!dnes toward God:

22 *And whatsoeuer we aske we receiue of him, because we keepe his commaundements, and doe those things which are pleasing in his sight. *Chap.*5.14. *mat.*21.22. *iohn* 15.7.

23 *This is then his commaundement. That we beleeue in the Name of his Sonne Iesus Christ, and loue one another, as he gaue commandement. *and* 16.23. *John* 6 23. *and* 17.3.

24 *For

*Ioh.13.34. and 15.10.*

24 *For he that keepeth his commandements dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we knowe that he abideth in vs, *euen* by that Spirit which he hath giuen vs.

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 Hauing spoken somewhat touching the trying of spirites: 4 For some speake after the world, 5 and some after God: 7 He returneth to charitie, 11. 19 and by the example of God he exhorteth to brotherly loue.*

DEarely beloued, beleeue not euery spirite, but trie the spirites whether they are of God: for many false prophets are gone out into this world.

2 Hereby shall ye knowe the Spirit of God, Euery spirite which confesseth that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God.

3 And euery spirite that confesseth not Iesus Christ to be come in the flesh, is not of God: but this is the *spirit* of Antichrist, of whom ye haue heard, how that he should come, and nowe alreadie he is in this worlde.

4 Litle children, ye are of God, and haue ouercome them: for greater is he that is in you, then he that is in this world.

5 They are of this worlde, therefore speake they of this world, and this world heareth them.

*Iohn 8 47.*

6 We are of God, * he that knoweth God, heareth vs: he that is not of God, heareth vs not. Hereby know we the Spirit of trueth, and the spirit of errour.

7 Beloued, let vs loue one another: for loue commeth of God, and euery one that loueth, is borne of God, and knoweth God.

8 He that loueth not, knoweth not God: for God is loue.

*Iohn.3.16.*

9 *Herein was that loue of God made manifest amongst vs, because God sent that his onely begotten Sonne into this world, that we might liue through him.

10 Herein is that loue, not that we loued God, but that he loued vs, and sent his Sonne *to be* a reconciliation for our sinnes.

11 Beloued, if God so loued vs, we ought also to loue one another.

*Iohn 1.18. 1.Iim.6.16.*

12 *No man hath seene God at any time. If we loue one another, God dwelleth in vs, and his loue is perfect in vs.

13 Hereby knowe we, that we dwell in him, and he in vs: because he hath giuen vs of his Spirit.

14 And we haue seene and doe testifie, that the Father sent that

that Sonne *to be* the Sauiour of the world.

15 Whosoeuer confesseth that Iesus is the Sonne of God, in him dwelleth God, and he in God.

16 And we haue knowen, and beleeued the loue that God hath in vs. God is loue, and he that dwelleth in loue, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is that loue perfect in vs, that we shoulde haue boldenes in the day of iudgement: for as he is, euen so are we in this world.

18 There is no feare in loue, but perfect loue casteth out feare: for feare hath paine: and he that feareth, is not perfect in loue.

19 We loue him, because he loued vs first.

20 If any man say, I loue God, and hate his brother, he is a liar: for howe can he that loueth not his brother whom he hath seene, loue God whom he hath not seene?

21 *And this commandement haue we of him, that he that loueth God, should loue his brother also. *Iohn 13 34. and 15.12.*



1 *He sheweth that brotherly loue and faith are things inseparable:* 10 *And that there is no faith towarde God, but by beleeuing in Christ:* 14 *Hence proceedeth calling vpon God with assurance,* 16 *and also that our prayers be anaileable for our brethren.*

WHosoeuer beleeueth that Iesus is that Christ, is borne of God, and euery one that loueth him, which begate, loueth him also which is begotten of him.

2 In this we know that we loue the children of God, when we loue God, and keepe his commandements.

3 For this is the loue of God, that we keepe his commandements: and his * commandements are not burdenous. *Mat. 11.30.*

4 For all that is borne of God, ouercommeth this world: and this is that victorie that hath ouercome this worlde, *euen* our faith.

5 *Who is it that ouercommeth this world, but he which beleeueth that Iesus is that Sonne of God? *1.Cor.15.57.*

6 This is that Iesus Christ that came by water and blood: not by water onely, but by water and blood: and it is that Spirit that beareth witnes: for that Spirit is trueth.

7 For there are three, which beare recorde in heauen, the Father, the Word, & the holy Ghost: and these three are one.

8 And there are three, which beare recorde in the earth, the

the ſpirite, and the water, and the blood: and theſe three agree in one.

9 If we receiue the witneſſe of men, the witneſſe of God is greater: for this is the witneſſe of God, which he teſtified of his Sonne.

*Iohn 3.36.* 10 *He that beleeueth in that Sonne of God, hath the witneſſe in himſelfe: he that beleeueth not God, hath made him a lyar, becauſe he beleeued not the record, that God witneſſed of that his Sonne.

11 And this is that record, *to wit*, that God hath giuen vnto vs eternall life, and this life is in that his Sonne.

12 He that hath that Sonne, hath that life: and he that hath not that Sonne of God, hath not that life.

13 Theſe things haue I written vnto you, that beleeue in the Name of that Sonne of God, that ye may knowe that ye haue eternall life, and that ye may beleeue in the Name of that Sonne of God.

*Chap.3.22.* 14 And this is that aſſurance, that we haue in him, * that if wee aske any thing according to his will, he heareth vs.

15 And if we knowe that he heareth vs, whatſoeuer we aske, we knowe that we haue the petitions that we haue deſired of him.

16 If any man ſee his brother ſinne a ſinne that is not vnto death, let him aske, and he ſhall giue him life for them that ſinne not vnto death. * There is a ſinne vnto death: I ſay not that thou ſhouldeſt pray for it.

*Mat.12.31. Mar.3.29.*

17 All vnrighteouſneſſe is ſinne, but there is a ſinne not vnto death.

18 We knowe that whoſoeuer is borne of God, ſinneth not: but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himſelfe, & that wicked one toucheth him not.

19 We knowe that we are of God, and this whole world lyeth in wickedneſſe.

*Luke 24.45.* 20 But wee knowe that that Sonne of God is * come, and hath giuen vs a minde to knowe him which is true: and wee are in him that is true, *that is*, in that his Sonne Ieſus Chriſt: this ſame is that very God, and that eternall life.

21 Litle children, keepe your ſelues from idoles, Amen.

THE

# THE SECOND EPISTLE OF IOHN.

2 *This Epistle is written to a woman of great renowme,* 4 *who brought vp her children in the feare of God:* 6 *he exhorteth her to continue in Christian charitie,* 7 *that she accompanie not with Antichristes,* 10 *but auoyde them.*

THE Elder to the elect Lady, and her children, whom I loue in the trueth: and not I onely, but also all that haue knowen the trueth,

2 For the trueths sake which dwelleth in vs, and shalbe with vs for euer:

3 Grace be with you, mercie and peace from God the Father, & from the Lord Iesus Christ the Sonne of the Father, with trueth and loue.

4 I reioyced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in trueth, as we haue receiued a commaundement of the Father.

5 And nowe beseech I thee, Lady, (not as writing a newe commandement vnto thee, but that same which we had from the beginning) that we * loue one another. *Iohn 15.12.*

6 And this is that loue, that we shoulde walke after his commandements. This commaundement is, that as ye haue heard from the beginning, ye should walke in it.

7 For many deceiuers are entred into this worlde, which confesse not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh. He that is such one, is a deceiuer and an Antichrist.

8 Looke to your selues, that we lose not the things which we haue done, but that we may receiue a full rewarde.

9 Whosoeuer transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. He that continueth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Sonne.

10 If there come any vnto you, and bring not this doctrine, * receiue him not to house, neither bid him, God speede: *Rom. 16.17.*

11 For he that biddeth him, God speede, is partaker of his euill deedes. Although I had many things to write vnto you, yet I would not *write* with paper and ynke: but I trust to come vnto you, and speake mouth to mouth, that our ioy may be full.

12 The sonnes of thine elect sister greete thee, Amen.

THE

# THE THIRD EPISTLE OF IOHN.

1 *He cõmendeth Gaius for hoſpitalitie: 9 and reprehendeth Diotrephes for vaine-glorie: 10 he exhorteth Gaius to continue in well doing: 12 and in the ende commendeth Demetrius.*

THE Elder vnto the beloued Gaius, whom I loue in the trueth.

2 Beloued, I wiſh chiefly, that thou proſperedſt and faredſt well as thy ſoule proſpereth.

3 For I reioyced greatly when the brethren came, and teſtified of the trueth that is in thee, howe thou walkeſt in the trueth.

4 I haue no greater ioy then this, *that is*, to heare that my ſonnes walke in veritie.

5 Beloued, thou doeſt faithfully, whatſoeuer thou doeſt to the brethren, and to ſtrangers,

6 Which bare witneſſe of thy loue before the Churches. Whom if thou bringeſt on their iourney as it beſeemeth according to God, thou ſhalt doe well,

7 Becauſe that for his Names ſake they went forth, and tooke nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receiue ſuch, that we might be helpers to the trueth.

9 I wrote vnto the Church: but Diotrephes which loueth to haue the preeminence among them, receiueth vs not.

10 Wherefore if I come, I will call to your remembrance his deedes, which he doth, pratling againſt vs with malicious wordes, and not therewith content, neither he himſelfe receiueth the brethren, but forbiddeth them that would, and thruſteth them out of the Church.

11 Beloued, followe not that which is euil, but that which is good: he that doeth well, is of God: but he that doeth euil, hath not ſeene God.

12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, & of the trueth it ſelfe: yea, and we our ſelues beare record, and ye know that our record is true.

13 I haue many things to write: but I wil not with ynck, and penne write vnto thee:

14 For I truſt I ſhall ſhortly ſee thee, and we ſhall ſpeake mouth to mouth. Peace *be* with thee. The friends ſalute thee. Greete the friends by name.

THE

*3 He warneth the godly to take heede of ſuch men 4 that make the grace of God a cloke for their wantonneſſe, 5 and that they ſhall not ſcape vnpuniſhed, for the contempt of that grace, 6. 7 he proueth by three examples: 14 and alleageth the prophecie of Enoch: 20 Finally he ſheweth the godly a meane to ouerthrowe all the ſnares of thoſe deceiuers.*

IVde a ſeruant of Ieſus Chriſt, & brother of Iames, to them which are called and ſanctified of God the Father, and reſerued to Ieſus Chriſt:

2 Mercie vnto you, and peace and loue be multiplied.

3 Beloued, when I gaue all diligence to write vnto you of the common ſaluation, it was needefull for me to write vnto you, to exhort you, that ye ſhould earneſtly contend for *the maintenance* of the faith, which was once giuen vnto the Saintes.

4 For there are certaine men crept in, which were before of olde ordeined to this condemnation: vngodly men *they are* which turne the grace of our God into wantonneſſe, and *denie God the onely Lord, and our Lord Ieſus Chriſt. 2.Pet.2.1.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, foraſmuch as ye once knewe this, howe that the Lord, after that he had deliuered the people out of Egypt, * deſtroyed them afterward which beleeued not. *Num.14.37.*

6 The * Angels alſo which kept not their firſt eſtate, but left their owne habitation, he hath reſerued in euerlaſting chaines vnder darkeneſſe vnto the iudgement of the great day. *2.Peter 2.4.*

7 As * Sodom and Gomorrhe, and the cities about them, which in like maner as they did, committed fornication, and followed ſtrange fleſh, are ſet foorth for an enſample, and ſuffer the vengeance of eternall fire. *Gene.19.24.*

8 Likewiſe notwithſtanding theſe ſleepers alſo defile the fleſh, and deſpiſe gouernment, and ſpeake euill of them that are in authoritie.

9 Yet Michael the Archangel, when he ſtroue againſt the deuil, and diſputed about the body of Moſes, durſt not blame him with curſed ſpeaking, but ſaide, The Lord rebuke thee.

10 But theſe ſpeake euill of thoſe things, which they know

not:

not: and whatsoeuer things they knowe naturally, as beastes which are without reason, in those things they corrupt them selues.

11 Wo *be* vnto them: for they haue folowed the way of
Gene.4.8. *Cain, and are cast away by the deceite * of Balaams wages,
Nom.22.21. and perish in the gainesaying * of Core.
2.peter 2.15. 12 These are spotes in your feastes of charitie when they
Nom.16.1. feast with you, without all feare, feeding themselues: *cloudes
2.Pet.2.17. *they are* without water, caried about of windes, corrupt trees *and* without fruite, twise dead, *and* plucked vp by the rootes.

13 *They are* the raging waues of the sea, foming out their owne shame: *they are* wandring starres, to whom is reserued the blackenes of darkenes for euer.

14 And Enoch also the seuenth from Adam, prophecied of
Reuel.1.7. such, saying, *Beholde, the Lorde commeth with thousands of his Saints,

15 To giue iudgement against all men, and to rebuke all the vngodly among them of all their wicked deedes, which they haue vngodly committed, and of all their cruell speakings, which wicked sinners haue spoken against him.

16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their
Psal. 17.10. owne lustes: * whose mouthes speake proude things, hauing mens persons in admiration, because of aduantage.

17 But, ye beloued, remember the wordes which were spoken before of the Apostles of our Lord Iesus Christ,

18 Howe that they tolde you that there shoulde be mock-
1.Tim.4.1. kers * in the last time, which should walke after their owne
2.tim.3.1. vngodly lustes.
2.pet.3.3. 19 These are they that separate themselues from other, naturall, hauing not the Spirit.

20 But, ye beloued, edifie your selues in your most holy faith, praying in the holy Ghost,

21 And keepe your selues in the loue of God, looking for the mercie of our Lord Iesus Christ, vnto eternall life.

22 And haue compasion of some, in putting differene:

23 And other saue with feare, pulling them out of the fire, and hate euen that garment which is spotted by the flesh.

24 Nowe vnto him that is able to keepe you, that ye fall not, and to present you faultlesse before the presence of his glorie with ioy,

25 *That is*, to God onely wise, our Sauiour, *be* glory, & maiestie, and dominion, and power, both now & for euer, Amen.

THE

# THE REVELATION OF IOHN THE DIVINE.

## CHAP. I.

*1 He declareth what kinde of doctrine is here handled, 8 euen his, that is the beginning and ending: 12 Then the mysteries of the seuen candlesticks and starres 20 is expounded.*

THE Reuelation of IESVS CHRIST, which GOD gaue vnto him, to shew vnto his seruants things which must shortly be done: which he sent, and shewed by his Angel vnto his seruant Iohn,

2 Who bare recorde of the worde of God, and of the testimonie of Iesus Christ, and of all things that he sawe.

3 Blessed *is he* that readeth, & they that heare the wordes of this prophecie, and keepe those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

4 Iohn, to the seuen Churches which are in Asia, Grace *be* with you, and peace from him, Which * is, and Which was, and Which is to come, and from the seuen Spirits which are before his Throne, *Exod.3.14.*

5 And from Iesus Christ, which is that *faithfull witnesse, and * that first begotten of the dead, and that prince of the kings of the earth, vnto him that loued vs, and washed vs from our sinnes in his * blood, *Psal.89.38. 1.Cor.15.21. Coloss.1.18. Hebr.9.14. 1.Pet.1.19.*

6 And made vs * Kings and Priests vnto God euen his Father, to him *I say, be* glory, and dominion for euermore, Amen. *1.John 1.9.*

7 Beholde, he commeth with *cloudes, and euery eye shal see him: *yea*, euen they which pearced him through: and all kinreds of the earth shall waile before him. Euen so, Amen. *1.Pet.2.5. Isai.3.14. mat.24.30.*

8 I * am Alpha and Omega, the beginning & the ending, saith the Lord, Which is, and Which was, and Which is to come, *euen* the Almightie. *iude 14. Chap.21.6. and 22.13.*

9 I Iohn, euen your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdome & patience of IESVS CHRIST, was in the yle called Patmos, for the worde of God, and for the witnessing of Iesus Christ.

10 And I was *rauished* in spirit on the Lords day, & heard behinde me a great voyce, as it had bene of a trumpet,

11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, that first and that last: and that which thou seest, write in a booke, & send it vnto the seuen Churches which are in Asia, vnto Ephesus, and vnto

Smyrna, and vnto Pergamus, and vnto Thyatira, and vnto Sardis, and vnto Philadelphia, and vnto Laodicea.

12 Then I turned backe to see the voyce, that spake with me; and when I was turned, I sawe seuen golden candlesticks,

13 And in the mids of the seuen candlesticks, one like vnto the Sonne of man, clothed with a garment down to the feete, and girded about the pappes with a golden girdle.

14 His head, and heares *were* white as white wooll, *and* as snow, and his eyes *were* as a flame of fire,

15 And his feete like vnto fine brasse, burning as in a fornace: and his voyce as the sound of many watets.

16 And he had in his right hand seuen starres: and out of his mouth went a sharpe two edged sword: and his face *shone* as the sunne shineth in his strength.

17 And when I sawe him I fell at his feete as dead: then he laide his right hand vpon me, saying vnto me, Feare not: I
*Isai.41.4. and 44.6.* am that * first and that last,

18 And am aliue, but I was dead: and behold, I am aliue for euermore, Amen: and I haue the keyes of hell and of death.

19 Write the things which thou hast seene, and the things which are, and the things which shall come hereafter.

20 The mysterie of the seuen starres which thou sawest in my right hand, & the seuen golden candlesticks, *is this*, The seuen starres are the Angels of the seuen Churches: and the seuen candlesticks which thou sawest, are the seuen Churches.

## CHAP. II.

1 *Iohn is commanded to write those things, which the Lorde knew necessarie, to the Churches of Ephesus, 8 of the Smyrnians, 12 of Pergamus, 18 and of Thyatira, 25 that they keepe those things which they receiued of the Apostles.*

VNto ỹ Angel of ỹ Church of Ephesus write, These things saith hee that holdeth the seuen starres in his right hand, and walketh in the mids of the seuen golden candlesticks.

2 I know thy workes, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not beare with them which are euill, and hast examined them which say they are Apostles, & are not, & hast found them lyars.

3 And thou wast burdened, and hast patience, and for my Names sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.

4 Neuertheles, I haue *somewhat* against thee, because thou hast left thy first loue.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent,

repent, and doe the first workes: or els I will come against thee shortly, and will remoue thy candlestick out of his place, except thou amend.

6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the workes of the Nicolaitanes, which I also hate.

7 Let him that hath an eare, heare what ℣ Spirit saith vnto the Churches, To him that ouercommeth, will I giue to eate of the tree of life which is in the midst of the Paradise of God.

8 ¶ And vnto the Angel of the Church of the Smyrnians write, These things saith he that is first, and last, which was dead and is aliue.

9 I know thy workes & tribulation, & pouertie (but thou art rich) and *I know* the blasphemie of them, which say they are Iewes, and are not, but *are* the Synagogue of Satan.

10 Feare none of those things, which thou shalt suffer: behold, it shall come to passe, that the deuill shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried, and ye shall haue tribulation ten dayes: be thou faithfull vnto the death, and I will giue thee the crowne of life.

11 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith to the Churches: He that ouercommeth, shall not be hurt of the second death.

12 ¶ And to the Angel of the Church which is at Pergamus write, This saith he which hath ℣ sharpe sword w two edges.

13 I know thy workes, & where thou dwellest, *euen* where Satans throne is, & thou keepest my Name, and hast not denied my faith, euen in those dayes, when Antipas my faithfull martyr was slaine among you, where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I haue a fewe things against thee, because thou hast there them that maintaine the doctrine of * Balaam, which taught Balac to put a stumbling blocke before the children of Israel, that they should eate of things sacrificed vnto idoles, and commit fornication. *Nom. 24. 14. and 25. 1.*

15 Euen so hast thou them, that maintaine the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate.

16 Repent thy selfe, or els I will come vnto thee shortly, and wil fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

17 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirite sayth vnto the Churches, To him that ouercommeth, will I giue to eate of the Manna that is hid, and wil giue him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth sauing he that receiueth it.

18 ¶ And vnto the Angel of the Church, which is at Thyatira write, These things saith the Sonne of God, which hath his eyes like vnto a flame of fire, and his feete like fine brasse.

19 I know thy workes and thy loue, and seruice, and faith, and thy patience, and thy workes, and that *they are* mo at the last, then at the first.

20 Notwithstanding, I haue a few things against thee, that thou sufferest ỹ woman Iezabel, which calleth her selfe a prophetisse, to teach and to deceiue my seruants to make them commit fornication, & to eate meates sacrificed vnto idoles.

21 And I gaue her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

22 Beholde, I wil cast her into a bed, and them that commit fornication with her, into great affliction, except they repent them of their workes.

23 And I wil kil her children w̃ death: & all the Churches
2.Sam.16.7. shal know that I am he which *search the reines & hearts: & I
Psal.7.10. wil giue vnto euery one of you according vnto your workes.
Iere.11.20. and 17.10. 24 And vnto you I say, ỹ rest of them of Thyatira, As many as haue not this learning, neither haue knowen the deepenesse of Satan (as they speake) I wil put vpon you none other burde̅,

25 But that which ye haue already, holde fast till I come.

26 For he that ouercommeth and keepeth my workes vnto the ende, to him wil I giue power ouer nations,

Psal.2.9. 27 *And he shall rule them with a rod of yron: *and* as the vessels of a potter, shall they be broken.

28 Euen as I receiued of my Father, so wil I giue him the morning starre.

29 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit sayth to the Churches.

## CHAP. III.

1 *The fift Epistle sent to the Pastours of the Church of Sardis,* 7 *of Philadelphia,* 14 *and of the Laodiceans,* 16 *that they be not luke warme;* 20 *but endeuour to further Gods glory.*

AND write vnto the Angel of the Church which is at Sardis, These things saith hee that hath the seuen Spirits of God, and the seuen starres, I know thy workes: for thou hast a name that thou liuest, but thou art dead.

2 Be awake & strengthen the things which remaine, ỹ are
Chap.16.15. ready to die: for I haue not foũd thy works perfit before God.
1 Thes.5.2. 3 Remember therefore, how thou hast receiued and heard,
2 Pet.3.10. and holde fast and repent. * If therefore thou wilt not watch,

I wil

I wil come on thee as a thiefe, and thou shalt not know what houre I wil come vpon thee.

4 *Notwithstanding* thou hast a fewe names yet in Sardis, which haue not defiled their garments: and they shall walke with me in white: for they are worthy.

5 He that ouercommeth shalbe clothed in white aray, & I wil not put out his name out of the * booke of life, but I will confesse his name before my Father, and before his Angels. *Chap.20.12. and 21.27.*

6 Let him that hath an eare, heare, what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches. *phil.4.3.*

7 ¶ And write vnto the Angel of the Church which is of Philadelphia, These things saith he, that is Holy, & True, which hath the key of Dauid, which openeth and no man shutteth, and shutteth and no man openeth,

8 I know thy workes: beholde, I haue set before thee an open doore, & no man can shut it: for thou hast a litle strength and hast kept my worde, and hast not denied my Name.

9 Beholde, I will make them of the Synagogue of Satan, which call themselues Iewes, & are not, but doe lie: behold, *I say*, I will make them, that they shall come & worship before thy feete, and shall know that I haue loued thee.

10 Because thou hast kept ¶ word of my patience, therfore I wil deliuer thee frō the houre of tentation, which wil come vpon all the world, to trie them that dwell vpon the earth.

11 Beholde, I come shortly: holde that which thou hast, that no man take thy crowne.

12 Him that ouercommeth, wil I make a pillar in the Temple of my God, and he shall goe no more out: and I wil write vpon him the Name of my God, and the name of the citie of my God, *which is*, the newe Hierusalem, which commeth downe out of heauen from my God, and *I will write vpon him* my newe Name.

13 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirite saith vnto the Churches.

14 And vnto the Angel of the Church of the Laodiceans write, These things sayth Amen, that faithfull and true witnes, that beginning of the creatures of God.

15 I knowe thy workes, that thou art neither colde nor hote: I would thou werest colde or hote.

16 Therefore, because thou art luke warme, and neither colde nor hote, it will come to passe, that I shall spewe thee out of my mouth.

11 Then I beheld, and I heard the voyce of many Angels round about ỹ throne, & *about* ỹ beasts & the Elders, & there *were* ten thousand times ten thousand, & thousand thousands,

Dan.7.10.

12 Saying with a loude voyce, Worthy is the Lambe that was killed, to receiue power, and riches, and wisdome, and strength, and honour, and glory, and prayse.

13 And all the creatures which are in heauen, and on the earth, & vnder the earth, & in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I, saying, Praise, & honour, & glory, & power *be* vnto him, that sitteth vpon the throne, & vnto the Lambe for euermore.

14 And the foure beasts said, Amen, & the foure & twentie Elders fel down & worshipped him that liueth for euermore.

## CHAP. VI.

1 *The Lambe openeth the first seale of the Booke,* 3 *the second,* 5 *the third,* 7 *the fourth,* 9 *the fift,* 12 *and the sixth, and then arose murders, famine, pestilence, outcries of Saints, earthquakes, and diuers strange sightes in heauen.*

AFter, I behelde when the Lambe had opened one of the seales, and I heard one of the foure beasts say, as *it were* the noyse of thunder, Come and see.

2 Therefore I beheld, & loe, there *was* a white horse, & he that sate on him, had a bowe, & a crowne was giuen vnto him, and he went forth conquering that he might ouercome.

3 And when he had opened the second seale, I heard the second beast say, Come and see.

4 And there went out another horse, *that was* red, & power was giuen to him that sate thereon, to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another, and there was giuen vnto him a great sword.

5 And when he had opened the third seale, I heard ỹ third beast say, Come & see: Then I behelde, and loe, a blacke horse, and he that sate on him, had balances in his hand.

6 And I heard a voyce in the mids of the foure beasts say, A measure of wheate for a penie, and three measures of barley for a penie, and oyle, and wine hurt thou not.

7 And when he had opened the fourth seale, I heard the voyce of the fourth beast say, Come and see.

8 And I looked, and beholde, a pale horse, and his name that sate on him was Death, and Hell followed after him, and power was giuen vnto them ouer the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

9 And

9 And when he had opened the fifth seale, I sawe vnder the
altar the soules of them that were killed for the worde of
God, and for the testimonie which they maintained.
10 And they cried with a loude voyce, saying, Howe long,
Lorde, which art holy and true: doest thou not iudge and a-
uenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?
11 And long white robes were giuen vnto euery one, and
it was saide vnto them, that they should rest for a litle season
vntill their fellow seruants, and their brethren that should be
killed euen as they were, were fulfilled.
12 And I beheelde when hee had opened the first seale, and
loe, there was a great earthquake, and the sunne was as blacke
as sackcloth of haire, and the moone was like blood.
13 And the starres of heauen fell vnto the earth, as a figtree
casteth her greene figs when it is shaken of a mightie winde.
14 And heauen departed away, as a scrole when it is rolled,
and euery mountaine & yle were mooued out of their places.
15 And the Kings of the earth, and the great men, and the
riche men, and the chiefe captaines, and the mightie men, and
euery bondman, & euery free man, hid themselues in dennes,
and among the rockes of the mountaines,
16 And saide to the mountaines and rockes, * Fall on vs, *Isa.2.19.
and hide vs frō the presence of him that sitteth on the throne, hose.10.8.
and from the wrath of the Lambe. luke 23.30.
17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who can
stande?

## CHAP. VII.

*1 The Angels cōming to hurt the earth, 3 are stayed vntill the Elect of the Lord 5 of all tribes were sealed. 13 Such as suffred persecution for Christs sake, 16 haue great felicitie, 17 and ioy.*

AND after that, I sawe foure Angels stand on the foure cor-
ners of the earth, holding the foure windes of the earth,
that the windes should not blow on the earth, neither on the
sea, neither on any tree.
2 And I sawe another Angel come vp from the East, which
had the seale of the liuing God, and he cried with a loud voice
to the foure Angels to whome power was giuen to hurt the
earth, and the sea, saying,
3 Hurt ye not the earth, neither the sea, neither the trees,
till we haue sealed the seruants of our God in their foreheads.
4 And I heard the nomber of them which were sealed, and
there were sealed an hundreth and foure and fourtie thousand
of

of all the tribes of the children of Israel.

5 Of the tribe of Iuda were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Ruben were sealed twelue thousande. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelue thousand.

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelue thousande. Of the tribe of Nephthali were sealed twelue thousande. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelue thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Leui were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelue thousande. Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelue thousand.

8 Of the tribe of Ioseph were sealed twelue thousande. Of the tribe of Beniamin were sealed twelue thousand.

9 After these things I beheld, & lo, a great multitude, which no man could nomber, of all nations and kinreds, and people, and tongues, stoode before the throne, and before the Lambe, clothed with long white robes, and palmes in their handes.

10 And they cried with a loude voice, saying, Saluation *cōmeth* of our God, that sitteth vpō the throne, & of the Lambe.

11 And all the Angels stoode round about the throne, and *about* the Elders, and the foure beasts, and they fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God,

12 Saying, Amen. Prayse, and glory, and wisedome, and thankes, and honour, and power, and might, *be* vnto our God for euermore, Amen.

13 And one of the Elders spake, saying vnto me, What are these which are arayed in long white robes? and whence came they?

14 And I said vnto him, Lord, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they, which came out of great tribulation, and haue washed their long robes, and haue made their long robes white in the blood of the Lambe.

15 Therefore are they in the presence of the throne of God, and serue him day and night in his Temple, and hee that sitteth on the throne will dwel among them.

*Isa.49.10.* 16 * They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shall the sunne light on them, neither any heate.

*Chap.21.4. Esa.25.8.* 17 For the Lambe which is in the midst of the throne, shal gouerne them & shal lead them vnto the liuely fountaines of waters, and * God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes.

## CHAP. VIII.

1 *After the opening of the seuenth seale,* 3 *the Saintes prayers*

*are*

*are offred vp with odours. 6 The seuen Angels come foorth with trumpets. 7 The foure first blowe, and fire falleth on the earth, 8 the sea is turned into blood, 10. 11 the waters waxe bitter, 12 and the starres are darkened.*

AND when hee had opened the seuenth seale, there was silence in heauen about halfe an houre.

2 And I sawe the seuen Angels which stoode before God, and to them were giuen seuen trumpets.

3 Then another Angel came and stoode before the Altar, hauing a golden censer, & much odours was giuen vnto him, that he shoulde offer with the prayers of all Saintes vpon the golden altar, which is before the throne.

4 And the smoke of the odours with the prayers of the Saintes, went vp before God, out of the Angels hand.

5 And the Angel tooke the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth, and there were voyces, and thundrings, and lightnings, and earthquake.

6 Then the seuen Angels which had the seuen trumpets, prepared themselues to blowe the trumpets.

7 So the first Angel blew the trumpet, and there was haile and fire, mingled w blood, & they were cast into the earth, and the third part of trees was burnt, & al greene grasse was burnt.

8 And the second Angel blew the trumpet, and as *it were* a great mountaine, burning with fire, was cast into the sea, and the thirde part of the sea became blood.

9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died, and the third part of ships were destroyed.

10 Then the third Angel blew the trumpet, and there fell a great starre from heauen burning like a torche, and it fell into the third part of the riuers, and into the fountaines of waters.

11 And the name of the starre is called wormewood: therefore the thirde part of the waters became wormewood, and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth Angel blew the trumpet, and the thirde part of the sunne was smitten, & the third part of the moone, and the third part of the starres, so that the third part of them was darkened: and the day *was smitten*, that the third part of it could not shine, and likewise the night.

13 And I beheld, & heard one Angel flying through ȳ midst of heauen, saying w a loude voyce, Wo, wo, wo to the inhabitants of the earth, because of the sounds to come of the trumpet of the three Angels, which were yet to blow ȳ trumpets.

CHAP.

7 But in the daies of the voice of the seuẽth Angel, when he shal begin to blow the trumpet, euẽ the mysterie of God shall be finished, as he hath declared to his seruants the Prophets.

8 And the voyce which I heard frõ heauen, spake vnto me againe, & said, Go & take the litle booke which is open in the hand of the Angel, which stãdeth vpõ the sea & vpõ the earth.

9 So I wẽt vnto the Angel, & said to him, Giue me the litle booke. And he said vnto me, Take it, & eat it vp, & it shal make thy belly bitter, but it shalbe in thy mouth as sweete as honie.

10 Then I tooke the litle booke out of the Angels hande, and ate it vp, and it was in my mouth, as sweete as honie: but when I had eaten it, my bellie was bitter.

11 And he saide vnto mee, Thou must prophecie againe among the people and nations, and tongues, & to many Kings.

## CHAP. XI.

*1 The temple is cõmanded to be measured: 3 The Lord stirreth vp two witnesses: 7 whom the beast murthereth, 9 and no mã burieth: hem. 11 God raiseth them to life, 12 and calleth them vp to heauẽ. 13 The wicked are terrified. 15 By the trumpet of the seuenth Angel, the resurrection 18 and iudgmẽt is described.*

THen was giuen me a reede, like vnto a rodde, and the Angel stoode by, saying, Rise and mete the Temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein.

2 But the court which is without the temple, cast out, and mete it not: for it is giuen vnto the Gentiles, and the holy citie shall they treade vnder foote, two and fourtie moneths.

3 But I will giue power vnto my two witnesses, and they shall prophecie a thousande, two hundreth and threescore dayes, clothed in sackcloth.

4 These are two oliue trees, and two candlestickes, standing before the God of the earth.

5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouthes, and deuoureth their enemies: for if any man would hurt them, thus must he be killed.

6 These haue power to shut heauen, that it raine not in the dayes of their prophecying, and haue power ouer waters to turne them into blood, and to smite the earth with all maner plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they haue finished their testimonie, the beast that commeth out of the bottomlesse pitte, shall make warre against them, and shall ouercome them, and kill them.

8 And their corpses shall lye in the streetes of the great citie,

citie, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where our Lord also was crucified.

9 And they of the people and kindreds, and tongues, and Gentiles shall see their corpses three dayes and an halfe, and shall not suffer their carkeises to be put in graues.

10 And they that dwell vpon the earth, shall reioyce ouer them and be glad, and shal send giftes one to another: for these two Prophets vexed them that dwelt on the earth.

11 But after three dayes & an halfe, the spirit of life *coming* from God, shal enter into them, & they shal stand vp vpō their feete: and great feare shall come vpon them which saw them.

12 And they shall heare a great voyce from heauen, saying vnto them, Come vp hither. And they shall ascende vp to heauen in a clonde, and their enemies shall see them.

13 And the same houre shall there bee a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the citie shall fall, and in the earthquake shalbe slaine in number seuen thousand: and the remnant were sore feared, and gaue glorie to the God of heauen.

14 The second woe is past, *and* behold, the third woe will come anon.

15 And the seuenth Angel blew the trumpet, & there were great voyces in heauen, saying, The kingdomes of this worlde are our Lords, & his Christes, and he shal reigne for euermore.

16 Then the foure and twentie Elders, which sate before God on their seates, fell vpon their faces, & worshipped God,

17 Saying, We giue thee thankes, Lorde God Almightie, Which art, and Which wast, & Which art to come: for thou hast receiued thy great might, & hast obteined thy kingdome.

18 And the Gentiles were angrie, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be iudged, and that thou shouldest giue rewarde vnto thy seruants the Prophetes, and to the Saints, & to them that feare thy Name, to smal and great, and shouldest destroy them, which destroy the earth.

19 Then the Temple of God was opened in heauen, and there was seene in his Temple the Arke of his couenant: and there were lightnings, and voyces, and thundrings, and earthquake, and much haile.

## CHAP. XII.

*1 A woman appeareth 2 trauelling with childe, 4 whose childe the Dragon would deuoure, 7 but Michael ouercommeth him, 9 and casteth him out, 13 and the more he is cast downe and vanquished, the more fiercely he exerciseth his subtilties.*

And

AND there appeared a great wonder in heauen: A woman clothed with the sunne, & the moone was vnder her feete, and vpon her head a crowne of twelue starres.

2 And shee was with childe, and cried trauailing in birth, and was pained readie to be deliuered.

3 And there appeared another wonder in heauen: for behold, a great red dragon hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes, and seuen crownes vpon his heads:

4 And his taile drewe the thirde part of the starres of heauen, and cast them to the earth. And the dragon stoode before the woman, which was readie to be deliuered, to deuoure her childe when she had brought it foorth.

5 So she brought forth a man childe, which should rule all nations with a rod of yron: and that her childe was taken vp vnto God and to his throne.

6 And the woman fled into wildernes where shee hath a place prepared of God, that they shoulde feede her there a thousand, two hundreth and three score dayes.

7 And there was a battel in heauen, Michael & his Angels, fought against the dragon, & the dragon fought & his angels.

8 But they preuailed not, neither was their place founde any more in heauen.

9 And the great dragon, that olde serpent, called the deuil and Satan, was cast out, which deceiueth al the world: he was *euen* cast into the earth, & his angels were cast out with him.

10 Then I heard a loude voyce in heauen, saying, Nowe is saluation, and strength, and the kingdome of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast downe, which accused them before our God day and night.

11 But they ouercame him by the blood of that Lambe, and by that worde of their testimonie, and they loued not their liues vnto the death.

12 Therefore reioyce ye heauens, & ye that dwel in them. Wo to the inhabitants of the earth, and of the sea: for the deuill is come downe vnto you, which hath great wrath, knowing that he hath but a short time.

13 And when the dragon sawe that hee was cast vnto the earth, he persecuted the woman which had brought forth the man *childe*.

14 But to the woman were giuen two wings of a great egle, that shee might flie into the wildernes, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and halfe a time,

from

from the presence of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water after the woman, like a flood, that he might cause her to be caried away of the flood.

16 But the earth holpe the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, & swallowed vp the flood, which the dragon had cast out of his mouth.

17 Then the dragon was wroth w the woman, & went and made warre w the remnant of her seede, which keepe the cõmandements of God, and haue the testimonie of Iesus Christ.

18 And I stoode on the sea sande.

## CHAP. XIII.

1 *The beast with many heads is described,* 8 *which draweth the most part of the worlde to idolatrie.* 11 *The other beast rising out of the earth,* 15 *giueth power vnto him.*

AND I sawe a beast rise out of the sea, hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes, and vpon his hornes *were* ten crownes, and vpon his heads the name of blasphemie.

2 And the beast which I saw, was like a Leopard, & his feete like a beares, & his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gaue him his power and his throne, & great authoritie.

3 And I saw one of his heads as *it were* wounded to death, but his deadly wound was healed, and al the world wondred, *and* followed the beast.

4 And they worshipped the dragon which gaue power vnto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like vnto the beast? who is able to warre with him?

5 And there was giuen vnto him a mouth, that spake great things and blasphemies, and power was giuen vnto him, to do two and fourtie moneths.

6 And he opened his mouth vnto blasphemie against God, to blaspheme his Name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heauen.

7 And it was giuen vnto him to make warre with the Saints, and to ouercome them, & power was giuen him ouer euery kinred, and tongue, and nation.

8 Therefore all that dwell vpon the earth, shall worship him, whose names are not written in the Booke of life of that Lambe, which was slaine from the beginning of the world.

9 If any man haue an eare, let him heare.

10 If any leade into captiuitie, he shal goe into captiuitie: if any kill with a sworde, he must be killed by a sworde: here is *mat.26.52.* *Gen.9.6.*

is the patience and the faith of the Saintes.

11 And I behelde another beast comming vp out of the earth, which had two hornes like the Lambe, but he spake like the dragon.

12 And he did all that the first beast could do before him, and he caused the earth, and them which dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he did great wonders, so that he made fire to come downe from heauen on the earth, in the sight of men,

14 And deceiued them that dwell on the earth by the signes, which were permitted to him to do in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make the image of the beast, which had the woũd of a sword, and did liue.

15 And it was permitted to him to giue a spirite vnto the image of the beast, so that ℣ image of the beast should speake, and shoulde cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast, should be killed.

16 And he made all, both small and great, rich and poore, free and bonde, to receiue a marke in their right hande or in their foreheads,

17 And that no man might bye or sell, saue he that had the marke, or the name of the beast, or the nomber of his name.

18 Here is wisedome. Let him that hath wit, count the nomber of the beast: for it is the nomber of a man, & his nomber is sixe hundreth, three score and sixe.

## CHAP. XIIII.

*1 The Lambe standeth on mount Sion, 4 with his chaste worshippers. 6 One Angell preacheth the Gospel: 8 an other foretelleth the fall of Babylon: 9 the third warneth that the beast be auoided. 13 A voice from heauen pronounceth them happie who die in the Lorde. 16 The Lordes sickle is thrust into the harueste, 18 and into the vintage.*

THen I looked, and loe, a Lambe stoode on mount Sion, and with him an hundreth, fourtie and foure thousande, hauing his Fathers Name written in their foreheads.

2 And I heard a voice from heauen, as the sounde of many waters, and as the sounde of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harpes.

3 And they sung as *it were* a newe song before the throne, and before the foure beasts, and the Elders: and no man could learne that song, but the hundreth, fourtie & foure thousand,

which

which were bought from the earth.

4 These are they, which are not defiled with women: for they are virgins: these followe the Lambe whither soeuer he goeth: these are bought from men, being the first fruites vnto God, and to the Lambe.

5 And in their mouthes was founde no guile: for they are without spot before the throne of God.

6 ¶ Then I sawe another Angel flie in the mids of heauen, hauing an euerlasting Gospel, to preach vnto them that dwel on the earth, and to euery nation, and kinred, and tongue, and people,

7 *Saying with a loude voice, Feare God, and giue glorie to him: for the houre of his iudgement is come: and worship him that made * heauen and earth, and the sea, and the fountaines of waters. *Psal.145.6. Acts.14.15.*

8 And there folowed another Angell, saying, *Babylon that great citie is fallen, it is fallen: for shee made all nations to drinke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. *Chap.18.2. Isai.21.9. Iere.51.8.*

9 ¶ And the thirde Angell folowed them, saying with a loude voice; If any man worship the beast and his image, and receiue *his* marke in his forehead, or in his hande,

10 The same shall drinke of the wine of the wrath of God, yea, of the pure wine which is powred into the cuppe of his wrath, and hee shall be tormented in fire and brimstone before the holy Angels, and before the Lambe.

11 And the smoke of their torment shall ascende euermore: and they shall haue no rest day nor night, which worship the beast and his image, and whosoeuer receiueth the print of his name.

12 Here is the patience of Saints: here are they that keepe the commandements of God, and the faith of Iesus.

13 Then I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto mee, Write, The dead which die in the Lorde, *are* fully blessed. Euen so saith the Spirit: for they rest from their labours, and their workes followe them.

14 ¶ And I looked, and beholde, a white cloude, and vpon the cloude one sitting like vnto the Sonne of man, hauing on his head a golden crowne, and in his hand a sharpe sickle.

15 And another Angell came out of the Temple, crying with a loude voice to him that sate on the cloude, *Thrust in thy sickle and reape: for the time is come to reape: for the harueste of the earth is ripe. *Ioel.3.13. Mat.13.39.*

16 And he that sate on the cloud, thrust in his sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped.

17 Then another Angel came out of the Temple, which is in heauen, hauing also a sharpe sickle.

18 And another Angel came out from the altar, which had power ouer fire, and cried with a loude crie to him that had the sharpe sickle, and said, Thrust in thy sharpe sickle, & gather the clusters of the vineyard of the earth: for her grapes are ripe.

19 And the Angell thrust in his sharpe sickle on the earth, and cut downe the vines of the vineyard of the earth, and cast them into that great wine presse of the wrath of God.

20 And the wine presse was troden without the citie, and blood came out of the wine presse, vnto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and sixe hundreth furlongs.

## CHAP. XV.

*1 The seuen Angels hauing the seuen laste plagues. 3 They that conquered the beast, praise God. 6 To the seuen Angels, 7 seuen vialles full of Gods wrath, are deliuered.*

AND I sawe another signe in heauen, great and marueilous, seuen Angels, hauing the seuen last plagues: for by them is fulfilled the wrath of God.

2 And I sawe as it were a glasie sea, mingled with fire, and them that had gotten victorie of the beast, and of his image, and of his marke, and of the number of his name, stand at the glassie sea, hauing the harpes of God.

3 And they sing the song of Moses the seruaunt of God, and the song of the Lambe, saying, Great and marueilous *are* thy woorkes, Lorde God almightie: iust and true *are* thy waies, King of Saintes.

*Psal 145.17. Jere. 10.7.*

4 Who shall not feare thee, O Lorde, and glorifie thy Name! for thou only *art* holy, and all nations shall come and worship before thee: for thy iudgements are made manifest.

5 And after that, I looked, and beholde, the temple of the tabernacle of testimonie was open in heauen.

6 And the seuen Angels came out of the Temple, which had the seuen plagues, clothed in pure and bright linnen, and hauing their breasts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of the foure beastes gaue vnto the seuen Angels seuen golden vialles full of the wrath of God, which liueth for euermore.

8 And the Temple was full of the smoke of the glorie of God and of his power, and no man was able to enter into

the Temple, till the ſeuen plagues of the ſeuen Angels were fulfilled.

## CHAP. XVI.

2 *and* 17 *The Angels powre out the ſeuen vialles of Gods wrath giuen vnto them, and ſo diuers plagues ariſe in the world,* 18 *to terrifie the wicked,* 19 *and the inhabitants of the great citie.*

AND I heard a great voyce out of the Temple, ſaying to the ſeuen Angels, Goe your waies, and powre out the ſeuen vialles of the wrath of God vpon the earth.

2 And the firſt went, and powred out his viall vpon the earth: and there fell a noyſome, and a grieuous ſore vpon the men, which had the marke of the beaſt, and vpon them which worſhipped his image.

3 And the ſecond Angel powred out his vial vpon the ſea, and it became as the blood of a dead man: and euery liuing thing died in the ſea.

4 And the third Angell powred out his viall vpon the riuers and fountaines of waters, and they became blood.

5 And I heard the Angell of the waters ſay, Lorde, thou art iuſt, Which art, and Which waſt: and holy, becauſe thou haſt iudged theſe things.

6 For they ſhed the blood of the Saints, and Prophets, and therefore haſt thou giuen them blood to drinke: for they are worthie.

7 And I heard another out of the Sanctuarie ſay, Euen ſo, Lord God almightie, true and righteous are thy iudgements.

8 And y fourth Angell powred out his viall on the ſunne, and it was giuen vnto him to torment men with heate of fire.

9 And men boyled in great heat, & blaſphemed the Name of God, which hath power ouer theſe plagues, and they repented not, to giue him glorie.

10 And the fift Angel powred out his vial vpon the throne of the beaſt, and his kingdom waxed darke, and they gnawed their tongues for ſorowe,

11 And blaſphemed the God of heauen for their paines, and for their ſores, and repented not of their workes.

12 And the ſixt Angel powred out his vial vpon the great riuer Euphrates, and the water thereof dried vp, that the way of the Kings of the Eaſt ſhould be prepared.

13 And I ſawe three vncleane ſpirites like frogs come out of the mouth of that dragon, and out of the mouth of that

beast, and out of the mouth of that false prophet.

14 For they are the spirites of deuils, working miracles, to go vnto the kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battel of that great day of God Almightie.

15 (*Behold, I come as a theefe. Blessed *is* he that watcheth and keepeth his garments, lest he walke naked, and men see his filthinesse)

16 And they gathered them together into a place called in Hebrewe Armagedon.

17 ¶ And the seuenth Angell powred out his viall into the aire: and there came a loude voice out of the Temple of heauen from the throne, saying, It is done.

18 And there were voices and thundrings, and lightnings, and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were vpon the earth, euen so mightie an earthquake.

19 And the great citie was diuided into three partes, and the cities of the nations fell, and that great Babylon came in remembrance before God, * to giue vnto her the cup of the wine of the fiercenesse of his wrath.

20 And euery yle fledde away, and the mountaines were not found.

21 And there fell a great haile, like talents, out of heauen vpon the men, and men blasphemed God, because of ỹ plague of the haile: for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

Chap. 3. 3. mat. 24. 44. luk. 12. 39.

Ier. 25. 15.

## CHAP. XVII.

*1 That great whore is described, 2 with whome the kings of the earth committed fornication. 6 She is drunken with the blood of Saintes: 7 The mysterie of the woman & the beast that carrieth her, expounded: 11 their destruction. 14 The Lambes victorie.*

THen there came one of the seuen Angels, which had the seuen viasles, and talked with me, saying vnto me, Come: I will shewe thee the damnation of the great whore that sitteth vpon many waters,

2 With whome haue committed fornication the Kings of the earth, and the inhabitantes of the earth are drunken with the wine of her fornication.

3 So he caried me away into the wildernes in the Spirite, and I sawe a woman sit vpon a skarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemie, which had seuen heads, and ten hornes.

4 And the woman was araied in purple and skarlet, and gilded with golde, and precious stones, and pearles, and had a

cuppe

cuppe of golde in her hand,full of abominations,and filthines of her fornication.

5 And in her forehead *was* a name written, A mysterie, that great Babylon, that mother of whoredomes, and abominations of the earth.

6 And I saw the woman drunken with ỹ blood of Saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Iesus: and when I sawe her,I wondered with great marueile.

7 Then the Angell saide vnto me, Wherefore marueilest thou? I wil shew thee the mysterie of that woman,and of that beast,that beareth her,which hath seuen heads,& ten hornes.

8 The beast that thou hast seene, was,& is not,and shall aſcẽd out of the bottomles pit,& shall go into perdition,& they that dwell on the earth, shall wonder (whose names are not written in the Booke of life,frõ the foundation of the world) when they behold the beast that was,and is not,and yet is.

9 Here *is* the minde that hath wisedome. The seuen heads are seuen mountaines, whereon the woman sitteth: they are also seuen Kings.

10 Fiue are fallen,and one *is*,and another is not yet come: and when he commeth,he must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that was,and is not,is euen the eight,and *is* one of the seuen,and shall goe into destruction.

12 And the ten hornes which thou sawest, are ten kings, which yet haue not receiued a kingdome, but shall receiue power,as Kings at one houre with the beast.

13 These haue one minde, and shall giue their power, and authoritie vnto the beast.

14 These shal fight ẅ the Lambe,and the Lambe shal ouercome them: *for he is Lorde of Lords,and King of Kings: and they that are on his side,called,and chosen,and faithfull. *Chap.19.16. 1.Tim.6.15.*

15 And he sayde vnto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth,are people,and multitudes,and nations,and tongues.

16 And the ten hornes which thou sawest vpon the beast, are they that shall hate the whore,and shal make her desolate and naked,and shall eate her flesh,and burne her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will,and to doe with one consent,for to giue their kingdome vnto the beast,vntill the wordes of God be fulfilled.

18 And that woman which thou sawest,is that great citie, which reigneth ouer the Kings of the earth.

## CHAP. XVIII.

*3 The horrible destruction of Babylon is set out. 11. 16. 18 The marchãts of the earth, who were enriched with the pompe and luxuriousnes of it, weepe and waile: 20 But all the elect reioyce for that iust vengeance of God.*

AND after these things, I sawe *another* Angell come downe from heauen, hauing great power, so that the earth was lightened with his glory.

*Chap. 14. 8. Isa. 21 9. vere. 51. 8.*

2 And he cried out mightily with a loud voice, saying, *It is fallen, it is fallen, Babylon that great citie, and is become the habitation of deuils, and the hold of all foule spirites, and a cage of euery vncleane and hatefull birde.

3 For all nations haue drunken of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth haue committed fornication with her, and the marchants of the earth are waxed rich of the aboundance of her pleasures.

4 And I heard another voyce from heauen say, Goe out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sinnes, and that ye receiue not of her plagues.

5 For her sinnes are come vp into heauen, and God hath remembred her iniquities.

6 Rewarde her, euen as shee hath rewarded you, and giue her double according to her workes: *and* in the cup that shee hath filled to you, fill her the double.

7 In as much as shee glorified her selfe, and liued in pleasure, so much giue ye to her torment and sorow: for she saieth in her heart, I sit being a queene, and am no widowe, and shall see no mourning.

8 Therefore shall her plagues come at one day, death, and sorowe, and famine, and shee shall be burnt with fire: for that God which condemneth her, is a strong Lord.

9 And the Kings of the earth shal bewaile her, and lament for her, which haue committed fornication, and liued in pleasure with her, when they shall see ỹ smoke of ỹ her burning,

10 And shall stand a farre off for feare of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great citie Babylon, that mightie citie: for in one houre is thy iudgement come.

11 And the marchantes of the earth shall weepe and waile ouer her, for no man byeth their ware any more.

12 The ware of golde and siluer, & of precious stone, and of pearles, & of fine linẽ, and of purple, & of silke, and of skarlet, and of all maner of Thyne wood, and of all vessels of yuorie,

yuorie, and of all vessels of most precious wood, and of brasse, and of yron, and of marble,

13 And of cynamom, and odours, and oyntments, and frankincense, and wine, and oyle, and fine flower, and wheate, and beastes, and sheepe, and horses, and charets, and seruants, and soules of men.

14 (And the apples that thy soule lusted after, are departed from thee, and all things which were fatte and excellent, are departed from thee, and thou shalt finde them no more)

15 The marchants of these things which were waxed rich, shall stand a farre off from her, for feare of her torment, weeping and wayling,

16 And saying, Alas, alas, that great citie, that was clothed in fine linnen and purple, and skarlet, and gilded with golde and precious stone, and pearles.

17 For in one houre so great riches are come to desolation. And euery shipmaster, and all the people that occupie shippes and shipmen, and whosoeuer trafike on the sea, shall stand a farre off,

18 And cry, when they see that smoke of that her burning, saying, What *citie was* like vnto this great citie?

19 And they shall cast dust on their heads, and cry, weeping, and wayling, and say, Alas, alas, that great citie, wherein were made riche all that had shippes on the sea by her costlinesse: for in one houre she is made desolate.

20 O heauen, reioyce of her, and ye holy Apostles & Prophets: for God hath punished her to be reuenged on her for your sakes.

21 Then a mightie Angel tooke vp a stone like a great milstone, * and cast it into the sea, saying, With such violence shall that great citie Babylon be cast, & shalbe found no more. *Ier. 51.63.*

22 And the voyce of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpetters shalbe heard no more in thee, and no craftesman, of whatsoeuer craft *he be*, shalbe found any more in thee: and the sounde of a milstone shalbe heard no more in thee.

23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more in thee: and the voyce of the bridegrome & of the bride shalbe heard no more in thee: for thy marchants were the great men of the earth: and with thine inchantments were deceiued all nations.

24 And in her was found the blood of the Prophets, and of the Saints, and of all that were slaine vpon the earth.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XIX.

1 *The heauenly companie praise God, for auenging the blood of his seruants, on the whore.* 9 *They are written blessed, that are called to the Lambes supper.* 10 *The Angel will not be worshipped.* 11 *That mightie King of Kings appeareth from heauen.* 19 *The battell,* 20 *wherein the beast is taken,* 21 *and cast into the burning lake.*

AND after these things I heard a great voyce of a great multitude in heauen, saying, Hallelu-iah, saluation and glory, and honour, and power *be* to the Lord our God.

2 For true and righteous *are* his iudgements: for he hath condemned that great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath auenged the blood of his seruants *shed* by her hand.

3 And againe they sa ide, Hallelu-iah: and that her smoke rose vp for euermore.

4 And the foure and twentie Elders, and the foure beastes fell downe, and worshipped God that sate on the throne, saying, Amen, Hallelu-iah.

5 Then a voyce came out of the throne, saying, Prayse our God, all ye his seruants, and ye that feare him, both small and great.

6 And I heard like a voyce of a great multitude, and as the voyce of many waters, and as the voyce of strong thundrings, saying, Hallelu-iah: for the Lorde that God that Almightie one hath reigned.

7 Let vs be glad and reioyce, and giue glorie to him: for the mariage of that Lambe is come, and his wife hath made her selfe ready.

8 And to her was graunted, that she should be arayed with pure fine linnen and shining, for the fine linen is the righteousnesse of Saintes.

*Matth.22.2.* 9 Then he saide vnto me, Write, *Blessed *are* they which are called vnto ỹ Lambes supper. And he said vnto me, These wordes of God are true.

*Chap.22.9.* 10 And I fell before his feete, *to worship him: but he said vnto me, See thou doe it not: I am thy fellowe seruant, and one of thy brethrē, which haue the testimonie of Iesus. Worship God: for the testimonie of Iesus, is ỹ Spirit of prophecie.

11 And I sawe heauen open, and behold a white horse, and he that sate vpon him, was called, Faithfull and true, and he iudgeth and fighteth righteously.

12 And

12 And his eyes *were* as a flame of fire, and on his head *were* many crownes: and he had a name written, that no man knew but himselfe.

13 And he was clothed with a garment dipt in blood, and his name is called, THE WORD OF GOD.

14 And the hostes which were in heauen, followed him vpon white horses, clothed with fine linnen white and pure.

15 And out of his mouth went out a sharpe sworde, that with it he should smite the heathen: for he * shall rule them with a rod of yron: for he it is that treadeth the winepresse of the fiercenesse and wrath of Almightie God. *Psal.2.9.*

16 And he hath vpon his garment, and vpon his thigh a name written, * THE KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDES. *Chap.17.14. 1.Tim.6.15.*

17 And I sawe an Angel stand in the sunne, who cryed with a loud voyce, saying to all the soules that did flye by the middes of heauen, Come, and gather your selues together vnto the supper of the great God,

18 That ye may eate the flesh of Kings, and the flesh of hie Captaines, and the flesh of mightie men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all free men and bondmen, and of small and great.

19 And I sawe the beast, and the Kings of the earth, and their hostes gathered together to make battell against him, that sate on the horse, and against his armie.

20 But the beast was taken, and with him that false prophet that wrought miracles before him, whereby he deceiued them that receiued the beastes marke, and them that worshipped his image. These both were aliue cast into a lake of fire, burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slaine with the sworde of him that sitteth vpon the horse, which cometh out of his mouth, and all the soules were filled full with their flesh.

## CHAP. XX.

1 *The Angel* 2 *bindeth Satan for a thousand yeeres:* 8 *being loosed, he stirreth vp Gog and Magog, that is, priuie and open enemies against the Saintes,* 11 *but the vengeance of the Lord cutteth off their insolencie.* 12 *The bookes are opened, by which the dead are iudged.*

AND I sawe an Angel come downe from heauen, hauing the key of the bottomles pit, & a great chaine in his hand.

2 And he tooke the dragon that olde serpent, which is the

deuill and Satan, and he bound him a thousand yeeres:

3 And cast him into the bottomlesse pit, and he shut him vp, and sealed *the doore* vpon him, that he should deceiue the people no more, till the thousand yeeres were fulfilled: for after that he must be loosed for a litle season.

4 And I sawe seates: and they sate vpon them, and iudgement was giuen vnto them, and *I sawe* the soules of them that were beheaded for the witnesse of Iesus, and for the word of God, and which did not worship the beast, neither his image, neither had taken his marke vpon their foreheads, or on their handes: and they liued, and reigned with Christ a thousand yeere.

5 But the rest of the dead men shall not liue againe, vntill the thousand yeeres be finished: this is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he, that hath part in the first resurrection: *for* on such the seconde death hath no power: but they shall be the Priestes of God, and of Christ, and shall reigne with him a thousand yeere.

7 And when the thousand yeeres are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison,

8 And shall goe out to deceiue the people, which are in the foure quarters of the earth: *euen* * Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battell, whose number *is* as the sand of the sea.

*Eyk.39.2.*

9 And they went vp into the plaine of the earth, and they compassed the tents of the Saints about, and the beloued citie: but fire came downe from God out of heauen, and deuoured them.

10 And the deuill that deceiued them, was cast into a lake of fire and brimstone, where that beast and that false prophet *are*, and shall be tormented euen day and night for euermore.

11 And I sawe a great white throne, and one that sate on it, from whose face fled away both the earth and heauen, and their place was no more found.

12 And I sawe the dead, both great and small stand before God: and the bookes were opened, and * another booke was opened, which is *the booke* of life, and the dead were iudged of those things, which were written in the bookes, according to their workes.

*Chap 3.5. and 21.27. Philip.4.3.*

13 And the sea gaue vp her dead, which were in her, and death and hell deliuered vp the dead, which were in them: and they were iudged euery man according to their workes.

14 And

14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death.

15 And whosoeuer was not found written in the booke of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

## CHAP. XXI.

*1 He describeth newe Hierusalem descending from heauen, 9 the Bride the Lambes wife, 12 and the glorious building of the citie, 19 garnished with precious stones: 22 whose temple the Lambe is.*

AND I sawe *a newe heauen and a newe earth: for the *first heauen, and the first earth were passed away, and there was no more sea. *Isa.65.17. and 66.22. 2.Pet.3.13.*

2 And I Iohn sawe the holy citie newe Hierusalem come downe from God out of heauen, prepared as a bride trimmed for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voyce out of heauen, saying, Behold, the Tabernacle of God *is* with men, and he will dwell with them: and they shall be his people, and God himselfe shall be their God with them,

4 *And God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes: and there shalbe no more death, neither sorowe, neither crying, neither shall there be any more paine: for the first things are passed. *Chap.7.17. isa.25.8.*

5 And he that sate vpon the throne, said, *Beholde, I make all things newe: and he said vnto me, Write: for these words are faithfull and true. *Isa.43.19. 2.cor.5.17.*

6 And he said vnto me, *It is done: I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ende. I will giue to him that is a thirst, of the well of the water of life freely. *Chap.1.8. and 22.13.*

7 He that ouercommeth, shal inherite all things, and I wil be his God, and he shalbe my sonne.

8 But the fearefull and vnbeleeuing, and the abominable and murtherers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars shall haue their part in the lake, which burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.

9 And there came vnto me one of the seuen Angels which had the seuen vials full of the seuen last plagues, & talked with me, saying, Come: I will shewe thee the Bride, the Lambes wife.

10 And he caried me away in the spirite to a great and an hie mountaine, and he shewed me that great citie, that holy Hierusalem, descending out of heauen from God,

11 Hauing

11 Hauing the glorie of God: and her ſhining was like vn-
to a ſtone moſt precious, as a Iaſper ſtone cleare as cryſtall,
12 And had a great wall and hie, and had twelue gates, and
at the gates twelue Angels, and the names written, which are
the twelue tribes of the children of Iſrael.
13 On the Eaſt part *there were* three gates, *and* on the
Northſide three gates, on the Southſide three gates, & on the
Weſtſide three gates.
14 And the wall of the citie had twelue foundations, and
in them the Names of the Lambes twelue Apoſtles.
15 And he that talked with me, had a golden reede to mea-
ſure the citie with all, and the gates thereof, and the wall
thereof.
16 And the citie lay foure ſquare, and the length is as large
as the breadth of it, and he meaſured the citie with the reede,
twelfe thouſand furlongs: & the length, and the breadth, and
the height of it are equall.
17 And he meaſured the wall there of, an hundreth, fourtie
and foure cubites, by the meaſure of man, that is, of the Angel.
18 And the building of the wall of it was of Iaſper: and
the citie was pure gold, like vnto cleare glaſſe.
19 And the foundations of the wall of the citie were gar-
niſhed with all maner of precious ſtones: the firſt foundation
was Iaſper: the ſecond Saphir: the third a Chalcedonie:
the fourth an Emeraulde.
20 The fift a Sardonix: the ſixt a Sardius: the ſeuenth
a Chryſolite: the eight a Beryl: the ninth a Topaze:
the tenth a Chryſopraſus: the elleuenth a Iacinth: the
twelfth an Amethyſt.
21 And the twelue gates *were* twelue pearles, and euery
gate *it* of one pearle, and the ſtreete of the citie *is* pure golde,
as ſhining glaſſe.
22 And I ſawe no Temple therein: for the Lorde God Al-
mightie and the Lambe are the Temple of it.
*Iſa.60.19.* 23 *And this citie hath no neede of the Sunne, neither of
the Moone to ſhine in it: for the glorie of God did light it:
and the Lambe is the light of it.
*Iſa.60.3.* 24 * And the people which are ſaued, ſhall walke in the
light of it: and the Kings of the earth ſhall bring their glorie
and honour vnto it.
*Iſa.60.11.* 25 * And the gates of it ſhall not be ſhut by day: for there
ſhall be no night there.

26 And

16 And the glory, and honour of the Gentiles shall be brought vnto it.

27 And there shall enter into it none vncleane thing, neither whatsoeuer worketh abomination or lies: but they which are written in the Lambes * booke of life.

*Chap.3.5. and 20.12. phil.4.3.*

## CHAP. XXII.

*1 The riuer of water of life is shewed, 2 and the tree of life: 6. 7 Then followeth the conclusion of this prophecie, 8 where John declareth, that the things herein contained are most true: 13 And nowe the third time repeateth these wordes, All thinges come from him who is the beginning and the end.*

AND he shewed me a pure riuer of water of life, cleare as cryſtall, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lambe.

2 In the middes of the ſtreete of it, and of either ſide of the riuer, was the tree of life, which bare twelue maner of fruites, and gaue fruite euery moneth: and the leaues of the tree *ſerued* to heale the nations with.

3 And there ſhall be no more curſe, but the throne of God, and of the Lambe ſhall be in it, and his ſeruants ſhall ſerue him.

4 And they ſhall ſee his face, and his name ſhall be in their foreheads.

5 * And there ſhall be no night there, and they neede no candle, neither light of the ſunne: for the Lorde God giueth them light, and they ſhall reigne for euermore. *Iſa.60.19.*

6 And he ſaide vnto me, Theſe wordes are faithfull and true: and the Lord God of the holy Prophets ſent his Angel to ſhewe vnto his ſeruants the things which muſt ſhortly be fulfilled.

7 Beholde, I come ſhortly. Bleſſed *is* he that keepeth the wordes of the prophecie of this booke.

8 And I am Iohn, which ſawe and heard theſe things: and when I had heard and ſeene, * I fell downe to worſhip before the feete of the Angel, which ſhewed me theſe things. *Chap.19.10.*

9 But he ſaide vnto me, See thou *doe it* not: for I am thy fellowe ſeruant, and of thy brethren the Prophets, and of them which keepe the wordes of this Booke: worſhip God.

10 And he ſaid vnto me, Seale not the wordes of the prophecie of this Booke: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is vniuſt, let him be vniuſt ſtill: and he which is filthie,

filthie, let him be filthie ſtill: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous ſtill: and he that is holy, let him be holy ſtill.

12 And beholde, I come ſhortly, and my rewarde is with me, * to giue euery man according as his worke ſhalbe.

Rom.2.6. Chap.20.12. and 22.12. Iſai.40.10. and 44.6.

13 I am * Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ende, the firſt and the laſt.

14 Bleſſed *are* they, that do his commandements, that their right may be in the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the citie.

15 For without *ſhalbe* dogges, and enchanters, and whoremongers, and murtherers, and idolaters, and whoſoeuer loueth or maketh lies.

16 I Ieſus haue ſent mine Angel, to teſtifie vnto you theſe things in the Churches: I am the roote and the generation of Dauid, and the bright morning ſtarre.

17 And the Spirite and the Bride ſay, Come. And let him that heareth, ſay, Come: and let him that is a thirſt, come: and * let whoſoeuer will, take of the water of life freely.

Iſa.55.1.

18 For I proteſt vnto euery man that heareth the wordes of the prophecie of this booke, If any man ſhall adde vnto theſe things, God ſhall adde vnto him the plagues, that are written in this booke:

19 And if any man ſhall diminiſh of the wordes of the booke of this prophecie, God ſhall take away his part out of the booke of life, and out of the holy citie, and from thoſe things which are written in this booke.

20 He which teſtifieth theſe things, ſaith, Surely, I come quickly. Amen. Euen ſo, come Lord Ieſus.

21 The grace of our Lorde Ieſus Chriſt *be* with you all. Amen.

THE ENDE.

04/5